DOCUMENT RESUME

ED 474 865 TM 034 778

AUTHOR	Glass, Gene V., Ed.
TITLE	Education Policy Analysis Archives, 2002: Numbers 26-50.
ISSN	ISSN-1068-2341
PUB DATE	2002-00-00
NOTE	454p.; "Education Policy Analysis Archives" is an electronic-only journal (see http://olam.edu.asu.edu/epaa) covered on an article by article basis in "Current Index to Journals in Education" (CIJE). For the 23 English language articles in this part of Volume 10, see TM 524 949-971.
AVAILABLE FROM	For full text: http://olam.ed.asu.edu/epaa.
PUB TYPE	Collected Works - General (020)
EDRS PRICE	EDRS Price MF01/PC19 Plus Postage.
DESCRIPTORS	Charter Schools; Educational Change; Educational Policy; *Educational Research; *Elementary Secondary Education; Professional Development; Public Policy; *School Choice; *Teacher Certification

ABSTRACT

This document consists of articles 26 through 50 published in the electronic journal "Education Policy Analysis Archives" for the year 2002: (26) "Home Schooling in the United States: Trends and Characteristics" (Kurt J. Bauman); (27) "Mentoring Narratives ON-LINE: Teaching the Principalship" (Alison I. Griffith and Svitlana Taraban); (28) "Elm Street School: A Case Study of Professional Development of Expenditures" (H. Alix Gallagher); (29) "A Case Study of Professional Development Expenditures at a Restructured High School" (Sarah Archibald and H. Alix Gallagher); (30) "Teacher Inequality: New Evidence on Disparities in Teachers' Academic Skills" (Andrew J. Wayne); (31) "The Question of the Student in Educational Reform" (David P. Ericson and Frederick S. Ellett, Jr.); (32) "The Geographical Distribution of Teacher Absenteeism in Large Urban School District Settings: Implications for School Reform Efforts Aimed at Promoting Equity and Excellence in Education" (James E. Bruno); (33) "The Politics of School-Based Management: Understanding the Process of Devolving Authority in Urban School Districts" (Elaine M. Walker); (34) "Charter School Funding Issues" (Stephen D. Sugarman); (35) "Aprender a Ensenar para la Sociedad del Conocimiento" (Carlos Marcelo); (36) "Research and Rhetoric on Teacher Certification: A Response to "Teacher Certification Reconsidered" (Linda Darling-Hammond); (37) "The Effectiveness of "Teach for America" and Other Under-certified Teachers on Student Academic Achievement: A Case of Harmful Public Policy" (Ildiko Laczko-Kerr and David C. Berliner); (38) "District Fiscal Policy and Student Achievement: Evidence from Combined NAEP-CCD Data" (Gary G. Huang and Binbing Yu); (39) "Recovering Policy Implementation: Understanding Implementation through Informal Communication" (Lee S. Duemer and Sylvia Mendez-Morse); (40) "The Original Ten: A Multisite Case Study of Florida's Millennium High School Reform Model" (Carol A. Mullen); (41) "Globalizacion, Gobierno y Transferencia de Politicas Publicas. El Caso de la Educacion Superior en Mexico" (Pedro Flores Crespo and Salvador Ruiz de Chavez); (42) "Legislating Equity: The Distribution of Emergency Permit Teachers in California" (Laura Goe); (43) "Attracting Principals to the Superintendency: Conditions That Make a Difference to Principals" (Aimee Howley, Edwina Pendarvis, and Thomas Gibbs); (44) "Assessment of a Socio-constructivist Model for Teacher Training: A Case Study" (Luiz Antonio Joia); (45) "Corrective Action and School Choice in NYC:

Reproductions supplied by EDRS are the best that can be made
from the original document.

An Analysis of District Funding Applications" (Doug Hamman and E.Allen Schenck); (46) "Senior School Board Officials' Perceptions of a National Achievement Assessment Program" (Marielle Simon and Renee Forgette-Giroux); (47) "An Overview of Private Education Development in Modern China" (Zeyu Xu); (48) "K-12 Voucher Programs and Education Policy: An Exploratory Study of Policy Maker Attitudes and Opinions" (Dan Laitsch); (49) "Failing Georgia: The Case against the Ban on Social Promotion" (Donald R. Livingston and Sharon M. Livingston); and (50) "The Case That Won't Go Away: Besieged Institutions and the Massachusetts Teacher Test" (Larry H. Ludlow, Dennis Shirley, and Camelia Rosca). (SLD)

Reproductions supplied by EDRS are the best that can be made
from the original document.

VOLUME 10 - 2002

ISSN 1068-2341

ED 474 865

Education Policy Analysis Archives

(Articles 26 thru 50)

editor:
Gene V. Glass
Arizona State University

TM034778

PERMISSION TO REPRODUCE AND
DISSEMINATE THIS MATERIAL HAS
BEEN GRANTED BY

G. V. Glass

TO THE EDUCATIONAL RESOURCES
INFORMATION CENTER (ERIC)

1

U.S. DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION
Office of Educational Research and Improvement
EDUCATIONAL RESOURCES INFORMATION
CENTER (ERIC)

☑ This document has been reproduced as received from the person or organization originating it.

☐ Minor changes have been made to improve reproduction quality.

- Points of view or opinions stated in this document do not necessarily represent official OERI position or policy.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

VOLUME 10 - 2002

ISSN 1068-2341

Education Policy Analysis Archives

(Articles 26 thru 50)

editor:
Gene V. Glass
Arizona State University

This article has been retrieved times since May 16, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 26 **May 16, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**.
Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Home Schooling in the United States: Trends and Characteristics

Kurt J. Bauman
U.S. Census Bureau

Citation: Bauman, K. J. (2002, May 16). Home schooling in the United States: Trends and Characteristics. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(26). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n26.html.

Abstract

Home schooling is a subject of great fascination, but little solid knowledge. Despite its importance, it has received less research attention than some other recent changes in the educational system, such as the growth of charter schools. It could be argued that home schooling may have a much larger impact on educational system, both in the short and long run. This report uses the 1994 October CPS, and the National Household Education Survey of 1996 and 1999 to examine popular characterizations of the home school population. The article assembles evidence from several sources to confirm that home schooling is growing. It finds home-schooled children more likely to be middle income, white, from larger families, and from two-parent families with one parent not working. While some authors have described a division between religiously-motivated and academically-motivated home schoolers, this research finds more support for a divide based on attitude towards regular schools.

The Impact of Home Schooling

Home schooling is a subject of great fascination, but little solid knowledge. Compared with other recent changes in the educational system, such as the growth of charter schools, home schooling has received relatively little attention (Archer 2000). (Note 1) It could be argued, however, that home schooling could have a much larger impact on educational system, both in the short and long run. This is because home schooling seems to be taking place on a larger scale than many other educational innovations (Lines 1999, Bieleck 2001), because home schooling may have a greater immediate impact on educational practices in existing schools (Hill 2000, Lines 2000b), and because home schooling has brought new institutional forms into being that have the potential to grow over the longer term (Trotter 2001).

Scale

Although other institutional innovations in the educational system have grown in recent years, home schooling is probably the largest change in the sheer number of students involved.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Home schooling directly comprises a larger student population than voucher school programs--at least those that include private schools, that enroll only a few thousand students in a few cities (see Gardner 2000). Home schooling also involves a larger population than charter schools. According to estimates from organizations involved with charter schools, the student population in the fall of 2000 was just over 500,000 (Center for Education Reform, 2001). Even conservative estimates of the number of home schoolers put their numbers at that level or above (Lines 1999).

Organizational changes

Charter schools and voucher systems provide competitive challenges to traditional public schools, and as such, provide a direct incentive to adopt innovations and match the performance of other schools. However, the main outlines of current schooling practice have thus far remained intact. The challenge of home schooling, by contrast, is more profound. Home schooling is a more radical departure from education as it is currently practiced, it affects more schools, and it has the potential to force numerous adjustments to current curricular practices.

Public schools in many jurisdictions have already begun to provide services of various types to home schoolers. Laws in at least seven states permit home schooled students to participate in sports, music and other extracurricular activities in regular schools (Farris 1997). In Florida and Iowa, schools also allow home schoolers to take individual courses.

New Institutions

Perhaps the largest impact of home schoolers has been the concomitant entry of new educational organizations into the field. Many private organizations and enterprises have entered the K-12 distance education field with their sights set on home schoolers as a primary audience (Hill 2000). The State of Florida has developed an extensive set of courses that can be taken over the Internet for high school credit by home schoolers and others who choose to use this resource, and Illinois is developing a similar program (Carothers 2000, Trotter 2001). Meanwhile several for-profit ventures have entered the field, offering courses and, in one case, accredited diplomas over the Internet (Trotter 1999, Walsh 2001).

If home schooling continues to grow, demand will grow for the types of services that are starting to be offered by public schools and distance education providers. A result will be pressure on schools to design school curricula that allow students and parents to pick and choose what they like. According to some observers, another result will be the creation of new schools and school-like institutions built around the common needs and concerns of home-schooling families (Hill 2000) and the growth of public school programs designed specifically for home schoolers (Lines 2000b).

Despite these broad impacts there have been few attempts to examine the characteristics of home schoolers and their households in the U.S. Many studies that have been conducted have relied on highly selective samples (Rudner 1999, Welner & Welner 1999) or have examined selective issues without giving a thorough overview of the home-schooled population (Smith & Sikkink 1999,Welner 2000a, Welner 2000b, Lines 2000b). The two exceptions are reports by Lines (1999) and the National Center for Education Statistics (Bielick 2001) who provide estimates of the home-school population. Lines conducted a careful analysis state education agency records of registered home schoolers, adjusting for probable levels of non-registered home schooling. She estimated that there were 690,000 home-schooled children in 1995. The National Center for Education Statistics report analyzed the results of the 1999 National Household Education Survey, which is also one of the data sets also analyzed in this article. They produced basic tabulations of the characteristics of home-schoolers, including grade equivalent, race, sex, family characteristics, participation in public schools and reasons for home schooling. They found 850,000 home schooled children in the United States. (This is a larger figure than the one reported here, because they decided to include 5-year-olds in the count of home-schooled children, while this report includes only those age 6 to 17.) Prior to these resports, there was also an especially careful attempt by researchers associated with the U.S. Department of Education to reconcile results from two major national surveys measuring the home school population (Henke et al. 2000). Unfortunately, the authors of that publication did not have more recent data available to them.

This article adds to the current knowledge on the subject by looking simultaneously at three national datasets on home schooling. The report takes a closer look at the characteristics of home schoolers and tests for the significance of differences between home-schooled children and others. It examines trends and compositional changes in the home-schooled population. It examines their geographic location and potential for growth. Finally, it examines whether there are identifiable groups of home schoolers with different reasons for pursuing home-schooling, as has been posited by many observers.

The article proceeds as follows. It starts with a discussion of the data sources used in the analysis. Next the number of home schoolers and the rate of growth is estimated from various data sets. The subsequent section examines characteristics of home schooled children and their families, with a focus on those characteristics most relevant for gauging trends in home schooling. Finally, there is a discussion of some of the implications of home schooling for regular schools and a brief conclusion.

Data on Home Schooling

The data for this project include the 1994 October Current Population Survey (CPS) (U.S. Census Bureau 2000) and the National Household Education Surveys (NHES) of 1996 and 1999 (Nolin et al. 2000). All three are national household surveys of high quality. The CPS relies on a combination of in-person and telephone interviewing of a large sample (approximately 60,000 households) of the U.S. population. I use 24,829 CPS cases where subjects were age 6 to 17. In October of each year, a supplement on school enrollment of children and adults is administered in all CPS households. The content of this supplement varies slightly from year to year, and in 1994 questions on home schooling were added to the main enrollment questions in the supplement for children. The questions differed according to the response to the initial question on school enrollment.

> If it was reported that a child was not currently enrolled in school, the child or proxy was asked:
>
> "Were you/Was ... being schooled primarily at home?"
>
> If the child was currently in school the question was:
>
> "Are you/Is ... attending (1) a regular day school, (2) boarding school, (3) schooled primarily at home by someone paid by the school, (4) schooled primarily at home by a parent or other person paid or chosen by a parent, (5) someplace else."

The number choosing answer (3) was relatively small, and for the purposes of this research, responses (3) and (4) were both counted as "home schooling."

The NHES surveys are nationally-representative telephone surveys administered by the National Center for Education Statistics. The two most recent surveys, in 1996 and 1999 have included questions on home schooling. The number of children 6 to 17 was 16,257 in 1996 and 10,718 in 1999.

> In both years, the same question was asked of all children:
>
> "Some parents decide to educate their children at home rather than sending them to school. Is ... being schooled at home?"

The datasets also provide several types of information on characteristics of home schoolers and their families. All provide race, Hispanic ethnicity, age, and sex of children. They also provide information on the household: number of adults in the household, their education, labor force participation and household income. In both the CPS and NHES, income was given in ranges. For regression analyses, these were recoded to the midpoints and differenced from the mean. CPS provided state of residence, metropolitan status and urban/rural location. Although it is traditional to use Census-defined regions for analyses, it was felt that home schooling may not be following traditional patterns. Frey (2000) developed a regional taxonomy that reflects the major migration patterns of recent years, and these are probably more closely related to the types of social trends that would affect home-schooling decisions. The states were recoded to regions following this migration taxonomy. An urban-rural division was developed from metropolitan and urban/rural variables in CPS. (Note 2) In both 1996 and 1999, the NHES asked parents of home schoolers about their motivations for teaching their children at home. Respondents were asked to select reasons from a list of 16.

All analyses in this article use weighted data, adjusted to reflect an assumed design effect of 2.0, except that the standard errors associated with the total number of home schoolers were estimated using the Taylor-series linearization method available in the SAS statistical package. Specific types of analysis are described as they appear in the following discussion.

Extent and Growth of Home Schooling

Table 1 shows the number of home schooled children age 6 to 17 estimated from these data sources. Taken at face value, they show a growth from 360,000 in 1994 to 790,000 in 1999. By 1999, then, around 1.7 percent of children in the 6 to 17 age range were schooled at home. A 95 percent confidence interval for the 1999 figure goes from 670,000 to 910,000. Even at the high end of the range, the home-school population is under 1 million and less then 2 percent of all children 6-17.

Table 1

Estimates of the Number of U.S. Children Schooled at Home: Current Population Survey & National Household Education Surveys

	Estimate	Standard error
CPS 1994	356,000	40,000

NHES 1996	636,000	54,000
NHES 1999	791,000	62,000

Under-reporting

Because home schooling has become legal in most states only recently, and because regulations are sometimes cumbersome, there are a number of home-schoolers who have not reported their status to the state or local educational authorities, and would presumably be reluctant to report their status to interviewers. At the same time, other households may claim they are "home schooling" when they keep children away from school for other reasons or when they instruct their children while also sending them to school. Lines (1999) produced a reasonable estimate of home-schooling by using reports from state education departments in conjunction with estimates of reporting rates from a survey by Ray (1997). It is possible to similarly check the CPS estimates against state agency reports state-by-state.

I examined the 10 states with the highest and lowest reporting rates for which Lines was able to get state education department figures. CPS estimates were slightly lower than the number from state agencies in both cases. (Note 3) If Ray's estimates of reporting rates are reliable, therefore, in states where few home-schoolers reported to authorities, few reported to interviewers. Using a few simplifying assumptions, I calculated an "adjusted" number of home schoolers of 750,000 in 1994. (Note 4) If we assume 8 percent annual growth in home schooling, the NHES estimate from 1999 would be about 25% too low, and the actual number of home schoolers could be close to 1.1 million. However, this estimate depends critically on the validity of Ray's estimates of non-reporting (see discussion in Lines 1999). Until there is better evidence on the true rate of reporting, the unadjusted NHES figures are clearly the best available estimates.

Growth in home schooling

Unfortunately, the point estimates from these data cannot be used directly to make such inferences. The 1994 CPS estimate of 360,000 is not much more than half the size of the 1996 NHES estimate of 640,000. This difference is statistically significant, but is too large to be explained by growth in the home-school population. Hemke et al. (2000), noted that the gap is implausibly large, but were unable to pinpoint an explanation. A likely reason for the discrepancy is the difference in question wording between CPS and NHES. In the CPS, the form of the home schooling question depended on the previous answer to the question on school enrollment. If a household reported children were attending school, they were not asked directly about home schooling, but had to choose it from a list. That this results in a lower response is evident from the extremely low rate of home schooling observed in the subset of CPS respondents who responded affirmatively to the enrollment question. In the CPS, only 190,000 children were reported as in school, but also home schooled. In the 1996 NHES, 450,000 children were reported this way. By contrast, people who initially indicated non-enrollment faced similar yes/no questions on home schooling in both surveys. They were much closer in number—170,000 home schoolers in CPS and 190,000 in the 1996 NHES.

The 1999 NHES data seem also to show growth in home schooling. However, the growth is not quite statistically significant from 1996, given the sample size (the p-value of the 1996 to 1999 difference is between .05 and .10). Since the two NHES surveys are nearly identical in content and methodology, the trend based on these two data points provide the best estimate of growth, but the range is wide. A 95 percent confidence interval provides a range from 3 percent annual decline to 15 percent annual growth.

At the first level of analysis, therefore, we can't say a lot about the growth of the home schooling population. We can, however, refute some of the grander claims that have been made by advocates. The number of home schooled children was well under 1 million in 1999, and the growth rate from 1996 to 1999 was unlikely to have exceeded 15 percent per year.

More evidence on growth

The NHES data are insuficient to show growth in a statistical sense. However, if we can bring additional evidence to bear, we can increase our confidence that growth is actually taking place. One way to get additional evidence on trends in home schooling is to examine trends in reports of school non-enrollment. For children in the prime school-enrollment ages 7-9 and 10-13, published estimates show non-enrollment remained consistently at or below 1 percent from the mid 1950s to the early 1990s. From 1995 to 1999, however, non-enrollment exceeded 1 percent 4 out of 5 years (Jamieson et al. 2001). An increase in the non-enrolled population is not the same as an increase in home schooling, but there is overlap. In the 7 to 14 age range, just under one-half of non-enrolled students were home schooled, according to tabulations from the 1994 CPS, and there is a correlation of around 0.5 between home-schooling and non-enrollment across states. A regression analysis of non-enrollment across years, using CPS data for 1989 to 1999 shows a significant upward trend (data not shown—available from author on request). This confirms that the observed increase in recent years is not attributable to sampling error.

A group that is especially likely to be home schooled consists of two-adult families with one not working (as will be shown below). In this group, 60 percent of non-enrolled children are home schooled. The regression of non-enrollment on years shows an equally large and significant coefficient for this group as it does for all school-aged children.

In sum, evidence on non-enrollment reinforces the direct evidence available from the two NHES surveys: there seems to be an upward trend in home schooling. Other evidence might also be interpreted as supporting this conclusion, including demographic characteristics and geographic location. These are explored next.

Characteristics of Home-Schooled Children

To better understand trends in home schooling it is helpful to know what similarities and differences exist between home-schooled children and those in regular school. If home schoolers are currently limited to a portion of the population with distinct characteristics it is possible that the phenomenon will be self-contained. On the other hand, if those characteristics are becoming more prevalent in the population, then home schooling might grow along with the group in which it's found.

Home schoolers are like their peers in many respects. Table 2 shows how they compare, using data from all three surveys under consideration. Home schoolers are not especially likely to be young or old. They are about as likely to be of one sex or the other, with perhaps a slightly greater percentage female. In some ways, however, home-schoolers do stand out. Home schooled children are more likely to be non-Hispanic White, they are likely to live in households headed by a married couple with moderate to high levels of education and income. They are more likely to live in households with three or more children and they are likely to live in a household with an adult not in the labor force.

Table 2

Characteristics of Home-Schooled Children and their Families
Current Population Survey & National Household Education Surveys

	1994		1996		1999	
	Home School	Regular School	Home School	Regular School	Home School	Regular School
Age						
6-7	24.0	17.2	11.7	17.4	13.8	17.8
8-10	30.6	25.6	25.9	25.6	26.1	25.0
11-14	27.8	33.8	34.0	33.1	31.7	32.4
15-17	17.5	23.4	28.5	24.0	28.4	24.9
Sex						
Male	46.8	51.1	42.2	51.5	46.2	50.9
Female	53.2	48.9	57.8	48.5	53.8	49.1
Number of children						
One child	15.2	20.6	18.9	21.2	16.3	21.4
Two children	20.9	39.4	25.8	39.4	29.8	38.3
Three or more	63.9	40.1	55.2	39.4	53.9	40.4
Race, ethnicity						
White	91.9	67.6	86.8	67.7	75.8	64.8
Black	2.8	15.9	2.2	15.6	8.8	16.1
Hispanic	4.4	12.8	8.0	12.5	9.1	13.9
Other	0.8	3.7	3.1	4.2	6.2	5.2
Family structure						
Single parent	11.3	29.9	20.8	30.8	20.6	34.5
Two parent	88.7	70.1	79.2	69.2	79.4	65.6
Non-working parent						
Parents work	34.0	68.1	41.3	72.0	38.8	74.0
Non-working parent	66.0	31.9	58.7	28.0	61.2	26.0

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Family income						
Up to 14,999	18.8	23.2	21.1	21.1	12.3	18.6
15,000 to 29,999	14.9	20.4	26.9	22.6	25.7	21.3
30,000 to 49,999	40.4	26.5	29.1	25.5	24.8	23.7
50,000 or more	25.9	29.9	22.9	30.7	37.1	36.4
Mother's education						
Less than h.s.	8.8	17.7	14.2	16.4	5.3	16.4
High school	31.2	35.4	23.6	33.7	28.9	29.2
Some college	37.9	28.9	40.5	28.3	34.3	29.9
Bachelor's	19.3	12.9	17.5	15.1	22.5	16.3
Advanced	2.9	5.1	4.2	6.5	9.0	8.1

Table 3 shows these relationships in a multiple regression framework. This regression can't be interpreted as causal, as it includes several factors that are probably endogenous to the home-schooling decision (e.g., parental work status and household income). What can be seen, however, is the relative magnitude of different influences when taken together. Automatic model selection routines were used to develop a pared down regression equation because some coefficients were sensitive to the inclusion or exclusion of other variables in the model. The initial set of variables included all those in Table 2, along with interactions of all variables with survey year. Two of the effects (the main effect of being Black, and the effect of father's education) were retained even though they didn't meet the cutoff criterion in the selection routine, because of their possible substantive importance.

Table 3

Logistic Regression of Home-school Status on Background and Family Characteristics: Pooled Data from CPS & NHES

	Regression Coefficient		Standard Error	t–statistic
Two-parent family	0.313		(0.177)	1.8
Non-working parent	1.337	*	(0.131)	10.2
Income squared	-0.018	*	(0.004)	-4.1
Mother postsecondary educ.	0.601	*	(0.143)	4.2
Father postsecondary educ.	0.293		(0.173)	1.7
Age 14 to 17	0.283	*	(0.132)	2.1
Number of children in household	0.300	*	(0.039)	7.8
Male	-0.213		(0.124)	-1.7
Hispanic	-1.015	*	(0.245)	-4.1
Black	-0.521		(0.348)	-1.5
Black * 1994	-1.584	*	(0.766)	-2.1
Black * 1996	-1.750	*	(0.788)	-2.2
West	0.461	*	(0.160)	2.9
South	0.484	*	(0.146)	3.3
1994	-0.472	*	(0.169)	-2.8
Intercept	-6.170	*	(0.249)	-24.8
Observations	55,204			
Null likelihood	2,936.7			

Residual likelihood	2,606.7	
Difference	330.1	
Model degrees of freedom	15	

* Significant at the .05 level.

Most of the same variables that showed differences across home-school status in cross tabulations were also significant in the regression analysis. Sex and age were retained as marginally significant. It seems that girls are slightly more likely to be home schooled than boys, and teenagers more likely than younger children. Household variables had stronger effects—family structure, mother's education, father's education, region of residence. The number of children in the household had a very strong effect. The main effect of income was not significant. However, the square of income had a relatively strong effect. This indicates that the families most likely to home-school their children are of middle income—neither rich nor poor. Race and ethnicity clearly had strong effects. Hispanics were less likely to be home schooled and Blacks were much less likely to be home schooled—especially in the two earlier years under study, 1994 and 1996. It seems that convergence between Blacks and Whites has taken place from 1994 to 1999, but the effect is not quite significant. We will have to await new rounds of surveys in order to see if this is a sustained trend.

One of the strongest influences on home schooling from Table 3 is that of having a non-working adult in the household. The coefficient of there being a non-working adult is large and highly significant. The cross-tabular results of Table 2 gave a hint that this relationship was diminishing across years, but the interaction with year was not significant in the multiple regression framework. However, the main effect of non-working remains. Sixty percent of home schooled children have a non-working adult in the home, compared with thirty percent of other children. If home schooling is limited to a particular subgroup, it is probably this one.

A major issue arising from the association of home schooling with the presence of a non-working adult is the possible limitations this presents to future growth. Although 40 percent of home-schoolers lived with working adults, at least one adult was in the labor force only part time in most cases (figures not shown). Fewer than 10 percent lived with two full-time working adults. If home schooling is primarily an activity undertaken by two-parent families with a non-working parent, it could be a self-limiting phenomenon. However, even if home schooling does remain mainly within this group, it has not come close to exhausting its constituency. Seven and one-half million two-adult households have a non-working adult at home, and the number has remained stable in recent years, despite declines in previous decades. More broadly, of 36 million women with children under 18, ten million do not work, and another 6.5 million work part time (U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics 2000). The number of home schooled children could grow from 790,000 to over 30 million without exhausting this core constituency.

Is it possible that home schooling may spread beyond this core group of two-parent families with a parent at home? Must it also be limited to households where parents have moderate to high education? While it would seem that having a (well educated) parent at home would be a prerequisite for engaging in home schooling, this is not an absolute requirement. Many home school households have working adults and adults with low education. In all three surveys a small number of home-schooled children lived with a single parent or with two adults in the labor force full time. In addition, a small number had no adult in the home with a high school diploma. A follow-up question in the 1999 NHES on participation in regular school by home schoolers showed that many of the home-schooled children who lived with working adults were also attending school at least part of the time. Still, a portion of parents remained who seemed to be defying logic by schooling their children at home without being home themselves. Further exploration of these cases might turn up special circumstances (home businesses, odd working hours, cooperative instructional arrangements) that could provide an explanation. Alternatively, these families could be making use of Internet courseware or other technologies to avoid the need for direct instruction. Many advice books and curricula promise home education can be successful even when parents have little time or training for the job. (Note 5)

Geographic distribution

One final way in which home school children differ from their peers is geographic location, as shown in Table 4. Home schoolers are more likely to be located geographically in places that have been destinations for internal migration. Using a division of the country according to migration patterns developed by Frey (2000), home schoolers are seen to be located in rural and suburban areas of the West which have been the recipient of migration streams from California and other immigration gateway states. Many of these areas have experienced explosive population growth. Growth, however, is not the main feature of areas where home-schoolers are found. The correlation of growth rate and home schooling rate of geographic areas is positive but small (around 0.2). Looking at a scatter plot of the two (not shown) makes it evident that home schooling is not found in booming growth areas nor in areas of decline but in places with moderate to high rates of growth. Nonetheless, if a person wanted to make a case that home schooling is on a path towards further growth, it would not hurt to point out that it is prevalent in growing areas that are at the leading edge of one of the major changes in migration patterns of the last few decades. Home schooling is tied to a broad social trend that has not yet played itself out.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Table 4

Estimated Percentage of Children Home Schooled by Geographic Location: CPS 1994

Geographic Region	Metropolitan Status	Lower bound	Point estimate	Upper bound
White gainers	Non-metro	1.69	2.34	3.00
White gainers	Suburb	1.27	1.81	2.34
Melting pots	Non-metro	1.14	1.60	2.06
Black&White	City	0.44	1.00	1.56
Black&White	Suburb	0.68	0.98	1.28
Slow growth	Non-metro	0.60	0.80	0.99
Slow growth	Suburb	0.52	0.66	0.81
Melting pots	Suburb	0.48	0.62	0.76
White gainers	City	0.13	0.58	1.02
Slow growth	City	0.32	0.50	0.68
Black&White	Nonmetro	0.19	0.38	0.57
Melting pots	City	0.22	0.35	0.49

Geographic Definitions

Immigrant melting pots
California, Hawaii, New Mexico, Texas, Florida, New Jersey, New York

Mostly White gainers
Alaska, Idaho, Montana, Oregon, Washington, Arizona, Colorado, Nevada, Utah, Wyoming

White and Black gainers
Alabama, Arkansas, Mississippi, Georgia, Tennessee, Delaware, N Carolina, S Carolina, Virginia

Slow growth/decliners
Louisiana, Connecticut, Rhode Island, Maine, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Vermont, D.C., Kentucky, Maryland, W Virginia, Pennsylvania, Michigan, Ohio, Illinois, Indiana, Wisconsin, Kansas, Missouri, Nebraska, Oklahoma, Iowa, Minnesota, N Dakota, S Dakota

Attitudes toward home schooling

The 1996 and 1999 NHES asked parents their reasons for undertaking home schooling, with 16 possible responses. Several themes emerge from these responses. See Table 5. First is the issue of educational quality. The parents of one-half the home schoolers in these surveys were motivated by the idea that home education is better education. A large share also viewed the issue in terms of shortcomings of regular schools: the parents of 30 percent of home-schoolers felt the regular school had a poor learning environment, 14 percent objected to what the school teaches, and another 11 percent felt their children weren't being challenged at school. Another theme had to do with religion and morality. Religion was cited by 33 percent of parents and morality by 9 percent. Practical considerations (transportation to school, the cost of private school) seemed of relatively minor importance. If attitudinal responses are to be believed, home schooling is not primarily a religious phenomenon, although religion is important. Families participating in home schooling do not cite cost as a barrier, even though one might presume that private schools could respond to their academic and moral concerns.

Table 5

Reasons Given by Parents for Choosing Home Schooling: 1996 and 1999 Home Schooled Children: NHES Surveys

Reason	Percent
Can give child better education at home	50.8

Religious reasons	33.0
Poor learning environment at school	29.8
Other reasons	23.0
Object to what school teaches	14.4
School does not challenge child	11.5
Family reasons	11.0
Child has special needs/disability	9.0
To develop character/morality	8.5
Other problem with available public/private schools	6.2
Student behavioral problems	5.3
Want private school but cannot afford it	3.4
Child has temporary illness	2.9
Parent's career	2.2
Transportation/distance/convenience	1.9
Could not get into a desired school	1.3

Many discussions of home school as a phenomenon refer to two classes of home schoolers—those from families with religious motivations and those with primarily academic concerns (Dobson 2000, Lines 2000a). To test this proposition, a latent class analysis was performed on the set of attitudinal questions listed above. The two-class model, however, provided only marginally better fit to the data than the null model. The BIC criterion, traditionally used to evaluate the fit of such models (see Raftery 1997), favors the null (one class) model over the two-class model. On the other hand, if weight is given to prior observations of two groups with two different sets of motivations, the two-class model might be preferred. Table 6 shows some of the characteristics of the two classes that emerge (using modal category extraction) from such a model. The first class of home schoolers contains 90 percent of the total, and resembles the smaller second class in all but a few attitudinal areas. Areas where there was a substantial difference between classes are shown in the bottom four rows of Table 6 (ranked from the largest to the smallest difference in odds of holding the attitude). The second, smaller class was more likely to name academic and other shortcomings of available schools, especially objections to what the school teaches, lack of challenge for the home-schooled child and poor learning environment. Religion was also likely to be named by the second, smaller class, although the effect was smaller than with the academic attitudes.

Table 6

**Latent Class Analysis Results:
Characteristics of Two Classes of Parents with Different Patterns of Reasons Given for Choosing Home Schooling: NHES Surveys**

	Class 1	Class 2
Total percentage in class	90.3	9.7
Object to what school teaches	9.1	60.2
School does not challenge child	8.9	36.3
Poor learning environment at school	25.3	64.8
Religious reasons	30.9	59.8

In summary, if there are two classes of home schoolers, they differ mostly in terms of the degree to which they express negative attitudes towards the schools available to them now. No simple division exists between religiously motivated and academically motivated parents. Due to the small sample of home schoolers available in the two NHES surveys, however, the evidence is still fragmentary on this point.

Discussion and Conclusion

Discussion

Although the evidence on characteristics of home schoolers is still incomplete, it is important that we take account of these characteristics now, rather than waiting for further data collections to provide additional detail. Home schooling,

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

despite being smaller and slower-growing than claimed by some advocates, is still an important emerging phenomenon. What it portends for our current system of schools is still unknown.

Home schooling has emerged with, and indeed is linked to, other emerging educational trends—on-line education and other systems that allow families and individuals to choose their own educational paths (school vouchers, charter schools). At the same time, it flies in the face of trends towards educational standardization, such as national curricula and systems of assessment. Another type of standardization is resulting from establishment of increasingly detailed systems of occupational credentialing and licensure (Adelman 2000). These trends might not be easily reconciled. High stakes testing, especially, has come under strong attack from home-schooling groups (see, for example, Home School Legal Defense Association 2001).

The period of institutional flux now reigning in education may be the start of a departure from the 20th century model of regimented instruction for students entering an industrializing world. Schools seem to have lost some of their legitimacy as they have lost a clear functional role in preparing youth for their role in the larger economic system (cf. Bowles and Gintis 1976, Dreeben 1968). Rather than representing a definite trend towards "individualizing" instruction, however, home schooling may represent an attempt by parents to reclaim the schooling process—to make schooling valuable in ways that are understandable to them through the cultural means at their disposal (Swidler 1986). This is not incompatible with Apple's (2000) description of home schooling as part of "conservative modernization." Yet home schooling may not be linked to a unified conservative agenda in quite the way he describes. There is a true tension between home educators and the school standards movement, just as there is between home schooling and the increasing demand by employers for occupationally specific training and credentials. What these movements have in common is not a conservative agenda but an attempt by each sector with an interest in schooling to gain greater control over the system.

It may be that home schoolers come to create their own, new schools, as predicted by Hill (2000). It may be that home schoolers remain independent. In either case, however, as home schooling grows, calls will continue for existing public schools to provide services that cannot be provided easily by home-school families themselves—such as advanced courses and extracurricular activities. Lines (2000b) has shown how schools in the state of Washington have reacted to this challenge. They have designed special programs and learning centers where parents can often take a more active role in the instructional process. If this continues as a trend, schools will find themselves increasingly opening their doors to parental participation in ways they have not in the past. At the same time, certain families will be allowed to pick and choose among school offerings. The pressures on schools that might result, in an environment with increasing competition from other instructional providers, are easily envisioned.

The alternative to accommodating home schoolers would involve political difficulties. First, home schoolers making no use of regular school facilities could not be counted on to provide political support for school funding. Second, the schools would lose an ally in fighting battles against standardization, test requirements and credentialing that make it increasingly difficult to provide a broad, general education to children. Dealing with home schoolers will require a difficult balance of competing claims. The success of traditional schools in dealing with the home-school phenomenon will depend on school leadership.

Conclusion

The data examined here show that it has established itself as an alternative to regular school for a small set of families, and is poised to continue its growth. In 1999 around 790,000 children between the ages of 6 and 17—around of 1.7 percent of the population that age—were being schooled at home, and in the late 1990s the number was apparently growing.

Home schoolers and their families were different from regular school attenders and their families, but the differences weren't that large. Some of the distinctive characteristics of home schoolers seemed to be decreasing. Home schoolers were likely to be non-Hispanic White, but there was some evidence of fading racial differences over time. Some distinctive characteristics of home schoolers seemed not to be changing very rapidly, but the characteristics needn't be thought of as limitations to future growth. Households with home-schooled children had moderate to high education and income and were located in the rural or suburban West. Home-schoolers were likely to live with two adults, with one not in the labor force or working part time.

We have just begun to see the emergence of home schooling as an important national phenomenon. Unless the needs of parents are met in different ways, it is likely that home schooling will have a large impact on the school as an institution in coming decades.

Notes

The author would like to thank Wendy Bruno for her helpful advice and Karen Kosanovich for providing tables on family employment trends. An earlier version of this article was presented at the annual meetings of the Population Association of America, Washington, D.C., March 2001. I report the results of research and analysis undertaken by Census Bureau Staff. It has undergone a more limited review than official Census Bureau publications. This report is released to inform interested parties of research and to encourage discussion.

1. A search of the ERIC database for 1999 revealed 106 citations under "charter schools," but only 47 under "home schooling."

2. Due to rules of disclosure limitation, there was no complete taxonomy of metropolitan/non-metropolitan status or urban/rural status in the CPS files. In this research a composite measure was created, using the three way central city, balance of MSA and Metropolitan classification if it was available. Otherwise, MSA size was used, with over 5 million classified as "city" and under 100,000 or non-metro classified as non-metro.

3. Lines data were for the 1995 school year, while the CPS data were collected in 1994. I adjusted Lines estimates downward by 5 percent to represent interim growth. If growth were faster, the proper adjustment would raise the estimate of CPS coverage relative to state reports, making my subsequent adjustment for undercount slightly too large.

4. To adjust home schooling to include non-reporting families I simply divided the CPS estimate in each state by the reporting rate found by Ray. Doing so provides a point estimate of well over 1 million home schoolers. However, this result isn't really plausible, as the bulk of the home schooled population turns up in a few states where Ray found extremely low rates (e.g., 0.5 million, or nearly half of all home-schoolers, in Oklahoma). I adopted a the simple assumption that the interview reporting rate is never lower than 20 percent. This eliminated the implausibly large numbers and resulted in what I believe is a fairly reasonable high-end estimate.

5. An example of this is the recent publication of a book entitled *The Complete Idiot's Guide to Home Schooling* (Education Week 2001). Many curriculum providers advertise their wares on the Internet and appear at home schoolers' conferences.

References

Adelman, Clifford. 2000. *A Parallel Postsecondary Universe: The Certification System in Information Technology.* Washington, D.C.: Office of Educational Research and Improvement, U.S. Department of Education.

Apple, Michael W. 2000. "The Cultural Politics of Home Schooling." *Peabody Journal of Education*. 75(1&2):256-271.

Archer, Jeff. 2000. "Home Study." *Teacher Magazine*. February.

Bielick, Stacey, Kathryn Chandler and Stephen P. Broughman. 2001. *Homeschooling in the United States: 1999.* (NCES 2001-033) Washington, DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Bowles, Samuel & Herbert Gintis. 1976. *Schooling in Capitalist America.* Basic Books.

Carothers, Mary Lou. 2000. "Florida Home Education Programs, 1999-2000." In Florida Department of Education: Statistical Brief. <http://www.firn.edu/doe/>.

Center for Education Reform. 2001. "Charter School Highlights and Statistics." Web address: www.edreform.com/pubs/chglance.htm.

Dobson, Linda. 2000. "A Brief History of American Homeschooling." Online article www.geocities.com/homeschoolers_success_stories/part1.html

Dreeben, Robert. 1968. *On What is Learned in School.* Addison-Wesley.

Education Week. 2001. "Private Schools: Help at Home." *Education Week.* April 11.

Farris, Michael. 1997. *The Future of Home Schooling: A New Direction for Home Education.* Washington, D.C.: Regnery Publishing, Inc.

Frey, William H. 2000. "Regional Shifts in America's Voting Aged Population: What do they mean for National Politics?" Population Studies Center Research Report 00-459. Ann Arbor, Mich: Institute for Social Research, University of Michigan.

Gardner, Howard. 2000. "Paroxysms of Choice." *New York Review of Books.* October 19.

Henke, Robin R., Phillip Kaufman, Broughman, and Kathryn Chandler. 2000. *Estimating the Home Schooled Population in the United States.* Technical Report (Draft). Washington, DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Hill, Paul T. 2000. "Home Schooling and the Future of Public Education." *Peabody Journal of Education* 75 (1&2):20-31.

Home School Legal Defense Association. 2001. "HSLDA News: Is this the Calm Before the Storm?" http://www.hslda.org/docs/news/hslda/200104201.asp

Jamieson, Amie, Andrea Curry and Gladys Martinez. 2001. *School Enrollment in the United States, Social and Economic Characteristics: October 1999*. Series P20-533. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Census Bureau.

Lines, Patricia M. 1999. "Homeschoolers: Estimating Numbers and Growth." Web edition. Washington, D.C.: Office of Education Research and Improvement, U.S. Department of Education.

Lines, Patricia M. 2000a. "Homeschooling Comes of Age." *The Public Interest*. (Summer):74-85.

Lines, Patricia M. 2000b. "When Home Schoolers Go to School: a Partnership Between Families and Schools." *Peabody Journal of Education* 75(1&2):159-186.

Nolin, Mary Jo, Jill Montaquila, Jean Lennon, Brian Kleiner, Kwang Kim, Christopher Chapman, Kathryn Chandler, Sean Creighton, and Stacey Bielick. 2000. *National Household Education Survey of 1999: Data File User's Manual, Volume I*. Washington, D.C.:National Center for Education Statistics.

Raftery, Adrian. 1995. "Bayesian Model Selection in Social Research." In *Sociological Methodology 1995*. Peter V. Marsden, ed. Oxford: Basil Blackwell. Pp. 111-164.

Ray, Brian. 1997. *Strengths of Their Own*. Salem, Oregon: NHERI Publications.

Rudner, Lawrence M. 1999. "Scholastic Achievement and Demographic Characteristics of Home School Students in 1998." *Educational Policy Analysis Archives* 7 (8). <http://epaa.asu.edu>.

Smith, Christian and David Sikkink. 1999. "Is Private Schooling Privatizing?" *First Things* 92(April): 16-20.

Swidler, Ann. 1986. "Culture in Action: Symbols and Strategies." *American Sociological Review*. 51(2, Apr.):273-286.

Trotter, Andrew. 1999. "For Profit Company to Offer High School Diploma over Internet." *Education Week*. April 21.

Trotter, Andrew. 2001. "Cyber Learning at Online High." *Education Week*. January 24.

U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics. 2000. "Distribution of families by type and labor force status of family members, 1940-2000" and "Employment status of women by presence and age of youngest child, March 1975-2000." Unpublished tables. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics.

U.S. Census Bureau. 2000. *Current Population Survey Design and Methodology*. Technical Paper 63. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Census Bureau and U. S. Bureau of Labor Statistics.

Walsh, Mark. 2001. "Former Education Secretary Starts Online-Learning Venture." *Education Week*. January 10.

Welner, Kariane Mari. 2000a. "Goodbye Public Schools: Homeschoolers Who Want to Dismantle the System." Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, New Orleans, Louisiana. (April)

Welner, Kariane Mari. 2000b. "Private Endeavors, Public Vision: Homeschoolers Who Support Public Schools." Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, New Orleans, Louisiana. (April)

Welner, Kariane Mari and Kevin G. Welner. 1999. "Contextualizing Homeschooling Data: A Response to Rudner." *Educational Policy Analysis Archives* 7 (13). http://epaa.asu.edu.

Washington Post. 2000. "Home Schooling's Net Effect." July 7.

About the Author

Kurt J. Bauman

Education and Social Stratification Branch
Population Division
U.S. Census Bureau
Washington, DC 20233-8800

Email: kurt.j.bauman@census.gov

Kurt Bauman is a demographer in the Education and Social Stratification Branch in the U.S. Census Bureau. His past research has explored the finding that, controlling for family background factors, predicted education levels for blacks are higher than those of whites in the U.S. He found that black educational attainment net of family background influences was found to have emerged in the 1950s or earlier, well in advance of affirmative action programs emerging in the 1960s. He has also researched school work, grades and family background influences on educational attainment. Other work has included projected educational attainment levels in the United States under varying assumptions about immigration trends.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language

Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 1141 times since May 17, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 27 **May 17, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**.
Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Mentoring Narratives ON-LINE: Teaching the Principalship[1]

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Svitlana Taraban
York University

Citation: Griffith, A. I. & Taraban, S. (2002, May 17). Mentoring narratives ON-LINE: Teaching the principalship. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(27). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n27.html.

Abstract

The need to develop new models for preparation of school administrators has been a prominent concern in educational discourse in the last decade. Having been criticized for the inadequate preparation of the school leadership cadre, academic departments responsible for training future school administrators have had to revisit their approaches and to reframe their teaching philosophies to ensure the readiness of their graduates for the challenges and complexities of school leadership. This article reports on the new model of principals' training that has been used in York University's Principals' Qualification Program (PQP) from the late 1990s onward. One component of the program brings traditional case methodology into a computer-mediated/on-line environment. The on-line cases are narratives from the everyday lives of the Ontario school administrators who serve as mentors in the on-line environment. Situating our discussion within the context of the rapidly changing educational landscape of Ontario, we focus on the PQP model to explore experientially generated case narratives as one method for teaching and learning the work of the local school administrator. We focus particularly on the teaching and learning embedded in computer-mediated or on-line case narratives used in training teachers for school leadership. We argue that the complexities of school leadership—the social, cultural, relational, ethical and moral context of school leadership—can be taught effectively through the reflective processes of on-line case narratives. We seek to contribute to the ongoing dialogue on the potential of new pedagogies and new technologies to help prepare the competent and responsible leaders for tomorrow's schools.

Introduction

The preparation of classroom teachers to be principals (local school administrators) is, at any time, a complex teaching process to re-frame individual horizons of professional interest and knowledge. The immediacy of classroom

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

teaching and learning that forms the lived experience of teachers must be brought into the context of relationships and responsibilities that extend throughout the school, its communities and the bureaucratic relations linking the school to the educational system. The principal must mediate these complex relationships. Indeed, complexity is one of the distinguishing features of the principalship. Traditionally, the work of the school principal has been to coordinate the relationships and tasks of the school with the community and the demands of the larger system in which the school is embedded. In Ontario education today, the preparation of principals for local school administration must also address the dramatic changes in public schooling that have been mandated by the current neo-Conservative government and the subsequent job unrest in the teaching profession. Thus, teaching and learning the work of the principal requires programs for preparing leaders that address the complexity of the position within the rapidly changing educational landscape of Ontario education.

In this article, we focus on York University's Principals' Qualification Program (PQP) to explore experientially generated case narratives as one method for teaching and learning the work of the local school administrator. We focus particularly on the teaching and learning embedded in computer-mediated or on-line case narratives used in training teachers for school leadership. We argue that the complexities of school leadership—the social, cultural, relational, ethical and moral context of school leadership—can be taught effectively through the reflective processes of on-line case narratives.

The Educational Context in Ontario

In Ontario, school administrators are working in a new and difficult context. The neo-Conservative government has been engaged in a dramatic restructuring and marketization of the Public and Catholic education systems. Curriculum, assessment and budgetary authority have been centralized in the Government and the Ministry of Education. "The Ontario government slashed welfare benefits by 20%, higher education budgets by 15%, and public schooling by some 12% ... [educational funding was cut] in excess of 1 billion dollars, if higher education is included along with primary and secondary education" (Axelrod, 2000, p. 2, 8). Boards of Education are closing low-enrolled schools and user fees for school facilities have been instituted. School Boards were amalgamated to form very large administrative units and supervisory staff has been reduced. Curricula are being (or have been) rewritten for all levels and subjects, and grade-level testing has been instituted. Teacher testing is on the immediate horizon although the method and focus of this centralized review process is as yet unknown. Principals and vice-principals have been removed from the teachers' unions, thus disrupting the collegial relationship on which school leadership has traditionally been grounded.

Educators in the educational system in Ontario are struggling to make the pedagogical, curricular and administrative changes at the required pace and form. Experienced teachers and administrators were given the opportunity for early retirement and many did so. Ontario is now experiencing a teacher and principal shortage that is expected to continue for some time. The morale of Ontario educators is low and strikes and job actions are not uncommon in Ontario school system.

At the same time and particularly in the large urban centers in Ontario, the schooling context of teaching and learning has changed. Immigration to Ontario, particularly to the Greater Toronto Area (GTA) from other provinces in Canada and from around the world, continues to be at the highest rate in Canada. There are more students as well as more students whose first language is neither English nor French, fewer teachers, and fewer resources. Ontario's education was developed and has been based on White, Anglophone, and European assumptions—assumptions that no longer hold for huge numbers of students and their families, nor for many of the teachers within urban systems. Students, parents and communities of diverse of languages, race/ethnicities, abilities and family structures form the everyday context of many local schools. Local Board initiatives to include the teaching and learning of equity and diversity have been undercut by the new curriculum (which excluded words such as "equity") and the intensification of teachers' classroom teaching hours.

It has been claimed that the current elected government is deliberately running the public and Catholic school systems into the ground so that charter schools and other private institutions will be welcomed into the education landscape (Barlow & Robertson, 1994). My research suggests that the traditional links between the local or regional organization of social class and the education system are being disrupted as Ontario re-orients its education system toward the requirements of a global economy (Griffith, 2000). This is the social and educational context of the current principals' qualifying programs.

The Principals' Qualification Program at York University

In Ontario, teachers who are appointed as school principals must have completed (or be in the process of completing) the Principals' Qualification Program (PQP). It is a required preparatory program offered by most universities in Ontario and, recently, by the principals' associations. The York University PQP is accredited by the Ontario College of Teachers and is offered through the Field Development unit of the Faculty of Education.[2] York's PQP was completely revised in 1997, shifting the emphasis of the course toward relational leadership (Regan & Brookes, 1995), leadership strategies for equity and diversity, and incorporating an action-research practicum. At any one time, 250–300 candidates are enrolled in the program. Ten to fifteen program facilitators (current school principals) teach in one of the two required programs at four course sites in the Greater Toronto Area. A focus on change at the school and system level is integrated into the program through the seminar topics and through an on-line mentoring process.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Case Methodology in the York University PQP

A small, but important feature of the York PQP (14 out of 125 hours) is taught via computer-mediated communication to groups of candidates who converse on-line. In contrast to the course seminars, the on-line groups are not site-based. PQP candidates are randomly assigned to online discussion groups (the number of the groups grew from eight in 1997 to sixteen in 1999, to 20 in 2000). Each on-line group consists of 15 - 20 candidates who are mentored by two principals from different Boards of Education in the GTA. The On-Line Mentors are volunteers and represent a variety of Public and Catholic Boards. They are recruited for their knowledge and experience, and for their 'fit' with the underlying principles of the York PQP. Each week, the On-Line Mentors post cases for discussion drawn from their everyday experiences as principals.

The on-line component of the program was developed for a number of reasons:

- To provide the opportunity for ongoing learning using computer-mediated technologies, including electronic mail and Internet information resources.

- To broaden the candidates knowledge of the range of issues and administrative practices of different Boards of Education across the GTA, for example to highlight differences between rural and urban schools, mono-cultural and multi-cultural schools, schools that are mono-lingual and those with a broad linguistic diversity.

- To extend the range of contacts so useful to recently appointed administrators.

- To provide a different learning medium for the candidates—one that is non-linear, reflective, and not tied to the schedules of face-to-face teaching and learning.

Computer-mediated discussion groups allow for interactions between experienced and aspiring administrators, mentoring relationships that no longer need to be confined to a single classroom or school. Indeed, the on-line technology allows for networking across the large distances of the GTA, and provides the opportunity for people working in diverse school situations to learn from each other through the discussion of cases drawn from the everyday experience of principals working across the diversity of GTA schools.

Case Methodology

Case methodology has a long history in education for leadership and administration. It originated as an instructional technique at Harvard University Law School in 1870 and later became widely accepted in a variety of professional disciplines. Clamp (web-page) defines a case as an account or description of a situation or sequence of events confronting an individual, a group of individuals, or an organization. Rather than deliver concepts and theories, cases (also called clinical correlation, leadership stories, real-life narratives, critical incidents, and vignettes) present situations for analysis about which decisions must be made. There are similarities of structure between case histories, clinical cases, problem-based learning and other experientially based methods in that they are all oriented to the particularities of practice while drawing on the generalities of theory. The purpose of cases and case-based instruction in any professional field relates directly to the nature of the body of knowledge that exists in that particular field (Merseth, 1997). For example, in teacher education cases are used to develop reflective practitioners and to promote teacher reflection and enhanced understanding (Richert, 1991). In the field of educational administration where decision-making skills are crucial, cases can offer opportunities to practice analysis, problem solving, action planning, and evaluation (Merseth, 1997).

In the educational studies in general and in the area of school administration in particular the interest in the case methodology is manifested through a wide incorporation of and experimentation with case-based instruction in pre-service and in-service training of teachers and administrators. To date, numerous guidebooks and collections of cases for principalship training have been published in North America (*cf*: Hanson, *Preparing for EducationalAdministration Using Case Analysis* (2000); Lynn, *Teaching and Learning with Cases: A Guidebook* (1999); Miller and Kantrov, *A Guide to Facilitating Cases in Education* (1998), Merseth, *Cases in Educational Administration* (1997)). At the university level, special centers have been established for research and promotion of the case methodology in the field of education (Pace University Center for Case Studies in Education is but one example). Likewise, educational journals devote a great deal of attention to this matter and provide a forum for discussion of the value of case methodology for preparation of educational cadre. For example, *The Journal of Cases in Educational Leadership (JCEL)* published by University of Utah is devoted solely to the publication of cases that can be effectively used in preparation of educational leaders.

Principal preparation programs have used case studies to remedy problems that arise in the gap between theory and practice. A major criticism of principal preparation programs has been: "Regardless of the year appointed, [principals] have been trained and certified as administrators through programs largely irrelevant to and grossly inadequate for the work responsibilities found in the school principalship" (Muse & Thomas, 1991). The use of cases that emphasize the "value of both theory and practice, experience and reflection" (Danzig, 1997, p. 125) were (and continue to be) viewed as an important way of addressing this criticism.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

The need to bridge the worlds of theory and practice in the training of school administrators has been accentuated by Danzig (1997; 1999) who developed a "leadership stories" approach for university training of school administrators. His model is based on a mentorship through narrative where experienced school administrators offer their experiences—their leadership stories—to the next generation of school principals. Danzig argues that "leadership stories (or "narrative research") is a powerful tool for connecting the privileged discourse of universities with the smart hands of experience – connecting theory to practice" (quoted in Hopkins, 1998).

According to Ashbough and Kasten (1991), cases can be used for several purposes:

- to help students acquire analytical skills;
- to develop the skills of synthesizing information;
- to promote concept development;
- to develop mature judgement and wisdom in a relatively risk-free environment;
- to illustrate and apply widely accepted techniques of administration.

Richert (1991) suggests that case methodology combines both artifactual and social elements. The artifactual component is the case itself, a description of an actual situation. The social component of case method is the discussion of the case by colleagues that usually takes the form of a case discussion (often referred to as a "case conference"). Our data suggest that case methodology also draws on the complexities embedded in the structure of narratives. We return to this point below.

Using Case Methodology On-line

The emergence of computer-based technologies opened up new possibilities for case conferencing. According to Desberg and Fisher (1996), the collision of technology and case methodology was inevitable. The combination of technology and case-based instruction gave birth to new applications of case methodology in teacher and principal preparation programs, for example video-cases, computer-based simulations, virtual case competitions on the World Wide Web, cases presented as CD-ROM and laser disks, and electronic meeting systems. Sudzina (1999) notes that the technological formats of case analysis can be written, spoken, or based in hypermedia utilizing the Internet or World Wide Web. Unlike the traditional classroom discussion of cases, electronic meeting systems (EMS) allow for constant ongoing dialogue between participants. Moreover, electronic brainstorming produces significantly more fresh ideas than traditional classroom analysis of cases (Olaniran, 1994). EMS also allows more people to interact without interruption and to input ideas simultaneously. Opportunity for the participation of all group members is also enhanced in computer-mediated case discussions.

On-line case discussion in the York University PQP resonates with the need to decrease the gap between classroom instruction and practice and to enhance students' ability to make good decisions that are at the core of school leadership. The PQP on-line cases are experiential narratives that focus on a broad set of concerns specific to the work of the principal. The cases, referred to by participants as scenarios, problems or situations, are posted weekly by the On-Line Mentors. Each week, candidates read the posted cases and respond to the issues, events and dilemmas of the case taking the perspective of a principal. This requires them to shift their reading of the cases from their experiential teaching horizon toward a one that encompasses the relationships within the school, the school community and the educational system with it's diverse participants.

The role of case discussion facilitator is important in case methodology generally and the York PQP specifically. The facilitator guides the discussion by probing, directly challenging, or simply observing the discussion process (Merseth, 1997). Feedback plays an important role in the learning process: as people receive information about the results of their actions, they are able to correct themselves progressively until they achieve the intended results (Silver, 1987). The PQP On-Line Mentors, all of whom were classroom teachers prior to becoming a principal, bring their knowledge of teaching and learning to the CMC environment. They provide feedback in the form of comments addressed to candidates' responses, suggestions for different presentation strategies, ideas for deepening the responses, or concluding thoughts. The On-Line Mentors also direct discussions and monitor candidates' participation in order to facilitate discussions that are reflective and thoughtful. In order to make case discussions challenging, educative and interesting, On-Line Mentors may make suggestions and ask questions related to the posted case.

The on-line narratives are written rather than oral interactions, often presented in a laconic and point specific form rather than lengthy and comprehensive manner. The audiences for whom the narratives are constructed are other educators attending or teaching the course. Although one face-to-face meeting of the on-line groups is scheduled during the course, candidates may never meet their on-line mentor or other members of their on-line group. Group cohesion is developed through a combination of required participation, the skill of the on-line mentor, and the ongoing involvement of the participants.

Case methodology has changed in recent years from the method of instruction based on face-to-face discussion of oral cases/narratives confined to the classroom space to computer-mediated asynchronous discussion of on-line cases in virtual classrooms/cyber-classrooms. Narratives in cyberspace, rather than being a part of an oral discourse, entail new communicative styles and ways of engagement with texts/cases on the part of the learners. In theorizing of learning, claims have been made that we learn from the other's response to what we convey. Thus, learning the art of school leadership through on-line narratives necessitates the learners to put their responses out there and to find out what comes back.

A unique feature of the York PQP cases posted on-line is that often they present an account of events that happened in the same week (or sometimes even the same day) as the case is posted for discussion. While varying in content and length, the cases are authentic narratives from the work experience of GTA principals. As such, they have some pedagogical similarity to more traditional principal training methods such as "inbox" and "shadowing" exercises. Some of the cases posted by On-Line Mentors open up with the words like: "Just a quick situation we had at our school this week that caused us some thought" or "Here is the situation based on a real case that happened recently." The fact that cases posted for discussion are "fresh" cases enables On-Line Mentors to enrich the dialogue by adding new details and nuances to the case and informing participants about the trajectory of events. Unlike other case study models that have been 'worked up' for teaching purposes, these case narratives are generated in the immediacy of the principals' workday and give a strong sense of the complexities of the fast-changing educational landscape in Ontario.

Case Narratives in On-line Learning

The literature on case study methodology neglects one of its most striking features. The case studies are narratives – #151;stories constructed with an audience in mind and located in a particular time and space. They are expressions of local knowledge, both constructing and depending for their sense on a world known in common. Rosenwald and Ochberg (1992) claim that, "The culture speaks itself through each individual story…. Narratives are a chorus of coordinated stories." On-line cases, as narratives, are the chorus of coordinated stories of Ontario schools today. As narratives, they suggest issues that are both practical and theoretical: " Studying cases actually relies on a dialectic between events and meanings, practice and theory. We learn from the narrative as we reflect on the content and make sense of it based on what we know and believe. In studying the particular, we consider the general; similarly, we challenge the general by studying the particular" (Richert, 1991, p.140-141).

Our data point to the importance of case narratives for situating on-line speakers in the stories and events of their profession. The use of narratives brings into view the implicit and explicit ethical and moral issues that permeate the stories of schooling. Narratives bring the complexity of the coordinated stories about school leadership and administration to the medium of on-line group learning. Equally important, they allow beginners "to consider and inspect the informal or tacit systems which exist side-by-side with the formal manifest systems operating in schools and organizations' (Danzig, 1997, p. 124).

Teaching and Learning Complexity using Narratives

One of the program challenges that confront PQP candidates and their program teachers are to develop the skill to see the case narratives through the eyes of an administrator rather than a teacher. Our prior experiences, history and knowledge shape our interpersonal engagement with others and form the interpretative lenses through which we "see" (analyze) a particular narrative. Working through case narratives with other members of the on-line group is one way of teaching and learning new ways of seeing the events of the school day.

The following case narrative was posted early in the program.

> Posted case experience:You are the principal who has been trying to visit a teacher who is on the first year of a two-year probationary contract. Often when you scheduled a visit, the teacher was absent that day. Your collective agreement indicates that the principal will endeavor to give 48 hours notice before the teacher is observed for evaluation purposes. There have been a number of people (parents and students) complaining that the teacher's classroom control is unsatisfactory. Your Superintendent wants any terminations recommended within the week. You tell the teacher at 8:30AM that you will be visiting her tomorrow afternoon. She says that is "unacceptable" and walks away. What will you do?

In the case responses posted early in the York PQP, candidates have difficulty seeing the complexity of cases as well as to sort through the diversity of approaches to a posted case—what Bridges (1992) calls the one best decision syndrome. Particularly during the first weeks of the course, students often headed in the direction of searching "right" answers rather than exploring the case complexities. This observation resonates with the findings of a growing body of research on the new computer mediated modalities of teaching/learning and the challenges they pose for learners who are required to interact with knowledge in a new way. Research on computer mediated instruction in the training of school administrators suggests that students oftentimes tend to look for a right answer and thus are "likely to focus on surface problems rather than underlying problems. Thus, the solutions would ultimately not solve the root of the problem and are unsatisfactory for the school setting" (MacNeil, 1997). Addressing this issue, MacNeil (1997) argues that the ambiguities and complexities of school decision-making should be at the heart of computer-mediated case instruction and that case study methods that came to education from the fields of law and business need to be re-examined as a method of instruction for use in the preparation of school leaders.

In response to the case narrative above, the candidates' responses were diverse but focused on the administrative and bureaucratic 'rules' of the principalship. For example, responses were,

- Judgmental: "This is a new employee, who is arrogant and does not fit the needs and profile of the school community."
- Legalistic: "Termination is a multi-step process beginning with a plan for improvement."
- Few of the responses were collegial: "Find out from discussion with the teacher what his/her perceptions are about the students. As a principal, I might already have some prior knowledge/history about the key players or instigators." Even fewer focused on the school as a social and cultural unit with interdependent relationships across faculty, students and staff.
- Supervisory: "... this can be confirmed through the appraisal process. This can be targeted as an area of growth for this teacher."

In part, the tendency to assume there was one best answer to a posted case was supported by the on-line medium. A first response to the computer-mediated case discussion sets the frame for analysis, apparently limiting the scope of potential responses for other participants. Students had access to the responses of other group members that had been posted earlier. Often, the subsequent responses did not take up different perspectives and were greatly influenced by the ideas and thoughts from prior responses—a kind of group think such as that which occurs in face-to-face groups. One of the students summed up her frustration in the following way: "I have read all the answers and now don't have anything to add."

As candidates continued through the program, they found ways to work towards an understanding of the complexities of collaboration and school-based issues. For example, one student opted for an approach that would allow her to respond to the cases without experiencing the influence of the thinking of her group members. "I have not read any answers provided thus far in fear of not being able to provide my own opinions or having them all said already." Yet another candidate noted, "This year I am not reading anyone else's [responses] until I have done mine." After posting her responses, she read the responses of her classmates and wrote her comments that supported or criticized other's responses. Regardless of the strategies candidates use to find their 'voices' on-line, the collaborative capacity of the on-line medium supports candidates' learning of the range of perspectives on a given issue as well as bringing into view the complexities of the issues facing school leaders.

Ongoing feedback from the On-Line Mentors as well as subtle peer assessment are salient components of the PQP. They contribute to the development of the candidates' ability to address the issues in a more complex ways, to identify approaches that are more effective than others, and to set forward their reasons for choosing a particular approach. Take, for example, the response of the on-line mentor when closing the case noted above:

> Let me offer some thoughts on the situation. As principal, I realize that teacher evaluation is stressful, and I'm dealing with a fellow human being. I must never lose sight of that fact. She and I have different roles but we are two equal people. Remembering that lets me approach problem solving with a win-win goal in mind.

Another on-line mentor addressed the focus on the 'right' answer in his follow-up message to candidates: "I preface this feedback with the disclaimer that I, like you, am giving my opinion. There are no right or wrong answers to this issue… I think growth lies in the debate, and the opportunity to see many different approaches to the same set of facts." In the on-line mentor responses, we see a complex teaching and learning about the social and professional mores of the principalship.

As the course progresses, candidates felt freer to speak from their professional experiences in the teaching profession and from their life experiences as people interested in education. Bringing their life experiences to bear on an administrative framework, students came up with diverse (often even polar) responses and felt free to disagree with one another. The consensual uniformity of candidates' standpoints was less present in the analysis of the cases that dealt with ethical concerns or involved moral judgements. The following case is illustrative:

> *The Case:* A parent has phoned the Superintendent to complain that her son has been given a mark that is unfair. The Superintendent phoned the principal saying that the parent seemed to be making a good point. The principal is asked to deal with it!
>
> *The Details:* Jack is an "A" student who has scholarship offer from a major university if he can maintain his average in this, his graduating semester. The head of the geography department discovered that Jack had sold an essay to another student in the same class who submitted it to the teacher as his own. Jack has written the essay last year when he was taking a different geography course. Jack submitted a different, original paper that reflected his usual high standards, and was given a 98. When the department head realized what had transpired, both students were given a zero for that portion of the course (40%) which was evaluated on the basis of the essay. The parent had

> called the department head to explain that she is a single parent who cannot afford to send Jack to university without the scholarship, which will be denied if Jack gets a zero. The department head would not change the mark and the mother appealed to the principal. The principal was still investigating the situation when the Superintendent called. The mother had explained to the Superintendent that the principal was refusing to deal with it.

Two of the student responses to this case were:

> Jack needs to understand the severity of his behavior and the consequence that was put in place was appropriate. That being said, I don't believe that his future should be destroyed as a result. We all make mistakes and need to assume the responsibility of our behavior. Consequences are put into place in order to facilitate learning. Hopefully, we learn from our mistakes and move on. Some creative problem solving is needed here. Perhaps, Jack could be given the opportunity to make up this mark. Assign him another paper and allow the grade for that paper to replace the zero.

And:

> Based on the four responses that I have read, everyone seems to be concerned with a variety of factors regarding Jack's zero for an essay in Geography class. My question to all of you is, however, quite simple: Did Jack actually commit a crime? After all, the essay he submitted was an original piece of work in which he received a 98. This is obviously a bright student! On this basis alone, Jack should receive full credit for whatever his essay was worth… I do not believe it to be a crime, unless there is a specific school policy on the selling term papers, and this is where the key lies! If no such policy exists, Jack didn't do anything wrong, his friend did. After all, there are hundreds of Internet sites where one can purchase term papers for a nominal fee. If Jack had legally set up his own business on the Internet, and his friend had purchased the paper electronically, is Jack still responsible? No way! Jack is innocent!

The experientially based case narratives allow participants to connect the case to other narratives from their own experiences or the experiences of someone they know. This kind of reflection was encouraged by the On-Line Mentors who often peppered their comments, feedback, and summaries with instances from previous events evoked by the narrative cases and responses. For example, with reference to the case narrative of the teacher who would not agree to have the principal come to her classroom (above), the on-line mentor stated in parentheses:

> One of the common mistakes that I have seen principals make occurs at this stage. Instead of checking for data, the principal reacts to the teacher's stance by creating a confrontation and setting up a win / lose situation. The principal must manage to be part of the solution, not the problem.

He then went back to the case under discussion, focusing on his plan of administrative action.

Juxtaposing similar narratives enabled students to identify common themes and to unravel and refine the problems that are at the heart of the narratives from the life of educational administrators. Equally important, this process helped students to anticipate the consequences of their proposed actions and to generate more effective solutions. For example, one of the posted case narratives dealt with school closure,

Case: You are the principal of a school that has been identified for possible closure. The demographics in your board suggest that there are about 6,000 excess student places in schools in your board. The government has set down a tight timeline which dictates that School Boards that want to increase their funding for maintenance and new school construction in growth areas, must identify schools by December that will close in June 1999. Although the final decision has not been made, the fact that your school has been targeted is of great concern. As a principal of this school, what role should you play in the next few critical weeks?

Some of the participants juxtaposed similar narratives dealing with the same situation. One of the students wrote:

> When I was talking to a retired principal about this case he told me that many years ago the board that I work for was going to convert an old elementary school in a prominent section of the town into the board office. Apparently the principal decided to inform many vocal parents about this in an effort to stop the closure. The parents were successful in keeping the school open but the principal found himself as Vice Principal in a smaller school out in the country.

An encounter with a case invites the reader to forge connections between his narrative and other narratives (Shulman, 1996). Inquiring into the relationships between cases and theory, Shulman states that to assert that a narrative is a case is to engage in an act of theory. To become a case, a narrative "must be seen as an exemplar of a class, an instance of a larger category." (p. 208). He further argues that "it appears to be a characteristic of our species that stories explicitly breed yet other stories and, implicitly, the categories of analysis that connect stories to one another conceptually. Even in the concrete act of narrative, underlying theoretical categories emerge and often become explicit." (p. 209). Therefore, relating cases to one another and relating cases to larger categories of which they are instances helps to answer the question "what is this case of?" and connect it to organizing principles or theories (Shulman, 1996).

The complexity of narratives, and case narratives are no exception, supports the teaching and learning of the coordinated stories of schooling and the principalship. A narrative always tells more than the story line, often more than the story teller is aware of saying (Mishler, 1984). Working with cases, or narratives, in a group situation requires learning to manage the complexities of multiple perspectives and diverse points of view as group members work through the artifactual, social (Richert, 1991), and cultural features of the narrative. In educational administration where the thinking that lies behind effective leadership is complex and varied, this understanding of the relational, cultural and systemic levels becomes extremely important. The PQP's interactive computer-based discussion of case narratives emerges as "one means of socializing neophyte administrators, that is *aspiring administrators begin thinking like the practitioners they wish to become* [emphasis added] " (Ashbaugh & Kasten, 1991).

Traditionally, the emphasis in principal preparation programs was placed (and oftentimes continues to be placed) on teaching practical skills and job specific knowledge that would allow neophyte administrators to cope successfully with challenges and demands of principalship. According to Mitchell and Tucker (1992, p.30), "educators tend to think of leadership as a matter of taking action and getting results." Less prominent has been a concern for an ethical dimension of school leadership which in part can be explained by the fact that in literature on school administration the work of school leaders was compared to and consequently viewed through the lenses of effective management and problem-solving skills rather than through the perplexities and ambiguities arising from the need to make decisions and choices that have significant ethical ramifications for all of those involved. In the last decade, the evolving concepts of leadership attempted to address the previously overlooked and under-theorized aspect of ethics of school leadership. Among the theories that explored the "ethics-leadership" nexus were the concept of moral leadership, the ethics of caring, transformational leadership, to name a few. These theories testified, at least to some extent, that "leadership is less a matter of aggressive action than a way of thinking and feeling—about ourselves, about our jobs, and about the nature of the educational process" (Mitchell and Tucker, 1992, p. 30).

Despite the recognition (at the theoretical level) of the importance of addressing the issue of ethics in the preparation of school leaders, this question has continued to receive only peripheral attention at the level of practice and, by and large, was not incorporated into the formats of principal preparation programs offered by universities and principals' associations. It is within this context that narratives in general, and on-line narratives in particular, emerged as a pedagogical space for exploration of the issues of ethics as it relates to school leadership. As such, on-line narratives provide an opportunity to shift the focus from teaching skills to teaching reflection and thinking. Narratives that present explicit (or otherwise) ethical dilemmas and challenges faced by school leaders require a clear vision and ethical commitment on the part of those in the position of decision-making. Narratives become a powerful pedagogical tool for helping future administrators to "think and feel" (rather than to judge and fix), to reflect and listen, to challenge widely held assumptions and biases and finally, to shape and articulate the core values. In his article on leadership stories, Danzig (quoted in Hopkins, 1998) notes, that "Professionals need to understand not only the technical aspects of their job but moral basis of their work. Stories provide a more complete view of the meaning of professional practice." Indeed, calling for articulation of individual moral stances, narratives offer a pedagogical space for engaging with the aspects of ethics as it relates to the everyday work of school administrator, and, more broadly, to the mission and goals of school leader at this historical juncture.

Returning to our analysis of the PQP on-line narratives, student responses to less complex and more transparent cases often resulted in producing collective virtual texts where each ensuing individual script, more or less, echoed the line of thinking developed in responses posted earlier. In contrast, the responses to case narratives that drew on local experience with ethical issues embedded in the stories did not turn into unitary, virtual texts—one-best solution—produced by collective efforts of on-line participants. Instead, those cases generated the breakdowns and discontinuities of the texts and the plurality of individual standpoints. Rather than searching for a common ground and attempting to fit their responses into the Procrustean bed of emerging collective narrative, the students were challenged to

- voice their positions,
- develop their on-line identities as future school leaders,
- produce their idiosyncratic texts that did not necessarily fit into the evolving trajectory of thinking about the posted case,
- and finally, produce polyphonic virtual texts in which the center of gravity was shifted towards diversity of opinions and plurality of voices.

Concluding Comments

Our analysis of the on-line narrative cases and responses of the on-line groups in York University's PQP shows some of the features that contribute to an effective use of case studies in an on-line environment. While York University's PQP has a variety of pedagogical forms including course seminars, an action practicum and the on-line discussion groups, a cornerstone of the program is reflective practice. The Program Facilitators who have the major responsibility for the program have built reflective practice into each section of the course. The case narratives and the

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

interaction of the On-Line Mentors support and enhance the reflective features of the PQP within their group. The case narratives are drawn from the immediate school experiences of the principals who serve as On-Line Mentors and the character of such case narratives engages the student in a reflective process. Posted cases situated in the life of the school construct the case narrative as an event worthy of reflection. The necessarily-reflective character of the on-line discussion groups build on the social and cultural complexities of the narrative format in interesting, non-linear ways.

The indicators of successful utilization of computer-mediated communication in the PQP are two-fold. First, there is a high level of candidate participation in the discussion of cases. While 14 hours of on-line participation is a course requirement, we have found that many of the candidates participate in the on-line discussions for more than the required hours. Second, despite their workload and variety of commitments, few On-Line Mentors withdraw from the program. The PQP archives show that the mentor / principals were positive about their role as On-Line Mentors as opportunities for learning and professional growth. The following response exemplifies the attitude of the principals participating as On-Line Mentors in the PQP: "This is my third year mentoring Principal candidates at York University. The reason that I do this is to increase my own learning and test the effectiveness of electronic communication." (A Principal in a grade 7-OAC school).

Our analysis points to two other features of case study methodology. First, cases that link to the professional experience of teachers provide the cognitive basis for generalizing from local experience to the more-general perspective required of school principals. In contrast to the uncertainty and subsequent 'group-think' that occurs when candidates must respond from within the conceptual framework of educational administration, when candidates are able to construct responses based on their experience the resulting diversity of response and debate provides fertile ground for teaching by the on-line mentor. Second, encouraging narrative forms would seem to enhance the complexity of the on-line responses. Beginning in the everyday experience of school administrators and constructing case studies that evoke narratives that include ethical and moral issues would seem to be an effective way to teach leadership.

In sum, the texts produced via the medium of technology become excellent "raw" material for thinking about and reflecting upon the nature of the school leadership. They push the students to explore the limits of their knowledge, to test the strengths and merits of their beliefs, to encounter other views, to share values and to reflect upon the vicissitudes of the school principalship. Pedagogically speaking, narratives that include moral and ethical issues are an effective way of teaching the art of school leadership and of developing and strengthening the sense of ethical responsibility in future educational leaders.

Notes

[1] Article prepared for the Fifth Annual Leadership Conference on Ethics and Values, Bridgetown, Barbados, Sept 25—Oct 1, 2000. We would like to thank Terry Gray, the volunteer On-Line Mentors and the Program Facilitators of our principals' program for their excellent teaching and their comments on this work.

[2] The York PQP does not carry university credit.

[3] These similarities were brought to our attention by one of the principals teaching in the York PQP who had previously been an On-Line Mentor.

[4] As with all narratives, the on-line cases are located in time and space—within a particular course context that shapes the boundaries of the stories. The course philosophy attends to those features of educational administration that deal with human experiences and interactions, suggesting that the relational character of leadership is as important for administration as are specific educational acts and regulations. The majority of electronic archived cases from the program year that we selected for our analysis are narratives that emphasize the complexity of people's behavior and interactions. The cases and responses emphasize the skills of problem solving, analysis and critical and creative thinking rather than specific knowledge of any particular educational issue.

[5] The data for this article were drawn from (archived) on-line discussions between PQP candidates and volunteer mentors during one of the recent program years.

References

Ashbaugh, C. & Kasten, K. (1991). *Educational Leadership: Case Studies for Reflective Practice.* New York: Longman.

Axelrod, P. (2000). *Neo-conservatism and the Politics of Education in Ontario.* Paper presented at the Faculty Orientation, Faculty of Education, York University. September 7.

Barlow, M. & Robertson, H. (1994). *Class Warfare: The Assault on Canada's Schools.* Toronto: Key Porter.

Bridges, E. (1992). *Problem-Based Learning for Administrators*. ERIC Clearing House for Educational Management.

Clamp, J.C. (web-page). *Teaching through the Case Method*. Available on-line <http://www.abacon.com/lefton/case-method.html>

Danzig, A. (1999). How Might Leadership be Taught? The Use of Story and Narrative to Teach Leadership. *International Journal of Leadership in Education* , 2(2), pp.117-131.

Danzig, A. (1997). Leadership Stories: What Novices Learn by Crafting the Stories of Experienced School Administrators. *Journal of Educational Administration*, 35(2), pp. 122-137.

Desberg, P. & Fisher, F. (1996). Using Technology in Case Methodology. In Colbert et al. (eds.), *The Case for Education: Contemporary Approaches for Using Case Methods* (pp.39-55). Boston, MA: Allyn & Bacon.

Griffith, A. (2000). Texts, Tyranny and Transformation: Restructuring in Ontario. In J.P. Portelli & R.P. Solomon (eds.), *The Erosion of Democracy in Education: From Critique to Possibilities* (pp. 83-98). Calgary: Detselig Press.

Hanson, K. (2000). *Preparing for Educational Administration Using Case Analysis*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Hopkins, G. (1998). *Follow the Leader: School Principals in Training*. Available on-line <http://www.educationworld.com/a_admin/admin048.shtml>

Lynn, L. (1999). *Teaching and Learning with Cases: A Guidebook*. Chappaqua, NY: Seven Bridges Press.

MacNeil, A. (1997). *Case Study Method and Electronic Meeting System for Principal Preparation*. Available on-line <http://www.coe.uh.edu/insite/elec_pub/HTML1997/el_macn.htm>

Merseth, K. (1997). *Cases in Educational Administration*. New York: Longman.

Mishler, E. (1991). *Research Interviewing: Context and Narrative*. Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.

Miller, B. & Kantrov, I. (1998). *A Guide to Facilitating Cases in Education*. Portsmouth, NH: Heinemann.

Mitchell, D. & Tucker, S. (1992). Leadership as a Way of Thinking. *Educational Leadership*, February, pp. 30-35.

Muse, I. & Thomas, G. (1991). The Rural Principal: Select the Best. *Journal of Rural and Small Schools*, 4(3), pp. 32-37.

Olaniran, B. (1994). Group Performance in Computer-Mediated and Face-to-Face Communication Media. *Management Communication Quarterly*, 7, pp. 256-281.

Regan, H. & Brooks, G. (1995). *Out of Women's Experience: Creating Relational Leadership*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Corwin Press.

Richert, A. (1991). Using Teacher Cases for Reflection and Enhanced Understanding. In Lieberman, A. & Miller, L. (eds.), *Staff Development in the '90s: New Demands, New Realities, New Perspectives* (pp. 113-131). NewYork: Teacher College Press.

Richert, A. (1991). Case Methods and Teacher Education: Using Cases to Teach Teacher Reflection. In Tabachnic, R. & Zeichner, K. (eds.), *Issues and Practices in Inquiry-Oriented TeacherEducation* (pp. 130-150). New York: The Falmer Press.

Rosenwald, G. & Ochberg, L. (1992) (eds.), *Storied Lives: The Cultural Politics of Self-Understanding*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Shulman, L.S. (1996). Just in Case: Reflections on Learning from Experience. In Colbert,J., Desberg, P. & Trimble, K (eds.), *The Case for Education: Contemporary Approaches for Using Case Methods* (pp.197-217). Boston, MA: Allyn & Bacon.

Silver, P. (1987). The Center for Advancing Principalship Excellence (APEX): An Approach to Professionalizing Educational Administration. In Murphy, J. & Halliger, P. (eds.), *Approaches to Administrative Training in Education*

(pp. 67-82). New York: State University of New York Press.

Sudzina, M. (1999). Organizing Instruction for Case-Based Teaching. In McNergney, R., Duchame, E. & Duchame, M.(eds.), *Educating for Democracy: Case-Method Teaching and Learning* (pp.15-27). Mahwah, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.

About the Authors

Alison I. Griffith, PhD, is Associate Professor at the Faculty of Education, York University, ON, Canada. As Associate Dean of the Field Development unit at York University, she is actively involved in the design and implementation of professional development programs for Ontario educators and has published extensively in the area of school leadership and educational reforms.

Svitlana Tarabanholds Master's degree in Educational Administration from University at Buffalo. Currently, she is a Doctoral candidate at the Faculty of Education, York University, Canada.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 1078 times since May 31, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 28 **May 31, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Elm Street School: A Case Study of Professional Development Expenditures

H. Alix Gallagher
Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison

Citation: Gallagher, H. A. (2002, May 31). Elm Street School: A case study of professional development expenditures. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(28). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n28.html.

Abstract

This article addresses the question of how much is spent on teachers' professional development. A review of the literature finds two problems that have frequently led to inaccurate estimates of professional development spending: 1) the accounting codes that are used in many studies provide little description of spending, and 2) studies generally focus on district or state expenditures for professional development, but do not collect data on school-level spending. These problems are compounded by the fact that studies define professional development spending differently, and thus it is difficult to compare findings across studies. In an effort to begin to address this problem, this study utilizes a detailed cost structure to analyze both district and school site expenditures on professional development across cost categories. The study found that school-level expenditures were a significant source of professional development for teachers. This has implications for the methodologies used to estimate current professional development expenditures and what level of expenditures would be necessary to generate dramatic improvements in student achievement.

In a climate of standards-based reform, schools are being called upon to assure that all students achieve to high standards. While most experts agree that extensive staff development will be necessary to improve instruction so this goal can be realized (Birman et al., 2000; Corcoran, 1995; Hertert, 1997; Killeen, Monk and Plecki, 2000; Little, 1993), few studies have identified effective professional development and even fewer have documented the professional development costs associated with implementing powerful, focused reform. This article shows how building knowledge about the level and structure of professional development spending necessary to achieve the goals of standards-based reform requires three changes in research design. First, a methodology needs to be developed that improves on traditional data used to identify spending. Second, it is necessary to have an analytical framework to understand the types of spending on professional development. Finally, it is important to accurately estimate the professional development resources available at schools, which are frequently the focus of standards-based reform and which can make decisions to augment or decrease the professional development resources available to teachers.

This case study extends a methodology developed by Hawley-Miles (Miles et al., 1999; Miles and Hornbeck, 2000) and her colleagues to collect district-level data on professional development spending to the school level and analyzes that data using the professional development cost structure developed by Odden, Archibald, Fermanich and Gallagher (2001). This case study was part of a larger research project that examined several urban districts' spending on instructional improvement. It is an early step of a broader research program that seeks to determine the level of professional development spending and spending strategies that will lead to improved teaching and higher student achievement. This case highlights Elm Street School, a K-8 school in a large urban district in the Mid-West that used professional development as an integral part of a coordinated schoolwide reform. Professional development is defined here as any activity intended to build teacher knowledge, skills and classroom instructional expertise. This includes, for example, workshops, teacher coaching, work with consultants, and the cost of teacher time to participate in activities designed to lead to professional growth; since this case study examines district and school expenditures, it does not cover activities that have no cost for the district or school (for example, course-taking paid for by teachers).

This case study seeks to answer three questions: 1) What is Elm Street's strategy for improving student achievement? 2) How does professional development support this strategy? 3) How does Elm Street allocate resources for professional development? In an attempt to answer these questions, prior research on professional development costs was reviewed. The first section provides an overview of the findings, along with an analysis of the strengths and weaknesses of those studies. The analysis leads to an explanation of the methodology used to understand Elm Street's resource allocation. Next, Elm Street's educational strategy is explained in light of its district context. Finally, Elm Street's professional development spending is examined in terms of funding sources and the Odden et al. (2001) cost structure.

1. Prior Research

This section discusses eight studies on professional development spending. Taken as a whole, these studies highlight three important issues in this area of research:

- One common source of data is fiscal accounting codes. Studies that rely on this data source generally do not have detailed descriptive information about the nature of the professional development that was purchased. Other studies have sought to avoid this problem by using alternate data sources and focusing on the type of professional development provided to teachers. These studies have generally lacked detailed information about professional development spending.
- Researchers have used different analytical categories when reporting on professional development spending. As a result, it is difficult to make accurate comparisons across studies.
- Most studies have focused on spending at the district level. Few, if any, studies provide information about the professional development resources available at the school level. Since schools can be the locus of much decision-making about professional development, the lack of knowledge about school-level professional development spending may lead to inaccurate estimates of professional development resources available to teachers.

The studies reviewed in this section place the current case study in the research context by highlighting methodological issues and also showing what is currently known about professional development spending.

In one of the first major studies on the costs of professional development, Little et al. (1987) used interviews, surveys and state documents to analyze professional development spending in California in terms of school, district, regional, and state expenditures for participants' time and for the cost of providing the professional development activity. This is a landmark study because of its focused analysis on the quality of professional development and because it attempted a comprehensive analysis of professional development spending. The authors found that, on average, professional development spending equaled approximately 5% of the total classroom costs (or $4,379 per staff member; $6,880 in 2000 dollars).

The analysis provides a good large-scale picture of professional development spending. However, the estimates include the cost of two items that make them problematic: uncompensated teacher time (worth an estimated 60 cents for every dollar spent by the district on professional development); and lane salary increases resulting from credits earned through professional development activities (estimated as 61% of total staff development costs). These two items dramatically increase the estimated expenditures, yet uncompensated teacher time is not a direct cost. More importantly, salary increases are a legal part of teacher contracts and could not be reallocated to professional development strategies. Classifying these expenditures as professional development expenses is not useful for an analysis like the present one, which is focused on the actual dollars available for professional development at the school site. With the present value of semester credits and uncompensated teacher time excluded from the analysis, Little et al. found that professional development accounted for around 1.4% of total classroom expenditures (or $1,229 per staff member; $1,931 in 2000 dollars). It is also important to note that although Little gathered data on "investment in school-based staff development," she found comparatively few of these expenditures. Since the report does not include survey instruments and interview protocols, it is unclear if such spending was not found because she did not look for school-level discretionary spending or if schools lacked sufficient control over their own budgets to provide professional development.

Little's use of non-budgetary documents allowed her to avoid some of the difficulties that arose in many other studies on professional development expenditures, which utilized budgets as the sole data source. As Chambers (1999) has argued, since accounting codes track resources only by source and expenditure categories created for fiscal accounting purposes, they do not provide meaningful information about many types of expenditures and their results. The lack of descriptive data in typical fiscal accounting systems created difficulties in several studies of professional development spending.

One study that encountered this difficulty was Hertert's (1997) multi-district analysis of professional development spending. Hertert attempted to use district budget data to estimate state and district professional development expenditures, evaluate the connections between spending and improvements in student performances, and suggest ways of reallocating resources to the most effective types of professional development. She originally approached 60 districts for participation, however only 16 kept the data necessary for a basic cost estimate. Of those, none were able to furnish information that would allow her to address the second and third questions in her study. Hertert was able to analyze professional development spending across six categories: professional development office, district conferences/workshops, nondistrict conferences/workshops, inservice training days, university/college coursework, sabbaticals, and temporary assignments. The analysis showed significant variation in districts' professional development spending, ranging from 1.7%-7.6% of net operating expenditures, with an average of 3.6% across districts. The spending level was equivalent to an average of 6.8% of the cost of teacher salaries, including benefits. From this she estimated that per teacher spending would be equivalent to $3385 if the district paid its average teacher $50,000 including benefits ($3,825 in 2000 dollars). Her study is most important, however, from a methodological perspective because it highlights how accounting mechanisms hamper research on professional development spending and the connection to educational outputs, which were the unanswerable parts of Hertert's original question.

Killeen, Monk and Plecki (2000) also attempted to understand districts' spending on professional development but chose to use two major national datasets, the Census Bureau's Survey of Local Government Finances: School District Finances (F-33), and NCES's Common Core of Data-Longitudinal File to produce nationally generalizable results. The study analyzed expenditures categorized as 'instructional staff support,' which provided the nearest approximation to professional development. Unfortunately, in one dataset this category also included items such as library, television, audio-visual, and computer-assisted instruction, which are not professional development. Further, much central office instructional support is also supervisory activities, which do not fit into a general definition of professional development. In conjunction with Hertert's work, this study clearly shows some of the challenges of attempting to quantify professional development spending in districts and schools using the data available in current fiscal accounting systems.

Killeen, Monk and Plecki (2000) found that district spending for professional development ranged from 1.27-8.10% of total general district expenditures, with the average district spending 2.76% percent of its budget for professional development. While this range may seem large, most states' average district spending on professional development was between 2-5.2%, with only six states averaging below 2% and only Kentucky averaging above 5.2%. The average per pupil expenditure on professional development across states was $192 ($223 in 2000 dollars).

Other studies have discussed professional development costs but have focused more on describing and analyzing the nature, and extent of professional development opportunities. Garet et al. (1999) conducted a major study of professional development under the Eisenhower program, a federal math and science education initiative under Title II of the Elementary and Secondary Education Act. Eisenhower funding sought to improve students' math and science achievement through teacher training. Garet et al. conducted a nationally representative survey of teachers participating in the Eisenhower Professional Development Program to determine the characteristics of effective professional development, which they defined as professional development that leads to changes in teacher knowledge and practice that produced increases in student achievement. They found that effective professional development has six main features:

1. form (professional development should be school-based and job embedded);
2. duration (long-term and ongoing professional development is better);
3. collective participation (it is beneficial to have groups of teachers from the same school or department share the professional development experience);
4. content focus (teaching strategies should be combined with enhanced content knowledge of what is being taught);
5. active learning (opportunities for teachers to become engaged in their own learning are important);
6. coherence (professional development should be aligned with state standards, assessments, teachers' goals and school and district context).

They found that few teachers participated in highly effective professional development and that one of the main reasons was the higher cost. While districts spent an average of $185 per teacher ($197 in 2000 dollars) on typical professional development under the Eisenhower program, they found that exemplary projects in the Eisenhower Program spent approximately $512 per teacher ($529 in 2000 dollars) to provide effective professional development. The increased cost was typically for providing professional development of longer duration, and frequently included more active and embedded learning than the workshops that characterize traditional professional development. Though the study provides very useful information on the features of effective professional development, there is little explanation of how these costs were determined, which limits the usefulness and generalizability of the cost estimates. Furthermore, the estimate is for professional development in only one subject area, and must, therefore, be seen as a probable underestimate of the overall cost of professional development.

In their study of professional development in New York City's District 2, Elmore and Burney (1997) found that the district spent approximately $1,300 per teacher ($1,427 in 2000 dollars) on professional development, or 3% of the district's operating budget. Elmore and Burney provide more detail than most on how the money is spent, by dividing overall spending into four categories: teacher compensation, contracted services, professional development lab, and materials. Yet they do not provide enough detail to analyze the expenditures in terms of how money was spent within those broad categories. For example, it is impossible to determine how much teacher compensation spending was for stipends for teachers attending professional development activities as opposed to the cost of substitutes to provide teachers release time. Additionally, one might want to know within contracted services, how much was spent on one-time workshops as opposed to ongoing coaching. Since other components of the ongoing study in District 2 demonstrate positive outcomes from the district's strategy, it would be very useful to have a systematic cost methodology so that District 2's spending on various professional development strategies could be compared to other districts.

Miller, Lord and Dorney (1994) presented a cross-case analysis of professional development in four districts. They used district-level interviews, principal interviews, and teacher interviews to build an in-depth understanding not available through analyzing budget data alone. However, they only presented a rough estimate of the percentages of spending on professional development. For example, in analyzing salary costs, they estimated that 15% of principals' time was a professional development cost, yet provided no explanation for how they arrived at this estimate. Their results are shown in Table 1.

Table 1
Miller, Lord and Dorney's Estimates of Professional Development Spending

District	Cost per Regular Classroom Teacher at time of the study (in 2000 dollars)	Cost as a Percentage of Operating Budget
Large	$ 3,529 ($4,462)	2.3%
Large	$ 1,755 ($2,219)	1.8%
Medium	$ 2,706 ($3,421)	2.0%
Small	$ 3,528 ($4,461)	2.8%

They broke down this spending into six categories: baseline (staff development office); district and school-level staff development salary; materials and services, travel, consultants, and miscellaneous; substitutes; externally funded programs; and personal contributions. These categories add little to our knowledge about how money is spent and since they did not explain in detail how these were derived and did not analyze the spending categories within externally funded programs, it is difficult to make meaningful comparisons to other studies.

Miles (Miles et al., 1999; Miles and Hornbeck, 2000) presented a more detailed approach to tracking districts' professional development spending. In a study of Boston's professional development spending, Miles, et al. (1999) analyzed professional development spending in light of two key concerns: 1) how closely professional development resources were aligned with the district's improvement plan; and 2) how well they matched the National Partnership for Excellence and Accountability in Teaching (NPEAT) principles for effective professional development. They began by collecting budget data from all sources, and tentatively coding this data by district role (e.g. professional development, accountability, curriculum development and support), function (e.g. salary, stipend), and source (federal, state, local, private). They then interviewed heads of all relevant district departments to determine what activities were related to professional development. This allowed them to include costs, such as the salary for staff who designed professional development, that are not included in some analyses. Their interviews also enabled them to gather data on:

- The sources of professional development funds;
- The type of professional development activities purchased (e.g. consultant, staff salary, etc.);
- The topic of professional development activities;
- The locus of control for the professional development funds;
- The percentage of time district personnel spent on developing or providing professional development.

These data gave Miles et al. a refined understanding of Boston's professional development spending that enabled them to analyze spending by type, topic, control and source. They determined that the district spent over $23 million per year ($4,894 per teacher and principal; $5,170 in 2000 dollars) on professional development, or 3.8% of their total budget. Furthermore, by comparing this spending to district goals and NPEAT's principles for effective professional development, Miles et al. were able to make recommendations for how Boston could reallocate resources to improve the effectiveness of their spending.

In later work, Miles and Hornbeck (2000) expanded on this methodology to compare spending on professional development across four urban districts and the broader concept of instructional and school support across two of those districts. Their definition of instructional and school support included all activities undertaken on the part of a school district to support high quality instruction: professional development, accountability, curriculum development and support, special program monitoring and compliance, information systems, district student services and community outreach. These were included to the degree that they supported instructional improvement. For example, spending on information systems that allows schools to better analyze student performance data and tailor reform to specific needs would be considered instructional support; information systems spending that went to monitor student attendance would not be included. Miles and Hornbeck used interviews with department heads and other key personnel to determine how much each department spent on instructional support, and combined the data to learn how much the districts spent on professional development and instructional support.

They found that there was substantial variation across the districts in terms of the overall level of professional development spending as well as how money was spent. The districts spent between 2.4%-4.3% of their operating budget on professional development, not including the cost of contracted inservice training days. When these were included, the range was 2.4%-5.9% of the district operating budget, or from $2,010-$6,628 per teacher ($2,078-$7,002 in 2000 dollars). Additionally, district spending was frequently fragmented across many departments rather than focused on the districts' highest priority areas. Finally, district spending differed by strategy. While some districts invested heavily in workshops or subsidizing university course-taking, others spent a higher proportion on stipends for teachers to take on responsibilities outside of traditional teaching.

While Miles' studies provided significant detail on district costs and strategies, they did not trace district expenditures to the school level. In districts that have decentralized school funding, the school general fund budget, as well as any other budgets controlled at the school level, could be an additional source of professional development spending. By extending Miles' methodology to include a school-level analysis, this case study of Elm Street provides a more complete picture of the resources used at a given school.

As can be seen, past studies on the costs of professional development have struggled with at least one, and usually more than one, of the following issues:

- The study provided information about professional development activities but provided little information about costs;
- The study identified costs, but lacked rich data on the nature of the professional development activities, or data on the different categories of expenditures that comprise total costs;
- The study identified costs, but did not use a systematic methodology that enables comparisons to other research;
- The study had no data on how schools supplemented or reduced district-level professional development resources available to teachers.

The first problem has created an overall scarcity of information about professional development expenditures and costs. The second is quite pervasive in the literature because analyses of school and district spending have typically tracked resources from source to accounting code expenditure, which provides little information on the nature of the professional development spending. The lack of a systematic methodology for identifying costs is even more problematic because of the first two problems: since few studies provide a desirable level of detail on both strategies and expenditures on professional development, it would be highly beneficial to be able to make meaningful comparisons across studies.

Finally, the majority of studies have analyzed *district* spending on professional development, since districts have traditionally been thought of as the source of most staff development resources. Schools, however, are increasingly playing a prominent role in supporting instructional improvement. They serve as the site of many of the more innovative professional development strategies, like on-site coaching and peer mentoring, which are more likely to have the characteristics of effective professional development identified in Garet, et al. (1999). Many schools also have control over at least a portion of their budget and are allocating some of these resources to professional development. Conversely, they can also choose to disregard recommendations for spending money on professional development instead purchasing something else, thus reducing professional development spending. For these reasons it is necessary to include school-level professional development expenditures in the analysis of how professional development resources can be used to improve instruction and student learning. This study addresses these issues.

2. Framework

Based on prior research, the following goals were set for the study: to develop a methodology that would provide a good estimate of the total professional development expenditures at the school site and information on the nature of professional development activities; to use a systematic framework for analyzing professional development costs.

This case study builds on Elmore and Burney's (1997), Miller, Lord and Dorney's (1994), and Miles' (Miles et al., 1999; Miles and Hornbeck, 2000; Miles, 2001) methodologies, but takes them a step further by tracking district spending on professional development to the school site, collecting data on school-level expenditures for professional development and analyzing expenditures in terms of a clearly articulated cost structure. Even though the resource picture at Elm Street is quite complex, the methodology outlined below made it possible to develop an in-depth understanding of the sources and deployment of professional development resources at Elm Street. The next section explains the cost structure that was used to analyze professional development resources from both levels.

In a review of literature on the costs of professional development, Odden, et al. (2001) built on the Garet et al. (1999) and Elmore and Burney (1997) studies (among others) to create a systematic framework for analyzing the costs of professional development. Looking across these existing studies they identified six types of school and district professional development expenditures: 1) teacher time, 2) training and coaching, 3) administration, 4) materials, equipment and facilities, 5) travel and transportation, and 6) tuition and conference fees. This cost structure provides a way to identify, calculate and analyze the professional development resources that districts and schools make available to teachers at a given school site. Table 2 presents the Odden, et al. (2001) cost structure, which is used in the remainder of the article to identify and analyze professional development expenditures at Elm Street. For a more detailed explanation of the elements of the cost structure and a general example of how to calculate expenditures see Odden, et al. (2001).

As will be seen in this case study, the cost elements provide a meaningful level of detail on how money is spent for professional development at the district and school level. It covers all expenses necessary to produce and carry out a broad range of professional development activities. The usefulness of this sort of framework for making comparisons across studies becomes most apparent when analyzing the studies by Miller, Lord and Dorney (1994), Miles, et al. (1999) and Miles and Hornbeck (2000). Although these studies use somewhat similar methodologies, it is difficult to draw conclusions across studies about the level and effectiveness of professional development spending without a shared analytic framework. The next section explains how data were collected for this study.

Table 2
A Cost Structure for Professional Development

Cost Element	Ingredient	How Cost is Calculated
Teacher Time Used for Professional Development	**Time within the regular contract:** 1. -when students are not present before or after school or on scheduled in-service days, half days or early release days 2. -planning time **Time Outside the regular day/year:** 3. -time after school or on weekends 4. -release time provided by substitutes	1. teachers' hourly salary times the number of student free hours used for pd 2. the cost of the portion of the salary of the person used to cover the teachers' class during planning time used for pd 3. the stipends or additional pay based on their hourly rate that teachers receive to compensate them for their time 4. substitute wages
Training and Coaching	**Training** 1. -salaries for district trainers 2. -outside consultants who provide training; may be part of CSRD **Coaching** 3. -salaries for district coaches including on-site facilitators 4. -outside consultants who provide coaching; may be part of CSRD	1. sum of trainer salaries 2. consultant fees or comprehensive school design contract fees 3. sum of coach and facilitator salaries 4. consultant fees or comprehensive school design contract fees

Administration of Professional Development	1. **Salaries** 2. **Overhead**	1. Salary for administrators of professional development programs times the proportion of their time spent administering the programs 2. Overhead or supplies necessary to administer programs
Materials, Equipment and Facilities Used for Professional Development	1. **Materials** 2. **Equipment** 3. **Facilities**	1. materials for pd, including the cost of classroom materials required for CSRDs 2. equipment needed for pd activities 3. rental or other costs for facilities used for professional development
Travel and Transportation for Professional Development	1. **Travel** 2. **Transportation**	1. Costs of travel to off-site pd development activities 2. Costs of transportation within the district for professional development
Tuition and Conference Fees	1. **Tuition** 2. **Conference Fees**	1. Tuition payments or reimbursement for university-based pd 2. Fees for conferences related to pd

3. Methodology

The data collection for this study began in conjunction with Miles' (2001) multi-district analysis of expenditures on instructional improvement. First data were collected on instructional and school support at the district level. As in Miles' earlier work, instructional and school support was defined as all district supports for high-quality instruction, including professional development. The analysis began with the entire district general fund budget as well as those from all other public and private sources of funding for the district. Line items such as transportation costs, which were clearly unrelated to instructional improvement, were eliminated. The remainder of the analysis had six main steps:

- a) District-level interviews were used to develop an understanding of which expenditures were related to instructional and school support and to code spending in all departments within the various categories of instructional support: professional development, accountability, curriculum development and support, special program monitoring and compliance, information systems, district student services and community outreach. Interviews were conducted with the people in charge of many departmental and categorical budgets including: quality improvement, career in teaching, administration, curriculum & assessment, magnet, vocational education, accountability, teacher leadership, professional development, Title I, Title II, and special education, among others. The interviews provided data on which district initiatives supported instructional and school support, the type of spending each related line item represented, and the percentage of salary costs for relevant individuals that should be considered instructional and school support.
- b) At this point, the focus narrowed to those expenditures within instructional and school support that had been defined as professional development. This included, for example, district literacy coaches, stipends paid by the district for lead teachers, the costs of comprehensive school reform design contracts, salary costs for those coordinating professional development, consultant fees, materials costs, and the district's professional development center. The analysis includes the cost of teacher time within and outside of the regular contract. In this case, it did not include teacher inservice days, since the district has none. As explained earlier, the cost of salary advancements due to professional development credits and the cost of uncompensated teacher time were not included.
- c) For each line item, several types of data were collected: the description, source, control (e.g. district, school), type (e.g. consultant fee, stipends), topic (e.g. literacy, standards), form of delivery (e.g. school-based coaching, workshop). With this level of detail, it was possible to sort data according to general initiative (e.g. literacy, standards, teacher leadership) as well as by cost element (teacher time, training and coaching,

administration, materials, equipment and facilities, travel and transportation, and tuition and conference fees).

- d) Professional development costs from all district budgets were then allocated, where possible, to the school level. The cost of each initiative was divided by participating schools based on the staff and overhead costs in one of three ways:
    - By participating school—for example, if twenty schools participated in a literacy program, the overhead costs for the entire coaching program would be split evenly amongst the twenty schools. If, within that program, five schools shared a literacy coach, each school was 'charged' for 1/5 of that coach's salary.
    - By pupil at each participating school—for example, one initiative provided a block grant to participating schools based on student enrollment. The number of pupils at each participating school was multiplied by the per pupil funding formula to determine the resource level at the school;
    - By participating teacher—for example if the district offered an after school workshop that cost $1,000 to produce and five teachers attended, each of their schools would be 'charged' $200.

    The precise method for doing this for each initiative is explained in a later section.

- e) Once district-level spending was tracked to the schools, resources from the site budget and categorical programs were analyzed. Line item budgets were available for both the school general fund and Title I (the federal grant that provides supplemental educational funding for low-income students) budgets. For Title VI (the federal class size reduction initiative), Obey-Porter (the federal comprehensive school reform demonstration project), Literacy Today (a state literacy initiative) and TechNow (a state technology initiative) only total allocations were available. All of these sources were added to the district information to generate a preliminary estimate of resources controlled by the school. The next step ascertained how much of these resources were used for professional development.
- f) Using the data collected in the earlier steps, preliminary and follow-up phone interviews were conducted with the principal to verify information, identify how categorical dollars were used and determine how the school allocated discretionary dollars for professional development at the school site. The interviews also provided an understanding of the school's educational strategy and how resources were deployed to achieve school goals. At all stages, data was gathered by cost structure elements.

These data provided three types of information: Qualitative information on the school's goals and strategies; A comprehensive resource use picture; Descriptive data that enabled this analysis to move beyond accounting codes to an understanding of the professional development strategies and their cost.

The combination of these three types of data makes it possible to present professional development spending at Elm Street School utilizing the cost structure developed by Odden, et al. (2001). Additionally, as becomes apparent in the next section, these allow for a transparent explanation of how cost estimates were developed. Finally, this methodology and cost structure makes it possible to overcome the barriers typical accounting practices create to understanding the relationship between professional development and educational strategies.

4. District And School Context

Elm Street School is in the Cincinnati Public Schools, a moderately large, urban district in the midwest. In the mid 1990s the district had relatively low achievement, but has made a significant attempt to generate improvements by focusing on school accountability, coordinated reform, teacher leadership, and instructional improvement. Cincinnati's accountability system categorizes schools into five performance categories, the lowest of which can trigger 'redesign,' the district's school reconstitution plan. Redesign schools receive a new principal, who hires lead teachers. Together they select a new staff, who are required to implement the comprehensive school reform model chosen by the school's redesign committee (made up of four members chosen by the district and four members chosen by the teachers' union). Cincinnati has also supported the adoption of comprehensive school reform models in many schools in the district that are not redesign schools.

Cincinnati has several other strategies for improvement in addition to comprehensive school reform. The district has invested significantly in teacher leadership through its shared decision-making and lead teacher programs. Additionally, the district provides ongoing teacher coaching on literacy and aligning instruction to standards for schools that participate in either of these initiatives. Furthermore, the district provides mentors for new and struggling teachers, and hosts teacher-interns from a local university. Finally, the district contracts with an independent staff development agency to provide workshops and training for teachers on topics that the district identifies as important for instructional improvement. Cincinnati's initiatives have made significant district resources available to school sites undertaking reform, and have focused schools' efforts on raising student achievement to the district's standards.

In the 2000-2001 school year, Elm Street School had approximately 400 students in grades K-8, almost all of whom qualified for free and reduced lunch; 20% of the students participated in special education. Additionally, the student body was highly mobile, with about a 50% student turnover rate during the course of the school year. In 1998, Elm Street chose to implement Expeditionary Learning Outward Bound [ELOB] to improve student performance, even though it was not a redesign school. ELOB is a comprehensive school reform design that utilizes authentic, integrated instructional units to support students' academic skills and personal growth. For the past three years, ELOB has provided significant professional development for the staff so that they can meet the goals of the model.

In addition to ELOB, Elm Street has created a multi-faceted literacy model with the assistance of an outside consultant. The model was designed to mesh with ELOB, and has been reviewed by ELOB consultants. It has several components: Two assessment programs (one of which is computer-based) to determine student reading level, with corresponding reading materials at each student's level; 90-minute literacy blocks; Four instructional assistants to work with teachers on literacy and provide small group instruction; One-on-one reading tutoring offered by teachers and teacher-interns for struggling students in the six weeks leading up to state testing.

Elm Street has also made several structural changes to provide individual attention to help students succeed in their academic program. The first of these changes is reduced class size. Elm Street has 25.6 FTE teachers, creating an overall student to teacher ratio of less than 16:1. Class sizes are reduced in the elementary grades to the following levels: Kindergarten: 13 to 1; Elementary: 15-17 to 1; 7th and 8th grade: 24 to 1. The smaller classes in the elementary grades facilitates teachers' use of developmentally appropriate practices. Additionally, teachers were organized into three teams (K-3, 4-6, and 7-8 grade) to facilitate collaborative work. Elm Street also used looping and multi-age classes so that students and teachers could spend several years working together.

Finally, the school has changed the allocation of time throughout the school day to provide teachers with at least 75 minutes a week of guaranteed common planning time. Students are in school from 7:30-1:45 daily. Under the old schedule, teachers were required to be in school from 7:15-2:15 daily; now the teacher day begins daily at 7:30. Since the teacher day starts 15 minutes later, 75 minutes of teacher contract time is accumulated each week and used for meetings on Wednesday afternoon, when teachers remain until 3:30. This provides teams with 75 minutes of common planning time each week, which were typically used for work on ELOB curriculum development.

The principal noted that the combination of these strategies provides a "seamless" education for students. Students have opportunities to build close relationships with teachers, receive instruction tailored to their individual needs, and participate in authentic learning activities. To support this instructional program, Elm Street invested a significant amount of money in professional development, much of which focused on implementing ELOB, the literacy model or aligning instruction to standards. The next section outlines the various sources of professional development spending at Elm Street.

5. Sources of Professional Development Spending at Elm Street

Elm Street received federal, state, local and private funding. The school site had significant control over the budgets from some sources, whereas other available resources were controlled at the district level. Unlike earlier studies that focused on data from one level, this case study tracks district and school expenditures on professional development from federal, state, local and private sources. Given the complexity of the data, it is useful to think of two categories of professional development spending that provide professional development resources to Elm Street:

1. District spending on the infrastructure to support professional development (such as the salaries of central office administrators of professional development programs, clerical support, equipment, and supplies) and on professional development activities and programming that are provided to school staff. This category can further be divided into two groups:
    - a. Trackable funds: some district spending on professional development can be reasonably tracked to the schools that receive the direct benefit of the resources. Of district spending on professional development, $7.4 million dollars (approximately 73%) of district spending fell into this category. This includes spending on district-funded coaches that work with schools on instructional improvement, mentors for new teachers, courses provided by the district professional development academy and funds earmarked for adoption of CSRD's. This article provides significant detail on this category of spending;
    - b. Untrackable funds: some district spending on professional development occurs in a manner such that it is *not* possible to track which schools receive the direct benefit of the resources. Of district spending on professional development, $2.7 million dollars (or 27%) fell into this category. It was not allocated to the school level for one of the following reasons:
        - Spending was designed to build individual or district-level rather than school-level capacity (for example district support for individuals to pursue National Board certification) and so could not be accurately tracked to a given school;
        - Funds were controlled by neither the district or school (for example, the contractually mandated, union-controlled professional development fund);
        - Spending was too fragmented to be accurately allocated to the school level;
        - While funding was allocated for professional development, the dollars had not yet been spent.

      For these reasons it was not possible to accurately allocate this district spending to the school level.
2. The other category of professional development spending at Elm Street includes all school-initiated professional development activities funded from schools' own discretionary budgets. This would include a school's use of Title I money to hire a facilitator or coach to provide teachers training and support in implementing a CSRD, structuring planning time to provide teachers time within the school day for professional development, or using the school's general fund budget for materials or travel expenses for professional development.

The upcoming sections explain the sources of trackable district-level and school-level professional development

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

resources at Elm Street.

District-Level Support for Professional Development at Elm Street

Elm Street participated in most of Cincinnati's professional development initiatives, including literacy coaching, standards coaching, teacher leadership, teacher mentoring, and the teacher intern program. Individual staff members also took courses on various topics offered by the district. Table 3 lists the district initiatives in which Elm Street participated, the strategy used for allocating the cost to Elm Street, and the cost estimate of the resources Elm Street received. All estimates include the cost of fringe benefits where applicable.

Table 3
District-Level Professional Development at Elm Street

Initiative	Allocation Method	District-wide Expenditure per Initiative	Elm Street Resource Estimate
Teacher Leadership	Teacher stipends allocated per teacher to participating schools; other initiative costs allocated evenly across participating schools	$1,195,963	$25,999
Staff Development Agency Courses	Agency costs allocated proportionally across schools based on prior year course-taking patterns	$942,950	$22,960
Standards Alignment Coaching	Costs allocated to participating schools based on coach's salary	$414,348	$15,936
Teacher Intern Program	Salary and stipend costs allocated to participating schools	$219,475	$15,190
Literacy Coaches	Costs allocated to participating schools based on coach's salary	$405,674	$ 9,998
Peer Mentoring	Costs allocated across schools based on number of new hires/intervention teachers at each school	$632,746	$ 6,004
Eisenhower Math and Science Workshops	Allocated proportionally across schools based on teacher participation in courses	$343,371	$ 1,576
Total District-controlled Professional Development resources at Elm Street:			**$97,663**

In sum, the district provided Elm Street's teachers with an average of $3,815 in professional development resources ($97,663 , 25.6 teachers = $3,815).

As previous research has shown (Miles & Hornbeck, (2000); Miles, et al., (1999); Elmore & Burney (1997); Hertert, 1997; Miller & Lord, (1994)), districts utilize multiple sources of funding for professional development. Cincinnati is no exception. As Table 4 shows, Cincinnati used federal programs, state and local tax revenues and private donations to fund professional development.

Table 4
Sources of District-Level Professional Development at Elm Street

Initiative	Federal	State/Local	Private	Total
Teacher Leadership		$ 25,999		$ 25,999
Staff Development Agency Courses	$ 5,419	$ 17,541		$ 22,960
Standards Alignment Coaching	$ 8,653	$ 4,590	$ 2,693	$ 15,936
Teacher Intern Program		$ 15,190		$ 15,190
Literacy Coaches		$ 9,998		$ 9,998
Peer Mentoring		$ 6,004		$ 6,004
Eisenhower Math and Science Workshops	$ 1,576			$ 1,576
Total	**$15,648**	**$ 79,322**	**$ 2,693**	**$ 97,663**
Source Percentage of Total	16%	81%	3%	100%

As Table 4 shows, federal dollars support 16% of the district-level professional development spending at Elm Street. One significant source of federal funding in Cincinnati is Title I, the federal compensatory education program. The federal government recommends that 2.5% of Title I money be used for professional development. Cincinnati used some of their Title I money to fund staff development agency courses and standards alignment coaching at Elm Street. Title II, also known as the Eisenhower Program, provides funding for professional development in math and science. Cincinnati used this funding to sponsor several district workshops in which individual teachers at Elm Street chose to participate.

The largest source of dollars for Cincinnati's professional development initiatives were state and local funds, which provide 81% of the district-level professional development resources at Elm Street. Finally, the district resources used at Elm Street were supplemented slightly by private donations, which were added to federal, state and local funding for the standards initiative.

School-Controlled Support for Professional Development at Elm Street

At the school level, Elm Street utilizes funding from federal, state and local, and private sources for professional development. Elm Street was awarded $75,000 grant from the Obey-Porter program, a federal program that supports the implementation of comprehensive school reform designs. All Obey-Porter funds were spent on implementing ELOB, which is considered here to be a form of professional development. Since Obey-Porter grants are applied for by individual schools, this is an excellent example of how school-level actions can increase the resources available for professional development in the school.

Elm Street also participated in the federal Title I program. The school received $293,150 in Title I funding for the 2000-2001 school year, but spent none of this for professional development even though the federal guidelines recommended spending 2.5% for professional development. In contrast to the Obey-Porter example, this shows how school discretion can be used to reduce professional development spending at a school. This decision should be seen in light of an overall context of significant professional development expenditures at Elm Street, and district-level use of Title I funds for professional development.

Cincinnati distributes funding for Literacy Today, a state program designed to improve literacy instruction. Even though the literacy program carries no professional development requirements, Elm Street spent $8,000 (of the $30,000 at its disposal) to provide substitutes so teachers could participate in literacy professional development. Cincinnati also participated in TechNow, a state educational technology initiative. The state recommended that 30% of this money at each school be spent on technology professional development. The data showed that Elm Street spent all of its TechNow funds to purchase computers, but that teachers accessed technology training through district-sponsored workshops.

State and local funds also provided Elm Street with its general fund budget, which in addition to paying staff, materials and operating expenses, was the largest single source of professional development funding at Elm Street. By reallocating teacher time within the contract week, Elm Street was able to provide $63,983 in teacher time for professional development without additional costs. While adding this teacher time into an estimate of Elm Street's expenditures on professional development significantly increases the level of general fund spending, as mentioned earlier in the discussion of teacher time, including this resource use in our estimate makes it possible to compare how different schools and districts create time for teachers to engage in professional development. For purposes of comparison, however, estimates of professional development spending without including teacher time within the regular contract are included in a later section. In addition to using time after school for professional development, Elm Street paid $7,770 from the school general fund to provide for substitutes to release teachers during the school day to participate in professional development activities.

Elm Street also used $38,900 from its general fund to pay for travel expenses for teachers attending ELOB conferences and workshops. In addition, Elm Street received a $2,500 grant from a private group to pay for the costs of travel and materials for conferences. Table 5 shows the sources of professional development funding at the school level, including the cost of teacher time within the regular contract. (Tables 7 and 8 show how the cost of teacher time within the regular contract influences estimates of professional development costs). Professional development spending at Elm Street, like at the district level, comes from several sources.

Two factors are most notable. The first is the large contribution of a single federal program, Obey-Porter, to professional development spending at Elm Street. Since all schools participating in CSRD's pay contractual fees, Elm Street would have had to either acquire additional resources from a different source or reallocate other resources in the school budget if it had not received that grant.

Table 5
Sources of School-Level Professional Development at Elm Street

Description	Federal	State/Local	Private	Total

CSRD participation	$ 75,000			$ 75,000
Substitutes for teacher release		$ 15,770		$ 15,770
Teacher time after school within the regular contract		$ 63,983		$ 63,983
Travel		$ 38,900	$ 2,500	$ 41,400
Total	**$ 75,000**	**$118,653**	**$ 2,500**	**$196,153**
Source Percentage of Total	38%	61%	1%	100%

Second, Elm Street contributes an average of $7,662 per teacher of professional development resources to the district-level spending. This highlights the importance of conducting school-level professional development spending analyses in districts that have decentralized budgeting. It is worth noting that while the findings are not generalizable to other schools in the district, other schools in the broader study also used site discretionary funds to dramatically increase professional development resources for their teachers (Fermanich, 2001).

Other Resources for Professional Development at Elm Street

Elm Street also has other resources that support professional development that were not quantified in this study. More specifically, there were three major types of additional staff development resources at Elm Street that were not included in the analysis:

- As mentioned earlier, 27% of Cincinnati's professional development spending could not be tracked to the school level. Across the district, this is equal to an average of $1,038 per teacher. This could be added to the tracked spending for a sense of the total per teacher cost of Elm Street's professional development opportunities, as is done on the next page.
- Additionally, since Elm Street participated in the teacher intern program with a university, teachers were eligible to apply for individual grants from the university to support their own course-taking. Since these are outside of district and school control and no records of participation were obtained, this study did not include them.
- Finally, previous research (especially Little (1987), which attempted to quantify this resource) found that uncompensated teacher time was a significant resource for professional development. At Elm Street this included, among other things, graduate classes that several teachers took at a local university, and uncompensated collegial work on instruction outside of the contract day. However, since the neither the district nor the school site bears any of this cost, it was not included in the analysis.

Leaving these activities out of the analysis potentially leads to an underestimate of professional development resources at Elm Street; however, accurately quantifying these resources is outside the scope of this study. Table 6 presents a summary table presenting total, per teacher and per student professional development resources at Elm Street at both the district and school level.

Table 6
Professional Development Resources at Elm Street by Level

Locus of Control	Percentage Spending per level	Total Professional Development Spending	Total per Teacher	Total per Student
School level	67%	$196,153	$ 7,662	$ 491
District level	33%	$ 97,663	$ 3,815	$ 244
Total	**100%**	**$293,816**	**$11,477**	**$ 735**

As Table 6 shows, Cincinnati and Elm Street combined provide for $11,477 per teacher in professional development resources. If the untracked average district-level expenditure per teacher of $1,038 were included, this estimate would be $12,515 per teacher. Since we are unable to definitively track these resources to Elm Street, however, the higher estimate is not used in this study.

6. Cost Structure of Professional Development Spending At Elm Street

The remainder of this article analyzes Elm Street's professional development resources by the six-element cost structure discussed earlier, which provides a framework for understanding how resources were allocated within the school. Table 7 provides a breakdown of all district and school level professional development expenditures at Elm Street. If an ingredient within the cost structure is not listed, Elm Street did not have any expenditures in that category.

Table 7

Expenditures at Elm Street by Cost Element and Ingredient

Cost Element	Ingredient	Description of expense	Cost
Teacher Time	Within Regular Contract	Time after School	$63,983
	Outside regular contract	Stipends	$129
		Substitutes	$15,770
	Total Teacher Time		**$79,882**
Training and Coaching	Training	Purchased Training, including the ELOB contract fee (with conference costs excluded)	$89,290
	Coaching	Salaries of District Coaches	$41,299
		Purchased Coaching	$15,936
	Total Training and Coaching		**$146,525**
Administration of Professional Development	Administrative salaries	Salaries for administration of district professional development programs allocated to participating schools	$5,000
	Overhead	Overhead costs for administering district professional development programs allocated to participating schools	$16
	Total Administration		**$5,016**
Materials, Equipment and Facilities Used for Professional Development	Materials	Materials costs for district professional development programs allocated to participating schools	$761
	Total Materials, Equipment and Facilities		**$761**
Travel and Transportation for Professional Development	Travel	Travel to ELOB conference	$41,400
	Transportation	Transportation costs for district professional development programs allocated to participating schools	$132
	Total Travel and Transportation		**$41,532**
Tuition and Conference Fees	Conference Fees	ELOB conference fees included in the CSRD contract	$20, 100
	Total Tuition and Conference Fees		**$20,100**
Total			**$293,816**

Elm Street had two main types of expenditures for Teacher Time: $63,983 of teacher time within the contract when students were not present was used for team meetings after the student school day; (no planning time provided by specialist teachers was used for professional development); and $15,770 was used for substitutes to provide release time for teachers to attend professional development activities. In addition, the district spent $129 for teacher stipends at Elm Street, as calculated by allocating the teacher stipends expenditures across schools participating in the training program. Purchased training comprised almost 61% of total Training and Coaching expenditures; of the $89,290 for purchased training, $54,900 was for the ELOB contract fee, while the remainder covered a variety of workshops. Most of the coaching expenditures were for salaries of district personnel who provided coaching ($41,299), however, the district hired some consultants as coaches for specific professional development initiatives ($15,936). The majority of Administration expenditures ($5,000) were for salaries of district administrators, however one district program had expenditures for materials necessary to administer the program of which $16 were allocated to Elm Street. Materials expenditures by different initiatives were also allocated across participating schools, for a total of $761 at Elm Street. Elm Street's travel expenses ($41,400) were all related to attending ELOB conferences and training events; the expenditures for transportation ($132) that were allocated to Elm Street covered travel within the district for a particular coaching initiative. Finally, an estimated $20,100 of conference fees were separated from the ELOB contract cost to estimate Elm Street's expenditures for staff to attend professional development conferences.

For purposes of analysis, it is useful to focus on the comparison of spending levels across cost elements, which is

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

shown in Table 8. Of Elm Street's expenditures for professional development, 77% were for either Teacher Time or Training and Coaching. Elm Street had more expenditures for Training and Coaching than any other cost element, spending $89,290 (or 61% of Training and Coaching expenditures) for training and $57,235 (or 39% of Training and Coaching expenditures) for coaching. Most of the Travel and Transportation and Tuition and Conference Fees expenditures were for participation in ELOB. Expenditures for Administration, and Materials, Equipment and Facilities were only a small portion of total professional development expenditures.

Table 8
Resources for Professional Development by Cost Structure

Cost Element	Expenditure	Average Expenditure per Teacher	Average Expenditure per Pupil	Percentage of Total Professional Development Expenditures
Teacher Time	$79,882	$3,120	$200	27%
Training & Coaching	$146,525	$5,724	$366	50%
Administration	$5,016	$196	$13	2%
Materials, Equip. & Facilities	$761	$30	$2	< 1%
Travel & Transportation	$41,532	$1,622	$104	14%
Tuition & Conference Fees	$20,100	$785	$50	7%
Grand Total	$293,816	$11,477	$735	100%

As noted earlier, it is important to include the cost of teachers' time within the school contract as part of a discussion of the cost of professional development. At Elm Street, however, this time had no additional cost. For purposes of comparison, Table 9 shows Elm Street's professional development expenditures excluding teacher time within the regular school day. Excluding the cost of teacher time within the contract, professional development resources at Elm Street appear even more heavily concentrated in training and coaching. Additionally, this comparison shows the extent to which school-level resource allocation decisions enabled Elm Street to direct existing resources in teacher time to professional development without increasing spending.

Table 9
Resources for Professional Development by Cost Structure, Not Including Teacher Time within the Regular Contract

Cost Element	Expenditure without Teacher Time within the Contract	Average Expenditure per Teacher	Average Expenditure per Pupil	Percentage of Total Professional Development Expenditures
Teacher Time	$15,899	$621	$40	7%
Training & Coaching	$146,525	$5,724	$366	64%
Administration	$5,016	$196	$13	2%
Materials, Equip. & Facilities	$761	$30	$2	< 1%
Travel & Transportation	$41,532	$1,622	$104	18%
Tuition & Conference Fees	$20,100	$785	$50	9%
Grand Total	$229,833	$8,978	$575	100%

The professional development expenses for ongoing implementation of a comprehensive school reform initiative appear across four cost elements, including teacher time within the regular contract. The expenditures for travel and transportation and tuition and conference fees, a total of $61,632, enabled teachers to attend the ELOB conference. Additionally, $54,900 of the training and coaching expenditures paid the fee for participating in ELOB; this provided the school with consultants and other support for implementation.

In addition to expenditures for participation in ELOB, the training and coaching expenses covered $67,234 in district coaches across a variety of initiatives, of which $16,000 provide stipends for teachers to provide professional development to their colleagues. Workshops across a variety of topics cost $24,391. Spending for training and coaching at Elm Street was somewhat fragmented, but significant amounts of spending were directed towards major school improvement strategies of comprehensive school reform, improving literacy instruction, and teaching to standards.

Discussion

The methodology of interviewing multiple central office staff as well as the principal to identify professional development expenses at Elm Street helped the researcher gain a more complete picture of spending than would have been possible from an analysis of budget data alone. This methodology provided much more detailed and accurate information about the district program resources available at the school site. Furthermore, this study uncovered some resources that were not apparent from school budget data. One example of this was the clarification of how substitute time is used. Through interviews, it was determined that of the $11,655 Elm Street spent for substitutes, $7,770 went to provide teachers release time for professional development.

The most interesting finding of this study is the high level of expenditure per teacher for professional development.

Table 10
Previous Estimates of Professional Development Spending

Author's Name (year)	Spending per Teacher	Spending per Student	Notes
Little, et al. (1987)	$1,931	$93	Excluding the future value of credits and uncompensated teacher time
Hertert (1997)	$3,825		
Killeen, Monk and Plecki (2000)		$223	Did not report spending per teacher
Garet (1999)	$529		Estimate for high quality professional development
Elmore and Burney (1997)	$1,427		
Miller, Lord and Dorney (1994)	$2219-$4461		
Miles, et al (1999)	$5,170		Estimate per teacher and principal ?incl teacher time?
Miles and Hornbeck (2000)	$2078-$7002		Estimate including cost of teacher time within the contract
Elm Street Case	**$11,477**	**$735**	Estimate including cost of teacher time within the contract

Including time within the teacher contract, the district and school spent an average of $11,477 on resources of professional development; excluding this time still left an average of $8,978 per teacher.

Table 10 above shows how these findings compare with earlier research on professional development spending. All dollar amounts have been reported in 2000 dollars, the year from which Elm Street data was collected. Table 10 raises a very important question: Why do the estimates for Elm Street's professional development expenditures appear so much higher than those found in other studies. There are three main reasons.

Unlike much earlier research, Elm Street data was collected using a multi-step methodology. The researcher supplemented budget data, traditionally the main source of data for professional development cost studies, with interviews that enabled the researcher to more accurately determine which expenditures were directly related to professional development. Without these interviews the data would have been much less precise, since current accounting systems are not designed to clearly identify all types of professional development expenditures.

Additionally, data was collected on school discretionary as well as district expenditures for professional development. If only the district-level spending were taken into account, the researcher would have only estimated Elm Street professional development expenditures of $3,814 per teacher or $244 per student. This is within the range found in some other studies, but clearly underestimates the total professional development resources available to Elm Street teachers.

The methodology and cost framework utilized in this study includes teacher time within the regular contract in the estimate. This adds $2,499 to the per teacher estimate of professional development expenditures. Similarly, Miles and Hornbeck (2000) include district-level spending for teacher time, which includes district-wide inservice days, in their calculations. Since Cincinnati does not include such days in the district contract, the teacher time in our estimates is all provided on the school level. Regardless, with teacher time removed, the estimates fall closer to those estimated in other studies.

Unfortunately, beyond these three reasons it is not possible to tell exactly why the expenditure estimates vary across studies. There are two potential reasons:

1. The districts studied had varying levels of investment in professional development. This possibility is supported by cross-district comparisons such as those by Hertert (1997), Miller, Lord and Dorney (1994), and Miles and Hornbeck (2000), which found significant variation in professional development spending across districts;

2. The data upon which different researchers based their analyses included different items under the category of professional development. This possibility is also supported by existing research. The most notable example would be Killeen, Monk and Plecki (2000) who used a definition of professional development that included a wide range of expenses that fall outside most definitions of professional development, for example audio-visual supplies.

The variation in definitions of professional development embedded in data sources will inherently continue. Unless researchers move beyond the use of traditional accounting codes, however, it will not be possible to disentangle differences in school districts' categorizations of expenses from differences in actual spending for professional development. Once expenditures are clearly identified by researchers, it is important to describe them using a comprehensive cost structure so that expenditures can be described transparently, making it feasible to compare findings across studies.

The Odden, et al. (2001) cost structure helps to provide a substantial level of detail about the nature of spending being studied. Using this cost structure, it is possible to break out the variation caused by different definitions of professional development (for example inclusion of teacher time within the contract or ongoing coaching) from those caused by variations of spending. Use of this framework thus creates estimates that are more empirically and practically useful.

By using the multi-level methodology to collect data and the Odden, et al. (2001) cost structure to analyze the data, it was possible to determine several things about professional development spending at Elm Street.

Elm Street spent a significant amount of money on professional development: $293,816 (or $11,477 per teacher) including teacher time within the regular contract and $229,833 (or $8,978 per teacher) not including teacher time within the regular contract. This amount is much higher than typically recognized. While this finding should not be generalized beyond Elm Street, the use of the cost structure makes it possible to compare the findings to other studies. This leads to the hypothesis that the inclusion of school level spending, which provides 67% of the professional development spending at Elm Street (or 57% not including teacher time within the regular contract) is one of the reasons the estimate is higher than many. Since the school level is the source of such a significant amount of teachers' professional development resources, future studies interested in better understanding professional development resources available to teachers could benefit from a multi-level analysis.

Elm Street utilized $146,525, or 50% of expenditures (67% not counting teacher time within the contract) for training and coaching. Of this, $57,235 was for non-traditional forms of staff development, like on-site, ongoing literacy coaching. This is significant since coaching, facilitating and on-site work with consultants are more likely to contain the elements of effective professional development identified by Garet, et al. (1999) and Odden, et al. (2001). This suggests that analyses of professional development spending that do not include such activities may miss expenditures that are substantial and more likely to be effective than typical one-day workshops.

Elm Street spent very little on teacher time outside of the regular contract. This is partially indicative of the fact that Elm Street restructured time within the teacher contract to regularly provide time for professional development. Interviews also indicated that teachers spend a significant amount of uncompensated time on professional development at Elm Street. Of the spending on teacher time, $15,770 is for substitutes to release teachers for professional development, while only $129—stipends for attending an Eisenhower math and science workshop—compensated teachers for time outside of the school day. While this is very cost efficient in the short term, over the long-term it is unclear if this reliance on uncompensated teacher time will be a sustainable pattern for Elm Street.

8. Conclusion

This study focused on professional development spending at an urban elementary school engaged in focused reform. Budgets and multiple interviews were combined to form a rich data set. The methodology led to a detailed and accurate assessment of professional development spending at both the district and school level. The addition of the school-level expenditure data led to significantly higher estimates of professional development spending, which more accurately reflect the professional development resources available to teachers within a given school than do analyses that only utilize district data. The cost structure analysis yielded useful findings about not just the total professional development costs at Elm Street, but more importantly, the strategic allocation of resources. The cost structure also makes it possible to see how different definitions of professional development shape findings. It is thus an important contribution to the field since widespread use of such a cost structure would facilitate comparing findings across studies.

This project represents an early step of a broader research agenda, which ultimately seeks to identify the level of professional development spending and spending strategies that will enable schools and districts to improve teaching and student learning. Continuing these analyses in a systematic manner and employing the cost methodology defined in Odden, et al. (2001) will yield more data that will add to the extant knowledge on the cost of effective professional development. It would also be interesting to apply this study's methodology to schools that have been successful in generating significant student achievement gains to begin to look at the link between professional development spending and student achievement gains.

Note

This article was prepared for the Consortium for Policy Research in Education, Wisconsin Center for Education Research, University of Wisconsin-Madison. The research reported here was supported by a grant from the U.S. Department of Education, Office of Educational Research and Improvement, National Institute on Educational Governance, Finance, Policy-Making and Management, to the Consortium for Policy Research in Education (CPRE) and the Wisconsin Center for Education Research, School of Education, University of Wisconsin-Madison (Grant No. OERI-R3086A60003). The opinions expressed are those of the authors and do not necessarily reflect the view of the National Institute on Educational Governance, Finance, Policy-Making and Management, Office of Educational Research and Improvement, U.S. Department of Education, the institutional partners of CPRE, or the Wisconsin Center for Education Research.

References

Birman, Beatrice F., Desimone, Laura, Porter, Andrew C., & Garet, Michael S.. (2000). Designing professional development that works. *Educational Leadership 57* (8), 28-33.

Chambers, Jay G. (1999). *Measuring resources in education: From accounting to the resource cost model approach.* Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research.

Corcoran, Thomas B. (1995). *Helping teachers teach well: Transforming professional development.* (RB-16). Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, Graduate School of Education Consortium for Policy Research in Education.

Elmore, Richard, & Burney, Deanna. (1997). *Investing in teacher learning: Professional development and instructional improvement in Community School District #2, New York City.* Philadelphia: Consortium for Policy Research in Education and the National Commission on Teaching & America's Future.

Fermanich, Mark. (2001). Elementary School Spending for Professional Development: A Cross-Case Analysis. University of Wisconsin, Wisconsin Center for Education Research, Consortium for Policy Research in Education.

Garet, Michael S., Birman, Beatrice F., Porter, Andrew C., Desimone, Laura, Herman, Rebecca, & Yoon, Kwang Suk. (1999). *Designing effective professional development: Lessons from the Eisenhower Program.* Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research.

Hertert, Linda. (1997). *Investing in teacher professional development: A look at 16 districts.* Denver: Education Commission of the States.

Killeen, Kieran M., Monk, David H., & Plecki, Margaret L. (March 2000). School district spending on professional development: Insights available from national data. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Finance Association, San Antonio, Texas.

Little, Judith Warren. (1993). Teachers' professional development in a climate of educational reform. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis 15* (2), 129-151.

Little, Judith Warren, Gerritz, William H., Stern, David S., Guthrie, James W., Kirst, Michael W., & Marsh, David D.. (1987). *Staff development in California.* San Francisco: Far West Laboratory for Educational Research and Development.

Miles, Karen, Bouchard, Francine, Winner, Kendra, Cohen, Mary Ann, & Guiney, Ellen. (1999). *Professional* *development spending in the Boston Public Schools*. Boston: Boston Plan for Excellence, Boston Public Schools.

Miles, Karen Hawley. (March 2001). Analyzing district spending on instructional and school support. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Finance Association, Cincinnati, Ohio.

Miles, Karen Hawley, & Hornbeck, Matthew. (2000). *Rethinking district professional development spending to support a District CSR Strategy: Resource Reallocation, Issue #3*. Arlington, VA: New American Schools..

Miller, Barbara, Lord, Brian, & Dorney, Judith. (1994). *Staff development for teachers: A study of configurations and costs in four districts*. Newton, MA: Education Development Center.

Odden, Allan, Archibald, Sarah, Fermanich, Mark, & Gallagher, H. Alix. (2001). A framework for assessing the costs of effective professional development. Madison: University of Wisconsin, Wisconsin Center for Education Research, Consortium for Policy Research in Education. In revision, *Journal of Educational Finance*.

About the Author

H. Alix Gallagher
Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison
1025 W. Johnson St. Room 653
Madison, WI 53706

Email: hagallagher@students.wisc.edu

H. Alix Gallagher is completing her Ph.D. in Educational Administration at the University of Wisconsin–Madison. Throughout her career as a graduate student, her area of focus has been school finance. Her dissertation and future research plans involve in-depth study of various policies that better support and prepare teachers, including knowledge and skill-based pay plans, pre-service and inservice education.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doc.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

This article has been retrieved 821 times since May 31, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 29 May 31, 2002 ISSN 1068-2341

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

A Case Study of Professional Development Expenditures at a Restructured High School

Sarah Archibald
Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison

H. Alix Gallagher
Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison

Citation: Archibald, S. & Gallagher, H. A. (2002, May 31). A case study of professional development expenditures at a restructured high school *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(29). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n29.html.

Abstract

This article is an analysis of professional development spending in a recently restructured urban high school. This study describes the school's restructuring effort, the ways in which professional development in the school supports the effort, and the ways in which the school reallocated resources to create funds for professional development spending. We then apply the framework of professional development costs proposed by Odden, Archibald, Fermanich and Gallagher (forthcoming) to the professional development expenditures in the school. Information regarding professional development expenditures was obtained from budget and planning documents as well as interviews with school and district personnel. These data revealed that teachers in this school on average received $9,711 of professional development resources with 98% of the spending on teacher time and training or coaching.

Districts and schools around the country are being called upon to improve the performance of their students. In an attempt to do so, they are implementing whole school designs, reducing class sizes, adopting new curriculums and increasing both the quantity and the quality of professional development for teachers. Experts have come to believe that this focus of effort and resources on professional development is necessary to reach the high student achievement goals set by standards-based reform (Birman et al., 2000; Corcoran, 1995; Hertert, 1997; Killeen, Monk and Plecki, 2000; Little, 1993). With this in mind, CPRE researchers at the University of Wisconsin-Madison embarked on a study of the costs of effective professional development. This study involved a couple of different stages. We began with a review of the literature on effective professional development and its costs, which held a lot of information on what constitutes effective professional development but very little on its costs. Furthermore, the extant research on professional development costs lacked a common framework for analyzing and discussing the costs at the state, district, and school level. This led the CPRE researchers to develop a new framework for assessing the costs of professional development that might become a common framework (Odden, Archibald, Fermanich, and Gallagher, 2001).

At the same time, CPRE researchers Fermanich and Gallagher began collaborating with Karen Hawley Miles on a study of district and school level professional development expenditures in Cincinnati. Miles had already done similar work at the district level in three other districts: San Antonio, Boston and Albuquerque. The work in Cincinnati goes beyond an analysis of expenditures at the district level and evaluates school-level professional development spending as well. This project's first case study, written by Alix Gallagher (2001) about a Cincinnati K-8 school, was the first to systematically estimate costs at the school level and use the Odden et al. (2001) framework to analyze the professional development resources at a school engaged in comprehensive school reform. This case study uses Gallagher's format, and focuses on the different kinds of professional development now being employed by a restructured high school in Cincinnati and the costs of that professional development.

This case highlights Harrison Place High School (Note 1), a magnet school that used professional development as an integral part of a coordinated schoolwide reform. Professional development is defined here as organized district and school activities intended to build teacher knowledge and skills. This includes activities that are often classified as professional activities to promote instructional improvement; for example, workshops, teacher coaching, work with consultants, and collaborative planning time and in-service days used for activities designed to lead to professional growth. Since this case study examines resource use rather than economic costs, it does not cover activities that have no cost for the district or school, including uncompensated teacher time. This case study seeks to answer three questions: 1) What is Harrison's strategy for improving student achievement? 2) How does professional development support this strategy? 3) How does Harrison allocate resources for professional development?

In an attempt to answer these questions, we developed a framework, collected data from documents and interviews, and aligned that data with our framework. These steps are described in the next section. This article does not involve an extensive literature review. See previous work by Gallagher (2001) and Fermanich (2001), for an extensive review of research on professional development costs, including an analysis of the strengths and weaknesses of those studies. Following the section on methodology, Harrison's educational strategy is explained in light of its district context. The final section examines Harrison's professional development spending in terms of funding sources and the Odden et al. (2001) cost structure.

2. Methodology

Based on prior research, the following goals were set for the study: a) to develop a methodology based on prior research that provides a good estimate of professional development expenditures at the school site and information on the nature of professional development activities;and b) to use a systematic framework for analyzing professional development expenditures.

This case study builds on Elmore and Burney's (1997), Miller, Lord and Dorney's (1994), and Miles' (Miles et al., 1999; Miles and Hornbeck, 2000; Miles, 2001) methodologies, but takes them a step further by analyzing expenditures in terms of a clearly articulated cost structure and tracking district spending on professional development to the school site.

Our first step was to identify a more specific framework for analyzing professional development costs. In a review of literature on the costs of professional development, Odden et al. (2001) built on the Garet et al. (1999) and Elmore and Burney (1997) studies (among others) to create a systematic framework for analyzing the costs of professional development. They then collaborated with Jennifer King Rice of the Finance Project to create a common framework consisting of six core and two optional (Note 2) elements to be used to analyze the costs of professional development. The six core elements are: 1) teacher time, 2) training and coaching, 3) administration, 4) materials, equipment and facilities, 5) travel and transportation, and 6) tuition and conference fees. Table 1 depicts this cost structure.

Table 1*
A Cost Structure for Professional Development

Cost Element	Ingredient	How Cost is Calculated
Teacher Time Used for Professional Development	**Time within the regular contract**:	
	1. -when students are not present before or after school or on scheduled in-service days, half days or early release days	1. teachers' hourly salary times the number of student free hours used for pd
	2. -planning time	2. the cost of the portion of the salary of the person used to cover the teachers' class during planning time used for pd

	Time Outside the regular day/year: 3. -time after school, on weekends or for summer institutes 4. -release time provided by substitutes	3. the stipends or additional pay based on the hourly rate that teachers receive to compensate them for their time 4. substitute wages
Training and Coaching	**Training** 1. salaries for district trainers 2. outside consultants who provide training; may be part of CSRD **Coaching** 3. salaries for district coaches including on-site facilitators 4. outside consultants who provide coaching; may be part of CSRD	1. sum of trainer salaries 2. consultant fees or comprehensive school design contract fees 3. sum of coach and facilitator salaries 4. consultant fees or comprehensive school design contract fees
Administration of Professional Development	**Salaries for district or school level administrators of professional development programs**	salary for administrators times the proportion of their time spent administering pd programs
Materials, Equipment and Facilities Used for Professional Development	1. **Materials** 2. **Equipment** 3. **Facilities**	1. materials for pd, including the cost of classroom materials required for CSRDs 2. equipment needed for pd activities 3. rental or other costs for facilities used for professional development
Travel and Transportation for Professional Development	1. **Travel** 2. **Transportation**	1. Costs of travel to off-site pd activities 2. Costs of transportation within the district for professional development
Tuition and Conference Fees	1. **Tuition** 2. **Conference Fees**	1. Tuition payments or reimbursement for university-based pd 2. Fees for conferences related to pd

*Reprinted from Odden, Archibald, Fermanich and Gallagher, A cost framework for professional development, *Journal of Education Finance*, forthcoming.

These cost elements provide a meaningful level of detail on how money is spent for professional development at the district and school. The usefulness of this sort of framework for making comparisons across studies becomes most apparent when analyzing the studies by Miller, Lord and Dorney (1994), Miles, et. al. (1999) and Miles and Hornbeck (2000). Although these studies use somewhat similar methodologies, it is difficult to draw conclusions across studies about the level and effectiveness of professional development spending without a shared analytic framework. We hope our comprehensive framework, which was developed in cooperation with other professional development researchers and has now been employed in three case studies, offers a useful standardized framework to allow cross-site analyses.

As previously mentioned, the data collection for this study began in conjunction with Miles' (2001) multi-district analysis of expenditures on instructional improvement. First, data were collected on instructional and school support at the district level. As in Miles' earlier work, instructional and school support were defined as all district supports for high-quality instruction, including professional development. The analysis began with the entire district general fund budget, as well as those from all other public and private sources of funding for the district. The analysis proceeded according to the following six steps:

- a) District-level interviews were used to develop an understanding of which expenditures were related to instructional and school support and to code spending in all departments within the various categories of instructional support: professional development, accountability, curriculum development and support, special program monitoring and compliance, information systems, district student services and community outreach. Interviews were conducted with the people in charge of departmental and categorical budgets. The interviews provided data on which district initiatives supported instructional and school support, the type of spending each related line item represented, and the percentage of salary costs for relevant individuals that should be considered instructional and school support.

- b) At that point, the focus narrowed to those expenditures within instructional and school support that we defined as professional development. This included, for example, district literacy coaches, stipends paid by the district for lead teachers, the costs of comprehensive school reform design contracts, salary costs for those coordinating professional development, consultant fees, materials costs, and the district's professional development center. The analysis includes an estimate of the cost of teacher planning time that was actually devoted to professional development. However, the cost of salary advancements due to professional development credits and the cost of uncompensated teacher time were not included.

- c) For each line item, several types of data were collected: the description, source, control (e.g. district, school), type (e.g. consultant fee, stipends), topic (e.g. literacy, standards), and form of delivery (e.g. school-based coaching, workshop). With this level of detail, it was possible to sort data according to general initiative (e.g. literacy, standards, teacher leadership) as well as by cost element (teacher time, trainers and coaches, other costs).

- d) Professional development costs from all district budgets were then allocated, where possible, to the school level. The cost of each initiative was allocated among participating schools based on the staff and overhead costs in one of three ways:

    - By participating school—for example, if twenty schools participated in a literacy program, the overhead costs for the entire coaching program would be split evenly amongst the twenty schools. If, within that program, five schools shared a literacy coach, each school was 'charged' for 1/5 of that coach's salary.
    - By pupil at each participating school—for example, one initiative provided a block grant to participating schools based on student enrollment. The number of pupils at each participating school was multiplied by the per pupil funding formula to determine the resource level at the school;
    - By participating teacher—for example if the district offered an after school workshop that cost $1,000 to produce and five teachers attended, each of their schools would be 'charged' $200.

    A later section explains the precise method of calculating the cost for each initiative that involves Harrison Place High School.

- e) Once district-level spending was tracked to the schools, resources from the school site budget and categorical programs were analyzed. Line item budgets were available for both the school general fund and Title I (the federal grant that provides supplemental educational funding for low-income students) budgets. For Title VI (the federal class size reduction initiative), Obey-Porter (the federal comprehensive school reform demonstration project), Literacy Today (a state literacy initiative) and TechNow (a state technology initiative) only total allocations were available. All of these sources were added to the district information to generate a preliminary estimate of resources controlled by the school. The next step ascertained how many of these resources were used for professional development.

- f) Using the data collected in the earlier steps, preliminary and follow-up phone interviews were conducted with the principal to verify information, identify how the school used categorical dollars and its discretionary control to increase or reduce professional development resources at the school site. The interviews also provided an understanding of the school's educational strategy and how resources were deployed to achieve school goals. At all stages, data were gathered by cost structure elements.

These data provided three types of information: 1) Qualitative information on the school's goals and strategies; 2) A comprehensive resource use picture; 3) Descriptive data that enabled this analysis to move beyond accounting codes to an understanding of the professional development strategies and their cost.

These three types of data together made it possible to present professional development spending at Harrison utilizing the cost structure developed by Odden et al. (2001). Additionally, as becomes apparent in the next section, these data allow for a detailed explanation of exactly how the cost estimates were developed. Finally, this methodology and cost structure makes it possible to overcome the barriers typical accounting practices create to understanding the relationship between professional development and educational strategies.

3. District And School Context

Harrison Place High School is located in the Cincinnati Public School District, a moderately large, urban district in the Midwest that serves approximately 48,000 students. In the mid 1990's the district had relatively low achievement, but has made a significant attempt to generate improvements by focusing on school accountability, coordinated reform, teacher leadership, and instructional improvement. Cincinnati's accountability system categorizes schools into five performance categories, the lowest of which can trigger 'redesign,' the district's school reconstitution plan. Redesign schools receive a new principal and a substantially new staff, who are required to implement the comprehensive school reform model chosen by the school's redesign committee (comprised of four members chosen by the district and four members chosen by the union). Cincinnati also operates a number of magnet schools funded at a slightly higher amount per pupil, and supports the adoption and implementation of comprehensive school reform models in many schools in the district that are not redesign schools.

Cincinnati has several other strategies for improvement in addition to comprehensive school reform. The district invested significantly in teacher leadership through its team leader and lead teacher programs. The district also provides ongoing teacher coaching on literacy and aligning instruction to standards for schools that participate in either of these initiatives. Furthermore, the district provides mentors for new and struggling teachers, and hosts teacher-interns from a local university. Finally, the district contracts with an independent staff development academy to provide workshops and training for teachers on topics that the district identifies as important for instructional improvement. Cincinnati's initiatives have made significant district resources available to school sites undertaking reform, and in several cases, have focused efforts on raising student achievement to the district's standards.

School Background Information

Harrison Place High School is one of five schools in the Cincinnati Public School District that serves students in grades 9-12. Its student population is 85% African American and 15% white. Approximately 50% of students qualify for free or reduced-price lunch. Compared to other high schools in CPS, Harrison serves a relatively high number of special education students; approximately 15% of students have Individual Education Programs (IEPs). Table 2 provides other relevant facts about Harrison High School.

Table 2
Facts about Harrison Place High School

Student Enrollment	1550
Grades	9-12
Student-teacher ratio, overall	12:1
Student-teacher ratio, academic classes	17:1
Number of special education teachers	19
Comprehensive School Reform Designs	Paideia, Co-nect

After the 1988-1989 school year, the district closed Harrison Place High School due to persistently low academic performance. After reopening in Fall 1989, the school was structured to create smaller, self-contained academic programs for students. As of the 2000-2001 school year, the school offered five academic programs that are close to being self-contained. In this structure, students choose one of the five programs, and then take all of their academic courses with only those students and teachers in their chosen program, thus creating a smaller community for both students and teachers. The only exceptions are for non-core academic courses such as physical education and music. Two of the programs students select from are national whole school designs, Paideia and Co-nect, and the other three are "homegrown" designs created at the school or district level. Although only one of the programs officially uses Paideia, the whole school considers itself a Paideia school, adopting the Paideia mission of producing graduates who will become lifelong learners, responsible citizens and productive workers. The five programs include:

- Paideia: With 400 students, this program uses teachers as coaches, runs classes as seminars, and places an extra emphasis on English.

- Cincinnati Academy of Math and Science (CAMAS): With 375 students, this program helps students acquire specific skills unique to science and mathematics by concentrating on these areas in other disciplines. There is also a small program within CAMAS called the ZOO Academy. Students in this program attend classes at the Cincinnati Zoo and study a zoological-centered curriculum.

- Teaching and Technology: With 250 students, this program uses the Co-nect school design, which emphasizes project-based learning supported by technology.

- Communications: With 250 students, this program offers a complete high school academic studies program and provides students with experiences in journalism, graphics and photography, public relations, advertising, and technical writing.

- Health Professions: With 225 students, this program offers the essential building blocks for any health career – academic coursework combined with lab and field experience in health-related or medical areas.

In addition to five separate academic programs, Harrison made a number of changes to meet the constant need for teachers to engage in a wide variety of professional development. Five on-site instructional facilitators were hired, one for each academic program, to provide teachers with full-time support specific to their program. In 1997-1998, Harrison Place also became a team-based school. Teams of teachers and students created smaller learning communities for students and reduced student loads for teachers. The school also began participating in the district's team leader and lead teacher programs.

Another big change at the school came in 1999 when the school changed to flexible block scheduling. This change allowed the principal to rearrange the schedule so that all teachers had common planning time with their core academic team members. The school leadership recognized that common planning time was necessary for teacher teams to engage in job-embedded professional development during the regular workday. By the 2001-2002 school year, all core academic teachers had two 45-minute planning periods per day, or 450 minutes per week. In most cases, teachers used one of these planning periods to meet with their team for professional development purposes while the other was used for personal planning time. The collaboration time allows teachers to meet and discuss teaching strategies, plan a curriculum unit, or meet with their instructional facilitator during the regular school day, and is therefore included in our cost estimate of professional development. The next section outlines the various sources of professional development spending at Harrison. (Note 3)

4. Sources and Control of Professional Development Spending at Harrison

In the 2000-2001 school year, Harrison received federal, state and local funding. While some resources are controlled at the district level, the school site has significant control over the budgets from most sources. Unlike previous studies that focused on data from the district level, this case study tracks district and school expenditures on professional development from federal, state and local sources. Because these data are complex, it may be useful to think of two categories of professional development spending at Harrison:

1. District spending on the infrastructure to support professional development (such as the salaries of central office administrators of professional development programs, clerical support, equipment, and supplies) and on professional development activities and programs that are provided to school staff. This category can be further divided into two groups:

    - a. Trackable funds: some district spending on professional development can be reasonably tracked to the schools that receive the direct benefit of the resources. Of district spending on professional development, $7.4 million dollars (approximately 73%) of district spending fell into this tracking category. This includes spending on district-funded coaches that work with schools on instructional improvement, mentors for new teachers, courses provided by the district professional development academy and funds earmarked for adoption of CSRDs. This article provides significant detail on this category of spending;

    - b. Untrackable funds: some district spending on professional development occurs in a manner such that it is *not* possible to track which schools receive the direct benefit of the resources. Of district spending on professional development, $2.7 million dollars (or 27%) fell into this category. It was not allocated to the school level for one of the following reasons:

        - Spending was designed to build individual or district-level, rather than school-level, capacity (for example district support for individuals to pursue National Board certification) and so could not be accurately tracked to a given school;

        - Funds were controlled by neither the district or school (for example, the contractually mandated, union-controlled professional development fund);

- [illegible]

- While funding was allocated for professional development, the dollars had not yet been spent.

For these reasons it was not possible to accurately allocate this district spending to the school level, but because it is such a small portion of the total expenditures, we do not believe it is a problem for our analysis.

2. Spending for school-initiated professional development activities funded from schools' own discretionary budgets. This would include a school's use of Title I money to hire a facilitator or coach to provide teachers training and support in implementing a CSRD, structuring planning time to provide teachers time within the school day for professional development, or using the school's general fund budget for materials or travel expenses for professional development.

The upcoming sections explain the sources of trackable district-level and school-level professional development resources at Harrison.

District-Level Support for Professional Development at Harrison

Harrison participated in many of Cincinnati's professional development initiatives, including team leaders, lead teachers, teacher mentoring, the teacher intern program, and math and science workshops. Individual staff members also took courses on various topics offered by the district through its independent professional development academy. While most initiatives were funded through the district general fund, funding for the math and science workshops came from Title II of the federal Elementary and Secondary Education Act, also known as the Eisenhower Program. Table 3 lists the district initiatives in which Harrison participated, the strategy used for allocating the cost to Harrison, and the cost estimate of the resources Harrison received. All estimates include the cost of fringe benefits where applicable.

Table 3
District Professional Development Initiatives at Harrison

Initiative	Allocation Method	District-wide Expenditure per Initiative	Harrison Resource Estimate
Team-based schools	Teacher stipends allocated per team leader to participating schools; other initiative costs allocated evenly across participating schools	$1,192,959	$85,999
Lead Teachers	Teacher stipends	$587,500	$57,000
Staff Development Agency Courses	Allocated proportionally across schools based on prior year course-taking patterns	$867,134	$11,897
Teacher Intern Program	By salary and stipend costs for participating schools	$219,474	$54,677
Peer Mentoring	Allocated across schools based on number of new hires/intervention teachers at each school	$602,731	$ 32,018
Eisenhower Math and Science	Allocated proportionally across schools based on current year workshop enrollment.	$ 343,371	$5,404
Total District-controlled professional development resources at Harrison		**$3,813,169**	**$246,995**

In sum, the district provided Harrison's teachers with an average of $1930 (Note 4) in professional development resources.

As previous research has shown (Miles & Hornbeck, (2000); Miles, et. al., (1999); Elmore & Burney (1997); Hertert, 1997; Miller & Lord, (1994)), districts utilize multiple sources of funding for professional development. Cincinnati is no exception. As Table 4 shows, Cincinnati used federal programs, state and local tax revenues to fund professional development.

Table 4
Sources of District-Level Professional Development at Harrison

Initiative	Federal	State/Local	Private	Total

Team-based schools		$85,999		$85,999
Staff Development Agency Courses	$2,808	$9,089		$11,897
Lead Teachers		$57,000		$57,000
Teacher Intern Program		$54,677		$54,677
Peer Mentoring		$32,018		$32,018
Eisenhower Math and Science Workshops	$ 5,404			$5,404
Total	**$8,212**	**$241,591**	**$0**	**$246,995**
Source Percentage of Total	3%	97%	0%	100%

As Table 4 illustrates, state and local funds represent the largest source of dollars for Cincinnati's professional development initiatives. These sources provide 98% of the district-level professional development resources at Harrison.

In addition to the $246,995 that the district spends to provide Harrison's teachers with professional development, the school spends some of its site budget on professional development. These expenditures are detailed in the next section.

School-Controlled Support for Professional Development at Harrison

At the school level, Harrison spent a total of $995,986 on professional development. Most of these funds came from the school's general fund budget. The only other source of school-controlled funds used for professional development at Harrison was a $300,000 grant from TechNow, a state educational technology initiative. The state recommended that 30% of the grant money at each school be spent on technology professional development. Harrison used approximately $15,000, or 5% for professional development at the school site; the money was spent to provide technology training for teachers.

Harrison's commitment to funding teachers for core academics means that some common school-site expenditures on professional development are not a part of its budget. For example, Harrison has no allocation in its budget for substitutes to free teachers to attend professional development activities. Instead, teachers must rely on members of their team to cover their classes or money from the union's professional development fund. However, the fact that its five separate academic programs each have a full-time, on-site instructional facilitator means that the school spends a significant amount on what we term professional development in this study, even when the cost of providing common planning time is excluded.

Harrison spent $980,986 from its school general fund for professional development. Most of this spending was used for the salary costs of teachers who provided classroom teachers with common planning time. While including planning time dramatically increases the estimate of professional development spending, it is included here because planning time provides teachers student-free time with the opportunity to collaborate with other teachers and build their skills. Not all schools have arranged their schedules to provide teachers with common planning time, and those that have are, in effect, building an infrastructure for job-embedded professional development. Although we cannot be sure that all of this time is used for professional development, we believe that thinking of this time as a professional development resource could help to justify creating joint planning time for staff, which is an excellent opportunity for collaboration around student learning. Furthermore, interview data revealed that common planning time at Harrison is used for meetings with instructional facilitators and collegial discussions about better teaching strategies and curriculum units. These activities clearly fall within our definition of professional development. For purposes of comparison, however, estimates of professional development spending without planning time are included in Table 5.

In addition to providing planning time, the general fund budget was used to pay the salaries of the five instructional facilitators, one for each separate academic program. These full-time, on-site facilitators are licensed teachers who have extensive knowledge of their specific academic program. Their on-site coaching and support of teachers is an example of the kind of professional development that has been proven effective – ongoing, job-embedded, and focused on the content of the academic program.

The additional $995,986 ($7,781/teacher) spent on professional development at the school site underscores the importance of conducting school-level professional development spending analyses in districts that have decentralized budgeting, since the school's discretion can both augment and detract from predicted expenditures on professional development. Table 5 lists Harrison's school-controlled expenditures on professional development, which are all funded by state and local sources. The table also shows the percentage of the total spent on each item.

Table 5
Sources of School-Level Professional Development at Harrison

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Description	**State/Local**	**Percentage of total***
Salaries (& benefits) of on-site facilitators	$349,910	35%
On-site technology training	$15,000	2%
Common planning time used for pd	$631,076	63%
Total with planning time	**$995,986**	**100%**
Total without planning time	**$364,910**	**37%**

*Rounded to the nearest percent

Professional Development Resources from Other Sources

In addition to the public funds listed above, Harrison also has other resources that support professional development that were not quantified in this study. More specifically, there were two major types of additional staff development resources at Harrison that were not included in the analysis:

External support for individual teachers' professional development—Harrison had two such sources. The first was the union's professional development fund, to which teachers in Cincinnati could apply for mini-grants to attend conferences that supported their professional growth. Second, since Harrison participated in the teacher intern program with a university, teachers were eligible to apply for individual grants from the university to support their own course-taking. Since these are outside of district and school control and no records of participation were obtained, this study did not include these.

Uncompensated teacher time—Little (1987) found that uncompensated teacher time was a significant resource for professional development. At Harrison this included, among other things, graduate classes that several teachers took at a local university, and collegial work outside of the contract day. However, since the school site bears none of this cost, it was not included the analysis.

Leaving these activities out of the analysis potentially leads to an underestimate of professional development resources at Harrison; however, accurately quantifying these resources is outside the scope of this study.

Table 6 presents a summary table with total, per teacher and per student professional development resources at Harrison at both the district and school level.

Table 6
Professional Development Resources at Harrison by Level

Locus of Control	**Percentage Spending per level**	**Total Professional Development Spending**	**Total per Teacher***	**Total per Student**
School level	80%	$995,986	$7,781	$642
District level	20%	$246,995	$1,930	$159
Total	**100%**	**$1,242,981**	**$9,711**	**$801**

*This table uses all professional teaching staff, including core academic, specials, vocational education and special education teachers in the per teacher calculation.

As Table 6 shows, Cincinnati and Harrison combined provide for $9,711 per teacher in professional development resources. If the untracked average district-level expenditure per teacher of $1,038 were included, this estimate would be $10,749 per teacher. Since we are unable to definitively track these resources to Harrison, however, the higher estimate is not used in this study.

5. Cost Structure of Professional Development Spending At Harrison

The remainder of this article analyzes Harrison's professional development resources by cost structure, which provides a framework for understanding how resources were allocated within the school. Of Harrison's $1,242,981 total expenditures for professional development (including both district and school level spending), 98% were for either teacher time or training and coaching. Teacher time was the largest expenditure, $631,519. All but $443 was spent on providing teachers with a common planning period during each regular school day that could be used to engage in professional development. The remainder was used to pay teachers to attend math and science workshops funded by the Eisenhower program. The school spent $581,781 on training and coaching, spending $58,134 for training and $523,647 for coaching. Table 7 shows Harrison's expenditures for professional development by cost element.

Table 7
Resources for Professional Development by Cost Structure

Cost Element	Expenditure	Average Expenditure per Teacher	Average Expenditure per Pupil	Percentage of Total Professional Development Expenditures
Training & Coaching	$581,781	$4,545	$375	47%
Teacher Time	$631,519	$4,934	$407	51%
Travel & Transportation	$704	$6	$ *	*%
Tuition & Conference Fees	$0	$0	$0	0%
Administration	$26,049	$203	$17	2%
Materials, Equip. & Facilities	$2,928	$23	$2	*%
Grand Total	$1,242,981	$9,711	$801	100%

*Since this was such a small amount of money, the per-pupil and/or percentage of total expenditures calculations were negligible.

As noted earlier, it is important to include the cost of teachers' time within the school contract as part of a discussion of the cost of professional development. While this time is included in the regular teacher contract and therefore has no marginal cost to the school, the school leadership had to make a number of changes to enable teachers to have such a substantial amount of common planning time. For this reason, we feel it is appropriate to include the estimate of the cost of providing the common planning time in the calculation of the total amount spent on professional development. However, some researchers prefer to use estimates of professional development costs that does not include planning time, so, for the purposes of comparison with those studies, Table 8 shows Harrison's professional development expenditures excluding teacher time within the regular school day. The figures are still substantial, on both a per teacher and a per student basis.

Table 8
Resources for Professional Development by Cost Structure, Not Including Teacher Time within the Regular Contract

Cost Element	Expenditure without Teacher Time within the Contract	Average Expenditure per Teacher	Average Expenditure per Pupil	Percentage of Total Professional Development Expenditures
Training & Coaching	$581,781	$4,545	$375	95%
Teacher Time	$443	$3	$*	*%
Travel & Transportation	$704	$6	$*	*%
Tuition & Conference Fees	$0	$0	$0	0%
Administration	$26,049	$203	$17	4%
Materials, Equip. & Facilities	$2,928	$23	$2	1%
Grand Total	$611,905	$4,780	$394	100%

*Since this was such a small amount of money, the per pupil and/or percentage of total expenditures calculations were negligible.

Excluding the cost of teacher time within the contract, professional development resources at Harrison are spent almost entirely on training and coaching. A closer look at his cost element reveals that most of it (99%) is spent on coaching. This cost is high for a number of reasons. First, coaching is a form of professional development with a longer duration than most, making it more expensive. Secondly, this school has hired five full-time instructional facilitators to provide coaching at the school site; their salaries account for 60% of the amount spent on coaching and 28% of total spending on professional development at Harrison. This reflects the fact that the separate academic programs, including two comprehensive school designs, is one of the main strategies for school improvement at Harrison. The school administration's belief that a full-time, on-site coach who could meet with teachers during common planning time is reflected in their large investment in both facilitators and common planning time.

While most comprehensive school designs have fees, Harrison has managed not to incur any costs from its two programs. Administrators and staff at Harrison agreed to let Co-NECT use Harrison as a demonstration site; in exchange, the school gets to use the program without paying the usual fees. Any initial fees to use the Paideia program were paid by the district in previous years and are not part of this analysis.

In addition to the salaries of the five instructional facilitators, the training and coaching expenses covered $173,737 in coaches across a variety of district initiatives, including lead teachers, team leaders, and peer mentors. Workshops across a variety of topics cost $16,804, including math and science workshops funded by the federal Eisenhower program. The combination of district and school-level expenditures on professional development adds up to comprehensive, ongoing professional development for teachers at Harrison Place High School.

7. Conclusion

The methodology of interviewing multiple central office staff as well as the principal to identify professional development expenses at Harrison helped the researcher gain a more complete picture of spending than would have been possible from an analysis of budget data alone. This methodology provided much more detailed and accurate information about the district program resources available at the school site. Furthermore, this study uncovered some resources that were not apparent from school budget data. One example of this was the $15,000 in grant money used for technology training.

This study has two very interesting findings: the relatively high estimate of the amount spent on professional development and how that money was spent. The first, the high level of expenditure per teacher for professional development, is higher than those found in other studies mentioned earlier in the article. Including time within the teacher contract, Harrison teachers had an average of $9,711 of resources of professional development. There are three main reasons that this estimate is higher than those found in other studies:

Unlike much earlier research, Harrison's data were collected using a multi-step methodology. The researcher supplemented budget data, traditionally the main source of data for professional development cost studies, with interviews that enabled the researcher to more accurately determine which expenditures were directly related to professional development. Without these interviews the data would have been much less precise, since current accounting systems are not designed to clearly identify all types of professional development expenditures.

Additionally, data were collected on school discretionary as well as district expenditures for professional development. If only the district-level spending were taken into account, the researcher would have only estimated Harrison professional development expenditures of $1930 per teacher or $160 per student. This is within the range found in some other studies, but clearly underestimates the total professional development resources available to Harrison Place teachers.

The methodology and cost framework utilized in this study includes teacher time within the regular contract spent on professional development activities in the estimate. This adds $4,931 to the per teacher estimate of professional development expenditure. Similarly, Miles and Hornbeck (2000) include district-level spending for teacher time, which includes district-wide inservice days, in their calculations. Since Cincinnati does not include such days in the district contract, the teacher time in our estimates is all provided on the school level.

The variation in definitions of professional development that lead to very different estimates of costs will continue unless researchers decide on a comprehensive and relevant definition. This project attempted to advance this effort by looking across several prior works on professional development expenditures to arrive at such a definition. We then constructed a cost structure to aid in the collection of the same expenditures across studies. Only when studies include the same expenditures will we be able to say that one estimate is higher or lower than another and focus on why that is the case.

As illustrated in this case study, the Odden, et. al. (2001) cost structure provides a substantial level of detail about the nature of spending being studied. The cost structure helps highlight the second interesting finding of this study: how Harrison's professional development money was spent. The highest percentage (51%) of the money spent on professional development at Harrison was for common planning time for teachers – time within the regular school day to engage in professional development. Including this cost estimate is important because school leadership at Harrison purposefully reorganized the school schedule to ensure that every teacher had daily common planning time with his or her teacher team. The second largest percentage (47%) of the expenditure for professional development at Harrison was for training and coaching, and the highest portion of these funds was spent on the salaries of five full-time, on-site instructional facilitators. Again, this school-based expenditure is important to include because it represents such a substantial investment in ongoing teacher learning.

As these examples show, using this cost structure makes it possible to break out the variation caused by different definitions of professional development (for example inclusion of teacher time within the contract or ongoing coaching) from those caused by variations of spending. Use of this framework thus creates estimates that more empirically and practically useful.

In sum, the cost structure analysis yielded useful findings about not just the total professional development costs at Harrison, but more importantly, the strategic allocation of resources. The cost structure also makes it possible to see how different definitions of professional development shape findings. It is thus an important contribution to the field since widespread use of such a cost structure would facilitate comparing findings across studies.

This case study represents one of the early steps of a broader research agenda, which ultimately seeks to identify the level of professional development spending and spending strategies that will best enable schools and districts to improve teaching and student learning. Continuing these analyses in a systematic manner and employing the cost methodology defined in Odden, et. al. (2001) will yield more data that will add to the extant knowledge on the cost of effective professional development. This knowledge will help districts and schools make informed decisions about spending on professional development.

Notes

This article was prepared for the Consortium for Policy Research in Education, Wisconsin Center for Education Research, University of Wisconsin-Madison. It borrows heavily from two other CPRE papers. The literature review, methodology, and general format were taken from Elm Street School: A Case Study of Professional Development Expenditures, by H. Alix Gallagher, another school in the same study of one district. Some details about the school itself were taken from: A Case Study of Dramatic Resource Reallocation to Improve Student Achievement: Harrison Place High School, by Sarah Archibald. The research reported in here was supported by a grant from the U.S. Department of Education, Office of Educational Research and Improvement, National Institute on Educational Governance, Finance, Policy-Making and Management, to the Consortium for Policy Research in Education (CPRE) and the Wisconsin Center for Education Research, School of Education, University of Wisconsin-Madison (Grant No. OERI-R3086A60003). The opinions expressed are those of the authors and do not necessarily reflect the view of the National Institute on Educational Governance, Finance, Policy-Making and Management, Office of Educational Research and Improvement, U.S. Department of Education, the institutional partners of CPRE, or the Wisconsin Center for Education Research.

1. The actual name of the high school described here is not used; Harrison Place High School is a pseudonym.

2. The two optional elements are research and development and future salary obligations. We chose not to use them in this study.

3. For more information on the changes made at the school, please see: Archibald, Sarah. 2001. A Case Study of Dramatic Resource Reallocation to Boost Student Achievement: Harrison Place High School, CPRE Working Paper Series, SF-01-1, available online: http://www.wcer.wisc.edu/cpre/finance/research/reallocation.asp.

4. To calculate the per-teacher estimate, all core academic teachers, specials teachers, vocational education teachers and special education teachers were included. If the estimate were only to include core academic teachers, the estimate would be $2954 per teacher. It is likely that most of these district initiatives were focused on these teachers, but not all.

References

Archibald, Sarah. 2001. A Case Study of Dramatic Resource Reallocation to Improve Student Achievement: Harrison Place High School. Paper prepared for the Consortium for Policy Research in Education at the University of Wisconsin, Madison. Available online at: http://www.wcer.wisc.edu/cpre/finance/research/reallocation.asp.

Birman, Beatrice F., Desimone, Laura, Porter, Andrew C., & Garet, Michael S.. (2000). Designing professional development that works. *Educational Leadership 57* (8), 28-33.

Chambers, Jay G. (1999). *Measuring resources in education: From accounting to the resource cost model approach.* Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research.

Corcoran, Thomas B. (1995). *Helping teachers teach well: Transforming professional development.* (RB-16).

Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, Graduate School of Education Consortium for Policy Research in Education.

Elmore, Richard, & Burney, Deanna. (1997). *Investing in teacher learning: Professional development and instructional improvement in Community School District #2, New York City*. Philadelphia: Consortium for Policy Research in Education and the National Commission on Teaching & America's Future.

Fermanich, Mark. (2001). Elementary School Spending for Professional Development: A Cross-Case Analysis. Submitted to *Elementary School Journal*.

Gallagher, H. Alix. (2002). Elm Street School: A Case Study of Professional Development Expenditures. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(28). Available online: http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n28.html.

Garet, Michael S., Birman, Beatrice F., Porter, Andrew C., Desimone, Laura, Herman, Rebecca, & Yoon, Kwang Suk. (1999). *Designing effective professional development: Lessons from the Eisenhower Program*. Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research.

Hertert, Linda. (1997). *Investing in teacher professional development: A look at 16 districts*. Denver: Education Commission of the States.

Killeen, Kieran M., Monk, David H., & Plecki, Margaret L. (March 2000). School district spending on professional development: Insights available from national data. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Finance Association, San Antonio, Texas.

Little, Judith Warren. (1993). Teachers' professional development in a climate of educational reform. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis 15* (2), 129-151.

Little, Judith Warren, Gerritz, William H., Stern, David S., Guthrie, James W., Kirst, Michael W., & Marsh, David D.. (1987). *Staff development in California*. San Francisco: Far West Laboratory for Educational Research and Development.

Miles, Karen, Bouchard, Francine, Winner, Kendra, Cohen, Mary Ann, & Guiney, Ellen. (1999). *Professional development spending in the Boston Public Schools. Boston: Boston Plan for Excellence, Boston Public Schools.*

Miles, Karen Hawley. (March 2001). Analyzing district spending on instructional and school support. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Finance Association, Cincinnati, Ohio.

Miles, Karen Hawley, & Hornbeck, Matthew. (2000). Rethinking district professional development spending to support a District CSR Strategy: Resource Reallocation, Issue #3. Arlington, VA: New American Schools..

Miller, Barbara, Lord, Brian, & Dorney, Judith. (1994). Staff development for teachers: A study of configurations and costs in four districts. Newton, MA: Education Development Center.

Odden, Allan, Archibald, Sarah, Fermanich, Mark, and Gallagher, H. Alix. (2001). A cost framework for professional development. Journal of Education Finance. Forthcoming.

About the Authors

Sarah Archibald
Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison
1025 W. Johnson St. Room 653
Madison, WI 53706

eE

Sarah Archibald is a Researcher at the Consortium for Policy Research in Education at the University of Wisconsin–Madison. Her main research area is school finance. Specifically, she is interested in district- and school-level finance analyses. Recently, she has worked on a district and school-level study of professional development expenditures and helped develop a school-level expenditure structure that arrays both resource data and the educational strategies tied to those resource allocations.

H. Alix Gallagher

Consortium for Policy Research in Education
University of Wisconsin-Madison
1025 W. Johnson St. Room 653
Madison, WI 53706

Email: hagallagher@students.wisc.edu

H. Alix Gallagher is completing her Ph.D. in Educational Administration at the University of Wisconsin–Madison. Throughout her career as a graduate student, her area of focus has been school finance. Her dissertation and future research plans involve in-depth study of various policies that better support and prepare teachers, including knowledge and skill-based pay plans, pre-service and inservice education.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

This article has been retrieved 2254 times since June 13, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 30 **June 13, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Teacher Inequality: New Evidence on Disparities in Teachers' Academic Skills

Andrew J. Wayne
SRI International

Citation: Wayne, A. (2002, June 13). Teacher inequality: New evidence on disparities in teachers' academic skills. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(30). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n30/.

Abstract
When discussing the teacher quality gap, policy makers have tended to focus on teacher certification, degrees, and experience. These indicators have become key benchmarks for progress toward equality of educational opportunity, in part for lack of additional teacher quality indicators. This article turns attention to teachers' academic skills. National data on teachers' entrance examination scores and college selectivity reveal substantial disparities by school poverty level. The findings commend attention to the gap in academic skills in the formulation of future policy and research on the teacher quality gap.

The teacher quality gap has received attention from a broad spectrum of policy makers (see, e.g., American Council on Education, 1999; National Association of State Boards of Education, 1998; National Commission on Teaching and America's Future, 1996). Even federal legislators have recently proposed ways to close the gap in teacher qualifications between low-income and affluent children (see Stedman, 1999; Wayne, 2000, 6-7). This article reports on the results of an examination of national data on disparities in teachers' academic skills. Analysts have thoroughly documented disparities in teachers' experience, certification, and degrees, but very few studies assess differences using academic skills indicators such as teachers' college ratings or entrance examination scores. (Note 1)

Opportunities to examine disparities in teachers' academic skills at the national level exist because of two national survey efforts, overseen by the National Center for Education Statistics. First, data from the Schools and Staffing Survey portray the public school teaching force as a whole. Second, data from the Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study portray the contribution of a cohort of college graduates. This article presents analyses of both data sets. For organization, the article begins with a discussion of relevant theory. It then dedicates one section to each of the two national data sources. Its conclusion briefly discusses implications for policy making and for future research.

Theory

The basic premise undergirding this investigation is that students with lower quality teachers experience a disadvantage. Put into theoretical terms, student learning is a function of teacher quality. Theorists have conceptualized teacher quality as a set of specific knowledge areas and skills (see e.g., Shulman, 1987). But in order assess teacher quality disparities at the national level, one must rely on quality indicators that can be readily measured by teacher questionnaires, administered via sample surveys. Measures such as teachers' experience, certification, and degrees are taken to be indicators of the theorized components of teacher quality, such as pedagogical knowledge and content knowledge. Analysts have thoroughly documented disparities using questionnaire data containing these indicators (see Henke et al., 1997; Ingersoll, 1996; Lewis et al, 1999).

Less attention has been paid to differences in what Mayer, Mullens, and Moore (2000) refer to as indicators of teachers' academic skills, such as teachers' college ratings or entrance examination scores. The case for such attention is clear: studies of student achievement gains confirm—more resolutely than for many other indicators of teacher quality—that students learn more from teachers with better academic skills (for reviews see Hanushek, 1997; Mayer, Mullens, and Moore, 2000, 5-7). But it is important to point out that the relationship between academic skills indicators and the conceptualized elements of teacher quality has not received attention from theorists. Why might students learn more from teachers with better academic skills? Teachers who read faster may acquire new content knowledge more quickly. Teachers with greater verbal facility may spend their preparation time more focused on lesson design than on deciding what exactly to say. Maybe teachers with better college entrance examination scores learned more in college, or maybe entrance examination scores and college selectivity correlate with the quality of teachers' precollegiate education—a much longer educational experience than undergraduate education.

The development of a formalized theory of teachers' academic skills is beyond the scope of this article. But such a body of theory will clearly become necessary in the future as researchers and policy makers think about policies that might remedy disparities in academic skills.

Evidence from the Schools and Staffing Survey

Description of the Data

The 1993-94 Schools and Staffing Survey (Note 2) (SASS) encompasses several distinct surveys whose findings are readily linked. This investigation linked teacher quality indicators from SASS's teacher survey, the Public School Teacher Questionnaire, to school poverty levels obtained via the SASS Public School Questionnaire.

The teacher survey is known for its detailed questions about teacher degrees and certification, but it also contained an indirect measure of academic skills. The SASS asked teachers to identify their undergraduate institutions. Peterson's Guides (1995) rates institutions on its Entrance Difficulty Index, a reasonable albeit rough proxy for academic skills. (Note 3) Ratings include 'most difficult,' 'very difficult,' 'moderately difficult,' 'minimally difficult,' and 'noncompetitive.'

To properly consider the relationship between these ratings and academic skills, one must ask exactly how Peterson's assigns ratings. In truth, Peterson's asks institutions to rate themselves. To guide responses, instruction booklets that accompany the Peterson's surveys specify thresholds on three optional criteria: (1) entering students' high school class rank, (2) entering students' college entrance examination scores, and (3) the percentage of applicants accepted. The ratings probably do not predict academic skills perfectly, since applicants' decisions depend on other factors as well (e.g., wealth).

Another SASS measure that requires some discussion reveals the prevalence of poverty at each teacher's school. The SASS collects, from each sampled school, the National School Lunch Program participation rate. This measure comes with two notable flaws. First, although the income eligibility threshold varies for different family sizes, it does not account for geographic differences in the cost-of-living. Therefore lunch program eligible students in rural areas, for instance, may be better off than eligible students in central cities.

A second problem with this poverty metric is that elementary school students exhibit higher lunch program participation rates than secondary school students—40 percent and 28 percent respectively according to the 1993-94 SASS (Henke et al. 1997, 16). As a result, apparent teacher quality disparities by school poverty level may actually represent differences between elementary and secondary teachers. However, analyses of the disparities in teacher academic skills that disaggregated elementary and secondary teachers revealed disparities substantially like those found for all teachers.

The final source of uncertainty worth mentioning is nonresponse. Missing records, records without school poverty information, and records that could not be associated with a Peterson's rating together conspired to reduce the usable sample by 32 percent, to 37,874 teachers. On the one hand, the availability of so many observations ensures that sampling errors need not even be mentioned in the figures presented below; all standard errors were less than two percentage points. On the other hand, the assumption that respondents and nonrespondents do not differ systematically is somewhat risky. Thus the true gap in academic skills may be somewhat larger or smaller than depicted.

Results

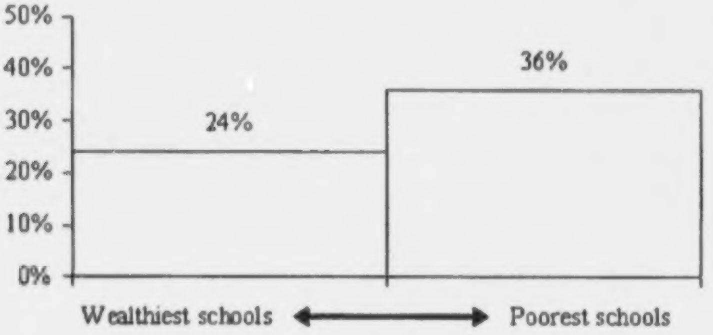
Before presenting results, two analytic issues must be addressed. The first involves what specifically to compare. Because SASS observes poverty at the school level—not the classroom level—all findings about disparities in teacher quality really denote differences between teachers at low-poverty schools and teachers at high-poverty schools. In other words, the selection of comparison categories is a matter of dividing up schools, not teachers. Analysts divide up the schools using lunch program participation rates; the rates act as category boundaries. For example, Ingersoll (1996) divided schools into 'low-poverty,' 'medium-poverty,' and 'high-poverty' according to whether lunch program participation was less than 15 percent, between 15 and 50 percent, or 50 percent or more.

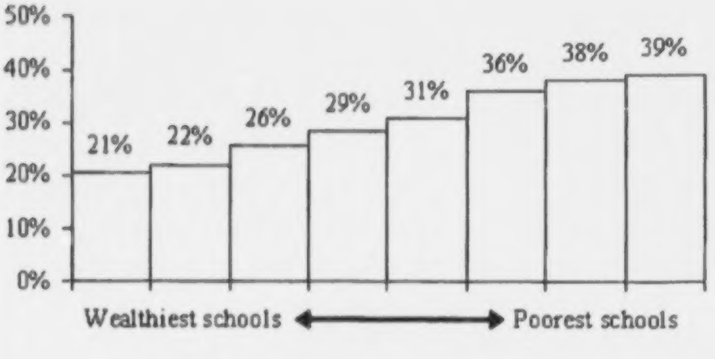
To best meet the needs of policy maker audiences, the present investigation examines disparities using three separate category schemes. The first designates all schools as either low-poverty or high-poverty. It divides them according to whether their lunch program participation rates are above or below 28 percent. That threshold, determined via an analysis of SASS data on schools' enrollments, divides schools such that the low- and high-poverty categories each enroll *one half* of all U.S. public school students.

Similar computations yielded the remaining two category schemes: one that divided U.S. students into fourths, and another that divided them into eighths. (Note 4) The divisions remain divisions of schools, so the text refers to the individual categories as *school poverty quartiles* and *school poverty octiles*.

A second analytic note that must preface the findings involves the teacher quality variable. Even skeptics of the student achievement research would admit that students' opportunities are diminished when their teachers' academic skills fall below some minimum threshold. Therefore the analysis collapses the quality variable to focus on the percentage of teachers from institutions Peterson's rated either 'minimally difficult' or 'noncompetitive.' It subsumes such teachers under the new analytic label, 'less selective.' (Note 5) For perspective, in 1993, these institutions conferred only about one fifth of all bachelor's degrees, according to a weighted tabulation based on the Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study.

Having established the comparison categories and the quality metric, the discussion can now turn to results. Figure 1 applies the three category schemes to the SASS teachers to investigate disparities in the percentages from less selective institutions. All three category schemes show disadvantages for higher poverty schools. The juxtaposition of the three comparisons into a single graphic shows that the comparison of halves hides some important variation, evident in the comparison in quartiles. But the further breakdown into octiles does little. An additional breakdown into sixteenths (not depicted) was also not fruitful. The quartile comparison thus properly summarizes the disparities.





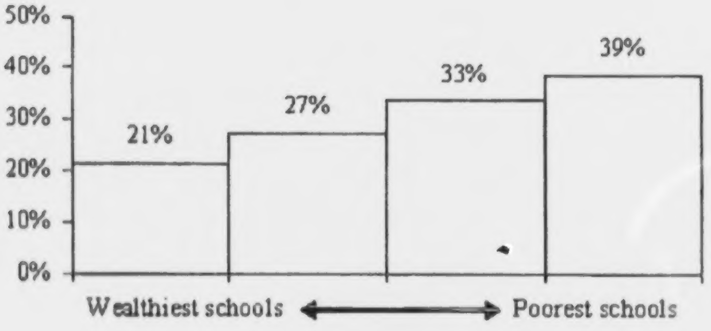


Figure 1. The percentages of teachers from less selective institutions, compared using three school poverty categorizations: halves, quartiles, and octiles. Weighted tabulations from the 1993-94 Schools and Staffing Survey.

Evidence from the Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study

Description of the Data

The Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study (Note 6) (B&B) differs markedly from the SASS. Rather than portray only teachers, B&B allows a unique look at the qualities of graduates from the college class of 1993 who had entered teaching by 1997.

The full B&B sample actually includes many nonteachers as well; it is representative of the entire college class of 1993. But B&B followed the sample members over time, and the 1994 and 1997 interviews determined which graduates had become teachers.

B&B's teacher academic skills measure and school poverty measure are almost identical to those described above for the SASS. Respondents' undergraduate institutions were linked to Peterson's ratings to yield a measure of academic skills. And the school poverty measure is again the National School Lunch Program participation rate for each teacher's school. (Note 7) B&B does contain one additional academic skills measure, however. B&B's authors drew records from several sources to determine each graduate's college entrance examination scores. (Note 8)

Two final, important characteristics of B&B are its response rate and the number of observations. A remarkably high 90 percent of the original B&B sample completed the 1997 interview. However, many interviews failed to obtain the quality and school poverty information identified above. Thus, although the 1997 interview located some 967 respondents who reported having entered public school teaching jobs, (Note 9) school poverty information was obtained for only 646 of them. And among those with school poverty information, 630 had Peterson's ratings, and only 530 had entrance examination scores. These problems limited the conclusions substantially, as discussed below.

Results

As in the analysis of SASS, some preliminary remarks are needed regarding the school poverty categories and the collapse of the teacher quality variables. The school poverty thresholds used in the B&B analysis were exactly those identified above in the SASS analysis. Unless the distribution of students across schools of different poverty levels changed substantially between the SASS measurement in 1993-94 and the B&B interviews in 1997, the SASS-derived thresholds provide a sufficient approximation.

Like the analysis of SASS, the B&B analysis presented here collapses the quality variables to focus on the proportions of teachers falling below what might be considered a minimum threshold. The label 'less selective' thus retains the meaning established earlier. For the other quality variable, entrance examination scores, the analysis focuses on the percentages of teachers with bottom quartile college entrance examination scores, where bottom quartile is defined in reference to the examination score distribution of all class of 1993 graduates.

Turning to the results, the weaknesses of the B&B data set constrained the conclusions such that, ultimately, replicating Figure 1 for B&B was not possible. Besides nonresponse, the principal barrier was the very limited number of observations; estimates for school poverty quartiles and octiles were simply not reliable, yielding standard errors as high as nine percentage points. (Note 10) Figures 2 and 3 therefore each compare teacher quality in the low-poverty and high-poverty halves only.

Substantial disparities are evident in these comparisons. In Figure 2, the proportions of teachers from less selective institutions were 22 percent at low-poverty and 37 percent at high-poverty schools. In Figure 3, the proportions with bottom quartile entrance examination scores were less disparate: 26 percent and 34 percent, respectively. This disparity was significant only at the .15 level, while all other differences were significant at the .05 level.

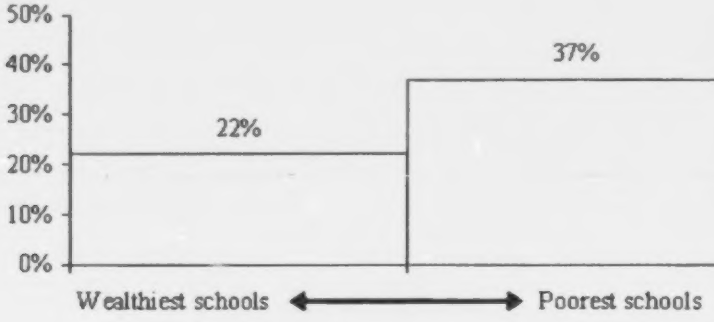


Figure 2. The percentages of teachers from less selective institutions, compared using school poverty halves. Weighted tabulations from the 1993 Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study, Second Follow-up.

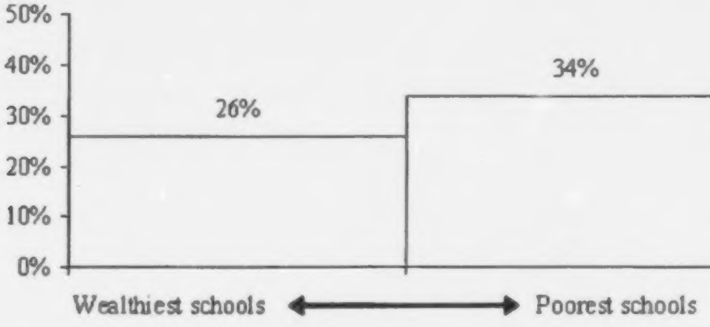


Figure 3. The percentages of teachers with bottom quartile entrance examination scores, compared using three school poverty halves. Weighted tabulations from the 1993 Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study, Second Follow-up.

In interpreting the B&B results, readers must remember that B&B does not portray disparities among the entire teaching force. It portrays disparities in the flows of teachers—particularly the flow from undergraduate institutions, within four years of degree receipt. Other flows also play a role in determining the quality of low-income students' teachers, such as teacher attrition and mobility. In some state-level analyses researchers have found that such departures are especially prevalent among those with relatively high academic skills (see e.g., Murnane, Singer, and Willett, 1989).

Conclusion

Implications for policy making

When discussing the teacher quality gap, policy makers have tended to focus on certification, degrees, and experience. These indicators have been the benchmarks for progress toward equality of educational opportunity, in part for lack of other indicators. This article shows clearly that policy makers need to consider teachers' academic skills.

According to the evidence presented here, an academic skills gap exists, and it is quite large. The proportions of teachers who graduated from institutions rated either 'minimally difficult' or 'noncompetitive' were 21 percent and 39 percent in low- and high-poverty schools, respectively. Closing this gap would require the replacement or upgrade of about one sixth (18 percent) of the teaching force at high-poverty schools.

Disparities of similar size have appeared in the literature for only two other teacher quality indicators. One is graduate degree holding, which is of debatable importance (see Ballou and Podgursky, 1999, 2000; Darling-Hammond, 1999). The other is in-field degree holding, which, though probably important, cannot benchmark those teachers who lack subject-specific assignments (e.g., general elementary teachers). Thus academic skills indicators are a relatively powerful tool for understanding how far away the nation is from providing equally qualified teachers to schoolchildren from different income groups.

Consideration of policy options that might affect academic skills disparities would require clearer theories about the role of teachers' academic skills. Some policy options discussed in the literature thus far relate to school finance (Figlio and Reuben, 1999), school choice (Hoxby, 2000), teacher licensure examinations (Ferguson, 1998; Gitomer, Latham, and Ziomek, 1999), and the use of academic skills indicators in determining eligibility for teacher scholarships and loan forgiveness (Wayne, 2000).

Implications for future research

Data quality limited the certainty of the findings; due to nonresponse and sampling error, the true gap in academic skills may be somewhat larger or smaller than depicted. But data quality sufficed insofar as it showed (1) that a gap exists and (2) that the gap is substantial. Those findings have a clear implication for future research: efforts are needed to bring data on academic skills up to par with data for other quality indicators.

In the short-term, some additional investment to incorporate academic skills indicators into ongoing data collection efforts seems worthwhile. The cost may be substantial. Most quality indicators can be reliably measured via one or two items on a pencil-and-paper questionnaire for teachers (e.g., experience). The same is *not* true for academic skills measures, as additional effort is required to match entrance examination score records or to code institutional identifiers. Presumably costs and competing priorities explain why recent federally funded teacher surveys (e.g., Lewis et al., 1999) have not measured teachers' academic skills.

Over the long-term, as academic skills indicators receive greater attention, the need to improve the indicators will become obvious. College selectivity ratings offer a fairly rough proxy. And if researchers could administer standardized tests to teachers, it is not clear that they would choose to administer college entrance examinations. Thus, although the disparities reported here are very real, serious thought will be required about what measures could better represent academic skills.

References

American Council on Education. (1999). *To touch the future: Transforming the way teachers are taught.* Washington, DC: Author.

Ballou, D., & Podgursky, M. (2000). Reforming teacher preparation and licensing: Continuing the debate. *Teachers College Record,* http://www.tcrecord.org ID: 10524.

Ballou, D., & Podgursky, M. (1999). Reforming teacher preparation and licensing: What is the evidence? *Teachers College Record,* http://www.tcrecord.org ID: 10418.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1999). Reforming teacher preparation and licensing: Debating the evidence. *Teachers College Record,* http://www.tcrecord.org ID: 10419.

Ehrenberg, R. G., & Brewer, D. J. (1995). Did teachers' verbal ability and race matter in the 1960s?: *Coleman* revisited. *Economics of Education Review, 14*(1), 1-21.

Ferguson, R. F. (1998). Can schools narrow the black-white test score gap? In C. Jencks, & M. Phillips (eds.), *The black-white test score gap* (pp. 318-374). Washington, DC: Brookings Institution.

Figlio, D. N., & Rueben, K. S. (1999). Tax limits and the qualifications of new teachers. University of Florida, Gainesville.

Gitomer, D. H., Latham, A. S., & Ziomek, R. (1999). *The academic quality of prospective teachers: The impact of admissions and licensure testing.* Princeton, New Jersey: Educational Testing Service.

Hanushek, E. A. (1997). Assessing the effects of school resources on student performance: An update. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 19*(2), 141-164.

Henke, R. R., Chen, X., & Geis, S. (2000). *Progress through the teacher pipeline: 1992-93 college graduates and elementary/secondary school teaching as of 1997.* Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics.

Henke, R. R., Choy, S. P., Chen, X., Geis, S., & Alt, M. N. (1997). *America's teachers: Profile of a profession, 1993-94*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics.

Hoxby, C. (2000). *Would school choice change the teaching profession?* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the Association for Public Policy Analysis and Management, Seattle, WA.

Ingersoll, R. M. (1996). *Out-of-field teaching and educational equity*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education.

Kain, J. F., & Singleton, K. (1996). Equality of educational opportunity revisited. *New England Economic Review, May/June*, 87-111.

Lankford, H., Loeb, S., & Wyckoff, J. (2002). Teacher Sorting and the Plight of Urban Schools: A Descriptive Analysis. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis*, *24*(1), 37–62.

Lewis, L., Parsad, B., Carey, N., Bartfai, N., Farris, E., & Smerdon, B. (1999). *Teacher quality: A report on the preparation and qualifications of public school teachers*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics.

Mayer, D. P., Mullens, J. E., & Moore, M. T. (2000). *Monitoring school quality: An indicators report*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education.

Murnane, R. J., Singer, J. D., & Willett, J. B. (1989). The influence of salaries on teachers' career choices: Evidence from North Carolina. *Harvard Educational Review*, *59*(3), 325-346.

National Association of State Boards of Education. (1998). *The numbers game: Ensuring quantity and quality in the teaching workforce*. Alexandria, VA: Author.

National Commission on Teaching and America's Future. (1996). *What matters most: Teaching for America's future*. New York: Author.

Peterson's Guides, Inc. (1995). *Peterson's guide to four-year colleges: 1996* (26 ed.). Princeton, NJ: Author.

Shulman, L. S. (1987). Knowledge and teaching: Foundations of the new reform. *Harvard Educational Review*, *57*(1), 1-22.

Stedman, J. B. (1999). *Elementary and secondary school teachers: Action by the 106th Congress*. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service.

Wayne, A. J. (2000). *Federal policies to improve teacher quality for low-income students*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Maryland, College Park, MD.

About the Author

Andrew Wayne
Center for Education Policy
SRI International
Arlington, VA 22209

Email: andrew.wayne@sri.com

Andrew Wayne works at SRI International in the Center for Education Policy, where his work addresses teacher quality, educational technology, and standards-based reform. Before coming to SRI, he served as a policy analyst for two national efforts to improve teacher quality. He holds degrees in social policy, physics, and education, and has worked as a teacher of science and computers. He can be reached at (703) 247-8491 or by email (above). Correspondence may be sent to the author at SRI International, 1611 North Kent Street, Arlington, VA 22209.

Notes

Some of the findings presented in this article appear in an introductory chapter of the author's doctoral dissertation.

Although the responsibility for errors belongs solely to the author, I would like to thank Daniel Goldhaber and Willis Hawley for very helpful comments on an earlier draft. I would also like to thank David Figlio for generously sharing the data he and his colleagues entered on college selectivity.

1. Disparities were evident in an analysis of very old national data, from 1966 (Ehrenberg & Brewer, 1995), and in recent data from the states of New York and Texas (Lankford, Loeb, and Wyckoff, 2002; Ferguson, 1998; Kain and Singleton, 1996).

2. A variety of technical and methodological reports on the Schools and Staffing Survey are available online at http://www.nces.ed.gov/surveys/sass.

3. Other researchers have completed the requisite data entry to link each institution to its rating in the 1995 edition of Peterson's. The use of the 1995 ratings is defensible if, as Hoxby (2000) has claimed, ratings are sufficiently stable over time. To better reflect teacher characteristics, each teacher would need to be linked to the ratings issued approximately four years before his or her college graduation.

4. The lunch program participation thresholds for all three category schemes were computed via weighted tabulations of the data yielded by the SASS Public School Questionnaire. The threshold that divided them into halves was 28.37 percent. The exact thresholds that divided U.S. students into quarters were as follows: 12.59, 28.37, and 51.80 percent. And the seven thresholds that divided them into eighths were as follows: 6.35, 12.59, 19.67, 28.37, 38.58, 51.80, and 71.80 percent.

5. Richard Ingersoll (1996, 4-5) used a very similar rationale to justify his particular construction of out-of-field teaching. He opted to treat teachers as in-field even if they held only a minor related to the subject taught, and even if that minor was in a subject-related education field (e.g., mathematics education).

6. A variety of technical and methodological reports on the Baccalaureate and Beyond Longitudinal Study are available online at http://www.nces.ed.gov/surveys/B&B.

7. The architects of B&B foresaw that knowledge about the schools at which the B&B teachers taught could be useful. Therefore respondents who taught were asked to identify the school at which they taught, and responses were coded so that basic school characteristics could be obtained via the Common Core of Data—another data set created by the National Center for Education Statistics.

8. Sources included records from the Educational Testing Service and higher education institutions' records of sample members' SAT and ACT scores. See Henke et al. (2000, 83).

9. This total does not include teachers who first taught at private schools. It also excludes teachers who had taught before graduation or had received their certification more than one year before graduation. This latter group is often excluded in analyses of the B&B cohort's contribution to the teaching force. See Henke et al. (2000, 9).

10. Further disaggregation of teachers into school poverty quartiles and octiles yielded estimates with standard errors as high as nine percentage points. Some interesting spikes occurred in the percentages of teachers with low academic skills in the fifth octile, and to a lesser extent in the third quartile. But given that the spikes may be largely an artifact of sampling error or nonresponse bias, it was judged that the best summary would be the comparisons that focus on the low-poverty and high-poverty halves.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple University of Wisconsin	Greg Camilli Rutgers University
John Covaleskie Northern Michigan University	Alan Davis University of Colorado, Denver
Sherman Dorn	Mark E. Fetler

University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language

Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

This article has been retrieved 3778 times since July 2, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 31 **July 2, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Question of the Student In Educational Reform

David P. Ericson
University of Hawaii at Manoa

Frederick S. Ellett, Jr.
University of Western Ontario

Citation: Ericson, D. P. & Ellett, F. S. (2002, July 2). The question of the student in educational reform. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(31). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n31/.

Abstract

In pursuing the goals of educational reform over the past several decades, educational policy makers have focused on teachers, administrators, and school structures as keys to higher educational achievement. As the would-be beneficiaries of reform, students, and their interaction with the educational system, have been almost entirely overlooked in the pursuit of educational excellence. Yet, as we argue, students are as causally central as educators in bringing about higher educational achievement. In what follows, we examine rational student interaction with the educational system and show why a large number of students have incentives to undercut the intent of the reforms. These are incentives created by our development of an educationally-based, meritocratic social and economic system. No one, apparently, is asking what exactly is in the reforms from the point of view of quite rational, if sometimes irresponsible, student self-interest. Indeed, the eduationally-based, meritocratic social and economic system may be actually forming student preferences guaranteed to result in educational mediocrity rather than excellence. Finally, we comment upon the meaning of "educational excellence" and show why the educational reformers' understanding of the purpose of public education—to compete in the global economic system—can only fail to capture it. In doing so, we point to the kinds of educational structures and policies that create multiple pathways to competent adulthood that do have a chance of bringing about the reformers' stated goal of excellence in the educational system. But these are structures and policies that challenge the entire conceptual framework of the current educational reform movement.

There is a curious omission in the spate of educational reform movement reports, analyses, and recommendations over nearly decades of its existence. They have focused on teachers, the curriculum, school structure and quality, content and performance standards, teacher education, and the like. Yet almost no attention has been paid to the would-be beneficiaries of implemented and proposed educational reforms: students. The achievement level of American students is bemoaned and, arguably, documented in the international comparison studies all right. But

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

beyond being assigned the task of benefiting from the reforms (i.e., learning), students, their roles and activities, figure palely in the drive for higher educational achievement.

Yet, as we shall argue, it is students—their goals, motivations, and conceptions of the good life—that may well prove to be the undoing of the educational reform movement. In other words, we might well improve the quality of teachers, legislate higher content and performance standards and academic requirements, and reform teacher education to the educational reform movement's content, and still totally fail in achieving anything close to educational excellence in our schools. The reason will be that there is nearly total disregard for rational student interaction with the educational system. Students, in quite rational pursuit of their own ends, are clearly capable of undermining the intent of the reforms.

In what follows, then, we shall in Part I develop a view of what it means to be an ideal student. Here we shall raise the question of whether students have any duty or responsibility for acting as an ideal student would. And though we shall note that a general view of positive student responsibility can be justifiably defended—not merely asserted—we shall also show that students may be both irresponsible *and* rational in failing to act as ideal students. In Part II, we explore the distributive behavior of the educational system and the idea of a schooling-based meritocratic society. Here we shall argue that this distributive behavior strongly favors the development of the kinds of students—students in name only—who contrast strongly with a noted view of "the ideal student." In Part III, we shall develop a more refined typology of students as rational actors. We argue that in full rational pursuit of their own view of the good, these students in name only will rarely, if ever, find it in their interest to act as an "ideal student" would. In Part IV, we shall finally establish that the failure to take into account the various rational (and non-rational) interests of students will most likely undermine the reformers' intent. In concluding, we point the way to the kind of fundamental and more penetrating educational reforms that could lead the way to excellence in education and educational achievement.

I

The Ideal Student

While the current educational reform movement has undergone successive changes in focus since the "A Nation at Risk" report was published (D. P.Gardner, et al., National Commission on Excellence in Education,1983), the banner of "Educational Accountability" remains its enduring hallmark. Indeed, as Finn et al. (1985, pp. 194-195) noted from its inception, the educational reform movement gathered steam towards its current infatuation with state and national educational standards precisely because of the widespread perception that the educational profession had abandoned even the pretense of upholding educational standards, while disclaiming any responsibility for the sorry educational results. Thus, if educators were so derelict in their duty, school boards and, increasingly, state governors and legislatures and the federal government entered the scene to set things aright. Through such tools as higher requirements for teacher licensure and inservice performance and district and state, if not national, content and performance standards, the collective feet of educators could be held to the fire for meeting them. Student performance could then be monitored through standardized testing, NAEP, and new (more realistic, but more expensive) statewide performance assessments tailored to state standards. While student performance on the assessments, of whatever sort, remains the key item of interest to the "outcomes-oriented" reformers, educators clearly bear the onus of raising the scores. In the earlier phase of the reform movement, more than a few school districts proposed, or flirted with, policies to evaluate teachers individually on the assessment scores of their students. Relatively lower scores, as proposed then, could bring teacher probation or even dismissal (Rodman, 1986). The teacher unions and common sense, however, have generally prevailed in arguing against such unfair evaluation practices. While school districts and states may be devising new (and fair) ways to help suspect teachers and new incentives to reward teaching excellence, sanctions for poor student performance are now more often levied at entire schools, and even school districts (Darling-Hammond, 1995; Popham, 2001).

Doubtless there are many mediocre and poor teachers in the United States and Canada who should never be visited upon a classroom (but probably no more as a percent than in other professions). Anyone spending time in schools will recognize this. Better teacher preparation, better conditions of employment, better professional development, and better procedures for identifying marginal teachers are clearly in order (especially as promoted by educators themselves). Yet, once more the reform movement's preoccupation with the teaching profession, as a whole, ignores a salient feature of education: education is far more than a linear technological process in which the teacher transforms "raw material" (the student) into a finished "product" (an educated person). Teaching, it is true, is a "making something happen" profession. And so there is a causal relationship between teaching and student learning (see Ericson & Ellett, 1987). But it is not the simple causal relationship of the manufacturing process so familiar to business leaders, legislators, and other leaders of the educational reform movement. Though understanding teaching as a "making something happen" profession, these leaders are too prone to infer that a lack of success in teaching entails either that the teaching was poor (or the teacher a failure) or else that the teacher was never trying in the first place.

Although central to the reform movement's demand forever increasing educator accountability, the inference from lack of teaching success to poor or derelict teaching is clearly fallacious. It simply ignores *the causal role of students* in bringing about their own learning. Students, obviously, are not raw materials awaiting only a teacher's skillful hands. They are an integral factor in the learning process. For even the best teaching in the world will produce no results if students fail to be concerned with their own learning and fail to master the tasks and activities necessary to educational achievement—tasks and activities such as attending to explanations, practicing introduced skills, and doing homework. In other words, we are speaking of an *interactive* causal process in which *either* poor teaching or poor "studenting" is generally sufficient for a lack of student success. (Note 1) (Of course, extraordinary teachers and excellent students can overcome ineptitude and initial disinterest in the other party.) Not all, therefore, hangs on the activities of the teacher as the educational reform apparently assumes (given the broadsides against educators and silence on students). If the schools are failing, indeed, then we have to explore the equal possibility that it is not educators, as a whole, who are necessarily at fault; rather, might the blame be laid squarely at the feet of our young?

Yet delicacy, rather than logic, might suggest this to be an indecent proposal. To entertain blaming the young for our educational situation may sound a bit like entertaining a proposal to torture the innocent. Still, it seems to be the only way to confront the educational reform movement with the logic of its own position. *For if educators are fair game because of their causally central role in the learning process, then students, who are equally causally central, can hardly be spared similar attention.* Fairness simply demands it.

But much of this question concerning teacher and student accountability hinges on a prior issue that is also overlooked. Granted that teachers and students are two major interactive causal factors in student learning, can causation serve as a sufficient basis to ground teacher or student responsibility? In a previous paper on teacher accountability (Ericson & Ellett,1987), we strongly criticized the view that *causation entails responsibility*. For example, atmospheric conditions may cause lightning, but we would not hold atmospheric conditions morally, legally, or institutionally responsible for the lightning or its effects. Thus, moral or legal responsibility does not, in general, follow from being a causal factor.

Therefore, as with teachers, in considering whether students are to be held responsible for their own learning, we require something beyond acknowledgement of their central causal role. We require a moral and/or legal theory that plausibly determines student responsibility. Here it may help to sketch an ideal of what it means to be a student. From there we can ask whether students have an obligation to fulfill the characteristics of that ideal. (Note 2)

Clearly, the ideal of the student goes well beyond two well-known legal obligations required of all students: (1) to attend a legally sanctioned place of education (including "home schools") until a certain age and (2) to be non-disruptive. Rather, a normative view of an ideal student extends to the *manner* of their activities within the school and out. And though students engage in a variety of activities during a typical school day ranging from the classroom, to recess, to having lunch with friends, and on to engaging in co-curricular and extra-curricular activities. We shall construct, however, an "ideal" of the student that focuses selectively and primarily on purely scholastic and academic concerns.

According to this ideal, it is a major aim, internal to the practice of education, to introduce the young child to the manifold ways that we have come to structure our experience of the world. (Note 3) Initially, this means enabling them to begin to master various skills common to decoding the intellectual traditions and disciplines that they will later confront (e.g., literacy skills and computation). As they develop and build on prior learning, they will be increasingly initiated into the whys and wherefores of the various forms of understanding that we have achieved over time. For example, either explicitly or implicitly, they will come to learn that the study of human history differs (in content, concepts, methods, and tests for truth) from the study of natural science. And as they come to see the differences and commonalities among these basic ways or conceptual schemata by which we have structured the world, they thereby become more competent interpreters, critics, and evaluators of them. As Paul Hirst puts it, it is what it means to come to have a mind in the fullest sense. (Note 4)

But from this brief sketch of perhaps what many take to be the ultimate aim of education, we can derive an intuitive view of the ideal student. It is contained in such familiar expressions as "she is a *real* student of x!" Such expressions betoken a true zeal on the part of the learner to get on the inside, to master an area or subject for its own sake. It carries with it the idea that the learner is prepared to do whatever is necessary to achieve that critical mastery. In part this will mean, depending upon the subject, practicing, mastering, and engaging in exactly those activities Fenstermacher (1986) speaks of in "studenting:": attending to instructions and explanations carefully, reading closely, critically discussing thoroughly, investigating thoughtfully, questioning eagerly, practicing with an eye to proficiency, appraising carefully, etc., while prizing each new gain in understanding throughout.

It is by engaging in these activities in such adverbial fashion that we can give meaning to such expressions as "she is a real student." They denote individuals who do not merely fill the institutional role of student. Rather, they define for many of us the concept of the ideal student. And, of course, it will be the best teachers who are skillful in enabling students in the institutional sense to become students in the ideal sense.

One further aspect of this portrait of the ideal of the student remains to be emphasized. That is the question of motivation. In speaking of a student's zeal to get on the inside of a subject matter, we point to the fact that, whatever external utility exists in mastering it, such external utility does not exhaust the student's interest. In other words, the student values the learning *primarily for its own sake* and not merely for the sake of what it may lead to. Students in this sense are *intrinsically* motivated by the subject matter. And their preferences, commitments, and feelings come to be defined by the standards of excellence *inherent* in the discipline. (Note 5)

This ideal forms the basis for a typology and ranking of students. First, and foremost, is the student who comes to value a domain of knowledge for its own sake. Such individuals are purely intrinsically motivated. (They are also quite rare; we shall call them the "scholar" type.) Next, and somewhat more frequently encountered, are students who must often be given a specific external reason for studying a subject. These are students who are primarily motivated for reasons extrinsic to an intellectual discipline itself, but come to value it because it is essential to some professional (or career) goal. (We shall call them the "professional" type.) Now there may be those who are professionally-oriented, but who after time come to derive enjoyment from learning an intellectual discipline itself. (We can call them the "scholar-professional" type.) Finally, similar to, but truly unlike, the professional type of student are those who are solely motivated for reasons *strongly external* to an intellectual discipline itself, because learning the material eventually leads to what they really seek: status and wealth. For example, they may not really care about wanting to heal people, but they view the practice of medicine as highly lucrative.

Now all four types may engage in the activities of studenting mentioned above and may sometimes be indiscernible to teachers. But it is mainly the scholar and scholar-professional types that fall under our concept of the ideal student. The purely externally motivated student, when concerned only with the status and wealth that formal education may help bring, is unaffected by the aim of education adumbrated above. He is a student in the institutional sense that may at times, when long-term self-interest is considered, *mimic* the ideal of the student. As we shall note in the next section, the dynamics of the educational system strongly fosters the development of this type of student. During other times, however, the status and wealth motivated student most closely resembles that most teacher-dreaded student type: the wholly unmotivated student (or "indifferent/hostile" types). When coupled with indifferent or even hostile students, the status and wealth seekers swell the ranks of those who are in the schools, but not of it. For together they have no abiding allegiance to the purpose of education itself. While we know of no complete survey estimating the population of each type of student (surely an important task that should be done), general experience suggests that alarmingly large numbers of our young fall into the educationally unmotivated category. (Note 6) For they are students in name only. In many schools, especially at the secondary level, educators are in a day-to-day struggle to simply find something to interest these nominal students. As we shall explore later, status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students are quite capable of scuttling the most carefully worked out educational reforms and may serve as the overlooked factor in undermining the reform agenda.

But prior to attending to such issues, we finally need to comment upon the matter of student responsibility. Granted, as we have argued, that students are causal agents of their own learning, can students be held morally or institutionally responsible for their own learning? Some school districts, such as Beverly Hills, California, request that all students sign a "student responsibility contract" that purportedly obligates students to perform the activities of students in the ideal sense. But, of course, this is a "contract" and "obligation" in name only. It is neither enforceable in a court of law, nor in the "court" of morality. So, this will not do.

Teachers, on the other hand, because they receive remuneration for their services and because they assume a *high moral* office in a helping profession, have both a legal and moral responsibility to do all that is in their power and authority to ensure that students learn and are introduced to the activities of the ideal student. The educational reformers, like the educational profession itself, do have a legitimate interest in calling to task those in the profession who fall short in upholding that moral office. Parents and guardians, similarly, share in a legal and moral obligation to foster and encourage the development of their young to the utmost. And when parents themselves fall short, educators are correct in pointing out that parental negligence can be a major source of our educational ills. Though accurate enough, parents cannot be regulated by the state in the way that teachers can be. They fulfill the letter of the law by trying to ensure the regular school attendance of their children. Hence, educators tend to be the sole target of the reformers as a matter of politics and policy.

But what of student responsibility for learning? As we have argued elsewhere, students can be held morally responsible in the context of a liberal democratic society. (Note 7) In so far as the chief purpose of education is held to be induction into the ideals of democratic citizenship, students have an interlocking right to education that comes *with* a duty to take it seriously (especially as students develop in rationality). (Note 8) Some rights also incur obligations, and civic education *in a pluralistic democratic society* (but not all societies) is one of these.

But to the extent that educational reformers emphasize other ends as the chief purposes of education, such as national economic expansion and personal social and economic status, the message is muddied, if not vitiated. (Note 9) We might well think that personal self-interest would dictate attending to the activities of the ideal student. An interest, however, does not a moral obligation make. As policy makers, the educational reformers are on a slippery slope of their own devising. Self-interest, even rational prudence, may channel students in a completely different direction than that envisioned by them. We shall argue this in a variety of ways in the next section. Excellence in education and the Jeffersonian ideal of a democratic public cannot be purchased, no matter what the amount, by mercantilistic ends.

II

Meritocracy, The Educational System, and the Educational Reform Movement

If a person comes to form certain goals, then one comes to have a certain interest in the means to reaching them. The point is conceptual. If it is a young person's considered desire to truly explore a school subject, to get the most out of it, then it is in her interest to master the art and skills of studenting. To the student in the ideal sense, performing the acts of studenting and performing them well is always in her self-interest. And it might be thought that it is a major function of the educational system to encourage this interest in studenting and to see that it is spread to as many students as possible. There is no doubt that many educators at the classroom and school levels are striving to do exactly that. Bringing students along to become intrinsically motivated in a subject matter is widely held to be one of the highest aims of teaching and education.

At the level of the education system as a whole, however, the story is rather different. Here, what is encouraged is not so much the attitudes and activities of studenting in the ideal sense as studenting in what we call the "systemic" sense. Here the goals of studenting in the ideal sense—the zestful pursuit of knowledge and understanding—give way to the goals of studenting in the systemic sense: the pursuit of grades, degrees, and careers. In the systemic sense of studenting, knowledge and understanding, at best, are merely means to these other goals. At worst, the true pursuit of knowledge and understanding is an impediment to their attainment.

We shall now explore why the educational system at the aggregate level encourages studenting in the systemic sense, explore what those activities and attitudes are, and show how they work to discourage students from becoming students in the ideal sense. In Part III, we shall also comment on the rationality of the totally indifferent and even hostile student.

The Distributive Behavior of the Educational System (Note 10)

It is difficult to understand the emergence, development, and expansion of the American educational system without taking into account deeply-rooted, American cultural beliefs concerning the value of education. Jefferson long ago noted that a liberal education is essential to the preservation of the republic. The pioneers, who immediately established schools upon settling, saw in education the extension of civilization and the preservation of cultural tradition. And as the nation became transformed from an agrarian to an incipient and now full-blown technological society, the American school was viewed as more and more central to the creation of a skilled workforce. It is this latter view concerning the value and importance of education, of course, that primarily motivates the educational reform movement, concerned as it with America's position in the world economy.

But there were other social forces at work that help explain the now nearly universal attendance and attainment of pre-collegiate education and rapidly expanding post-secondary education. Chief among these forces is that long-entrenched, almost fervent, American belief in the social and economic efficacy of education. It is a belief, or related collection of beliefs, that far predates the transformation of the early American agrarian economy. Writing in the 19th century, Alexis de Tocqueville (1835, 1969) clearly recognized this boundless faith in the power of education:

> Even the crowd can now plainly see the utility of knowledge, those who have no taste for its charms set store by its results and make some effort to acquire it…
>
> As soon as the crowd begins to take an interest in the labors of the mind, it finds out that to excel in some of them is a powerful aid to the acquisition of fame, power, or wealth (p. 458).

The belief in the social and economic efficacy of education springs from 18th century liberal ideology that holds that social rewards and privileges belong not to an elite, hereditary class, but should go to those individuals of talent, intelligence, and industry. The ideology of America, if not the reality, has always been one of meritocracy. Thus, with the growth of the common school in the 19th century, it takes little imagination to understand how beliefs concerning the social and economic efficacy of education could be translated into a conviction that schooling pays social and economic dividends. Clearly, it is a conviction that could appeal to employers interested in the relatively greater profits an educated workforce could generate. And it could appeal to individuals who viewed schooling as a way to better their life chances. The transformation of the secondary school from an elite to a mass institution in the 20th century appears to have cemented the relationship between the social and economic efficacy of education and the conviction that schooling pays off socially and economically. (Note 11) In the later rapid expansion of higher education, we find ample confirmation of that expected relationship.

To understand why, imagine a society that distributes social and economic benefits (income, status, earnings opportunities, etc.) on the basis of the distribution of *purely* educational benefits (knowledge, skills, judgment, etc.). Such a society is likely to be extremely inefficient. It is difficult and time-consuming to discover who knows more and who less. But if there were an intervening social institution that functions to evaluate individuals' relative possession of educational benefits, then such official testimony would straightforwardly provide the basis for a subsequent distribution of social and economic benefits.

In our own society, it is through the development of certification in the educational system (by such instruments as grades, test scores, diplomas, and transcripts) that made possible the development of a relatively efficient meritocracy based on education and gave powerful confirmation to the belief in the efficacy of education. Further, it welded a hodgepodge of schools and colleges into a national educational system. For just as certification serves the social and economic system, grades, transcripts, etc. serve the educational system as a "medium of exchange." This medium of exchange function of grades, transcripts, and diplomas is based on their rough "surrogate" (Note 12) capability to stand in for or represent the possession of relative levels of knowledge, skills, and judgment. The standard grade of "A," for example, is shorthand, a way of saying that a student has shown superior mastery of a subject (given a certain system level). It permits the avoidance of exhausting discussions of exactly what the student has mastered. And in their medium of exchange function, these surrogate educational benefits make possible communication among educational institutions creating easier transfer and placement policies between schools at the same level and ease and efficiency in selection and placement policies between schools at different levels (say, high school and college). Thus, surrogate educational benefits make the educational system possible. Yet they also provide the basis for linking the educational system as a whole with the social and economic system.

It is not difficult, then, to understand how an actual educationally-based, meritocratic society works. Basically, it encompasses four distinct distributions of which only two are the educational system's own. They can be encapsulated as follows:

Figure 1

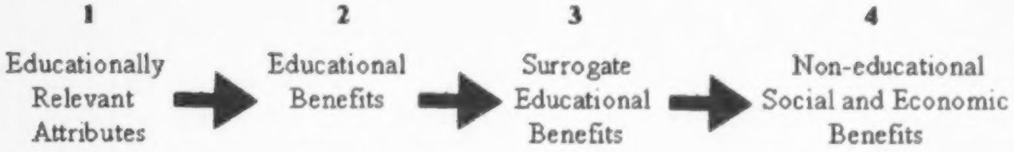

1
Educationally Relevant Attributes
2
Educational Benefits
3
Surrogate Educational Benefits
4
Non-educational Social and Economic Benefits

Figure 1 can be understood as saying that the distribution of educationally relevant attributes (intelligence, tenacity, and choice) in the school-age population in large part gives rise to the distribution of educational benefits in that same population (some learn more than others). In turn, the distribution of educational benefits produce a distribution of surrogate educational benefits (some are evaluated more highly or get higher test scores than others). Finally, the distribution of social and economic benefits (some get better jobs, earn more, obtain higher status than others) is distributed on the basis of the relative distribution of surrogate educational benefits.

Of these four distributions, only 2 and 3 are clearly distributed by the educational system directly. (The "genetic lottery" and early childhood life chances generate the distribution of educationally relevant attributes; the social and economic system directly distributes social and economic benefits.) But what is central to the idea an educationally-based meritocratic society is the notion that adult social and economic advantages should be based on the distribution of (surrogate) educational benefits. "On the basis," then, entails that there is more than an empirical likelihood of a positive relation between the two distributions. Rather, it has to do with the manner in which the adult distribution of social and economic benefits is socially legitimated. (Note 13) As Green et al. (1980, 1997, Ch. 6) put it, entailed is the following normative principle: "Those having a greater share of (surrogate) educational benefits merit or deserve a greater share of social and economic benefits." This educationally-based meritocratic principle provides a social basis for the way that subsequent social and economic inequalities can be regarded as justified. (Note 14) It is a principle, in other words, of distributive justice. It is the principle concealed in the very notion that schooling pays. It is also the principle responsible for prompting students to student in the systemic, rather than ideal, sense that we shall explore below. Moreover, it is the principle that may well prevent any real and lasting educational reform. It remains now for us to draw out how differing student types might rationally interact with a meritocratic educational and social system.

III

The Different Ways of Rationally Interacting with the System

Up to this point in our treatment of the student and educational reform, we have not adequately considered the importance of a student's entire motivational and belief configuration. Although it is helpful to know that a person has a certain view of the good, more information is needed to explain, and in most cases justify, the student's interaction with the educational system. Beyond coming to know a person's view of the good and their other, perhaps conflicting, goals and purposes, we also require an understanding of the *relative strength* of each of these if we are to understand what the person has good reason to do. In adopting this explanatory framework of student behavior, we are in effect considering students as *rational agents* who pursue alternative courses of action for which there are comparatively good reasons. Since young children generally have not developed a motivational and belief system sufficiently to be viewed as rational agents, we shall confine our analysis to the population of intermediate, senior high, and college students who are (roughly) rational agents. (We readily grant that many students at these levels are not -- or only occasionally -- rational believers and doers; their beliefs and behaviors often demonstrate that.) Here, we want to show that *even when students are fully rational, the distributive dynamics of the educational system encourages student conduct that conflicts with the ideal of the student*—and so creates conflicts between educational objectives and student objectives. These conflicting aims and desires present extraordinary challenges to and put constraints on the direction and degree of real educational reform.

In assuming that the educational system contains some students who are rational, the power of our analysis depends crucially on the conception of "rationality" that we use. It is difficult to find answers to questions about whether an action is rational (reasonable), and in many areas such answers are controversial as well. (For example, it is extremely controversial whether every rational actor has compelling reasons to treat all people morally.) Regardless of the difficulty in all cases, our arguments will assume three major claims about rational agency that are well-established and accepted by most current philosophical research (and even here there is controversy—followers of David Hume would not fully endorse our second claim):

- C1. A rational agent need not (but can) have a dominant concern for his or her own long term welfare.
- C2. A rational agent's desires and beliefs are open to critical appraisal in light of the facts and logic.
- C3. In so far as a rational agent seeks a specific goal, the agent will seek out effective means for fulfilling that goal.

The first claim rejects the view that a rational person is necessarily prudent (e.g., see Parfit, 1986, on critical present aim views of rationality). The second claim rejects the view that only the means to fulfilling one's desires—and not the desires themselves—are open to critical appraisal. In what follows, we assume, therefore, that the rational agent's beliefs and motivations could be appraised as reasonable or unreasonable in light of his or her circumstances. The third claim reminds us that all rational agents will take care to find ways to reach their goals. It is, however, beyond the scope and limits of this paper to provide the detailed arguments to sustain these claims.

What reasons, then, might a student who has various capacities, beliefs, purposes, loyalties, and commitments have for interacting in certain ways with teachers, administrators, counselors, etc. in the system? Let us begin by reconsidering the ideal student who intrinsically values knowledge and understanding (i.e., for its own sake) and who is intrinsically motivated in the educational system. When this type of student interacts with the system, the love of scholastic and academic learning dominates and primarily influences the person's behavior. Of course, if basic economic needs are not being met apart from activities in the educational system, rationality requires that such a student temper her pursuit of the intrinsic benefits of learning with more career-related aims. (It may well be irrational for a person to go through primary and secondary school loving learning but never pondering how they are going to live after the close of their school years.) But still the ideal student is only motivated in minor ways by the extrinsic values of education. As noted above, we call this kind of student "the scholar." And as mentioned previously, this ideal student is rare, indeed.

Consider now the type of student who is primarily attracted to a particular practice or profession (say, healing people or designing high quality items in the cases of medicine or engineering, respectively), but who sees no (or little) intrinsic value in knowledge or understanding per se. This individual will require that all the knowledge and understanding worth acquiring must be relevant to his or her professional goals. In dealing with teachers and texts, this kind of student, who we have called "the professional," will be motivated to learn, *but only* on the condition that the teaching (and the grades) is clearly connected to becoming a certain kind of professional.

It has often been said that the best motivation for learning something is intrinsic motivation (see, e.g., Jerome Bruner, 1960). In the strong sense, however, this is false. In caring strongly about achieving some good internal to a practice (say, healing people), then a rational agent would care strongly about acquiring the means to achieve the goal. This is roughly the principle (C3) of practical rationality. One of the best motivations for learning organic chemistry is the belief that it will be really useful in the medical profession. The professionally-oriented student need not intrinsically value organic chemistry, but her respect for its utility will lead her to learn it very well indeed.

It should now be clear that differences between the scholar and the professional account for much of the differences in what is learned and how it is learned. Because their primary reasons differ, these two types demand and expect different things from teachers and the system. For example, the professional type will always be ready to demand from teachers how the content will be *useful* for her career interests. ("How will I ever use this stuff?!?")

And these differences between types of students can take place within a single individual who strongly, intrinsically values the various forms of knowledge but who, to an equal degree, extrinsically values these forms. For such an agent, determining what to learn and how thoroughly to learn it will be a difficult trade-off (or compromise) between competing goods. Knowing what to expect of this bifurcated agent is a difficult task. This type of person may demand and expect different things at different times in ways that seem to lead to unpredictable and irregular behavior. We have called this kind of student the "scholar-professional."

For each of the three types of students, who most closely fit aspects of the ideal student, we have assumed that their motivation for economic and social status has little influence on their interaction with the educational system. We assume that their primary and dominant motives to be either the intrinsic and/or extrinsic valuing of educational benefits. Recall, however, that the surrogate educational benefits (grades, test scores, diplomas, etc.) function to distribute non-educational social and economic benefits. Now it is clearly possible and probable in our individualistic, wealth- and status-oriented society (though clearly not necessary) for a rational agent to be primarily motivated to acquire the various social and economic goods that help make life more enjoyable (to an extent). As Toqueville noted, it is also possible and probable that a rational agent may come to see that acquiring a differentially greater share of surrogate educational benefits is a comparatively reasonable means to acquiring a differentially greater share of social and economic benefits. (It is a highly risky, if not downright irrational, strategy to count on just being lucky.)

Suppose, now, that this kind of rational agent neither extrinsically nor intrinsically values pure educational benefits (knowledge, skills, understanding, etc.). This student, who we have called "the status and wealth seeker" (one kind of "systemic" student), wants the degree (or the grade) *only because* it is a reasonable means to social and economic benefits. But this kind of student will regard the acquisition of knowledge and understanding as an arbitrary hurdle or obstacle to getting the diploma (and then the goods). Though the status and wealth seeker will want the grade and eventually the diploma, he or she will regard the learning as utter drudgery—something to be done as minimally as possible and something to be forgotten as soon as it is practical (i.e., as soon as the grade is assigned, the degree received, or the SAT test taken (Note 15)). This type of "student" will be like a chameleon to his or her teachers. For this type's public display will be like the scholar but with a fair emphasis on "brown nosing" behavior. Privately, however, he or she finds it all a rather disgusting game to have to play, though one played with typical thespian resources. When it is possible to avoid detection, the status and wealth seeker will lie and cheat, plagiarize, steal, or buy the necessary work (term paper mills), and do anything that will prevent other students from receiving higher grades than his or her own.

Though morally rather unattractive, we should expect little else from a rational agent who sees the institutional norms of schooling and the social tradition of academic education as basically arbitrary matters. As we shall see, the normative principle connecting the educational and social and economic systems strongly encourage status and wealth seekers to remain in the educational system when their talents and capacities might be more productively—not to say morally—engaged in pursuits outside it. But the development of this kind of person is an unintended effect of our adoption of an educationally-based meritocracy.

There is yet a final kind of systemic student to identify: to save space (since they are somewhat different, but motivationally the same in school), we called this type "the indifferent/hostile student." This is the "student" who neither intrinsically or extrinsically values pure educational benefits nor expects (or wants) a relatively greater share of social and economic benefits brought about through the pursuit of higher grades or diplomas. These individuals may very well want an abundance of material wealth and social respect; but they either disdain the effort (and charade) the status and wealth seeker employs in securing surrogate educational benefits or else views the institution of schooling with repugnance.

How, then, could it be rational for the indifferent/hostile student to remain within the educational system and not drop out? The answer easily could be friends and expectations. The indifferent/hostile student's friends are in school and he or she has a primary motivation to be with them. Alternatively, such persons know that the family and society at large expect them to be in school, and they strongly want to please them. Finally, it is extremely rational for a teenage drug dealer to want to be close to the market of other kids. All of these are plausible and, no doubt, salient reasons for many of our disaffected young.

But a deeper reason for staying in school has to do with the dynamics of the educational system that dictate a defensive strategy for rational agents continuing in school at least through the 12th grade. As rates of high school completion have climbed towards 100% of the school-age population in this past century (currently about 80% of 17 year- olds complete high school), the positive social and economic benefits associated with high school completion have drastically declined. Indeed, as a purely logical point, at 100 percent attainment, completion of high school in itself can have no disproportionate social and economic pay-off for individuals (Green et al. 1980 & 1997, Ch. 6). (This means that the status and wealth-seeking student is forced to go on to higher education where the pay-off prospects are still real.) But if *completion* of high school is no longer a big deal, *not completing* high school is an absolute disaster for individuals. In an educational system in which nearly everyone completes high school, being one of the few who drop out is a near certain recipe for a life of the lowest paying jobs with an attendant probability of periods of unemployment or a generally unappealing life. (How many "life-long" drug dealers manage to retire after leading a "work" life free of misfortune?) The indifferent/hostile student, if rational, is compelled to remain in school out of defensive necessity (see also Thurow, 1975).

But since the indifferent/hostile student is indifferent or hostile to both the acquisition of knowledge and understanding and to the relatively greater social and economic pay-off of advanced formal education, this systemic type of student will have little reason to come truly to grips with the curriculum or even to engage in the status and wealth-seeker's charade with teachers. They have reason only to avoid the disaster that confronts the school dropout. And once they are compelled to be in school where they, at bottom, do not want to be, their expression of frustration, boredom, and hostility is quite understandable, if not potentially explosive (witness the rash of school shootings, etc.)

The five general kinds of students can, thusly, be categorized in terms of the kind of motive and the (comparative) strength of the motive (see Table 1 below). What it shows is that rational students can have a variety of different kinds of reasons for dealing with the educational system. For each type of student, the reasons they have will provide the rational justification for their action strategies. (And here we must stress the equally important fact that many students interact irrationally or non-rationally with the educational system, but still they mimic in large part the behavior of the status and wealth-seeker and the indifferent/hostile students: the two kinds of systemic students. They just are not as consistent and clear-minded about why they act as they do.) Moreover, a typology of the kind that we offer here calls for more and better empirical research to determine more precisely the relative proportions of each kind of rational student at the various levels of the educational system and their less rational counterparts. (Note 16) Such research will improve our understanding of what kinds of reforms are likely to be effective in working with each kind of student and in what degree. As we turn to the final part of this paper, we shall address our comments to other important, more philosophical, aspects of this issue.

Table 1
Certain Types of Student With Respect to Kind and Strength of Motive

	Kind of Motives (Reasons)		
	Intrinsically Motivated by Knowledge and Understanding	Extrinsically Motivated by the Utility of Knowledge	Extrinsically Motivated by the Social and Economic Benefits of Educational Attainment
Scholar	Dominant-Strongest	Weak	Weak
Professional	Weak	Dominant-Strongest	Weak
Scholar-Professional	One of the Two Dominant/Strong	The Other of the Two Dominant/Strong	Weak
Status and Wealth Seeker Strongest	Weak	Weak	Dominant/ Strong
Indifferent/ Hostile	Weak	Weak	Weak or Negative Dominant Strongest

IV

Student Rationality, Educational Excellence, and The Educational Reform Movement

Through the framework we have established, we hope we have made a start in establishing that rational student action can have a powerful effect on the eventual results of the educational reform movement. Yet it still seems rather odd that there is very little mention in the educational reform literature on potential student reaction to reform efforts. And what little there is comes mainly from within the educational profession itself (for example, the so-called "middle-school philosophy"). But perhaps this oversight should not be overly surprising after all. For several concerns and assumptions have been at work in the educational reform literature from its inception with "The Nation at Risk" report. These are concerns and assumptions that have dominated and directed the ensuing discussion and debate by policy makers over what reforms to pursue.

The first of these concerns has been the economic competitiveness of the various states, and the nation as a whole, as the post-World War II dominance of the United States underwent successive challenges on the world market, especially in the 1970—1990 period. It was during this time that the educational reform movement first emerged and gathered steam to the point that the 2000 state and national elections made educational achievement the paramount political issue facing the country. (Now, of course, education has been overshadowed by the events of 11 September 2001.) In other words, the policy makers have shackled the cause of educational reform to the fortunes of our aggregate economic activity. But this view of the purpose of education—to supply a schooled workforce to meet the needs of an increasing technological world—almost guarantees that the young and their purposes for undertaking schooling will be lost from view. Yet almost no one, we would conjecture, goes to school and strives (or fails to strive) for higher levels of educational achievement *because* it is good for the American economy. Because of this tunnel vision driving educational reform, it is difficult to find a policy maker on whatever level who has asked a most basic question: What is in it for the student?

Second, in viewing high levels of educational achievement as the principal means to attain economic salvation, the educational reform movement tends to assume that the young are monolithic in nature. Indeed, the ongoing concern with school drop outs has one primary aim: get them back in school (or keep them from dropping out) so that they can be "regular" students once more. But, as we have argued, there is no such thing as a "regular" student. There are a variety of student types who vary in their goals and strength of motivation, and by anyone's estimate most of these do not resemble the three types of an ideal students. Enticing drop outs back into schools will do little more than reinforce this monolithic view of students and perhaps lower achievement levels further. Early school leavers, many of whom have subjectively reasonable beliefs in light of their limited experience, can potentially be shown that it is definitely in their long-term social and economic self-interest to return to (or stay in) school, if only to avoid the disaster that is their eventual destination. But such policies and programs to encourage them to return to school will only swell the ranks of indifferent/hostile students (and to some extent status and wealth-seekers), which is why most of them left school to begin with. It is not that we should be indifferent to the plight of the drop out, for it is serious and real. Rather, we need to understand that keeping those young in school who have no taste, at least at the moment, for academic work is hardly a recipe for higher levels of achievement in the aggregate and for harmonious school environments.

Again, for any proposed educational reform, we must ask one of the most important policy questions: What is in it for the student? And this is not simply a crass, egoistic type of question to raise either. Some ends for which humans act are ultimate ends concerning "internal" goods (about which more below) and can be shown to be worthy of both rational and moral choice. Thus, the scholar, the professional, and the scholar/professional type of student who, in pursuing the ideals of knowledge and understanding and/or service to fellow citizens and humanity, are engaged in pursuits and practices that are rationally and morally laudatory. But still, it makes sense to ask *from their point of view* what is in any proposed educational reform *for them*? Yet these kinds of students are probably in the minority of students in the educational system. The educational system, because of the normative principle linking the educational and social and economic systems, is replete with systemic status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students. (And it is well to notice that many so-called professionally-oriented students are actually status and wealth seekers. How many students, for example, would pursue the medical or legal professions were they of low pay and low prestige?) Thus, the success of implemented and proposed educational reforms rests largely on their ability to engage the interest of the status and wealth seeker and the indifferent/hostile student.

But now consider the nature of the proposed and implemented reforms. For example, there are reforms that lengthen the school day and the school year. There are reforms that call for a more demanding school curriculum and higher graduation requirements. There are reforms that call for the ending of the "social promotion" of students from one grade to the next higher, regardless of school performance. There are educational reforms that mandate a minimum grade point average for participation in extracurricular activities such as sports. And there are state standards-based exams that govern high school graduation. Now few of these reforms are likely to affect adversely the interests of the scholar, the scholar/professional, and the professional. Of course,the professional and scholar/professional may resent more and higher requirements in areas *irrelevant* to their interests. However, one of these reforms—standards-based examinations—could well impact adversely the interests of the scholar and the scholar/professional. That would especially be true if the testing, as likely, drives classroom instruction in a teacher and school "accountability-based system" now being implemented in state after state. For as teachers and administrators feel accountability pressures to raise average test scores, they are likely to target instruction at the "least able" students (who have the most room to improve). We should expect an attendant result to be the lowering of the level and content of teaching. In this way, state standards-based, assessment and accountability systems could help turn many ideal students into cynical, resentful ones or else help drive them into the private sector of the educational system. Alternatively, even the scholar may become frustrated by a different kind of reform found in the Ontario, Canada schools that expects students to master a far more demanding curriculum in much less time—a form of "curricular intensification."

But, now, what is in these reforms for the status and wealth seeker and the indifferent/hostile student? The answer is little else but pain and suffering. The most rational response of the status and wealth seeker is to seek shortcuts and end-runs around these reforms when necessary and to try to frustrate their intent whenever possible. For the indifferent/hostile student, there is but one rational strategy: sabotage at all times by refusing to play the game when there is nothing at stake personally. And when high school completion is at stake in those school districts and states with test-passing requirements, the indifferent/hostile student, if rational, will put forward the minimal effort necessary in order to pass the test, thus only grudgingly avoiding the plight of the drop out.

Of course, these are but a few ways to frustrate and undermine attempts to reform the educational system. Many of our more rational students, in the main, may not know and understand in any great depth the various ways we have come to structure our experience of the world, but they can be very clever and resourceful in ensuring that they never come to that truly educated state. And can we blame them? Perhaps in a world that emphasizes the intrinsic value of pure educational benefits and their service in upholding the ideals of democratic citizenship, we might well place blame on the more rational students who foolishly waste important educational opportunities. But can we place blame on such students in a world that emphasizes formal schooling as the prime means to economic dominance as a nation and "making it" socially and economically in personal terms? (Can we even place blame on such students in a world that uses grades "earned" to sort students at each level? Even the scholar and professional types will see how getting high grades is strongly related to getting into higher levels of the system.) (Note 17) We think not. For it is not our students who have placed great emphasis on the purely instrumental value of formal education for both the economy and the social and economic standing of the individual. Rather, it is the truncated vision of the erstwhile educational reformers and of a society that apparently cares more about the credentialed symbols of educational achievement than about the intrinsic and extrinsic value of pure educational benefits in leading a good and worthy life. We have, in other words, unerringly established an educational system and a set of social and economic incentives that are guaranteed to deliver marginal educational achievement and to create resistance to any real and meaningful educational reform. We should not be surprised, therefore, to find so many status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students in our schools. For in creating an educationally-based meritocracy, we have done everything we could to encourage their development.

Education in this way, rather than seriously pursued, becomes a rather cynical game to be played. The problem is not that we fail to value education. Clearly, Americans (and Canadians) do. The problem, instead, is the *way* we value education.

This points to the deep and final incoherence that lies at the heart of the educational reform movement. By shackling the drive for educational excellence in education to the cause of competitiveness in the world market, we are likely to achieve neither. For at the heart of the reform movement, there exists a defective understanding of the nature of educational goods, true educational standards, and how excellence is to be promoted and sustained. The cause of this defective understanding is an intellectually-derived, moral tradition that runs deep and powerful in American life: "moral individualism." Moral individualism is, as Stoutland notes, "...a comprehensive, individualistic moral theory about how individuals should live their lives and relate to society" (1990, p. 107). At its best, it can provide a rationale and basis for understanding society as a cooperative endeavor in which some self-sacrifice is required of all for the benefit of all. At its worst, and this is its modal tendency, moral individualism promotes egoism and the satisfaction of individual preferences even at the expense of others. Since, as we claim, moral individualism is clearly reflected in the thinking of the educational reformers, it will profit us to examine some of the beliefs that comprise it.

Moral Individualism and the Educational Reform Movement

Again following Stoutland, "...moral individualism understands the good as anything that satisfies an individual's desires, interests, or preferences. This implies that all goods must be individual goods, that is, goods for, and assignable to, particular individuals, since all desires, interests, or preferences belong to particular individuals" (1990, p. 119). It follows from this that a *social* good can only be one that satisfies the preferences of most of society's members because a social or public good is only the sum of individual preferences. The common good or public interest is only, on this view, the sum of individual preferences. The common good or public interest is thus necessarily reducible to the private interests of individuals. The provision of education to all, then, is a social or public good if it can be shown to be in the public interest, that is, the interests of most of society's members. Although altruism—or the self-sacrifice of one's own private interests for the private interests of others—can find a place within moral individualism, that place is necessarily precarious. For happiness or the good life in moral individualism is a life in which one's own private interests are maximally satisfied. Thus, appeals to the common good must be couched in terms of appeals to the private interests of the many. And when individuals do not see a particular candidate for a public good deserving of their own support (i.e., in their own private interest), the majority who do may be forced to compel self-sacrifice on the part of those who do not (e.g., compel them to pay taxes for the support of formal education). As, Stoutland succinctly puts it, "What is distinctive about moral individualism is not that it assigns no important role to society, but that it regards society, as wholly *instrumental* to goods for the particular individuals who are its members...Societies [on this view] do not constitute preferences; their role is to satisfy them" (1990, pp. 120).

We are now in a position to appreciate the way in which the educational reform movement is ensnared in the trap of moral individualism. In order to appeal for higher levels of achievement in—and more money and accountability for—education, the reformers have been forced to explain how higher achievement is instrumental to the satisfaction of the sum total of private interests. This they have done through the appeal to the economic competitiveness of the nation and the related theme of a forewarned unilateral " educational disarmament." (Note 18)>

But while the reformers carried on the battle-cry for educational reform to society at large, they left their rear unguarded on the issue that we have addressed: the interests of students. But should they finally address the various rational interests of students, then what, within the confines of the value framework of moral individualism, can they say? First of all, no appeal is possible to education as an intrinsically valuable good, since in moral individualism *nothing* has intrinsic worth. Here something is good only if it satisfies some private preference. Second, for them no appeal is possible to education as an *extrinsically valuable* good, a good which by definition leads to an intrinsically valuable good, since again in moral individualism *nothing* has intrinsic worth. For such a view, something is good only if it satisfies private (short term or long term) preferences. And if a student has no preference for higher educational achievement (short term or long term), no instrumental appeal is possible. Third, because the reformers have tied education to the purpose of economic competitiveness—rather than to the non-individualistic ideals of full-blown rationality and democratic citizenship—no appeal to student responsibility is possible. And fourth, appeals to students to achieve highly for the public good (economic competitiveness) are definitely likely to fall on deaf ears. Any tendencies toward self-sacrifice in our moral individualistic society are fairly diminished by the teenage years. (The patterns of altruism that clearly do remain are no doubt testaments to the staying power of those more communitarian social institutions such as the family and church.) And finally, unlike the paying of taxes, it is doubtful that we would compel the young to self-sacrifice by threatening fines and prison sentences for low achievement—though in a few places state legislators have actually introduced bills to deny a driver's license to errant students!

Thus, the only appeal to students that can work is to their self-interest. The educational reform movement has no other real recourse. But in the appeal to narrow self-interest we have, given the structure and dynamics of an educationally-based meritocracy supported (by and large) by a bedrock of moral individualism, the very instrument that delivers the educational mediocrity the reformers decry. What the reformers fail to see is that the structure and dynamics of the educational system *are actively forming and encouraging* student preferences that run counter to the creation and sustenance of educational excellence. One might say that the system is creating status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students. Excellence in education has nothing at all to do with the external goals of sustaining a competitive economy or materially enriching individuals. But that is something very difficult for those of us caught up in our individualistic culture to understand. And it is certainly the central defect of the educational reform movement. It leads to the incoherence of which we spoke. Indeed, excellence in education is not something that can fit into the framework of moral individualism at all.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Educational Excellence and the Idea of a Public Good

Central to this understanding is the act of recognizing that there are some kinds of goods that are *irreducibly* public goods—goods that cannot be privately assigned to or appropriated by individuals alone. Alasdair MacIntyre in *After Virtue* (1981) establishes this in his account of social practices and his distinction between "internal" and "external" goods. For MacIntyre, a practice is "...any coherent and complex form of socially established cooperative human activity through which goods internal to that form of activity are realized in the course of trying to achieve those *standards of excellence* which are appropriate to, and partly definitive of, that form of activity" (1981, p. 175). Examples are complex games, true professions, and, not least, the various arts and sciences. What is common to all of these is the fact that they each contain standards of excellence (norms) that define their corresponding activities and what it means to be a skillful participant in them. Moreover, they each require no mean effort to master (and typically require forms of apprenticeship); and in many cases they cannot fully be appreciated (or judged) except by those on the inside of the practice. On the other hand, goods are external to a practice if they can be secured in some other fashion than through the practice itself. Status and wealth are obvious examples. Since external goods can be appropriated by and assigned to individuals, they are "...characteristically objects of competition in which there must be losers as well as winners" (MacIntyre, 1981, p. 178). And although internal goods are "...the outcome of competition to excel…it is characteristic of them that their achievement is a good for the whole community who participate in the practice" (MacIntyre, 1981, p. 178). In other words, they are not reducible to the good of particular individuals.

The achievement of knowledge is one such example of an irreducible public good that benefits the community. And note that in the transmission of knowledge through education, teachers do not give up something when students come to understand. The economics of exchange relations do not apply here (nor, as Green et al., 1980 and 1997, note, is knowledge subject to the economist's notion of "decreasing marginal utility").

Now MacIntyre's account of practices allows us to establish exactly why the educational reform movement has a flawed and defective vision of educational excellence. In understanding the practice of education as merely instrumental to satisfying certain desires (i.e., economic competitiveness or individual social and economic well-being), they reduce educational benefits to external goods. But excellence in education can only be understood by reference to *the public standards internal to the practice. (Note 19)* In this way, pure educational benefits are not goods because they satisfy individual preferences. They are goods because they are specified by the standards of excellence internal to the various forms of knowledge that we have achieved over time. They can be realized only by engaging (to a considerable degree) in the practice of education in its own terms, by coming to see its point in and of itself, and therefore *only by submitting oneself to its discipline. (Note 20)*

But in thinking of educational benefits as merely the means to satisfy aggregate or individual preferences, the educational reform movement rules out the possibility of understanding education in its own light. In so doing, the policy makers necessarily fail to capture the very nature of educational excellence from the outset.

The Practice of Education and Educational Reform

In taking the practice of education in its own light seriously, we quickly begin to reconsider the meaning of questions such as "What is in it for the student?" That question, we should note, arose primarily within the framework of moral individualism. Instead, we need to think about educational reform in terms of the institutions whose role it is to sustain the virtues inherent in the practice of education. Again, if we look at the educational system today, we witness an institution that undermines, rather than sustains, the pursuit of educational excellence. Individualist thinking simply lacks the capacity to understand how important the structures of society are in forming individual preferences in the first place. The normative principle that governs the link between the educational system and the social and economic system simply instantiates the norm that the road to riches is through high grades, rather than emphasizing the intrinsic and extrinsic value of educational benefits. Instead of taking the interests of the status and wealth seeker and the indifferent/hostile student as givens and then asking how we can transform their preferences into those of ideal students, we should be asking a far different question (unless we want to continue to blame educators in the interest of political mileage). For the fact remains that once formed, preferences are difficult to change. Rather, we should be asking: "What is it about the educational system that leads to the development of status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students?" In other words, *transforming the educational system may be the only way to transform individuals.* Only then does the direction of real and meaningful educational reform—and the true meaning of educational excellence—become evident.

This is the direction that has been urged by Green et al. (1980 & 1997, pp. 164 -168). It can be re-framed more directly here. Stated simply, we must *weaken* (if not abandon) the normative principle that differentially rewards educational attainment (grades, degrees, and diplomas, etc.). In other words, if there were no longer any major pay off economically and socially for educational attainment via the educational system per se, then education through the educational system could be unwaveringly pursued for the intrinsic and extrinsic value of pure educational benefits. Moreover, if educational attainment in and of itself was less decisive for life chances, then the social and economic compulsion to complete, for example, high school would disappear. Simply consider what this would mean for the indifferent/hostile student as well as, remarkably, for the drop out. By weakening (or even severing) the connection between the distribution of surrogate educational benefits and the distribution of social and economic benefits, the motivation to pursue educational attainment for *purely defensive purposes* (to avoid the current plight of the drop out) is gone. The indifferent/hostile student would be given a real choice concerning the future. And many of them would exercise such a choice, at least for the time being, by dropping out of the educational system. With the absence of unwilling and resentful students, we should expect plummeting rates of school violence and the restoration of a healthy climate for learning.

But with a higher percentage of school leavers in the secondary school age population, the social and economic costs of dropping out are greatly reduced. Dropping out is a personal disaster and social stigma *when only very few* drop out. In a world of many drop outs, employers cannot routinely screen for formal, but often suspect, surrogate educational credentials.

There is an equal implication for the status and wealth seekers. If the pursuit of educational credentials were no longer the primary route for "making it" in life, their reasons for remaining in school and engaging in manipulative and deceptive behavior patterns simply collapse. If "making it" is truly their goal, then they would be free to expend their doubtless ingenuity outside the schools in other, hopefully more worthy, pursuits in striving to reach it.

But with the educational system reduced, thusly, in size—retaining and, most importantly, *easily re-admitting* only those who wish to profit from the disciplined pursuit of knowledge, understanding, and callings—our society would be forced to understand that the demands of real and lasting educational reform greatly exceed the current, ephemeral attempts to tinker crudely and blindly with the educational system as it exists. If we continue our present course, we may realize fleeting gains of a few points on test scores. (Note 21) Indeed, we may even be compelled to face the fact that there might be a multitude of pathways to make the transition from youth to productive and competent adulthood, only one of these through the educational system as such. (Note 22) Quite apart from the now fashionable so-called "middle school philosophy" developed to deal with disaffected students, we may need to think about returning to the concept of the retired grammar school to provision all students with elementary/intermediate literacy, civic, scientific, and mathematical knowledge and skills, along with basic computer skills. Upon completion, students might then choose between continuing in the academic educational system or opt out for more practical educational opportunities. Except for the few advanced jobs and career categories—in relation to the entire population—it is questionable that we need hordes of high-tech people to run the economy. (Few of the status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students are currently destined for these positions anyhow. Indeed, more of them might actually end up in these positions by easily re-admitting them into the educational system when they are more ready.)

But the need to open new pathways (and in some cases re-open old ways) in the transition to adulthood would raise a host of issues about how to structure strong educational and economic policies to foster different *kinds of practical learning experiences* for youth directly in the workplace and other social settings. For it has never been the case that the young have little interest in learning *per se*. Curiosity and the thirst for learning are universally natural to the young. Rather, the problem is that we have compelled young people to pursue *one kind of learning* -- scholastic/academic learning—for ever increasing amounts of time without regard for its perceived relevance to them. The clear and convincing result is now an educational system awash with status and wealth seekers and indifferent/hostile students, not to mention their less rational counterparts. By creating multiple pathways to adulthood that feature practical, hands-on, experiential learning within a "real world" context, we can develop arenas that will do much to foster moral attachment, real learning, and a "conscience of craft" (Note 23) (for those currently disaffected with academic culture and practice). Rather than stigmatizing such academic "drop outs," a multiple pathway approach might be far more appealing to a majority of adolescents of all social classes (especially since it would not foreclose the option of dropping back into the academic educational system later on). (Note 24) It is true that many might not ever return to academics, as such. However, they most likely would end up with far more marketable skills than our current crop of disaffected high school graduates. With such skills, the nation's economic competitiveness might be heightened beyond the educational reformers' dreams. (There is more than a touch of irony in this.)

Such extra-systemic educational reform would not be easy by any means. (Note 25) Indeed, it would require the creation of a public consciousness that education -- in all of its forms and throughout a lifetime -- must be seen to be a society-wide responsibility, not just the currently, and mainly age-segregated institution of schooling. The educational system, if allowed, can easily succeed in the pursuit of true educational excellence if its mission is appropriately construed as the producer, guardian and transmitter of fundamental cultural and scientific understanding. It cannot, however, be all things to all people as we now pressure it to be. For far from achieving continuing competitiveness in the world -- so far an event that has as much to do with luck, fair-enough economic design, strategic collapse in the old Soviet Union, and immigration -- the current spate of educational reforms will do little to move us truly ahead on the road to educational excellence. And that is the ultimate lesson to be learned from raising the question of the student in educational reform.

Notes

[1] The inelegant, but descriptively accurate, term "studenting" was originally introduced by Gary D Fenstermacher (1986) in "Philosophy of Research on Teaching. " It refers to those activities of the student often necessary for student achievement.

[2] We believe that the following sketch of an "ideal" student is widely held, but our subsequent arguments do not rely on its being widespread.

[3] This view paraphrases that of Paul H. Hirst in his justly famous essay, "Liberal Education and the Nature of Knowledge" (1974). Howard Gardner's *The Disciplined Mind* (1999) gives a related formulation.

[4] Hirst, Ibid.

[5] Thomas F. Green (1999) in *Voices: The Educational Formation of Conscience* explicates the major difference between what he calls *strong* and *weak normation*. In this instance, ideal students become strongly normed to the standards of excellence in education (and to the academic purpose of schools *in so far as* schools support these standards). Indifferent students, as we shall see, are neither strongly normed to the standards of excellence in education nor to schools, though they may be compliant with school rules and routines (weak normation). Hostile students are neither strongly nor weakly normed to the standards of educational excellence or the schools. Indeed, they tend to be defiant of both.

[6] Steinberg, et al. in *Beyond the Classroom: Why School Reform Has Failed and What Parents Need to Do* (1996) studied 20,000 teenagers and their families in nine different communities over a ten year period. From a psychologist's point of view, he examined the "engagement" of young people in schools (with "engagement" defined as "the degree to which students are psychologically "connected" to what is going on in their classes" (p. 15).) In his sample, he discovered that around 40% of the teenagers from all social classes were "disengaged" (p. 67). While there are strong reasons to prefer Green's (op. cit.) notion of strong and weak normation in identifying types of students and their motivations, Steinberg's "disengaged student" may serve as a proxy to our indifferent/hostile types of students. We also take strong exception to Steinberg's recommendations for "re-engaging" students. Steinberg's psychological framework also fails to mark out how students who are disengaged might be acting quite rationally (from their point of view) in the educational system. Accordingly, he omits any mention of a connection among rationality, leading a good life, and avoiding harm.

[7] See Ericson & Ellett (1990) "Taking Student Responsibility Seriously."

[8] Ibid.

[9] Postman (1995) in *The End of Education* strongly takes to task the current economic rationale for public education and calls for a new, far more noble, "metaphysics" of education.

[10] This section is strongly grounded in the work of Green et al. (1980 & 1997), *Predicting the Behavior of the Educational System*, especially Ch. 6.

[11] See Martin Trow's (1961) classic, "The Second Transformation of American Secondary Education.".

[12] This use of the term "surrogate" acknowledges that grades, for example, are neither interval-ratio scales nor even ordinal scales. Their "sloppiness" as scales is what makes them an efficient medium of exchange.

[13] The United States, we should note, is far from a perfect educationally-based meritocracy. Typical of capitalist economies, the U.S. legitimates social and economic inequalities based on personal luck, perseverance, and even such things as a winning personality. Increasingly, however, formal educational attainment governs entrance into career and earnings networks and hierarchies.

[14] The supporting arguments for regarding the normative principle as a principle that legitimates subsequent inequalities in social and economic goods among persons is given in detail in Green et al. (1980 & 1997), pp. 42–45. The point to grasp is that the relation between (surrogate) educational benefits and non-educational social and ecconomic benefits is not merely a strong, positive (causal) one, but also is a justified or authorized one in our society.

[15] The popularity of Scholastic Assessment Test coaching firms, such as the Princeton Review and Kaplan, is a testament to this widespread attitude. They typically guarantee higher SAT scores through emphasis on test taking skills and strategies, not the acquisition of knowledge and understanding.

[16] Again, see Steinberg (1996), op. cit., whose survey evidence comes closest to providing this.

[17] See, for example, Howard S. Becker (1989), "A School is a Lousy Place to Learn Anything."

[18] This phrase headlined *The Nation at Risk* report (Gardner, et al., 1983). The rhetoric places education—and its support—on a par with national defense in terms of national importance. As Green et al. (op. cit.,.,pp. 147 - 156) point out, this is the strongest possible appeal for the support of the educational system.

[19] Such standards of excellence internal to education are not to be confused with the generally woeful, rarely even rationalized and certainly not justified, state educational standards of the educational reform movement.

[20] As opposed to the individualist"s identification of the good life with the satisfaction of private preferences, more communitarian-type views from Aristotle to MacIntyre and Green locate the good life in the realization of irreducibly public goods embedded within irreducibly social practices. For such views happiness is the zestful exercising of basic human capacities (e.g., intelligence or inventiveness) in the pursuit or cultivation of the kinds of excellences appropriate to a practice of a given kind. Though the excellences of building a common world, building a family life, or of education require different kinds of activities or performances, the performance "commanded," as it were, in each is a kind of virtuosity. Thus, the goodness or badness of the performance is a matter of *objective* evaluation in relation to the standards of excellence that are definitive of the communally sustained practice.

This is not to reject the place and appropriateness of external goods such as wealth or status in a full life. For these may result from a life devoted to the pursuit of excellence. Rather, it is simply to note that external goods cannot be the *aim* of the good life on communitarian grounds.

And again, we should stress, while individualism understands society as just instrumental to the satisfaction of individual preferences, communitarians see society as essential. For even while in competition to excel, communitarians understand that internalization of the norms of the practice by all who compete is necessary to sustain its flourishing existence. (This is why truth, courage, and honesty are central virtues to most practices. Dishonesty and bad faith may often be the quickest route to fame and fortune, but they undermine the deep layer of social solidarity that forms the foundation of any practice.)

[21] The recent Rand study (Grissmer et al., 2000) suggests that heavy-handed accountability measures can squeeze out some gains, after all. But even here, the data reporting of some states, such as Texas, is suspect. See, for example, Linda Darling-Hammond (1999, p. 3).

[22] The Coleman Report on youth in transition, though now long-forgotten, remains the most serious and thought-provoking study in alternatives to the current regimen of growing up in America. It needs to be re-visited. See James S. Coleman (1974).

[23] See Green (1999), op. cit. Such settings, in other words, would be able to foster strong normation and other attachments necessary for leading a good and productive life. Weak normation (at best), anomie, and defiance are currently the phenomenological states of the indifferent/hostile students in our schools.

[24] In some ways our view is compatible with the views of Howard Gardner, "Getting There," *The Disciplined Mind*, pp. 214– 240. We and Gardner both advocate the end of the monolithic educational system. For even schools, as such, might have multiple pathways as is common in Scandinavia, Germany, other parts of Europe, and Japan. (Note that many of these societies are far more egalitarian than our own.) But Gardner only sees the high technology pathway of Bill Gates, Louis Gerstner, and others. Gardner fails to consider the possibility and viability of *non-school pathways* that would enable students to enter the career market in a variety of ways. But even if restricted to schools, a multiple pathway approach would have distinct advantages. For the differing "exit grades" of each would inhibit the continued existence of a *common coinage* (medium of exchange) as represented by the current formal domination of the Carnegie Unit system and informal, but real, pressure exerted by colleges and universities to specify the intermediate and high school curriculum in a manner to meet their own needs.

[25] For example, it may even require an examination and restructuring of the reward schedules for certain learned professions such as medicine and law. Like the academic profession (some of whose sub-specialties deserve similar attention), they already command considerable social respect. But when coupled with relatively high economic pay-off, their probability of attracting the strong attention of the status and wealth seeker escalates enormously. The proliferation of "professional ethics" courses in professional schools is a testament to the fact that the high professions are in imperiled in this way. For the aim of status and wealth seekers is to profit them first and foremost, and only incidentally serve their fellow human beings.

References

Becker, Howard S. (1986). "A School is a Lousy Place to Learn Anything in." In Becker"s *Doing Things Together*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, pp. 173–190.

Brandt, Richard B. (1979). *A Theory of the Good and Right*. Oxford: Clarendon Press,

Bruner, Jerome (1960). *The Process of Education*. Cambridge, MA: The M.I.T. Press.

Coleman, James S. (1974). *Youth: Transition to Adulthood*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Darling-Hammond, Linda (1995). " Performance-Based Assessment and Educational Equity." In A.C. Ornstein and L.S. Behar (Eds.) *Contemporary Issues in Curriculum.* Boston, MA: Allyn & Bacon, pp. 382–402.

Darling-Hammond, Linda (10/13/1999). Reforming Teacher Preparation and Licensing: Debating the Evidence. *Teachers College Record.* Available at http://www.tcrecord.org; I.D. #10419. .

Ericson, David P. and Frederick S. Ellett, Jr. (1987). " Teacher Accountability and the Causal Theory of Teaching." *Educational Theory, 37* (3), 277–293.

Ericson, David P. and Frederick S. Ellett, Jr. (1990). " Taking Student Responsibility Seriously." *Educational Researcher, 19*, No. 3, December 1990, 3–10.

Fenstermacher, Gary D (1986). " Philosophy of Research on Teaching." In Merlin O. Wittrock (Ed.). *Handbook of Research on Teaching.* 3rd edition, pp. 37-49. New York: Macmillan.

Finn, Chester, Diane Ravitch, and Paul Roberts (1985). *Challenges for the Humanities.* New York: Holmes-Meier.

Gardner, David P. et al. National Commission on Excellence in Education (1983). *A Nation at Risk: Imperative For Educational Reform.* Washington, D.C., Government Printing Office.

Gardner, Howard (1999). "Getting There." In Gardner"s *The Disciplined Mind.* New York: Simon & Shuster, pp. 214–240.

Green, Thomas F. with David P. Ericson and Robert H. Seidman (1980, first published). *Predicting the Behavior of the Educational System.* Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press. Republished in 1997 in *Classics in Education Series*. New York: Educator"s International Press.

Green, Thomas F. (1999). *Voices: The Educational Formation of Conscience.* Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press.

Grissmer, David, Ann Flanigan, Jennifer Kawata, and Stephanie Williamson (2000). *Improving Student Achievement: What NAEP Test Scores Tell Us.* Santa Monica,CA: The Rand Corporation.

Hirst, Paul H. (1974). "Liberal Education and the Nature of Knowledge." In R. F. Dearden, P.H. Hirst, and R.S. Peters (Eds.), *Education and the Development of Reason.* London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

MacIntyre, Alaisdair (1981; 1984, 2nd Edition). *After Virtue.* Notre Dame, IN: University of Notre Dame Press.

Parfit, David (1984). *Reasons and Persons.* Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Popham, W. James (2001). *The Truth about Testing.* Alexandria, VA: Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development.

Postman, Neil (1995). *The End of Education: Redefining the Value of School.* New York: Knopf.

Rodman, B. (1986). "Rating Teachers on Students" Test Scores Sparks Furor, Legal Action in St. Louis." *Education Week, 6,* (2).

Steinberg, Laurence with B. Bradford Brown and Sanford M. Dornbusch (1996). *Beyond the Classroom: Why School Reform Has Failed and What Parents Need to Do.* New York: Simon & Shuster.

Stoutland, Frederick (1990). "Self and Society in the Claims of Individualism." *Studies in Philosophy and Education, 10,* No. 1, 105–138.

Thurow, Lester (1975). *Generating Inequality.* New York: Basic Books.

Tocqueville, Alexis de (1935 & 1969; first published in 1835). *Democracy in America.* Translated by G. Lawrence. Edited by J.P. Mayer. New York: Doubleday

Trow, Martin (1961). "The Second Transformation of American Secondary Education." *International Journal of Comparative Sociology, 2, 144–;166.*

About the Authors

David P. Ericson, Ph.D.
Department of Educational Foundations
College of Education
University of Hawai`i at Manoa
1776 University Avenue
Honolulu, HI 96817

Phone: (808) 956-4243
Fax: (808) 956-9100
Email: ericson@hawaii.edu

Frederick S. Ellett, Jr.
Faculty of Education
University of Western Ontario
London, Ontario N6G 1G7
Canada

Phone: (519) 679-2111
Email: ellett@uwo.ca

David P. Ericson is a Professor in and Chair of the Department of Educational Foundations at the University of Hawai`i at Manoa. He is the former Editor-in-Chief of *Studies in Philosophy of Education* and currently serves on the policy research board for the Hawai`i Educational Policy Center. Frederick S. Ellett is an Associate Professor of Philosophy of Education on the Faculty of Education at the University of Western Ontario. He teaches in the preservice teacher education program and the graduate program in philosophy of education, policy analysis, and research methods. Beyond their many independent contributions to the field of education, they began an active collaboration while they were together on the faculty of the Graduate School of Education at UCLA from 1979—1989. In education, they have collaborated on numerous articles published in, among others, *Educational Theory, Teachers College Record, Paideusis, Proceedings of the Philosophy of Education Society, and Educational Researcher*. Their strong interest in the logic of causal inference in assessing program and policy effects have led them to publish in such philosophy journals as *Synthese, Nous,* and *Pacific Philosophical Quarterly*, as well as the social science research methodology journal *Quality and Quantity*. They are currently working together on several books in both education and the philosophy of the social sciences.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-
DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
Fundação Instituto Brasileiro e Geografia e Estatística
simon@openlink.com.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 1554 times since July 26, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 32 **July 26, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Geographical Distribution of Teacher Absenteeism in Large Urban School District Settings: Implications for School Reform Efforts Aimed at Promoting Equity and Excellence in Education

James E. Bruno
University of California, Los Angeles

Citation: Bruno, J. E.. (2002, July 26). The geographical distribution of teacher absenteeism in large urban school district settings: Implications for school reform efforts aimed at promoting equity and excellence in education. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(32). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n32/.

Abstract

School reform efforts aimed at promoting equity and excellence at urban school settings are heavily dependent upon the quality of teaching personnel that are used to deliver the instructional program. Social Justice and other public policy issues related to equity and excellence at urban schools have begun to examine the impact that teacher absenteeism, and by extension the reliance on substitute teachers to deliver instructional might have on educational attainment. This study combines school district data gathering mechanisms on teacher absence rates at school sites with Geographical Information Systems (G.I.S.) to map the association between a school's geographical environmental space and the propensity for teacher absence. The disparity between teaching resources as delivered by the school district vs. teacher resources as actually received by students in the classroom via teacher absenteeism is examined in the context of schools located in positive (high income) and negative (low income) geographical space. The study concludes that there is a strong association between the geographical quality of the school site setting, teacher absenteeism, and the reliance on substitute teachers to deliver instructional programs. Disparity in teacher absenteeism rates across large urban geographical areas threatens the promotion of equity and excellence in the schools by attenuating or lessening the effect of school resources to support instruction and amplifying the risk factors of students in the classroom.

Introduction

> Assemble all the worst things in America- gambling, liquor, cigarettes, and toxic fumes, sewage, waste disposal, prostitution- put it all together. Then you dump it on black people and their schools. (Kozol, *Savage Inequalities*, p. 17)

The above insight is from a book that attempts to document the bleak environmental or geographical space context of some of our urban school settings and its possible impact on the community- especially children and adolescents that live in the community. Schools located in what might be termed, Negative Geographical Space or N.G.S.

(Bruno,2000) are particularly troublesome with regard to promoting equity and excellence in their instructional programs. One educational research finding that seems to remain constant is that school reform efforts aimed at promoting equity and excellence in the schools are strongly dependent upon the quality of teaching personnel needed to deliver the instructional program to students in the classroom.

It is common knowledge that urban classroom teachers also tend to work under more stressful working conditions therefore use their sick days more frequently. In general, urban classroom teachers, teach more students a day, teach less academically prepared students, teach in more dangerous, high crime geographical areas of a large urban area, and generally lack teaching and instructional materials to deliver a quality instructional program. In essence, the geographical or environmental context of these school working conditions, even more that student poverty, are strongly associated with teacher attendance at the school site, their morale as professional educators, and a their sense of teaching efficacy in the classroom (Corcoran, Walker, & White, 1988).

> With its [the urban school's] outdated textbooks and crumbling, dirty facilities, it operated in conditions that would not have been tolerated in other mixed or predominantly white communities. (Diver-Stamnes, 1995, p. 17)

The issue of teacher absenteeism is rapidly becoming an important topic area of educational policy analysis largely because of its direct impact on the quality of instruction and its association with poor participation in school reform efforts. (Ehenberg, Rees, and Ehenberg, 1991). In an effort to explain the why to teacher absenteeism, some research studies have also examined the role of gender and its association with teacher absence (Scott & McClellan, 1990). All of these research efforts are directed towards developing a better understanding of the problem of teacher absenteeism and more importantly the propensity of teachers to use all of their available sick days as an "entitlement" of the profession.

Because of high levels of teacher absence and the extensive use and reliance on substitute teachers to deliver instructional programs there is a strong attenuation or a lessening of the impact of school resources that are devoted to instruction. There is also a corresponding amplification of student risk factors such as poverty. These two major consequences of teacher absenteeism, attenuation of school resources and the amplification of student risk factors, make the teacher absenteeism issue one of extreme importance for urban schools. Of particular importance is the impact that teacher absence might have on school reform efforts aimed at promoting equity and excellence at these schools. From a social justice perspective, another important issue to examine is if there is any systematic bias in the distribution of teacher absenteeism with higher teacher absenteeism in the low-income areas of large urban school districts. In essence, because educational researchers have suggested that the effectiveness of substitute teachers is far below that of regular teachers (Olsen, 1971). Teacher absenteeism, by extension, has implications for school reform and the quality of the instructional program at a school setting and policy issues dealing with improving equity and excellence in the schools.

In many instances in urban school settings, a substitute teacher cannot be found and a regular classroom teacher to cover the classroom time period from their free or preparation period. (Locker, 1999, Mckay,1999) . Finally from a purely financial perspective, teacher absenteeism is extremely expensive and substitute teacher salaries have to be paid in addition to regular teacher salaries thus adding to the per pupil cost of education. In essence, there is an attenuation or lessening of school resources needed to support instructional programs at these schools- a situation that would not be tolerated at predominantly white, suburban schools.

Of course there are many legitimate reasons for a teacher to be absent. Typical reasons include illness, professional development, personal reasons, family bereavement, etc. (Alberta Teachers Association, 1998). Sometimes as teachers approach retirement age and have accumulated sick days with the school district, they begin to take their takes off to pursue their own personal interests or outside "moonlighting" activities. Since in most urban school settings each teacher is permitted to "bank" 10 days of sick leave per year, the total amount of sick days for a teacher can rapidly accumulate over a career in the classroom. What is most troublesome for educational policy makers is when classroom teachers at certain school sites begin to view their absenteeism from the classroom as an entitlement that goes with the teaching position. The sense of entitlement has enormous implications for the cost of instruction. Consider the following example:

Assume a **180 day** school year:

- **100** teachers at **$75,000 (salary plus benefits)** = **$7,500,000** or **$416** per day per teacher
- Assume that each teacher takes **10** days of sick leave per year = **1000** teacher days missed or 10% of $7,500,000 = **$750,000** of resources not being received and replaced with a substitute teacher at $200 per day = **$200,000**
- The net loss to students is $7,500,000-$750,000-$200,000 = ***$6,550,000***
(thus the disparity of resources actually received by students in the classroom can be

> quite large and significantly impact on the quality of the instructional program and threaten efforts aimed at promoting equity and excellence in the schools).

In addition to the attenuation of school resources towards instruction, when this sense of entitlement is most prevalent or biased towards schools located in negative or low-income geographical space the very students most in need of instructional quantity and quality are harmed. The challenges posed to teachers and educational leaders between the quality of geographical space or school site location, poverty, and school issues have also been explored in educational research studies. (Bruno, 2000; Lippenant, Burns, McArthur, 1996).

Purpose of Study

The purpose of this study extends these research efforts to examine the quality of geographical space and teacher absence linkage since it indirectly examines how school site location impacts on access to educational opportunity. Specifically this study examines the association between the quality of geographical space or the environmental context of the school setting and the rates of teacher absenteeism at the school site for all of the high schools located in a large urban.

The Substitute Teacher in Urban Settings

> Equality of educational opportunity at a school exists when a child's educational opportunity does not depend upon either his parent's economic circumstances or his location within the state (Wise, 1972, p. 146)

As previously noted, issues related to quality of educational opportunity and the related issue of equity and excellence at urban schools strongly depend on the quality of classroom instructional programs. The reliance on substitute teachers to deliver instruction, because of teacher absence has great significance for these urban students because parents or the economic circumstances of these students make the school setting the only source of educational development. Instructional programs delivered mainly by substitute teachers, non-credential teachers, inexperienced teachers, etc. therefore are extremely important. Some of these issues have been previously and non-empirically addressed in various books on the problems of urban school setting. (Kozol, 1992). Since the quality of substitute teachers and not fully interchangeable with the quality of the regular classroom teacher at most school settings, the issue of teacher absence has both practical (in terms of cost) and theoretical (in terms of equity) significance for the educational policy maker.

The regular high school classroom teacher is required to obtain a bachelor's degree in a same field that is related to his or her teaching assignment. This could range from the sciences, such as chemistry, to education such as special ed., to mathematics such as algebra II, to the fine arts such as painting. The regular classroom teacher is also required to complete two years of a teacher training program in a post graduate department of an accredited institution. While there are some exceptions, substitute teachers are typically under qualified to teach in the field of the regular classroom teacher, but are expected to fill the shoes of any regular teacher, whatever the subject matter field of the absent teacher (chemistry, mathematics, physics).

In some school districts, the minimum education requirement level for substitute teaching is set at extremely low professional levels. For example, in the state of Utah, all a substitute needs to teach is a high school degree and no criminal record. Fairfax County, Va., demands only two years of college for its substitutes. (Streisand & Toch, 1998). In recent studies, it was found that a large number of teacher-training graduates failed the recently introduced teacher-licensing exam. Last spring, nearly sixty percent of Massachusetts' education graduates failed a basic reading, writing, and subject matter test. A recent nationwide study by the Educational Testing Service found similar high rates of failure. (Streisand & Tock, 1998).

It is also noteworthy that most substitute teachers are usually not equipped with lesson plans for the classroom periods that they cover and typically show a film or do other "filling time" classroom activities. In the substitute teacher chat room found on the Internet, playing word bingo with the kids was a highly recommended form of filling class time. In essence, these substitute teachers are really not "substitutes" in an educational sense, but according to students highly paid "babysitters" to students that need quality teachers the most and require greater amounts of formal instructional time.

This study will focus on teacher absenteeism at the high school level of instruction because this level is most directly associated with equal educational opportunity via AP courses, preparing students for post high school graduation education exit exams from high school, and general preparation for post secondary education. It is also the setting where students at one of the most important stages of their psychosocial development require time connections with their classroom teachers for purposes of modeling, receiving vision for a future, advice, and counseling.

Finally, the role of geographical space on teacher absenteeism is often neglected as a variable in educational policy studies. Geographical space has its own unique qualities with regard to understanding behaviors such as teacher absenteeism. For example there is

- Location of the school setting: Where is the school located in geographical space? Where is the exact location and what is the land use surrounding the school setting i.e. the quality of the geographical space since it might impact on the quality of the instructional program, teacher turnover, and teacher absenteeism.

- Livability of the geographical space surrounding the school: What is it like to live and be schooled in the geographical space of the school setting? Since most teachers don't live in the same geographical space as the school setting there is a tendency to ignore what it is like for students to live and study in the area. The social well being of the community, crime rate, extent of graffiti, etc. all impact on the livability of the geographical space and working conditions in the classroom. It also impacts on student preparation for class and attitudes towards school.

- Likeability of school site area: How do other people in the community relate to their space and how is the pride in the community? Community well being, quality neighborhoods, and the support for schools are linked and have a major impact on the instructional program and what is expected from teachers and directly impacts on the motivation to teach.

- Locus of Control: How does this geographical space dominate others in the area or is dominate with regard to quality? How are ideas, people, and goods moved into and out of the geographical space. What is the investment in the community, resident turnover, etc and how do others view the geographical space. Conditions where the geographical space is considered as negative implies that the space has little attractiveness for either living or working. This characteristic relates to teacher turnover and the sense of entitlement with regard to absence from the classroom. This characteristic of geographical space might affect teacher absenteeism and teacher turnover.

This study combines recently developed data gathering mechanism on teacher absence rates at high school sites in a large urban school setting with Geographical Information Systems (G.I.S.). The purpose of this study is to map the association between the school's geographical space or physical environment (income level) and the propensity for teacher absence. The disparity between instructional resources as delivered vs. instructional resources as actually received by students in the classroom is examined in the context of a large urban school setting.

Specifically, the purpose of this study is twofold.

- First, to examine the geographical association between the quality of negative geographical space of a high school setting in a large urban school district (median family income in the area) and the rates of teacher absenteeism.

- Second, to examine how teacher absenteeism measures and the need for substitute teachers (filled and unfilled) are associated with school performance at the school site.

Methods

This study used teacher absence information collected at all high schools in a large urban school district. The average absence per teacher was especially noted along with information regarding the number of unfilled substitute teacher positions. G.I.S. methods were then used to plot these school settings by those above and below a threshold 8.0 days of teacher absence per year per teacher at the school site. The quality of the geographical space surrounding the school setting or the median level of income for the zip code of the school setting was then applied to the map of school sites that were color-coded by high and low rates of teacher absenteeism. Finally, other important variables at the school site that might be related to substitute teachers, such as academic quality as measured by the Academic Performance Indicator or API, were also collected for each school site.

In this study the following variables were collected at each high school site in the school district.

Table 1
Description of Variables

Description	Variable
How often a teacher is absent from the classroom	Teacher absenteeism rate
Teachers without fully state certified credentials–many teaching in areas with no expertise	Number w/o credential

Teachers with less than 2 years of experience in the classroom- usually younger teachers	Number < 2 yrs experience
Number of requests to take the place of a classroom teacher	Substitute teacher requests
Number of times a substitute teacher cannot be found for the classroom	Substitute requests unfilled
Number of students leaving school and not entering any other educational program	Drop out rate
Number of students that leave before the end of the school year	Transiency percent
Number of times a students is asked to leave school for disciplinary reasons	Number suspensions
Number of times a students is asked to go to a different school- usually a continuation school	Opportunity transfers
Police reported crimes against property	Crimes against property
Police reported crimes against individuals	Crimes against people
Number of teachers needed to service student educational needs that are left unfilled	Number of unfilled teaching position
Level of academic performance at the school	Academic Performance Index

Findings

Note in Table 2 that the average absenteeism for the school district was 8.27 days per teacher per year. Note that this figure ranges from a low of 6.3 to a high of 11.4. Note also that the number of unfilled substitute teacher positions ranged from 9 to 306. The impact that geographical space might have on these statistics will be explored in a later section of the study.

Table 2
Descriptive Data for Senior High Schools in a Large Urban Area (n=49)

Variable	Mean	St. Dev.	Min.	Max.
Teacher absenteeism rate	8.27	1.06	6.33	11.44
Number w/o credential	26.84	10.8	8	61
Number < 2 yrs experience	46.31	14.6	19	89
Substitute teacher requests	1447	590.5	193	2571
Substitute requests unfilled	85.39	56.6	9	306
Drop out rate	5.53	3.2	.47	15.7
Transiency percent	37.2	12.4	16.7	77.1
Number suspensions	534.8	345.2	23	1608
Opportunity transfers	76.22	48.7	2	272
Crimes against property	11.27	9.2	2	54
Crimes against people	78.24	34.6	37	199
Number of unfilled teaching position	4.27	5.1	0	21
Academic Performance Index	531.82	83.3	370	737

Note from Table 3, the high inter-correlation between teacher absence rates and academic performance (r = .54) and the amount of unfilled substitute teacher positions (r = .45)

Table 3
Inter-correlation of All Variables with Teacher Absenteeism Rates (=p<.01)**

Variable	Correlation

Teacher absenteeism rate	1.00
Number w/o credential	.37**
Number < 2 yrs experience	.24
Substitute teacher requests	-.01
Substitute requests unfilled	.45**
Drop out rate	.40**
Transiency percent	.50**
Number suspensions	-.04
Opportunity transfers	.19
Crimes against property	.44**
Crimes against people	.64**
Number of unfilled teaching position	.52**
Academic Performance Index	-.54**

With the complete address for each high school site, the exact geographical location of a school site was identified to within five feet of its actual location. When the median family income for the zip code that contains the school site was added, a pictorial representation of the quality of geographical space and output indicators (especially teacher absenteeism) was visually depicted.

Figure 1 depicts the large urban geographical area while Figure 2 is a plot of the location of school sites with teacher absenteeism above 8.00. Figure 3 is a plot of the location of school sites with teacher absenteeism rates both above and below 8.0, while Figure 4 is the same plot with the quality of the geographical space (median level of income) overlaid on the map. Figures 5 and 6 specifically examine school sites with above and below 8.0 teacher absence rates and Academic Performance Indices (API) above and below the 500 point average for the school district.

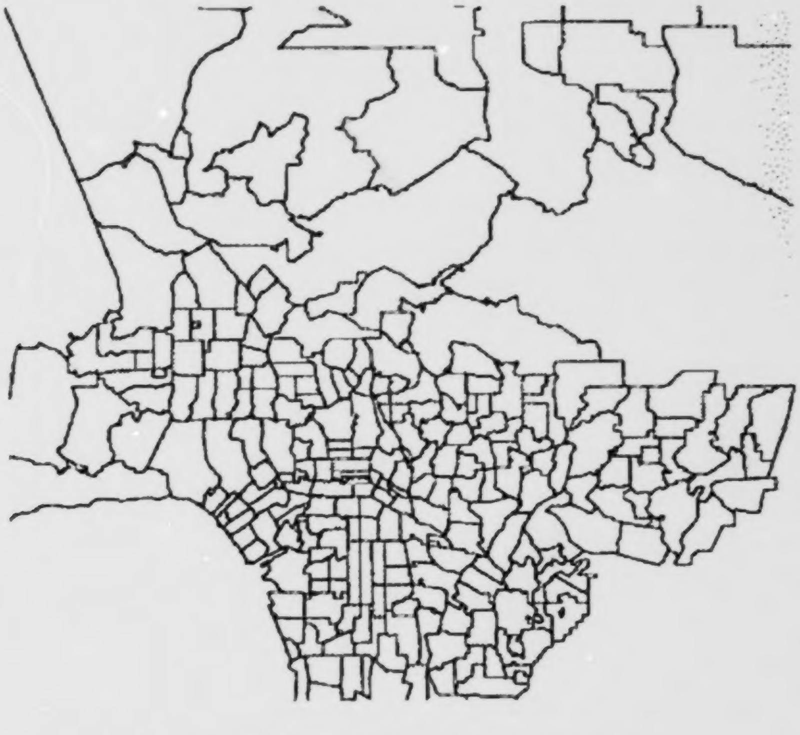


Figure 1: The Los Angeles Urban Area (zip codes)

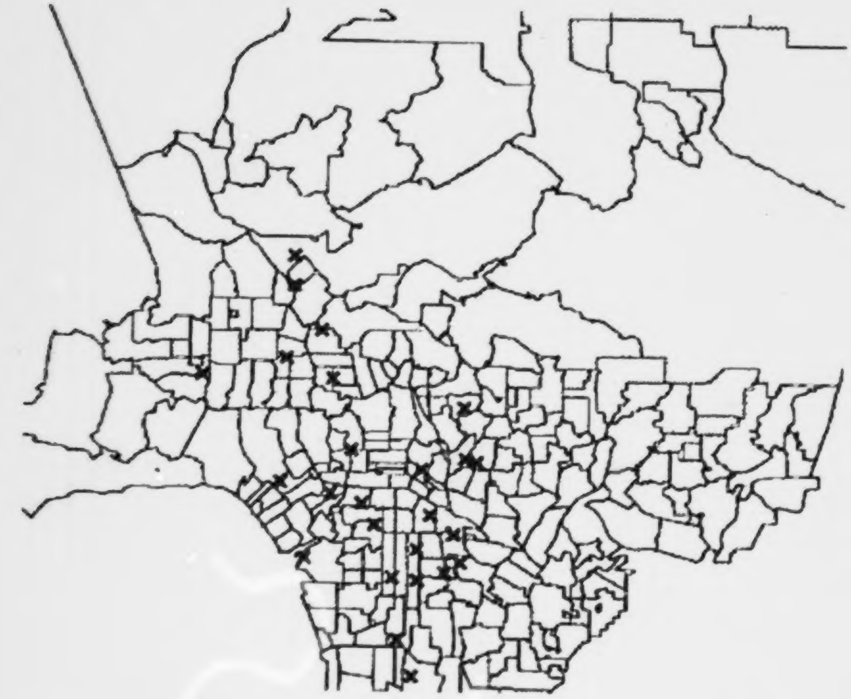


Figure 2: Distribution of High Teacher Absence Schools (> 8.0)

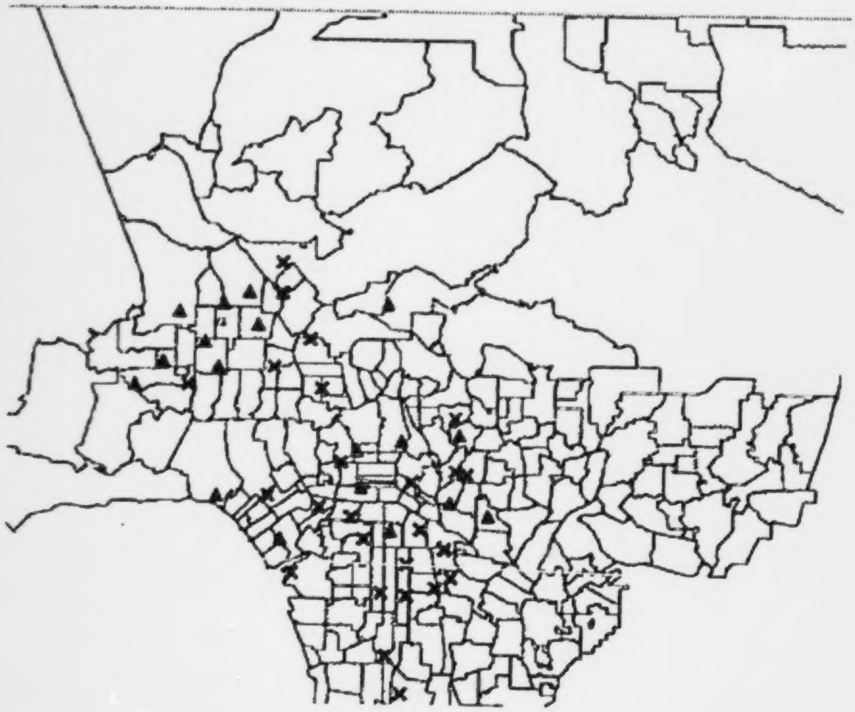


Figure 3: Distribution of High and Low Teacher Absenteeism Schools (Symbol X = highest and triangle = lowest)

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

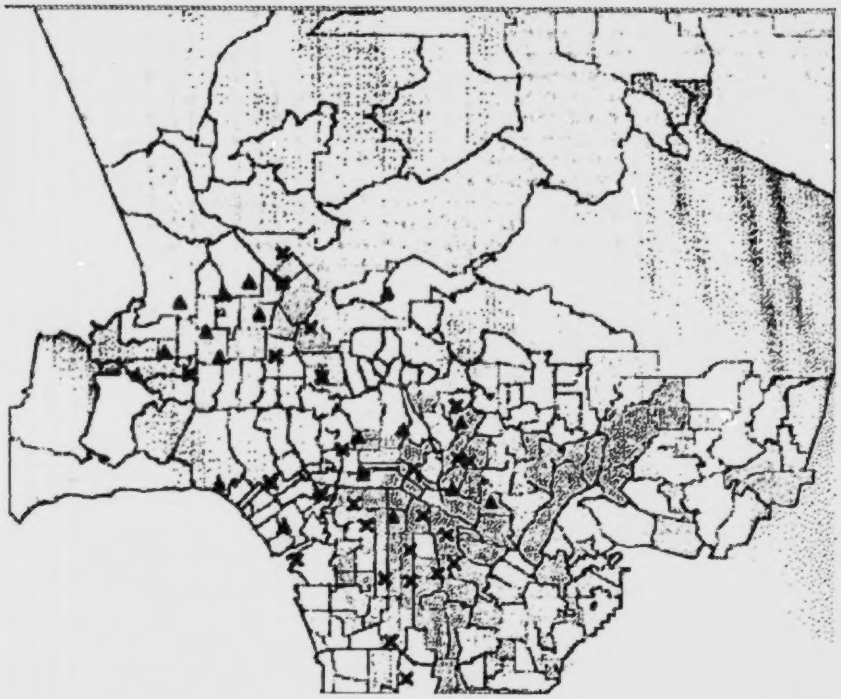


Figure 4: Distribution of High and Low Teacher Absenteeism Schools with Geographical Space (Dark areas highest per capita income-(Symbol X = highest and triangle = lowest)

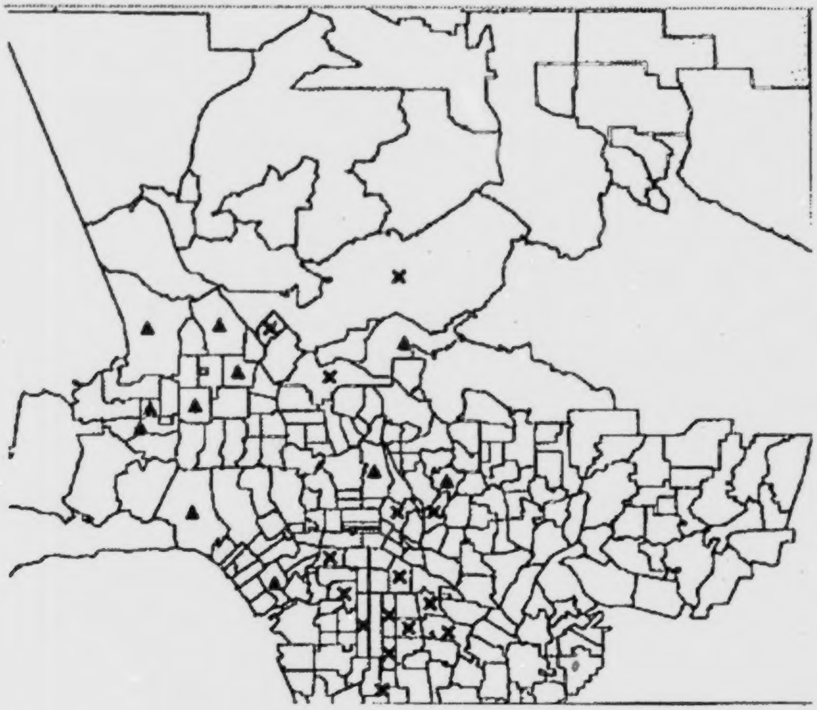


Figure 5: Distribution of High Absenteeism-Poor Performance- Low Absenteeism-High Performance Schools (Symbol X = highest absence-poorest performance and triangle = lowest absence and highest performance)

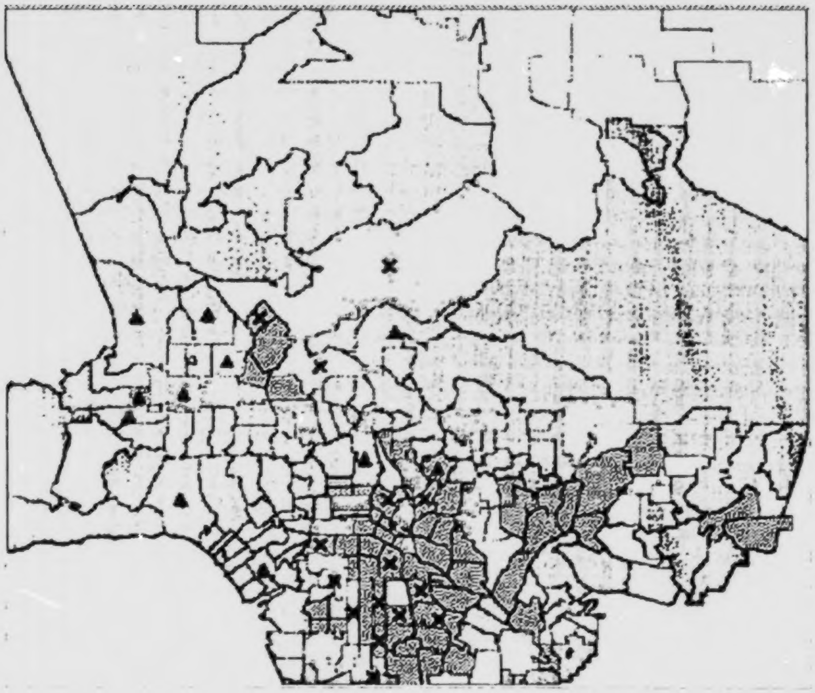


Figure 6: Distribution of High Absence- Poor Performing and Low Absence- High Performing School and Geographical Space (Dark Areas have Highest Per Capita Income-(Symbol X = highest absence-poorest performance and triangle = lowest absence and highest performance)

Table 4
High Teacher Absenteeism Schools (n = 27)

Variable	Mean	St. Dev.	Min.	Max.
Teacher absenteeism rate	9.01	.77	8.05	11.44
Number w/o credential	29.22	1.6	11	29.2
Number < 2 yrs experience	47.6	14.2	19	47.6
Substitute teacher requests	1444.4	637.1	193	2571
Substitute requests unfilled	99.2	62.8	15	306
Drop out rate	6.1	3.09	1.25	15.7
Transiency percent	39.8	13.6	18.42	77.1
Number suspensions	628.5	393.9	59	1606
Opportunity transfers	78.5	59.8	2	272
Crimes against property	13.0	11.2	3	54
Crimes against people	91.04	38.6	42	199
Number of unfilled teaching position	5.75	5.5	0	21
Academic Performance Index	505.74	74.16	370	653
Number of schools (n=27) Percent in Negative Geographical space (low community income)= 96%				

Note from Table 4 that high teacher absence (>8.0) was separated from those schools below 8.0. Note the variations in the API's for these two groupings of schools (370-653) with an average of 505.- Also note that there is far more criminal activity and higher teacher turnover at these high absence schools

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Table 5
Low Teacher Absenteeism Schools (n = 22)

Variable	Mean	St. Dev.	Min.	Max.
Teacher absenteeism rate	7.3	.52	6.3	7.97
Number w/o credential	23.9	10.5	8	49
Number < 2 yrs experience	44.8	15.2	22	83
Substitute teacher requests	1451.1	542.6	402	2508
Substitute requests unfilled	68.4	51.9	9	237
Drop out rate	4.8	3.3	.47	13.34
Transiency percent	34.1	10.33	16.74	53.7
Number suspensions	419.8	234.9	23	895
Opportunity transfers	53.5	25.1	2	100
Crimes against property	9.2	5.6	2	21
Crimes against people	62.6	20.8	37	113
Number of unfilled teaching position	2.5	3.9	0	18
Academic Performance Index	563.8	84.2	426	737
Number of schools (n=22) Percent in Negative Geographical space (low community income)= 10%				

Note in Table 5 that low absence schools have an API of 426 to 737 with an average of 564. Also note that there we less unfilled substitute teacher positions.

Table 6
Inter-correlation of Variables with Teacher Absenteeism ** p <.01 * p <.05

Variable	High absenteeism Schools	Low Absenteeism Schools
Teacher absenteeism rate	1.00	1.00
Number w/o credential	.26	.19
Number < 2 yrs experience	.24	.31
Substitute teacher requests	.44**	.31*
Substitute requests unfilled	1.00**	.33*
Drop out rate	.21	.45**
Transiency percent	.49**	.31*
Number suspensions	.07	.21
Opportunity transfers	.07	-.02
Crimes against property	.61**	-.16
Crimes against people	.51**	.19
Number of unfilled teaching position	.52**	.37*
Academic Performance Index	-.45**	-.37*
Number of schools	27	22

Note from Table 6, the correlation with academic performance was -.45 and -.37 and the number teaching without teaching credentials .26 to -.19.

Table 7
High Teacher Absence-Low Academic Attainment Schools (n=16)

Variable	Mean	St. Dev.	Min.	Max.
Teacher absenteeism rate	9.2	.90	8.1	11.44
Number w/o credential	33.5	10.2	22	61
Number < 2 yrs experience	52.4	15.1	19	89
Substitute teacher requests	1465.1	619.5	477	2571
Substitute requests unfilled	116	67.4	22	306
Drop out rate	6.7	2.9	2.8	15.7
Transiency percent	45.6	14.1	29.3	77.1
Number suspensions	761.5	451.5	59	1608
Opportunity transfers	82.81	47.9	2	198
Crimes against property	15.8	13.8	3	54
Crimes against people	110.2	38.2	62	199
Number of unfilled teaching position	8.44	5.7	1	21
Academic Performance Index	454.1	36.7	370	497
Number of schools (n=16) Percent in Negative Geographical space (low community income)= 100%				

Table 8
Descriptive Analysis: Low Absenteeism-High Academic Performance Schools (n=16)

Variable	Mean	St. Dev.	Min.	Max.
Teacher absenteeism rate	7.3	.53	6.3	7.97
Number w/o credential	21.4	10.2	8	49
Number < 2 yrs experience	89	15.4	22	83
Substitute teacher requests	1482	548.3	584	2508
Substitute requests unfilled	64.5	55.2	16	237
Drop out rate	4.2	2.1	.47	8.7
Transiency percent	31.1	8.9	16.74	46.2
Number suspensions	382.7	192.7	23	685
Opportunity transfers	47.4	23.2	2	100
Crimes against property	8.3	5.2	2	20
Crimes against people	57.1	14.1	38	89
Number of unfilled teaching position	1.5	2.0	0	7
Academic Performance Index	598.4	71.0	510	737
Number of schools (n=16) Percent in Negative Geographical space (low community income)= 5%				

Table 9
Correlations for High-Absence and Low-Absence Schools With Regard to Academic Performance (above and below 500 on the API)

Variable	High teacher	Low teacher

	absenteeism schools with low performance	absenteeism schools with high performance
Teacher absenteeism rate	1.00	1.00
Number w/o credential	.22*	.19*
Number < 2 yrs experience	.09	.41**
Substitute teacher requests	-.03	.45**
Substitute requests unfilled	-.79**	.40**
Drop out rate	.33*	.36*
Transiency percent	.69**	.31*
Number suspensions	-.10	-.15
Opportunity transfers	.03	-.10
Crimes against property	.69**	-.10
Crimes against people	.76**	.35*
Number of unfilled teaching position	.57**	.52**
Academic Performance Index	-.88**	-.33*
Number of schools	16	16

See Figures 5 and 6 for a geographical mapping of these schools. From Table 9 note the high correlation and differences in these correlation measures with regard to the number of teachers with less than 2 years of experience and the number of substitute teacher requests. Most important is the number of substitute teacher requests that remain unfilled and teacher absence.

Policy Issues: The distribution of teacher absences

The principal finding of this study is that the effect of teacher absenteeism is felt not equally across all school sites, but is felt most unfavorably in the urban schools or schools that are located in poor, low median family income geographical space. This finding corroborates the findings of other studies regarding how poverty impacts the urban school. As one national study has found, with teaching vacancies, rural and small town schools (10%) are less likely to use substitute teachers than central city schools (24%) and urban fringe schools (16%). These rural and small town schools (96%) are more likely to hire qualified teachers than central city schools (90%); but they are almost equally likely to do so when compared to urban fringe schools (95%) (NEA, 1998).

The amount of teacher absences at schools in these negative geographical space areas is also an indicator of teacher morale and stress. When there is high teacher absence, it tends to lower the morale of remaining teachers resulting in higher teacher turnover. This could be the cause of the failure of these schools to attract more committed teachers or the danger and stress posed by working in high-risk neighborhoods that result in teachers leaving the classroom.

Since urban districts are often plagued with gang violence and unsafe schools and neighborhoods, the latter condition is highly significant to examine for the policy maker since there is an actual threat to a teacher's physical safety. As a result and as expected, there should not only be more teacher absence in poorer areas of the city, but lower retention rates of qualified and experienced teachers.

Summary, Recommendation, and Conclusions

As noted earlier, students in a classroom eventually lose the desire to learn when the regular teacher is frequently absent and the delivery of the instructional program is by an array of substitute teachers. In essence, teacher absenteeism has important implications for school reform, teacher training, educational leadership, and issues related to social justice aimed at promoting equity and excellence in the schools. The use of substitute teachers puts added strain on the efforts of school reform by not only increasing the costs of instruction, but by changing the delivery of instruction from fully credentialed and permanent teachers to part time and substitute teachers. In addition with heavy reliance on substitute teachers to deliver instructional programs, the teaching efforts of the regular teacher towards school reform might be undermined. One of the main characteristics between successful and unsuccessful school reform efforts is the closing the disparity between resources as distributed vs. resources as received in the classroom. The degree of teacher absence at a school site is directly related to this resource distribution-reception disparity.

Finally educational leadership has to recognize the fact that teaching at low-income area schools increases the propensity of teachers to be absent. With this in mind highly trained substitute teacher pools might need to be developed at the site so that instruction is continued when the teacher is absent. The shortage of substitute teachers (Lilly, 1998) and the effective use of substitute teachers (Holdaway and Benhaw (1974) in the classroom have also been studied and should be considered part of school administrative training. (Pitkoff, 1993). Some states implementing large scale studies of substitute teaches include Wisconsin (Substitute Teaching in Wisconsin, 2000) amd Nova Scotia (Unicomb et al., 2000)

In conclusion research on low-income schools should examine in closer detail the disparity between resources as delivered to the classroom vs. resources as actually received by students in the classroom. Teacher absenteeism is a major contributor to instructional resource disparity or resources that are not actually being delivered to students in the classroom. In addition the notion of attenuation or the lessening of the impact of school resources and the amplification of risk factors of students needs to be examined in much closer detail by educational researchers.

This study partially demonstrates that the dual problem of attenuation of school district resources and amplification of student risk are both impacted by teacher absenteeism. In addition, the quality of geographical space as measured by the median income of the area is also highly associated with teacher absenteeism. This association between the quality of geographical space, teacher absenteeism, and educational attainment raises issues of social justice and has the potential to undermine school reform efforts at promoting equity and excellence in urban schools.

References

Alberta Teachers Association, Substitute Teachers Professional Replacements. April 17 available at http:/www.teachers.ab.ca/publicatiuons/brochures/parents/pamphlets/pg\uide16.html

Bruno, J. E. (1997). *It's About Time: Leading School Reform in an Era of Time Scarcity.* Corwin Press, Inc., CA.

Bruno, J. E. (1970). *The Use of Monte Carlo Techniques for Determining Optimal Size of Substitute Teacher Pools in Large Urban School Districts.* Socio-Econ. Plan. Sci. 4 pp. 415-428.

Corcoran, R., Walker, L.J., & White, J.L. (1988). Working in Urban Schools. Washington D.C: The Institute of Educational Leadership. (ED299-356)

Diver-Stamnes, A. C. (1995). *Lives in the Balance: Youth, Poverty, and Education in Watts.* State University of New York Press, Albany.

Ehrenberg, R., Rees, D., & Ehrenberg E. (1991). School district leave policies, teacher absenteeism, and student achievement, *Journal of Human Resources, 26*, 72-105.

Holdaway, E. A. and Benthan, J. A. (1974). The provision of substitute teachers. *Alberta Journal of Educational Research, 20*(1), 24-33

Joyce, M. R. *An Analysis of Difference in Classroom Routines of Regular Teachers and Their Substitute Counterparts.* Dissertation Abstracts International, 1975 Sep, 36(3-A), pp.1212-1213

Kozol, J. (1992). *Savage Inequalities*, Harper Prennial.

Lilly, D. *Shortage of substitute teachers has schools scrambling.* Nov 10, 1998. Available at seattletimes.com

Lippman, L., Burns, S & McArthur, E. (1996). Urban Schools: The challenge of location and poverty. U.S. Department of Education, Naional Center for Education Statistics. Washington, D.C.

Locher, Paul. (1999). *Good Economy Procipitates Substitute Shortage.* Retrieved Apr. 17, 2001. Available at http://www.the-daily-record.com/past_issues/01_jan/990117dr5.html

McKay, G. *No Substitute: Substitute Teachers become Hot Commodity.* Jan 26, 1999. Available at http://www.post-gazette.com/regionstate/19990125subs9.asp

Pitkoff, E. (1993). Teacher absenteeism: What admnistrators can do. *NASSP Bulletin, 77*, 39-45

Scott, K & McClellan, E. (1990). Gender differences in absenteeism. *Public Personnel Management, 19*, 229-253.

Streisand, B. & Toch, T. (1998). *Many Millions of Kids and Too Few Teachers* Available at http://www.usnews.com/usnews/issue/980914/14teac.htm

Substitute Teaching In Wisconsin. (Fall 2000) *The Statewide Study of the Problems that Districts are having in attracting and retaining quality substitute teachers*. Retrieved Jun 1, 2001. Available at http://weac.org/Resource/2000-01/sept00/subs.htm

Unicomb, R., Alley, J., Avery, P., & Barak, L. (1992). Teacher absenteeism: A study of short term teacher absenteeism in nine Nova Scotia schools. *Education Canada, 32* (2), 33-37.

Wise, A. (1972). *Rich Schools Poor Schools: The Promise of Equal Educational Opportunity*. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.

Woods, L. L. and Woods, T. L. (1974). Substitute: A psychological study. *Elementary School Journal, 75*(3), 162-167.

About the Author

Professor James E. Bruno
Graduate School of Education and Information Studies
1032A Moore Hall
University of California, Los Angeles 90095

Phone 310-825-8354
Fax 310-206-6293

Professor James E. Bruno has taught at the University of California, Los Angeles (UCLA) for over 30 years and is currently engaged in research dealing with a wide range of interrelated topic areas impacting on children and adolescents. These areas include the perception of time and human behavior, social justice and community well being associated with geographical space, time-space distortions for children and adolescents in a new world order, and the use of information technologies for assessment and instructional support in educational settings. He presently teaches in the UCLA honors undergraduate program, the GSE&IS education minor program, UC-Fresno joint doctoral program in educational leadership, and doctoral program in urban studies at UCLA.

Email jbruno@ucla.edu
Website www.gseis.ucla.edu/faculty/bruno

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh

Dewayne Matthews

Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

This article has been retrieved 1483 times since August 4, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 33 **August 4, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Politics of School-Based Management: Understanding the Process of Devolving Authority in Urban School Districts

Elaine M. Walker
Seton Hall University

Citation: Walker, E. M. (2002, August 4). The politics of school-based management: Understanding the process of devolving authority in urban school districts. *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(33). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n33.html.

Abstract

Since the late 1970s the problem of urban education has been cast as partially a problem of governance and authority structures. This focus mirrors a larger preoccupation by educational reformers with democratizing the decision-making process in public schools, a preoccupation that is evident not only in this country but also many nations throughout the world. Borrowing from the private sector, the underlying assumption behind decentralization is that educational improvement is only possible if those closest to the point at which decision are enacted become the architects of these decisions. Thus, school-based management or participatory decision-making is viewed as a means to formally incorporate the voices of parents, teachers and the community in the management of their schools. This paper discusses the findings of a recently conducted study on school-based management in thirty of New Jersey's poorest districts (referred to as the Abbott Districts). These districts have begun a process of complex reform after the State's Supreme Court ruled that the state had failed to constitutionally provide a thorough and efficient education for its poorest students by the absence of parity funding. Populated by primarily black and Hispanic students, and representing most of the larger urban communities in the state, students in these districts exhibit performance levels significantly below that of the state average. The results of the study indicate that (1) genuine autonomy has been usurped by an intensification in state power and authority, (ii) state elites have provided little opportunity for districts and SBM teams to build capacity; (iii) the level of democratization or opening-up of decision making to local community members has been minimal as the teams become teacher dominated; and (iv) in the absence of clear guidelines from the State, conflict over the appropriate role of SBM members, principals, central office staff and local school boards has emerged. The paper on the basis of these findings explores some policy options that need to be considered both at the state and local levels as school communities move toward more decentralized governance structures.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Introduction

Education remains one of the primary means through which social mobility is attained. Yet, the many discourses on the state of educational institutions suggest institutions that are imperiled for a variety of reasons. This crisis in public education is viewed as more pronounced in communities peopled by the poor of Latino and African- American descents than in white affluent communities. While the problems of these educational systems have been framed in many different ways, one argument that has been consistently forwarded centers on the endemic paralysis of their central bureaucratic structures in responding to efforts of change. Consequently, a popular policy solution has focused on the devolution of power and authority from these central bureaucracies to less formal and rigid structures i.e. schools. However, the history of the decentralization movement reveals noticeable ideological shifts behind the purpose of school-based management (SBM).

During the sixties, attempts were made to increase the level of participation in decision-making through the formal incorporation of various subgroups. Concerned with such issues as granting greater power and authority to local communities, diffusing state authority and increasing organizational efficiency, the decentralization movements of this era saw the devolution of authority as a means of meeting political and administrative ends (David, 1989; Wohlstetter & Mohrman, 1996). The eighties however, witnessed a change in the purposive intent behind decentralization. This change resulted from the pervasive influence of the reform movements that dominated the educational landscape of this period. During the eighties, there was a broad call for the implementation of comprehensive educational changes - changes that addressed professional development and instruction, the replacement of bureaucratic regulations with professional responsibility and accountability, and the development of high standards for teachers as well as students (David, 1989). The focus of school-based management thus became inextricably interwoven with concerns about student achievement.

The growing popularity of school-based management as a reform strategy is evidenced by the fact that in 1993 over 44 states practiced some form of decentralized governance (Herman & Herman, 1993). Within the broader global context, decentralization became an integral component of the reform movements in countries such as New Zealand, Canada, Britain, Spain, and Wales (Hanson & Ulrich, 1994; Leithwood & Menzies, 1998). Ironically, at the same time that increasing numbers of school districts, states, and nations were adopting decentralization policies in the hope of bringing about improvement in student achievement, the evidence suggested that school-based management was less powerful a source of school improvement than its advocates believed. Indeed, the evidence continues to show that the impact of school-based management is more apparent in the areas of governance and organizational structures than in changed classroom practices and improved student achievement (Summers & Johnson, 1991; Wohlstetter & Mohrman 1996).

Notwithstanding this trend, several arguments have been advanced by proponents of decentralization in support of the superiority of this form of governance arrangement over centralized structures (Murphy, 1991). First, it is argued that decentralization gives communities, parents and teachers a stake in local educational decision-making. Second, decentralization is seen to contribute to the evolution of greater levels of professional commitment by allowing teachers to exercise a voice in decision-making. Third, the suggestion is proffered that the creation of decisions at levels that are closest to students, results in better outcomes, as those making the decisions are more acutely aware of the needs of these students. Fourth, decentralization is viewed as a mechanism that has the potential to promote greater efficiency in the utilization and expenditure of resources. This is achieved, since the decisions are being made by those closest to the point where services are being delivered, thereby resulting in a greater match of services to needs. Fifth, since bureaucracies are perceived to be ineffective in meeting the needs of students, decentralized structures are considered to have the potential to be more responsive to student needs than are bureaucratic organizational forms.

The Theoretical Underpinnings of School-Based Management

The above arguments on the advantages of this form of school governance reveal some important theoretical assumptions. Undoubtedly, the notion of decentralization in educational decision-making and governance issues appeals to the social democratic principles of egalitarianism whereby local communities acquire a voice in institutional building and operation (Seddon, Angus & Poole, 1990). If this principle is actualized through the creation of democratic decision-making structures, a significant shift in the realignment of power relationships can be expected to occur. Specifically, grass root groups functioning in some combination with school-based leadership ideally would replace the dominance enjoyed by educational bureaucratic elites in local school governance matters. Devolution of authority thus enables the education constituency to become more inclusive and less narrowly restricted to technocrats. By accomplishing this, the balance of power between educational elites on the one hand, and local community and school-based actors on the other, is redistributed to the advantage of the latter group (Seddon, Angus & Poole, 1990).

Theoretically, this redistribution of power corresponds to a re-conceptualization of the organizational unit deemed to be most important administratively for the improvement of learning. Under the old governance model, central office units were considered to have the administrative responsibility for ensuring that the conditions needed to promote learning were in place. With decentralization, the school as a subunit now assumes this role.

Organizational and economic arguments have also played a role in framing some of the assumptions on which the concept of decentralization of authority structures in educational settings is grounded. Some organizational theorists argue that a decentralized environment is optimal for efficiency in operations, since employees who are empowered to make decisions have more control over their work and hence become more accountable for decisions (Murphy, 1991). The premise of these arguments is that by flattening the decision-making process, and bringing it closer to the site where client needs are met, the effectiveness of the organization is improved, as employees based on their knowledge and interactions with clients can reshape their products and services based on an understanding of client needs.

Miron (1996) posits to the contrary however, that the incorporation of corporate principles of decentralization as reflected in the ideology of shared decision- making ought to be approached with caution by educators. According to Miron, corporate downsizing and decentralization of decision-making represented a strategic response by capital to the global fiscal crisis. However, the relative complexity of schools' institutional processes when compared to those in the corporate world implies that the importation of the 'logic of capital' into educational institutions can create a set of discursive practices, as well as mask some of the macrostructural and micropolitical processes that are in play.

In a similar vein, Ball and Smyth have advanced a critical political-economic perspective on school-based management (Ball, 1993; Smyth, 1993). Both have advanced the notion that decentralization ought to be understood within the context of resource availability, social responsibility, and accountability. From these writers' perspectives, the social democratic principles on which decentralization is premised, and which appear appealing to constituencies whose voices have been rendered mute by educational elites, belie some of the hidden motivation behind those at state and governmental levels who push this form of governance. Specifically, the argument is posited that the devolution of authority from central sources, especially at the state level, serves to legitimize state agencies in many ways. First, it gives the appearance that these agencies are sensitive to local needs. Second, by shifting decision-making responsibilities to the schools, these agencies can distance themselves from failed policies by blaming schools for poor management and flawed decision-making. This works in the favor of state elites by insulating them from the consequences and contradictions that are generated by the formulation of poor policies.

Moreover, both Ball and Smyth view the devolution of authority to local schools as placing unfair burdens on schools in instances of resource scarcity. Under these conditions, schools are placed in the unenviable position of having to make decisions on how to distribute scarce resources. However, in doing so, decentralization serves an important conflict management function. Welier's refinement of the latent functions inhering in decentralization amplifies this underlying thesis of the political-economy perspective (Weiler, 1990). Weiler argues that decentralization has two latent functions: one that serves to legitimize certain socio-political arrangements, the other that allows for the management of conflict. Welier suggests that in policy contexts that are potentially highly conflictual, such as education policy arenas, decentralization is politically instrumental in helping to diffuse and manage conflict (See also Anderson & Dixon, 1993; Seddon, Angus & Poole, 1990).

The opposing theoretical arguments that have been presented in this paper imply that decentralization is far more complex in its implications for schools than is popularly understood. Not-with-standing the problems that are associated with highly centralized structures, the lack of any substantive data on the significant impact of decentralized forms of educational governance on student achievement coupled with the problems that have been encountered with the decentralization movement, suggest that closer intellectual scrutiny of this concept is warranted (Anderson & Dixon, 1993; Gordon, 1992; Wohlstetter & Odden, 1992).

Purpose of Study

In 1998, in its culminating decision on the legal challenges to the State of New Jersey's funding and educational policies with respect to the state's poorest districts, the New Jersey Supreme Court ordered the implementation of a series of remedial measures aimed at redressing the long standing disparities between poor and affluent school districts. The decision referred to as Abbott V, sets out an ambitious agenda for reform that includes changes in instructional programming through the adoption of whole school reform models, expansion of early childhood programming and school- community social agency linkages, as well as improvement in facilities (*Abbott v. Burke*, 1998).

According to regulations published by the New Jersey Department of Education, the process of implementing the reforms ordered by the State's Supreme Court is to be guided and led by teachers, parents, community and other school level staff through the formal establishment of school management teams. The regulation states that the purpose of these teams is to "ensure participation of staff, parents and the community in school level decision making and to develop a culture of cooperation, accountability and commitment" (New Jersey Department of Education, 2000). To that end, the school management teams are expected to guide and lead decisions on curricular, instructional, personnel and budgetary matters.

This study in light of the preceding discussion on the unresolved theoretical and empirical issues plaguing the notion of participatory decision-making, as well as New Jersey's current policy guidelines governing the implementation of decentralization, raises and seeks to answer the following questions with respect to school-based management in the state's thirty poorest districts. First, what is the level of democratization that has occurred in these systems? This question is answered through the posing of two related concerns; the extent to which participation in decision-making reflects the major constituencies that are intended to be on the school-management teams; and the degree to which the process allows for the legitimate exercise of decision-making and authority. Second, how has school-based management resulted in the successful devolution of authority from centralized to decentralized localities? The questions as they are posed, speak more to the issues of whether school-based management in its empirical form is consonant with the assumptions of democratizing decision-making and hence the social-democratic principle of egalitarianism and less with the effects of this form of governance on student achievement.

Method

Sample, Instrumentation and Data Collection

This study employs a mixed method research design. In April 2000, a questionnaire was mailed to a randomly drawn sample of 140 elementary and middle schools' school management teams. Included in the survey were questions on team membership and composition, the extent to which factors identified as germane to a team's ability to function, such as training, and group coalescence influenced the legitimate exercise of decision-making and the quality of support provided to the teams by the State Department of Education. The survey elicited a response rate of 51%. The school management teams in the study represented four different cohorts of schools. These cohorts correspond to the timeframe in which the schools begun to implement whole school reform.

According to state regulations, schools had three years within which to begin their whole school reform process. Schools that started the process within the first year of the Court's decision were referred to as Cohort 1 schools. Similarly, schools that begun in the second year were designated as Cohort 2 schools, schools during the middle of the second year mid-year cohort schools, and during the third year, Cohort 3 schools. In our sample there were 15 Cohort 1 school teams, 14 teams representing Cohort 2 schools, 6 teams from mid-year Cohort schools, and 32 teams belonging to the third Cohort of schools. Five teams failed to identify their cohort status. Knowing the cohort status of the team is important to the study at hand, since Cohort 1 school management teams- that is teams belonging to schools who started the reform process a year after the Court rendered its decision in 1998- had very little time to engage in quality planning.

In addition to surveying the school management teams, two focus groups were held. The purpose of both focus groups was to gain an understanding of the processes that were involved as authority got devolved from the central offices to the schools. The first focus group was held with one central office representative from six school districts. These districts were chosen to reflect the racial composition of their student bodies, their geographical locations in the State, their governance structures and when they were classified as being an "Abbott District". A second, less formally structured focus group discussion was held with three superintendents in October of the same year. These superintendents were executive members of the statewide association of urban superintendents.

Data Analysis

The data analysis involves the use of descriptive statistics and the statistical testing of associational relationships, through the use of Chi Square and Analysis of Variance. Standardized residuals are reported when significant chi-square values were found. These residuals allow us to identify the categories that are making a significant contribution to the significant chi square value. Following Haberman's guideline, it was inferred that where the standardized residual for a category is greater than 2, that category is strongly contributing to the significant chi square value (Haberman, 1984). Tukey post hoc testing was done for those Anovas that were found to be significant. Data gathered from the focus groups data was subjected to a qualitative analysis.

Findings

Degree of democratization of school-based management in the Abbott Districts

The New Jersey Department of Education guidelines state that the constituent groups that must be represented on the school management teams are the building principals, teachers, school-level support staff, parents, and community. The inclusion of students is an optional requirement that is left to the discretion of the individual school. Groups or individuals excluded from membership on a team are Board of Education members and district employees who wish to serve in the capacity of a parent or community representative. According to the regulations, no one group can constitute 50 percent or more of a team's total membership. Membership on a team is secured either through an electoral process or by selection. The minimum number of years that a given member can serve on a team is two, however, to ensure continuity in the event of an election or selection, teams are allowed to stagger membership.

Murphy and Beck (1995) suggest that school based management typically assumes one of three ideal forms; administrative control SBM (in this model the principal is the primary decision maker), professional control (teachers are the primary decision makers) and community/parent control (community members and parents comprise the major decision making groups). A fourth though less popular form is defined by Malen and Ogawa as balanced control (Hanson & Ulrich, 1994; Malen & Ogawa, 1988). In this model an attempt is made to establish a balance in decision-making among all stakeholders. Within the context of New Jersey, it is clear from the regulations that the Department of Education promulgated that the attempt was to create a model that approximated a balanced control form of SBM. The guidelines stated that the model to be adopted by schools was one, which restricted the membership of any given stakeholder group to less than 50 percent of the total membership.

In actuality however, the findings from the present study indicate that SBM in New Jersey is regressing towards a teacher-dominated form of SBM. Of the sixty-nine teams with valid responses on membership composition there were 17 teams in which the teaching staff members represented more than 50% of the total membership and 13 teams on which teachers made up half or 50% of the total membership. Thus, 43% of the teams had at least half of their membership drawn from the teaching staff. The dominance of teachers on the school management teams cut across all cohorts. However, proportionately more of the teams that were dominated by teachers were apt to be in schools belonging to the first cohort.

With respect to representation from other stakeholders, while more than 90 percent of the teams reported having at least one parent member, about 26 or approximately 38% of the teams were at the time of the study without community representation. The twenty-six teams reporting no community presence were proportionately distributed among the various cohorts, although slightly more 43% or 6 out of the 14 second year cohort teams in the study indicated that they had no community representation. On the other hand, only 7 teams had no in school-support staff representation. The data provided by the teams in the study reveals that most teams lacked student representation. Indeed 58 teams or roughly 83% of the teams reported that there was no student membership.

In examining the degree of representation of the major constituencies on the teams, the proportions for each group were calculated on the basis of the size of the team. On the whole the median proportion for teachers was .47, for parents .22 and for community members. 07. This implies that on half of the teams, teachers made up 47% or more of the teams' membership, parents 22% and community stakeholders 7%. In-school support staff, and school administrators constitute the remaining percentages. Parent and community groups thus accounted for about 29% of the total memberships, while seventy-one percent of the teams' membership are drawn from school-based personnel. These findings suggest that the evolution of school-based management in the Abbott districts has resulted in some instances, in structures, which deviate from what was originally intended. The balanced model, which was initially proposed, has not been the dominant form.

Whether or not, school-based management has successfully resulted in democratizing the process of decision-making by incorporating the voices of key constituent groups remains therefore questionable in light of these findings. Even in those instances in which parental participation is secured, the dominance of school-based personnel has overshadowed the voices of parents. Kildow's case study of one team's functioning described how the parent member frequently deferred to school-based members on all issues, and viewed herself as less empowered to make decisions when compared to her school-based counterparts (Kildow, 2000). What these findings seem to suggest is that the 'social empowerment' of parents and communities that proponents of this form of governance arrangement imply is attendant with participatory decision making has not occurred in the New Jersey reforms.

Barriers to the legitimate exercise of decision-making

The primary responsibility of the teams is to develop a plan that will guide the school's implementation of its whole school reform model. The teams are also responsible for ensuring that their schools' curriculum and instruction are aligned to the New Jersey Core Curriculum Content Standards. They are expected to engage in a needs assessment process based on a review of student performance data on the statewide assessments and on the basis of this review make recommendations for curricular and instructional improvement. Teams are also required to ensure that there is a program of professional development for teachers in their individual schools linked to the school's whole school reform model. Each school is further responsible for the development of a technology plan that is submitted to the Department of Education for approval. In addition to these responsibilities, the teams are also expected to ensure that there are programs and activities that are linked to the cross content readiness standards in the core curriculum standards, as well as develop a school based reward system for teachers, administrators and parents who contribute to students successfully meeting these standards. Finally, the teams based on a majority vote and with state department approval (through the School Review and Improvement Team) are responsible for approving a school budget and may recommend the appointment of a building principal, teaching staff member and instructional aides.

The teams were asked to rate their abilities to function effectively along several operational dimensions that previous literature has identified to be important influences on a team's capacity to successfully govern. These dimensions include: clarity about roles and responsibilities, membership commitment, understanding of a shared mission, meeting schedules, attendance at meetings, effectiveness in communicating with the larger school community and active as opposed to token participation in decision - making. Overall, the teams in the present study exhibited ambivalence in their evaluation of their abilities to effectively govern. Teams were unanimous that their membership was committed (86%) and that individual interests did not supersede the goals and mission of their work (88%). Neither did teams report that conflict among members posed a barrier to their ability to operate effectively (91%). Indeed, ninety percent of the teams reported that they were able to deal constructively with differences in opinions among themselves when these differences arose. However, when an examination of the association between team composition and the identification of barriers that impede the teams' abilities to function effectively was done, some interesting findings emerged.

Teams that lacked community representation were more likely to indicate that individual members' self interests took precedence over team matters. A chi-square value of 8.75 was found to be significant, and the standardized residuals showed values of 2 or greater for teams with poor community representation and the identification of problems with individual self-interests. Also, teams with no community representation indicated that they were less likely to explore alternatives when making decisions than teams with community representation (Chi-Square value of 8.118 was found to be significant at the .044 level). Again, standardized residuals were larger for these teams. On the other hand, teams without community representation were less likely to report problems with attendance at meetings than those with community representations (Chi Square value of 6.109 was found to be significant at the .05 level). The data also showed, that teams who were cajoled to start their whole school reform process early, that is cohort 1 teams, were significantly more likely to report problems with commitment, than those teams that started the process much later (Chi Square value of 9.456 was found to be significant at .045 level).

Table 1

Association between Community Representation, Cohort Status and Factors Impacting a Team's Ability to Successfully Govern

Relationships	χ^2 Values	Significance Level
Community representation ***and*** Problems with individual interests taking precedence over team matters	9.640	.01
Community representation ***and*** teams exploration of alternatives when making decisions	8.118	.04
Community representation ***and*** attendance at meetings	6.109	.05
Cohort status ***and*** members commitment	9.456	.05

Note: Total number of teams in analyses of community representation: 69; number of teams in cohort analyses: 47.

With respect to role clarity, about one-third of the teams (31%) indicated that they were unclear as to their roles and responsibilities. About the same percentage (33%) also reported difficulties in communicating with their larger school communities. Securing adequate involvement from all potential constituent groups was raised as another problem area affecting the ability to govern. The experiences of teams in the larger school districts are instructive on this issue. According to these teams, the restrictive clause in the regulations which preclude in-district employees from serving in the capacity of a parent or community representative has hampered their abilities to recruit membership, as a significant number of local residents have an employment status with the school system

Lawler (1986) argued that legitimate participation has four requirements: knowledge and skills, power, information, and rewards. This framework has been used by Wohlestetter et.al (1994) to explain variations in implementation and effects among SMTs operating in different contexts. In surveying the teams in the Abbott districts attention was paid to three of these requirements, knowledge, skills and information. Teams were asked to rate on several scales their level of knowledge, previous experience and comfort in the ten areas of their responsibilities. It is reasonable to assume that the experiences, which members on the school management teams bring to their new roles are likely to impact qualitatively on the kinds of decisions that are made, and the teams comfort in doing so. Data on the number of team members who have had prior experiences in the 10 areas for which they are responsible indicate that overall very few teams are composed of members who have had prior involvement in any of these areas. As can be seen in Table 2, experience is weakest in the areas of school-based budgeting, technology planning, school-based hiring decisions and developing reward systems. Teams had proportionately more members, who prior to joining the teams had some experience with curriculum alignment and needs assessment.

Table 2
Percent of SMT Members with Prior Experience in Each Area of Teams' Responsibilities

Areas of Responsibility	Percent of Members with Prior Experience
Aligning Curriculum	41.7%
Conducting Needs Assessment	37.1%

Working on, or reviewing professional development programs	32.2%
Involved in developing school-based reward systems	30.0%
Involved in school-based hiring decisions	19.9%
Worked on developing a technology plan	16.8%
Involved in school-based budgeting (zero-based) budgeting decisions	9.8%

Number of teams responding: 66

It is quite conceivable, that although Team members may lack the experience base for making decisions, that nevertheless, they may have an informed knowledge base that can be drawn upon in decision-making situations. Each Team was asked to indicate the degree of knowledge it possessed as an entity in each of the 10 areas of responsibility. These responses are summarized in Table 3. About one third of the Teams felt that their knowledge base on how to align curriculum, review test score data and determine program and curricular needs on the basis of this review, as well as determine what actions need to be taken to improve academic achievement in their schools was substantive. On the other hand, a significant proportion (over 75%) felt that they had only some or no knowledge on how to 1) develop a professional development program that is related to the implementation of the reform, (2) develop a technology plan, 3) make decisions with regard to hiring school personnel, 4) develop a school-based budget and 5) develop school based reward systems. Significant differences were found among the cohorts. Teams belonging to the first cohort were more likely to report lack of knowledge with respect to developing school-based budgets than teams belonging to the second, mid-year and third year cohorts. Third-year cohort teams were also more likely to report having less knowledge on creating professional development programs than the second year cohorts.

Table 3
Areas of Responsibilities: Percent of Teams Reporting Minimal Knowledge

Areas of SMT Responsibility	Percent of Teams Reporting Minimal Knowledge
Aligning Instruction to the Core Content Standard	55.4%
Deciding what actions needed to be taken on the basis of test score data	59.1%
Reviewing test score data as part of a needs assessment process	62.1%
Determining program needs on the basis of test score reviews	66.7%
Making curricular decisions on the basis of test score data	66.7%
Developing school-based reward systems	75.8%
Developing a professional development program that is linked to the implementation of the reforms	79.4%
Making school-based personnel decisions with respect to hiring	80.3%
Developing a technology plan	80.6%
Developing a school-based budget based on zero-based budgeting procedures	82.1%

Training is a critical component in the development of the knowledge and capacity of teams to function effectively in making quality decisions. To that end, teams were asked to rate the adequacy of training they received around the major substantive areas for which they have responsibilities. Twenty-three teams reported that they received no training around any of the areas for which were given responsibility. Overall, the teams who provided feedback, were more favorable in their ratings of the training received in areas related to curriculum, test score analysis and school-based professional development, than they were in their evaluation of the training provided around school-based hiring decisions and developing school-based reward systems (see Table 4).

Table 4

Percent of Teams Rating Training Received to be at Least Adequate

Area of Training Support	Percent of Teams Rating Training to be at Least Adequate
Roles and responsibilities of the teams	59.0%
Developing acceptable standards for professional development	56.8%
Curriculum Alignment	53.2%
Use of test scores for decision-making	51.1%
Analysis of test scores	50.0%
Technology planning	38.9%
Developing school-based reward systems	28.6%
Hiring procedures for school-based personnel	24.5%
Developing school-based budgets	21.1%

Number of teams responding: 47

Given the fact that teams lack the knowledge and experience to adequately fulfill their responsibilities, and given the unevenness in their satisfaction with the training that they have received, how comfortable are the teams in making the decisions that are expected of them? Data provided by the teams in the survey indicate that teams feel more comfortable in making decisions related to curricular and instructional issues than they do in making decisions that involve technology, school-based budgets, school hiring decisions and reward structures. For example, more than sixty percent of the teams reported that they are uncomfortable in creating rewards for teachers, and more than 80% indicate that they would be similarly uncomfortable in determining rewards for their building administrators. Forty-percent of the teams indicated that they would not be comfortable in making decisions involving the hiring of a principal and a similar percent 44% expressed discomfort in making teaching appointments.

In some of these decisions making areas teams are required to vote on whether or not they wish to have input. At the time of the survey, only 21% of the teams had voted to provide input into the hiring of their building principal and 26 % for input into the appointment of instructional aides. Data culled from the focus group discussion reinforced the notions that some teams are reluctant to get involved in hiring and budgeting decisions. According to the central office administrators in the focus group, while some teams initially wanted to select personnel for their buildings, they experienced discomfort when the process of selection begun, especially in those instances when they had to make decisions about staff on their own level. These results parallel similar findings reported by Jones') study of teacher decision-making preferences in Texas (Jones, 1997). Jones found that teachers expressed a desire and were more involved in areas concerning curriculum/instruction and student services than staff, personnel and budget management.

Decentralization provides the impetus for the creation of a new institutional culture within schools. It also presupposes that some socialization occurs whereby all actors are socialized to their new roles and responsibilities. However, our discussion so far suggests that the exercise of legitimate decision-making has been constrained by the teams' inexperience, uneven knowledge base, and the absence of adequate training to build capacity.

Devolving power from central to decentralized structures: Decreasing autonomy or increasing centralization?

The New Jersey Department of Education has created a structure, the School Review and Improvement Team (SRI) that ostensibly functions in the capacity of an overseer of the reform process, ensuring that the implementation of SBM is progressing according to the guidelines set forth in the regulations. The School Review and Improvement Team is comprised of Department of Education personnel from the Divisions of Student Services and Finance. Each school in an Abbott district is assigned to a team that is based at one of the State's Program Improvement and Regional Centers. The SRI Teams have a wide range of responsibilities to include working with the districts and building principal to ensure the effective implementation of whole school reform and school-

based management; consulting with the school management teams to ensure that all of the SMT responsibilities are effectively fulfilled; serving as liaisons between the schools and the Whole School Reform model developers, and consulting with the Superintendents on the transfer or removal of teachers and principals.

There are two related issues that one may surface regarding the balance in power between the State and the local sites in the reform process. First, according to David (1989), a policy cornerstone of successful decentralization involves the accompanying of local autonomy with simultaneous relief from onerous rules and regulations (See also Herman & Herman, 1992, Hill & Bonan, 1991). The extensive regulatory role played by the School Review and Improvement Team in the decentralization process in New Jersey seems to stand in contradistinction to David's observation. In fact, the question can be posed as to whether or not the regulations governing the role of the SRI teams have the potential to undermine local autonomy and thereby result in an intensification of power at the State level, rather than a real gain of power at the school level? The strong regulatory presence of the Department of Education through the School Review and Improvement Teams far exceeds and is different from the decentralization and centralization tendencies that many state reform strategies have exhibited (Boyd, 1992; Levacic, 1995; Levin, 1997).

These strategies evident in other reform efforts have combined shifts in authority to local schools with state control over setting and monitoring standards. However, the School Review and Improvement Teams' roles extend beyond one that is primarily of a monitoring nature. The SRI among other responsibilities approves decisions made by the local schools, decides when a team can assume new responsibilities in the areas of budgeting and personnel (if teams decide by a majority vote to assume these responsibilities) and approves transfers or firing of principals and teachers. In effect they have assumed an external governance role thereby adding another bureaucratic layer to the reform. One may argue that the SRI structure, which the Department of Education has put in place to provide field-based assistance to the schools and their respective management teams, virtually places the Department of Education in the position of assuming responsibility for the success of the reforms. Thus, the NJDOE may not be able to distance itself from any failed policies associated with the reforms.

This broad notion of shared responsibility that is being advocated here implies that state, local districts, and schools are equally contributing to the successful implementation of the reforms. Since the SRI is the primary state resource that is being directed to support the schools, the question as to how effective this field assistance has been is relevant to raise. The School Management Teams in the study were asked to indicate their degree of satisfaction with the support provided by the SRI teams in the areas stipulated by the regulations. The following discussion presents the Teams responses. At the time of the survey more than one third of the teams had not yet had a meeting with their SRI facilitator. Furthermore, several of the teams were unfamiliar with the roles and responsibilities of the SRI and sought clarification from the researchers. Thus only 41 of the 72 teams were able to provide feedback on the SRI teams. Among the districts providing feedback, there was a high level of dissatisfaction with the support that the SRI teams have provided. Seventy- one percent of the school management teams reported that their SRI facilitator attended meetings irregularly, and 56% noted that the technical assistance provided was unsatisfactory.

While, about 56% of the school management teams stated that their SRI provided assistance with general implementation issues, 54% noted that the SRI teams provided no assistance with the actual development of their implementation plans. Furthermore, more that 58% of the teams were dissatisfied with the help received from their SRI Teams with problems encountered during implementation; and an even larger percent 68% indicated that their SRI team provided minimal assistance in working with the model developers. An equally substantial number of the teams (25 or 68%) noted that their SRI did not help in identifying areas for training, neither were the SRI facilitators helpful in assisting them in the identification of experts that can help with the problem of student achievement. With respect to the budgeting process, more than 61% of the school management teams reported that they were dissatisfied (or unsure of how satisfied they were) with the assistance, which their SRI facilitator provided in the development of the school budgets. Overall, only about 38% of the teams reported general satisfaction with the support, which they have received from the SRI Team that has been assigned to them.

When cohort status is entered as the main effect in several one-way ANOVAS in which evaluations of the SRI various responsibilities are treated as the dependent measures, several significant findings were found. According to the data furnished in Table 5, the impact of cohort status on the teams' evaluation of the SRIs was significant in six areas. (See Table 6) These were: help in

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

implementation, providing satisfactory technical assistance, providing assistance with the school's implementation plan, helping with the model developers of the various whole school reform models, providing assistance in school-based budgeting and overall support. Results of the Tukey post hoc testing reveals that schools belonging to the first cohort were significantly more dissatisfied with the support, which they received from their SRI facilitators than Cohort 2 Teams. As was noted earlier, Cohort 1 school management teams began their school reform process within a year of the Court's decision. Moreover, these teams had minimal time to engage in quality planning.

Table 5
Percent of Teams Reporting Satisfaction with their School Review and Improvement Teams in Key Areas of Support

Area of Support	Percent Reporting Satisfaction
Assistance with implementation	56%
Review of the school's budget	50%
Support with resolving problems	42%
Assistance with implementation plan	41%
Assistance with the development of the school's budget	39%
Technical Assistance	36%
Attendance at meetings	29%
Support with the Model Developers	26%
Identifying for the schools, experts who can help with student achievement	18%
Identifying areas for training	15%
Overall Satisfaction with the SRI Teams	38%

Number of teams responding: 37

Table 6
ANOVA Results for the Main Effect of Cohort Status

Dependent Variables	Df(B)/ Df(W)	MS(B)/ MS(W)	F
SRI Team attends meetings.	2 35	6.982 2.329	2.996
SRI has helped in implementation.	2 33	6.775 1.915	3.538*
Technical assistance is satisfactory.	2 33	8.997 1.956	4.599**
SRI has provided assistance with implementation plan.	2 33	7.589 2.115	3.521*
SRI has helped in problem solving.	2 30	5.699 1.917	2.973
SRI has helped with the Model	2 32	6.444 1.806	3.568*

Developers.			
SRI has helped to identify areas for training.	2 32	3.721 1.353	2.750
SRI has identified experts that can help with student achievement.	2 32	3.643 1.581	2.304
Team is satisfied with assistance from SRI in school-based budgeting	2 32	10.836 1.966	5.513**
Satisfied with Overall support from the SRI	2 33	7.687 2.046	3.757*

Post Hoc testing based on TUKEY; *p< .05; **p<. 001

Information provided during the focus group session suggests that two factors were contributing to the ineffectiveness of the SRI teams. The first, relates to the instability of team members. All of the districts in the focus group concurred that during the early phases of the reform there was a high turnover of individuals on the SRI teams. A second contributing factor identified by the districts is the knowledge base and experiences brought by the SRI facilitators. There was general agreement that the SRI facilitators lacked the experiences and knowledge base around the change process in general and reform within the urban context in particular. SRI team facilitators were described as being inexperienced and who for the most part seemed to be learning from the districts and schools rather than the other way around. These findings on the relative ineffectiveness of the SRI teams are not new. An earlier study on factors impacting on the implementation of the reforms pointed to problems with the SRI teams and had suggested that the State Department of Education needed to closely evaluate the way in which these teams were functioning (Walker & Gutmore, 2000). The overall impact of the SRI teams' ineffectiveness is evident in the fact that slightly more that 48% of the school based management teams noted that the absence of technical support has posed a challenge to their ability to function.

Understanding the Process of Devolving Authority

The focus group discussions with central office personnel knowledgeable about the devolving of authority to the school management teams as well as discussions with school superintendents provide additional insights into the myriad of issues the districts are facing as the shifts in the distribution of power and authority occur. All the districts in the focus group prior to the Abbott rulings had begun to create opportunities for participatory decision- making in their systems. In some instances, these opportunities were more formally structured with the establishment of what is defined as school core teams. Thus, districts did not express aversion to devolving authority to the local sites and indeed endorsed the process as a means of creating structures that were more inclusive of the voices of their various constituents. However, the districts did provide comments on what were perceived to be salient issues that adversely affecting the effective implementation of SBM.

First, there was unanimity among the districts that the vagueness and lack of specificity in the state's regulations led to confusion and misinterpretations on the part of the school management teams as to their roles and responsibilities. This they pointed out was further exacerbated by the ongoing changes to the guidelines that occurred annually. A second related concern dealt with the issues of competing power and authority in the areas of school operations and curriculum. Prior to the most current form of the regulations there were no statements by the DOE clarifying the overall roles and responsibilities of the building principal. This resulted in the school management teams erroneously assuming that they were responsible for operational issues within their local schools. A compounding factor contributing to the position of the principal vis-a- vis the teams was the leadership skills of some principals. District representatives noted that in schools led by weak principals, the school management teams emerged as centers of power. Respondents cited examples of situations in which these principals had abdicated their responsibilities to the Teams, and in so

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

doing were sometimes unaware of critical decisions made by the teams.

The importance of properly clarifying the role of the principal in decentralized structures has been underscored in some of the literature. According to Meadows (1990) one of the essential problems with some forms of school-based management is that the group makes the decision but the leader or principal alone is accountable. Research has demonstrated that principal leadership plays an important role in the successful devolution of authority. For example, Leithwood et.al (1999) found that principal leadership is quite central to teams that have the greatest influence on school practices. According to the Leithwood study, the principal's role is both symbolic and instrumental. Leithwood noted that school-based management tended to have a greater impact in schools in which principals facilitated the development of the teams, helped to focus the teams' activities on educationally substantive issues and engaged in a shared or distributive leadership role with the teams, than in schools in which the reverse was true.

The second area of contestation occurred over matters of curriculum. In this arena, central office curriculum staff was pitted against the school management teams. According to the regulations, the school management teams have considerable responsibilities for ensuring that the curriculum in their buildings as well as instruction is aligned to the core content standards. However as the districts noted, these curricular issues were previously resolved at the central office level in response to the state's adoption of the Core Curriculum Content Standards (which predated the most recent Abbott rulings). However, there was uncertainty among the teams about the relationship between the enacted curriculum based upon the district's aligned curricular frameworks on the one hand, and their responsibility for curriculum in their schools on the other. The confusion experienced by the teams with regards to their roles and responsibilities for curricular and instructional matters was perceived to be further compounded by the inability of the SRI teams to provide clear directions and meaningful guidance to the resolution of these issues.

As discussed earlier concerns about the effectiveness of the School Review and Improvement Teams have been expressed by not only the teams, but central office personnel and superintendents as well. Apart from the many issues that were previously mentioned, one extremely problematic area for the districts, which surfaced in the interviews with the superintendents, is the SRIs review of transfers. The guidelines state that any request for transfers must have the approval of the SRI teams. Superintendents complained that this process has not worked efficiently, and that the slow response of the SRI teams has created bottlenecks within their organizations.

Yet in spite of these difficulties, all the districts concurred that their school management teams have demonstrated commitment and diligence in their efforts to develop quality implementation plans. Most of the districts indicated that their local teachers unions have been instrumental in helping the reform process. However, as the districts observed, the rushed timetables for decision-making, the inconsistencies and poor guidelines emanating from the DOE and the ineffectual role of the School Review and Improvement Teams have all served to undermine the successful devolution of authority to the local school sites.

Discussion and Conclusions

The findings in this study raise a number of policy concerns regarding how authority gets devolved from central to local structures. The first is the apparent tension between policy statements developed by state elites and the environments, which they seek to influence. The regulations regarding membership composition created two sets of problems for the schools. First, the regulations made it clear, that no community member employed by a school district could serve on a school management team in the capacity of either a parent or community representative. However, in districts, in which the public education sector tends to play a significant role in the employment of local residents, this regulation meant that a substantial section of the community would be excluded from serving on these teams. Second, the regulations stipulated that no one group of stakeholder could constitute a majority on the teams. However, if schools are precluded from recruiting memberships from significant pockets within their communities, then the goal of attaining balanced representation is difficult to attain. Indeed, the study found, that in effect, among the teams studied, there was regression towards a teacher-dominated form of school-based management. The preclusion of important "community voices" on these teams resulted in less than favorable outcomes. As noted, teams without adequate community representation were less likely to explore alternatives before arriving at decisions, and more prone to the intrusion of narrow individual interests over group goal. In democratic situations, broad based participation allows for the expression of different viewpoints thus increasing the likelihood of informed decisions being made.

Policies that do not have as an important corollary, the building of capacity among local actors are likely to encounter difficulties during implementation. Moving from centralized to decentralized structures imply that at some point during the process, those to whom power is being devolved, will develop the necessary prerequisite skills that will allow them to effectively develop and execute decisions. The present study found, that teams lacked the experience, knowledge, and skills, and were not provided with adequate training that would have allowed them to make effective decisions. Furthermore, in the case of the first cohort of schools, the strict timelines imposed by the state on these schools to arrive at important decisions regarding their schools instructional programming resulted in decisions that were authoritatively rather than democratically made. In some cases, these schools' implementation plans were summarily rejected by State elites (Walker, 2001; Walker & Gutmore, 2000).

More importantly, when authority is being shifted or redistributed among various power sites, it is important that the spheres of responsibility be thoroughly clarified. In the New Jersey case, no clear delineation of the roles and responsibilities of the teams, building principals, central offices, and local school boards were made. This led to contestation over areas of responsibilities. In addition to clarifying roles, questions as to how the time of teams can be constructively and efficiently used to bring about educational improvement in their communities ought to be fully explored. When teams lack the capacity to effectively govern, and when there is contestation over spheres of influence circumscribing the boundaries of each group's responsibilities is necessary. In the case of the current study, it is felt that the roles and responsibilities of the school management teams ought to be more circumscribed by state policy. The regulations give the teams a broad set of responsibilities that cover most of the processes inhering in teaching and learning as well as the management of their schools. However, as was seen, not only do the teams lack the knowledge and experience to fulfill some of these tasks, but neither are they comfortable in carrying out some of these functions. Further, the rushed timetables for making decisions have made it impossible for the teams to engage in quality planning.

When policies that seek to promote increased school responsibility for decision-making include as a precondition the ability of state elites to approve or disapprove decisions that are made by democratically constituted teams, these policies in effect undermine the very principles on which the concept of decentralization is premised. As was seen in the case of New Jersey, in reality what has occurred is an intensification and consolidation of power at the state level. In this case, the school systems do not enjoy genuine autonomy, and in reality have only limited discretion over the reforms. Thus, decentralization in the Abbott districts has come to function as Ball describes it as a ' mechanism for delivering reform rather than a vehicle for institutional initiative and innovation' (Ball, 1993:76). Clearly, a deconstruction of decentralization within the New Jersey context, unmasks the apparent contradictions in the policy governing whole school reform through participatory decision- making. This is borne out not only by the data provided in this study, but the continuous challenges that have been made to the manner in which the Department of Education has reacted to decisions made at the local site (See Walker & Gutmore, 2000).

Ball (1993) and Smyth (1993) have both suggested that state elites and other interest groups may push for decentralization motivated more by protecting their self-interests than any deep-seated belief in social democratic principles. In such instances, communities unwittingly grant these groups legitimacy. By assuming responsibility for implementing poor policies, parents, teachers and the community buffer state elites from any adverse consequences caused by such policies. State elites are thus able to avoid their social responsibilities under the guise of decentralization. Moreover, as Miron (1996) suggests, one of the unanticipated outcomes of decentralization, is the reinforcement of calls by economic elites for market-based solutions to the problem of urban education. Thus, with the failure of decentralization the case for privatizing public education can be more forcibly made. The issues, which have surfaced in this paper if not addressed substantively at the policy-making level, do not augur favorably for empowering local communities to assist in rebuilding their educational institutions.

References

Abbott v. Burke, 153 N.J.480 (1998).

Ball, S (1993). Self- management and entrepreneurial schooling in England and Wales. In J. Symth (ed.), *A socially critical view of the self-managing school*. pp.68-81. London: The Falmer Press.

Boyd, W.L. (1992). The power of paradigm: Reconceptualizing educational policy and management. *Educational Administration Quarterly*, 28, 504-528.

David L. Jane. (1989). Synthesis of research on school-based management. *Educational Leadership*, 46(8), 45-53, May.

Haberman, S.J. (1984). The analysis of residuals in cross-classified tables. *Biometrics*, 29, 205-220.

Hanson, E.M., and Ulrich, C. (1994). Democracy, decentralization and school-based management in Spain. *La Education*, 118, 319-334.

Herman, J.J., and Herman, J.L. (1993). *School-based Management:: Current Thinking and Practice.* Springfield, Illinois: Charles C. Thomas

Hill, P. T. and Bonan, J. (1991). *Decentralization and Accountability in*

Public Education. Supported by the John D. and Catherine T. MacArthur Foundation, Institute for Education and Training.

Jones, R.E. (1997). *Education, 118*(1) 76-83.

Kildow, M. (2000). A case study of decisions made by a school-management team in the initial phase of whole school reform. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Seton Hall University, New Jersey.

Leithwood, Kenneth, Menzies, Teresa. (1998). Forms and effects of school-based management: A review. *Educational Policy*, 12 (3) 325-346 May.

Levacic, R. (1995). *Local Management of Schools: Analysis and Practice.* Philadelphia: Open University Press.

Levin, N. (1997). The lessons of International Reform. *Journal of Educational Policy*, 12(4), 253-266.

Malen, B., Ogawa, R & Kranz, J. (1992). Site-based management: Disconcerting policy issues, critical policy choices, in J.J. Lane & E.G. Epps (eds.), *Restructuring the Schools: Problems and Prospects.* Pp.185-206. Berkeley: McCutchan.

Meadows, B. J. (1990). The rewards and risks of shared leadership. *Phi Delta Kappan*. (Mar) 545-548.

Mohrman, S.A., Wohlstetter, P. & Associates. (1994). *School-based Management: Organizing for High Performance.* San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Murphy, J. (1991*). Restructuring schools: Capturing and assessing the phenomena*. New York: Teachers College Press.

Murphy, J., & Beck, L. G. (1995). *School-based Management as School Reform: Taking Stock*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Corwin Press.

Newman, Fred M. (1993). Beyond common sense in educational restructuring: The issues of content and linkage. *Educational Researcher* , 22 (2), 4-13.

Seddon, T., Angus, L., & Poole, M. (1990). Pressures on the move to school-based management. In J. Chapman (Eds.), School based decision-making and management (pp 29-54). London, UK: Falmer Press.

Smylie, M. A. (1992). Teacher participation in school decision making:: Assessing willingness to participate. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis.* 14 (1), 53-67.

Symth, J. (ed.), (1993). *A socially critical view of the self-managing school..* London: The Falmer Press.

State of New Jersey. Chapter 19A: Implementation of Court Decision in Abbott versus Burke, June 1998.

Summers. A.A. & Johnson, A.W.. (1991). A Review of the Evidence on the Effects of School-Based Management Plans. Panel on the Economics of Educational Reform and Teaching. Washington, DC.

Walker, E. M., and Gutmore, D. (2000). The Quest for Equity and Excellence in Education: A Study on Whole School Reform in New Jersey Special Needs Districts. Center for Urban Leadership, Renewal and Research, Dept. of Educational Administration and Supervision, Seton Hall University, New Jersey. Washington, D.C.

Wohlstetter, P. (1995). Getting school-based management right, *Phi Delta Kappan*. September.

Wohlstetter, P. & Mohrman, S.A. (1996). Assessment of School-Based Management, (Volume I: Findings and Conclusions.) Studies of Education Reform. University of Southern California, Center of Educational Governance. Available from U.S. Government Printing Office, OERI sponsored.

Wohlstetter, P. & Odden, A. (1992). Rethinking school-based management policy and research. *Educational Administration Quarterly, 28*(4), 529-549.

About the Author

Elaine M. Walker
Associate Professor
Department of Leadership, Management and Policy
College of Education and Human Services
Seton Hall University

Email: walkerel@shu.edu

Elaine Walker is an Associate Professor in the Department of Leadership, Management and Policy in the College of Education and Human Services at Seton Hall University. Her research has focused on the impact of reform policies on the transformation of urban school systems.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is epaa.asu.edu

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith

Arlen Gullickson

York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

This article has been retrieved 1575 times since August 9, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 34 **August 9, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Charter School Funding Issues

Stephen D. Sugarman
University of California, Berkeley

Citation: Sugarman, Stephen D. (2002, August 9). Charter school funding issues. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(34). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n34.html.

Abstract
Although a great deal has been written about charter schools, rather little attention has been given to their funding. The first part of this article raises four current issues in the funding of regular public schools across the U.S. and shows how these issues carry over to the funding of charter schools. The second part explores four additional issues that have arisen in the funding of charter schools that go to the core identity of charter schools and the nature of the students they enroll. In both parts, extra attention is paid to developments in California, one of the most active charter school states.

In just over a decade, charter schools have grown from an idea to something of a movement, as more than 2000 charter schools now serve more than 250,000 in 34 states and the District of Columbia—although this remains but a tiny fraction of American school children. Observers disagree whether charter schools have so far turned out to be a positive development, although the Consortium for Policy Research in Education (CPRE) has recently released a fairly upbeat review of the literature concerning several key policy issues relating to charter schools.[1] Nevertheless, it should be emphasized that this article is not meant as a brief in support of (or against) charter schools. Rather, the central point of this article is that *if* charter schools are to become a regular part of the public school system in at least a number of states, then the charter school funding issues discussed here need further attention by both policy analysts in the political arena and school finance scholars. It is also perhaps worth emphasizing at the outset that this article does not purport to provide solutions to all of the problems examined, although several of California's solutions are presented. Instead, it offers something of an agenda of charter school funding topics in need of further policy discussion.

Part I: Four Public School Finance Issues and Their Connection to Charter School Funding

One: Inter-district inequalities

A. The issue generally

The funding of American public schools is historically based on local property taxes. Notwithstanding subventions from the state to local school districts, spending per pupil has long varied from district to district.[2] More specifically, ever since the 19th century, spending on public education has importantly been a function of the per pupil wealth of the local district, with low wealth districts most disadvantaged.

Because of more than thirty years of litigation that began in the late 1960s, this problem has now been substantially ameliorated in some states[3]—states like Kentucky, New Jersey, Texas, Wyoming and California[4]—although, even today in California, for example, some wealthy communities like Beverly Hills continue to outspend most other districts. Overall, however, inter-district spending inequalities remain significant in most states and very large in some states.[5] (Of course, some people consider wealthier districts entitled to spend more and see "the problem" as the interference with that advantage by courts and state legislatures.)

B. Carry-over to charter school funding

Inter-district spending inequalities also create a dilemma for charter school funding.[6] Either, charter schools will be funded (typically by their local sponsoring districts) at a level that relates to the spending level per pupil in the districts that charter them—this is the most typical solution around the country.[7] Or, they will be funded (perhaps directly by the state) at some state average level of funding per pupil—this, for example, is increasingly the California solution.[8] Both solutions are problematic.

If charter funding is tied to district spending per pupil, then charter schools may be very differently funded based on who they can get to charter them. This sort of inequality among charter schools surely must seem unfair to many charter school operators, and especially so as charter schools begin to lose their connection to families living in a particular district and begin to serve children from a metropolitan area. Moreover, this arrangement gives those seeking charters special incentives to seek charters from some, but not other, districts. The disincentive applies most strongly with respect to low wealth/low spending districts, and these are the very districts that charter school supports typically argue have the most to gain from charter schools.

On the other hand, if charter school funding is provided based on the state average per pupil spending level in public schools, then this discourages the conversion of existing public schools to charter schools in high spending districts, and it also makes it hard for new charter schools to compete in districts that have high spending. State average spending also artificially encourages conversions to charter schools in low spending districts. At the same time, regular public schools in those low spending districts would understandably feel unfairly disadvantaged as compared with charter schools with which they compete.

Because California has substantially eliminated inter-district inequalities in the core funding for public education, these inter-district problems for charter schools are far less there than in most other states. What this also shows is that if more states were to reduce their inter-district inequalities, this would arguably be good both for public schools generally and for charter school funding. Indeed, it is plausible that the reform of the funding of regular public schools could actually be effectuated through the spread of charter schools because of the tensions and inconsistencies that are so clearly exposed by the finance of charter schools.

Two: Intra-district inequalities

A. The issue generally

In many school districts, teachers (and other employee positions) are funded in this way. The school district awards each local school one teacher slot for every X number of pupils it has. Then, whatever that teacher's salary, it is fully paid for centrally.[9] This means that schools with higher paid (in general, more experienced) teachers get more money spent per pupil on their core teaching staff than do those schools with lower paid teachers.

Because of teacher seniority rights and other factors, this often means that schools serving the lowest income pupils have the lowest spending per pupil on their core faculty.[10] This is vividly apparent in a community such as Oakland, California, where the higher achieving schools in the Oakland hills generally have much better paid and more experienced teachers, and the lower achieving schools serving low income children who live in the Oakland flats tend to have large concentrations of lower paid teachers (many of whom are new to the job and working with only temporary teaching credentials).

This issue of intra-district inequalities arising from the way teacher slots are funded was supposed to have been changed in Los Angeles in response to litigation. And indeed, it appears that the Los Angeles Unified School District has now infused schools that previously spent less than the district average on core teacher salaries with substantial new money, although those schools have not generally been able to attract their share of more senior teachers and have instead used the funds for other core instructional purposes.[11] Despite this improvement in intra-district equity, this litigation does not appear to have been copied elsewhere, and, in any event, intra-district inequalities are widespread throughout the nation. (Again, some people don't see this as a "problem," because they favor higher per pupil funding on core teachers in neighborhoods where wealthier families live, perhaps to offset the funding advantages that other neighborhoods have because of categorical programs aimed at children from low-income households.)

B. Carry-over to charter school funding

Charter schools, as already noted, are generally funded on a per pupil basis, at least for the core of their resources.[12] When this method is used, it eliminates the issue of intra-district spending inequalities just described—at least among charter schools. But it also creates some thorny incentives for existing public schools. For example, per pupil funding at the school level will probably make it financially quite unwise for local public schools to convert to charter schools if their teachers currently are more experienced and higher paid. By contrast, schools with low teacher salaries on average have a special, perhaps artificial, incentive to convert.

Funding charter schools on a per pupil basis but regular public schools on a teacher position basis also means that, to survive financially, charter schools will probably have to rely upon a large cadre of mainly newer and lower paid teachers as compared with the more attractive schools in the district that chartered them. This understandably seems unfair to the charter schools.

It should be clear, then, that were regular public schools (like charter schools) financed on a per pupil basis for their core funding, those schools with concentrations of higher paid teachers would probably have to make do with fewer of them (which would imply a larger average class size than today for regular public schools stocked with senior teachers). But at the same time, regular public schools with lower paid teachers would probably be able to hire more teachers and reduce class size. Such a change would both be better for the neediest schools and would mesh regular school funding with charter school funding. Hence, just as noted earlier with respect to inter-district spending inequalities, it is also plausible that financial the inconsistencies laid bare by the spread of charter schools will actually stimulate the reform of public school funding within districts.

Three: Inadequate spending

A. The issue generally

Despite its wealth and previously high level of spending on public education, California currently spends much less per pupil than do comparably wealthy states, and overall spends less than many school finance experts believe is necessary to facilitate high quality outcomes for most students.[13] Although state-to-state comparisons are difficult (because of different accounting measures and different costs from place to place), roughly speaking California schools today tend to spend around $6000 per pupil annually for current expenditure items, whereas the figures in places like New Jersey and Connecticut are nearly twice that number.[14] Some blame this low level of spending on public schools in California on the adoption in the 1970s of Proposition 13, which both sharply reduced local property tax collections and restricted future increases;[15] at least one scholar has blamed this decline in relative spending in California directly on the school finance litigation that reduced inter-district inequalities;[16] still another scholar blames California's relatively low spending on the unwillingness of state politicians to invest in education as substantial a share of the personal incomes of the people of California as are political leaders in many other states.[17]

Although California, given the overall wealth of its population, may be seen by some as especially miserly towards its schools, it is hardly at the bottom in terms of public school spending. Indeed, there are many much poorer states around the country—like Louisiana, Alabama and Mississippi—that also spend quite modestly on their public school pupils, even taking their relatively lower labor and other costs into account.[18] (Once more, of course, some believe that too much money is already spent on public education in America and would see "the problem" more in terms of "excessive" spending in states like Connecticut and New Jersey.)

B. Carry-over to charter school funding

Given that public school budgets are seen as tight in many states, this means that many states and local school districts do not feel themselves able to provide generous funding of charter schools. This shows up in a variety of forms.

1. Start-up costs are often lacking or inadequate.[19] These are the funds needed to launch the school, to hire staff, and to outfit the school with furnishings and curriculum materials in preparation for its initial enrollment of what is often an uncertain number of pupils. In some communities this issue has been reasonably well addressed because charter schools are able to tap into special funding available from the federal government, special state programs, and private foundation grants.[20] Nevertheless, start-up costs often remain a serious problem, especially for newly formed community groups that seek to create charter schools.
2. In some communities, the fees charged for "oversight" and for "services" provided to charter schools by their sponsoring districts have been set at quite high levels, and some charter school supporters charge that this is likely to be especially true in districts that are not all that keen to sponsor charter schools in the first

place.[21] Although this issue remains quite troubling in some states, it has been at least partly addressed in recent California statutory provisions which now both cap the oversight fee and clearly give charter schools the ability to go to outside providers for the business and other services they need.[22]

3. Apart from schools that convert from existing public schools, charter schools often obtain little or no extra money to pay for their school buildings (whether those buildings are leased or bought and paid for with mortgage funding).[23] When this happens, it means that charter schools often have to redirect perhaps 20% or more of their core funding to pay for space, leaving them with what they believe to be too little to pay for the ongoing educational program.[24] Indeed, an inadequate supply of school facilities may be the single largest stumbling block to the growth of charter schools.[25]

   In California, however, the recently adopted Proposition 39 promises to resolve this issue starting in 2003. This initiative proposition insists that bodies approving charter schools provide those schools either with adequate school buildings or the money to rent or buy them.[26] Yet, it remains to be seen how charter school rights under this new law will play out. Indeed, this new requirement might cause many districts to decide to call a halt to chartering, even though California law is supposed to make it difficult for districts to refuse a charter sought by any applicant with reasonably sensible plans for its school.[27] In any event, this problem remains a difficult one for charter schools in other states

4. Despite the points just noted, it should also be appreciated that sometimes charter schools have certain financial advantages. For example, in states that provide uniform per pupil funding for charter schools at all grade levels, charter schools have tended to be created to serve elementary, not high school, pupils because younger children are traditionally cheaper to educate.[28] (California's program resists this trend by offering charter schools more money per pupil for education at the higher grades.[29]) A second advantage in some places is that the calculation of the per pupil allocation to charter schools includes sums that regular public schools spend on services, like transportation, that charter schools might not provide. Both of these points illustrate the importance of determining the proper spending benchmark to which charter school funding is to be tied.

   Yet, as a general matter, until regular public schools are reasonably well funded, it is probably unrealistic to expect generous funding for charter schools (although some people don't consider this to be a "problem," believing that a system of charter schools is only worth the governmental effort if those schools are as good or better than regular public schools at a much lower cost to the taxpayers.)

Four: Special needs funding

A. The issue generally

Federal funding programs for educationally disadvantaged children (through the federal Title I program) and for children with disabilities (through the federal special education law—IDEA) implicitly assume that, if left to their own discretion, all too many local public schools, districts and states would choose to treat these groups of children badly. This explains why Congress decided that civil rights sorts of protections are necessary for these special needs children. One consequence, however, is that the federal restrictions attached to the distribution of these "categorical" funds burden local schools in various ways.

First, in order to make sure that schools actually spend federal funds on educationally disadvantaged children, federal regulations impose substantial reporting and accounting burdens on schools. These, in turn, have caused some schools to use the money in ways other than they believe would be best for those children (although recent federal changes have sought to reduce this problem).[30] Second, even though the federal government has recognized the special needs of disabled children, Congress has failed even to provide adequate extra funds to deal with those extra needs.[31] Yet, Congress has mandated that those needs be met. As a result, there is considerable pressure on local school districts to shift money otherwise earmarked for the rest of their children to these especially needy pupils. This shift is called "encroachment" by experts and is now thought to be quite substantial in the special education area, with some observers claiming that as much as 25% of the funds intended to regular education must be siphoned off to pay for the extras needed by special education pupils—that is, required extras that are not paid for by federal and state categorical special education funds.[32] Most people would surely agree that it is good that these needy children get extra money, but it must be appreciated that, as a result, even less money is left for other children, and that is generating some backlash among parents of non-disabled pupils.

B. Carry-over to charter school funding

Many charter schools have had great difficulty getting their legally entitled share of state and federal categorical funds from the appropriate state or local funding authority through which federal and state categorical funds flow.

In California now, this issue may have been fairly well resolved with respect to most of the smaller state-funded categorical aid programs. This is because charter schools are supposed to obtain their share of those funds on a per capita basis—i.e., they receive so many extra dollars for every pupil in the charter school without having to show that they actually have enrolled pupils eligible for those extra categorical funds, without having to fill out all the otherwise required forms, and without having to show how they have spent those extra funds.[33] This is very desirable for charter schools, both because the cash is much more likely to be received in a timely matter and because the charter school can avoid the red tape tied up in claiming and receiving funds from a large number of small categorical programs.

But the receipt by charter schools of their share of federal Title I funds and funds for special education pupils remain substantial issues. One key factor to appreciate here is that some charter schools either avoid enrolling, or don't really know much about teaching, special education pupils with anything more than very modest disabilities. Those schools are viewed in some quarters as shirking their fair share of these pupils. At the other extreme, it must also be understood that other charter schools deliberately specialize in, or simply wind up as magnets for, children with disabilities.[34] The upshot is that there tends to be a very uneven distribution of special education children in individual charter schools as compared with the state average.[35]

As a result, especially for high cost special education children, it is essential that extra funding is provided to charter schools on an individual pupil basis. That is, simply increasing the charter school's per capita allocation based on the total number of children in the school—as has been done in California for small categorical programs—would clearly give too little money to some charter schools and too much to others. Moreover, many advocates on behalf of children with special needs remain skeptical about the good faith of many charter schools in enrolling and fairly treating such children. Hence, they are no more willing to surrender regulatory controls over categorical funding for charter schools than they are for regular public schools, even though such children only enroll in charter schools "by choice."[36]

But actually arranging for the receipt by charter schools of extra funding for those needy pupils has been difficult in many places and has tended to immerse charter schools in bureaucratic controls from which they are, as a general matter, supposed to be free. Moreover, charter schools are new in many places and the necessary bureaucratic linkages are just getting formed. Furthermore, charter school operators are often unsophisticated in timely completing forms and carrying out procedural activities that it has taken local public schools years to master. In addition, one suspects that some local districts are not all that eager to spread categorical funds to charter schools (just as they have been slow to pay over federal categorical funds to eligible private schools), especially at a time when, as noted, they receive inadequate amounts of these funds to serve the pupils enrolled in their own regular public schools. Indeed, the encroachment problem has caused some districts to want to cut the basic funds they provide to charter schools (before adding back categorical funds) on the ground that the district's own regular public schools are suffering from this problem. Needless to say, many charter school operators find this cutback in the funds they think they should receive hard to accept, or even understand. Until these matters are better resolved, some charter schools will view themselves as mistreated whereas others will continue to shun the neediest children.

Part II. Four Special Issues of Charter School Funding

One: How to Count Charter School Pupils

As already explained, chartering bodies generally fund charter schools on a per pupil basis. This makes it essential for there to be a fair, and fairly run, system for counting how many pupils the charter school actually serves. But several issues have arisen, both because of fraud committed by some charter schools and, arguably, unduly harsh counting mechanisms imposed by some chartering bodies.

Conceptually, the first decision is whether to count pupils on the basis of ADA (average daily attendance), or ADM/ADE (average daily membership or enrollment), or yet some other pupil-counting measure.[37] This, of course, is an issue for regular public schools as well as for charter schools. The difference is important. For example, a school will have more pupils enrolled than attend on any given day, and hence ADM/ADE counts, other things equal, will bring in more money. But in addition, notice that if ADM/ADE is used, schools with high absentee rates, in effect, get extra funds that can be used to help them track down pupils who are not attending regularly and to support efforts designed to coax those pupils back into school full time.

For charter schools, an ADM/ADE pupil count may create an incentive both to manufacture enrollment numbers on the days ADM/ADE is counted and to treat as enrolled, but then later ignore, regular truants. On the other hand, if ADA is used, then charter schools have an incentive to discourage the enrollment in the first place of those students who are likely to have high absentee rates.[38] This problem of perverse incentives is likely to be especially troublesome for charter schools, as compared with regular public schools, because the former inevitably will have more control over who their pupils are.

One possible solution to this problem is to use an ADM/ADE count in the funding of charter schools, but then to make sure that all enrollees are counted when assessing student achievement at the school, thereby making it undesirable for charter schools to ignore enrollees who become truant. The bottom line is that, absent a well-crafted solution to this issue, the charter school funding mechanism can wind up having an unintentionally large impact on which pupils charter schools seek to attract.

Two: Schools that seek to enroll distance learners/home schoolers

Nationwide it is now estimated that perhaps as many as 2% of children are home schooled by their parents.[39] Should those parents who home school their children be able to group together as a charter school in order to obtain financial support from the government? This is not really an issue for regular public schools, because these children conventionally are simply not enrolled in "school" (although some enterprising public school officials, as a way of garnering more state funding for the district, have figured out how to enroll in their "independent study" programs some children who are, in effect, home schooled).

If home schoolers are permitted to join charter schools, this will increase the cost of public education. This new cost alone will make some state officials want to resist funding charter schools established to serve these sorts of children.

Nonetheless, in some states, including California, home-schooled children may be served by charter schools. This has created several problems, however. Part of the problem stems from the fact that many have come to the conclusion that these children can be served at a public cost level much below that of other children and, in turn, below the per pupil allocation normally made for children enrolled in charter schools (assuming that the teacher/parents will not be paid for their work).

Consider this example. Suppose that the state is prepared to provide $5,000 annually for each pupil enrolled in a charter school, whether home schooled or not. But suppose that reasonably good educational support for the home schooling family can be provided at a cost of, say, $3000 per pupil per year. That leaves $2000 left over, and some have seized upon this difference, concluding that there is money to be made. That "profit" might be skimmed off by the chartering school district, at least if it can get its hands on the $5000 per pupil from the state and then provide only $3000 per pupil to the charter school serving home schoolers. Alternatively, the $2000 profit might be skimmed off by the charter school operator (which itself might be a "for-profit" educational management organization). In this scenario, the charter school gets the full $5000, but only spends $3000 on the pupil.

Beyond the matter of educating home schoolers "on the cheap," it has turned out, in California at least, that some districts have chartered schools to serve home schoolers who live at a great distance from the charter school, and furthermore, in several instances, the distance-learning-based charter school's center of operations itself has been located far from the sponsoring district.[40] This scenario causes at least two worries. One is that pupils will be claimed as enrolled in a charter school when they in fact are not in any way connected with the charter school. In California recently, a variation on this theme apparently happened, when the same children were claimed as enrollees of two different charter schools, both of whom claimed to manage their education from afar.[41] A second problem is that the sponsoring district's oversight of the charter school may be minimal. .

These various concerns, fueled in part by scandals linked to home-schooling-based charter schools, have caused some in California to want to eliminate the participation of home schoolers in charter schools and others to favor providing a lower per pupil payment to charter schools serving such pupils.[42] And yet, the argument on the other side is that these children, like all other children, are supposed to be entitled to free public education. Moreover, many home-schooled children seem to be learning reasonably well, and hence it seems unfair to some to target them for worse treatment, especially when lots of those children who are home-schooled might actually benefit substantially from public spending on their behalf. This spending could, for example, be for curriculum development and curriculum materials, training and supervision of their parents, computer technology, and the like. Yet, even some strong charter school supporters who abstractly identify with families who home-school their children are conflicted, fearing that scandals involving these schools put the charter school movement at risk. As a result, the place of these children in the charter school system remains a difficult issue.

Three: Monitoring charter school spending, budgeting, auditing, etc.

The basic idea behind charter schools is that they are supposed to be autonomous. That is, it is broadly agreed that the core principle defining charter schools is that they are generally to be free from regulation in order to be able to experiment, to be flexible in the way they manage their operations, to respond quickly to their customers, and so on.[43] In return for this autonomy, charter schools usually are asked to demonstrate academic outcome results for their children, but that too is supposed to be measured without too much interference with the school's independence.[44] And yet, there is at the same time understandable concern that some charter schools will be financial rip-offs. They might not properly spend on their pupils the public money they get; they may go broke in the middle of the term and leave children and families in the lurch; and so on. These fears have led to auditing, monitoring, reporting, and other requirements.

Principals and teachers in regular public schools, of course, may also complain about these same controls. But, in contrast to charter schools, freedom from regulation is not traditionally so centrally part of their school's identity (although school site control, of course, has long been a goal of some reformers of regular public schools). In any event, some charter school advocates believe that excessive financial controls are becoming the back door way that the charter school movement is undermined. [45] Indeed, the history of public school funding may provide a revealing lesson here, since increased state funding has generally brought with it more regulation of local school district operations.

Four: Supplemental funding of charter schools

Some charter schools are required to live off the basic funding they get from their chartering body. As noted already, many have to devote too much of that to pay for their building. Other charter schools, as noted, have the advantage of operating in a building that has been given to them, or loaned to them, for free. This creates "haves" and "have-nots" among charter schools. But this general problem of financially better and worse off charter schools is not limited to buildings.

For both start-up costs (mentioned earlier) and for ongoing operations, some charter schools have substantial supplemental funding and others do not. To the extent that this extra funding comes from government grants, one can at least hope that the funds will be fairly awarded to the most deserving charter schools. But much of this supplemental funding comes from private donors. Perhaps one should not begrudge a charter school that is able to obtain this extra funding. And the availability of this supplemental funding may provide charter schools with a healthy incentive to convince private donors that they have a high quality program deserving of their support.

Yet, the uneven distribution of outside funding creates inequalities of the sort that are also created among regular public schools when, for example, some obtain extra funding from local privately-financed public school foundations and others do not. At least for regular public schools, however, those foundations currently make a relatively small difference for a relatively few school districts.

But for charter schools, there is a much greater concern that no charter school will have much of a chance to succeed unless it has substantial extra outside funding, at least in its early years. This, in turn, means that certain sort of charter school initiators are far more likely to survive than others, with local grass roots groups most likely to be in the worse off category. For many who envisioned that charter schools would be a kind of democratic, local community response to regular public schools, this is likely to be disheartening.

Conclusion

Several of the funding issues facing charter schools stem from broader issues underlying the funding of public schools generally. Oddly enough, if the charter school system grows and legislatures struggle to rationalize the charter school funding mechanism, there is at some chance that these changes will, in turn, force attention to, and changes in, the funding of regular public schools. Other charter school funding issues that go to the heart of what autonomy charter schools will truly have and what sorts of pupils charter schools will serve. This overview shows that charter school funding is far too important a topic to leave to technical experts and deserves the careful attention of the wider school reform community.

Notes

Karis Chi (Boalt Hall 2002) provided invaluable research assistance in the preparation of this article.

[1] Katrina Bulkley and Jennifer Fisler, *A Decade of Charter Schools: From Theory to Practice*, CPRE Policy Briefs (April 2002) RB-35.

[2] *See generally*, Making Money Matter: Financing America's Schools (National Academy Press, 1999). For a more historical perspective, *see* John E. Coons, William H. Clune and Stephen D. Sugarman, Private Wealth and Public Education (Harvard University Press, 1970).

[3] *See* Paul Minorini and Stephen D. Sugarman, *School Finance Litigation in the Name of Educational Equity*, and *Educational Adequacy and the Courts: The Promise and Problems of Moving to a New Paradigm*, *in* Equity and Adequacy in Education Finance (National Academy Press, 1999).

[4] Id. *See, e.g.*, Serrano v. Priest ("Serrano II"), 557 P.2d 929 (Cal. 1976); Serrano v. Priest ("Serrano I"), 487 P.2d 1241 (Cal. 1971); Abbott v. Burke ("Abbott II"), 575 A.D.2d 359 (N.J. 1990); Abbott v. Burke ("Abbott I"), 495 A.D.2d 396 (N.J. 1990); Edgewood Indep. Sch. Dist. v. Kirby ("Edgewood "III"), 826 S.W.2d 489 (Tex. 1992); Edgewood Indep. Sch. Dist. v. Kirby ("Edgewood "II"), 804 S.W.2d 491 (Tex. 1991); Edgewood Indep. Sch. Dist. v. Kirby ("Edgewood "I"), 777 S.W.2d 391 (Tex. 1989); Lincoln County Sch. Dist. No. 1 v. State, 985 P.2d 964 (Wyo. 1999); Campbell County Sch. Dist. v. State, 907 P.2d 1238 (Wyo. 1995); Washakie County Sch. Dist. No. 1 v. Herchler, 606 P.2d 310 (Wyo. 1980). For a list of state cases addressing school funding in general, see Kelly Thompson Cochran, Comment, *Beyond School Financing: Defining the Constitutional Right to an Adequate Education*, 78 N.C. L. Rev. 399, 400 n.22 (2000).

[5] *See,* Making Money Matter,*supra note 2*, at 65-100.

[6] *See generally*, Stephen D. Sugarman, *School Choice and Public Funding* in School Choice and Social Controversy (Sugarman, S. and Kemerer, F. eds., Brookings Institution Press, 1999) at 121-123.

[7] F. Howard Nelson, et. al., *Venturesome Capital: State Charter School Finance Systems* (December 2000)(National Charter School Finance Study), at 30-31.

[8] Eric Premack, *California Charter School Finance: A Guide for Charter Schools and Charter-Granting Agencies* (2000-01 Edition), at 26.

[9] Sugarman, *supra note 6*, at 116.

[10] *Id.*

[11] The Los Angeles case, titled Rodriguez v. LAUSD, was filed in 1986 and settled in 1992, and the consent decree is still being monitored annually. Information provided here is based on the author's interview of co-lead counsel Lew Hollman of CLIPI (Center for Law in the Public Interest) on April 16, 2002.

[12] Premack, *supra note 8*, at 26.

[13] *See* W. Lance Conn, *Funding Fundamentals: The Cost/Quality Debate in School Finance Reform*, 94 Ed. Law Rep. 9, 17-18 (1994) (describing California's low-level spending relative to other states, observing "one of the wealthiest states in the country now ranks 25th in per pupil expenditures").

[14] *See* United States Department of Education, *Digest of Education Statistics, 2000*, Table 168, *available at* http://nces.ed.gov/pubs2001/digest/dt168.html (showing California's per-pupil spending level at $5,795, New Jersey's at $10,233, and Connecticut's at $9,221).

[15] Proposition 13 was passed in California in 1978. This measure "rolled back" most real property assessments to their 1975-76 levels and limited the property tax rate to one percent of full cash value. It also required a two-thirds vote of the state legislature to enact any new state taxes and a two-thirds vote of the electorate of a locality for any new local taxes. *See* Richard J. Stark, *Education Reform: Judicial Interpretation of State Constitutions' Education Finance Provisions—Adequacy vs. Equality*, 1991 Ann. Surv. Am. L. 609, 621, nt 27.

[16] William A. Fischel, *How Serrano Caused Proposition 13*, 12 J. of Law & Politics, 607-645 (1996).

[17] D. Roderick Kiewiet, *Californians Can't Blame Everything on Proposition 13*, 40:6 Public Affairs Report (Nov. 1999), *available at* http://www.igs.berkeley.edu/publications/par/Nov1999/Kiewiet.html.

[18] *See* United States Department of Education, *Digest of Education Statistics, 2000*, Table 168, *available at* http://nces.ed.gov/pubs2001/digest/dt168.html (showing Alabama's per-pupil spending level at $5,166, Louisiana's at $5,645, and Mississippi's at $4,575).

[19] *Budget, Finance, and Fundraising, available at* www.uscharterschools.org/lpt/uscs_docs/23 (describing funding sources available to charter schools)(last visited 9/11/2001).

[20] *Id.* See also, Stephen D. Sugarman and Emlei M. Kobuyama, *Approving Charter Schools: The Gate-Keeper Function* 53 Administrative Law Review 870, 907-09 (2001).

[21] Premack, *supra note 8*, at 21-22.

[22] Cal. Educ. Code section 47613.

[23] Premack, *supra note* 8, at 33. *See generally* United States General Accounting Office, *Charter Schools: Limited Access to Facility Financing* (September 2000)(describing the inadequacy of funding available for charter school facility financing).

[24] Premack, *supra note* 8, at 69, 77.

[25] Paul T. Hill *The Supply Side of School Choice* in School Choice and Social Controversy, *supra note 6*, at 140-73.

[26] Premack, *supra note 8*, at 33.

[27] Sugarman, *supra note 20*, at 893-907.

[28] Nelson, *supra note* 7, at 36.

[29] Premack, *supra note 8*, at 27.

[30] Stephen D. Sugarman, *Two School-Finance Roles for the Federal Government: Promoting Equity and Choice*, 17 St. Louis U. Public L. Rev. 79, 80-81 (1997).

[31] Bridget A. Flanagan and Chad J. Graff, *Federal Mandate to Educate Disabled Students Doesn't Cover Costs*, 47-SEP Fed. Law. 22 (2000). *See also* Jane K. Babin, *Comment: Adequate Special Education: Do California Schools Meet the Test?*, 37 San Diego L. Rev. 211 (2000).

[32] See generally, Robert W. Adler, *Unfunded Mandates and Fiscal Federalism: A Critique*, 50 Vand. L. Rev. 1137 (1997).

[33] Premack, *supra note* 8, at 43.

[34] Nelson, et al., *supra note 7*, at 40.

[35] *Id.*, at 40, nt 24.

[36] See generally, Laura F. Rothstein, *School Choice and Students with Disabilities* in School Choice and Social Controversy, *supra note6*, at 332-64.

[37] *See* Nelson, et al., *supra note 7*, at 36.

[38] *Id.*, at 37.

[39] Jeffrey R. Henig and Stephen D. Sugarman, *The Nature and Extent of School Choice*, *in* School Choice and Social Controversy, *supra note 6*, at 29.

[40] See generally, K. Lloyd Billingsley & Pamela A. Riley, Expanding the Chartering Idea (Pacific Research Institute 1999).

[41] Meredith May, "Fake enrollment at charter school," San Francisco Chronicle (January 24, 2002), at A19; Meredith May, "State investigating charter school system; Recent fraud probe sparks scrutiny," San Francisco Chronicle (Feb. 27, 2002), at A13.

[42] Senate Bill 740, 2001-2002 Reg. Sess. (Cal. 2001)(Oct. 14, 2001 Version), *available at* http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/pub/bill/sen/sb_0701-0750/sb_740_bill_20011014_chaptered.pdf.

[43] *See generally*, Joe Nathan, Charter Schools: Creating Hope and Opportunity for American Education (Jossey-Bass 1996).

[44] See generally, Frank R. Kemerer, *School Choice* Accountability, in School Choice and Social Controversy, *supra note 6*, at 174-211.

[45] Hill,*supra note 25*, at 156-159.

About the Author

Stephen Sugarman
Agnes Roddy Robb Professor of Law
UC Berkeley
School of Law

Email: sugarman@law.berkeley.edu

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

William McInerney
Purdue University

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)

José Contreras Domingo

Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Este artículo ha sido consultado 1546 veces desde el 16 de agosto 2002

archives | abstracts | editors | board | submit | comment | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 35 **agosto 16, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly electronic journal
Editor: Gene V Glass, College of Education
Arizona State University

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**.
Permission is hereby granted to copy any article
if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Aprender a Enseñar Para La Sociedad del Conocimiento

Carlos Marcelo
Universidad de Sevilla

Resumen
Nuestras sociedades están envueltas en un complicado proceso de transformación. Una transformación no planificada que está afectando a la forma como nos organizamos, como trabajamos, como nos relacionamos, y como aprendemos. Estos cambios tienen un reflejo visible en la escuela como institución encargada de formar a los nuevos ciudadanos. Nuestros alumnos disponen hoy en día de muchas más fuentes de información que lo que ocurría no hace ni diez años. Fuentes de información que, aportadas por las nuevas tecnologías de la información y comunicación, están haciendo necesario un replanteo de las funciones que tradicionalmente se han venido asignando a las escuelas y a los profesionales que en ella trabajan: los profesores y profesoras.¿En qué afectan estos cambios a los profesores? ¿Cómo debemos repensar el trabajo del profesor en estas nuevas circunstancias? ¿Cómo deberían formarse los nuevos profesores? ¿Cómo adecuamos los conocimientos y las actitudes del profesorado para dar respuesta y aprovechar las nuevas oportunidades que la sociedad de la información nos ofrece? ¿Qué nuevos escenarios educativos y escolares son posibles/deseables? En este artículo hacemos una revisión de los recientes avances en la investigación sobre aprender a enseñar y sobre los procesos de formación.

Abstract
Modern societies are engulfed in a complicated process of transformation. This unplanned transformation is affecting the way we are organized, how we work, how we relate to each other, and how we learn. These changes are visible in the institutions charged with educating new citizens. How are these changes influencing the role of teachers? How do we begin to rethink teachers' work in these new circumstances? How should the new generation of teachers be developed? What knowledges and attitudes must we instill in today's teachers so that they may take advantage of the new opportunities offered by the information society? In this article we review the literature of teacher learning and teacher knowledge from the point of view of new challenges presented by the knowledge society.

1. Introducción

Nuestras sociedades están envueltas en un complicado proceso de transformación. Una transformación no planificada que está afectando a la forma como nos organizamos, como trabajamos, como nos relacionamos, y como aprendemos. Estos cambios tienen un reflejo visible en la escuela como institución encargada de formar a los nuevos ciudadanos. Nuestros alumnos disponen hoy en día de muchas más fuentes de información que lo que ocurría no hace ni diez años.

Fuentes de información que, aportadas por las nuevas tecnologías de la información y comunicación, están haciendo necesario un replanteo de las funciones que tradicionalmente se han venido asignando a las escuelas y a los profesionales que en ella trabajan: los profesores y profesoras.

Una de las características de la sociedad en la que vivimos tiene que ver con el hecho de que el conocimiento es uno de los principales valores de sus ciudadanos. El valor de las sociedades actuales está directamente relacionado con el nivel de formación de sus ciudadanos, y de la capacidad de innovación y emprendimiento que éstos posean. Pero los conocimientos, en nuestros días, tienen fecha de caducidad y ello nos obliga ahora más que nunca a establecer garantías formales e informales para que los ciudadanos y profesionales actualicen constantemente su competencia. Hemos entrado en una sociedad que exige de los profesionales una permanente actividad de formación y aprendizaje.

¿En qué afectan estos cambios a los profesores? ¿Cómo debemos repensar el trabajo del profesor en estas nuevas circunstancias? ¿Cómo deberían formarse los nuevos profesores? ¿Cómo adecuamos los conocimientos y las actitudes del profesorado para dar respuesta y aprovechar las nuevas oportunidades que la sociedad de la información nos ofrece? ¿Qué nuevos escenarios educativos y escolares son posibles/deseables?

Las preguntas anteriores configuran todo un programa de preocupaciones que está llevando a muchos académicos, profesionales, investigadores, padres y docentes, etc. a pensar en que la escuela tiene que dar respuesta pronta a los desafíos que se le avecinan. Respuestas que van directamente relacionadas con la capacidad de ofrecer la mejor educación a la que todos los alumnos tienen derecho. Y para ello volvemos la vista hacia el profesorado que trabaja codo a codo con nuestros estudiantes. ¿Cómo se forman? ¿qué conocimiento realmente necesitan? ¿qué cambios hay que introducir en su formación para que sean de nuevo los líderes de un cambio que la sociedad está demandando? ¿cómo aprenden los profesores? ¿qué nuevas estrategias y compromisos son necesarios? ¿cómo se plantea una profesión docente en una sociedad del conocimiento donde cualquiera puede acceder a la información y –quizás- convertirse en enseñante?

En este artículo vamos a repasar qué sabemos sobre los procesos de formación de los profesionales de la enseñanza, así como sobre la enseñanza como profesión. Y plantearemos que se pueden observar elementos de la actual formación inicial de los profesores que no responden ni por extensión ni por estructura a los desafíos que anteriormente enunciábamos. Una formación inicial que es insuficiente en muchos países –por ejemplo España- en el caso del profesorado de educación infantil y primaria, y que es marcadamente obsoleta en lo que respecta al profesorado de educación secundaria, incluyendo bachillerato y ciclos formativos. A diferencia de la formación inicial de los profesores, la formación continua ha evolucionado a través de diferentes modelos de formación que poco a poco han mostrado sus aciertos y debilidades.

Los cambios en la forma de aprender, que afectan a los profesores en ejercicio, están acentuando la idea de que la responsabilidad de la formación recae cada vez más en los propios profesionales. Hacer de nuestras escuelas espacios en los que nos sólo se enseña sino en los que los profesores aprenden, representa el gran giro que necesitamos. Y para ello, nada mejor que entender que es el derecho a aprender de nuestros alumnos, el principio que debe orientar la formación. Una formación dirigida a asegurar un aprendizaje de calidad en nuestros alumnos, comprometida con la innovación y la actualización. Que supere el tradicional aislamiento que caracteriza a la profesión docente. Una formación que consolide un tejido profesional a través del uso de las redes de profesores y escuelas y que facilite el aprendizaje flexible e informal. Una formación en definitiva que contribuya a reprofesionalizar la docencia frente a aquellos que pretenden simplificar la complejidad del acto de enseñar.

2. Algunos Cambios Que Nos Están Afectando

Los últimos años del siglo pasado y los que llevamos de éste nos vienen mostrando que la humanidad ha entrado en una nueva era que afecta a la producción, la energía, las comunicaciones, el comercio, el transporte, el trabajo, la formación o la familia. Estos cambios ya los podemos observar con mucha nitidez, puesto que están afectando progresivamente nuestra forma de vivir, de comunicarnos, de trabajar, y de aprender. El declinar de la familia nuclear, ha promovido la aparición de una amplia variedad de modelos familiares, entre las que figuran las familias monoparentales (entre un 10-15% en Europa según Vonk, 1998), las familias en las que se agrupan los hijos de diferentes matrimonios (a mitad de los 90 el promedio de divorcios en los países de la OCDE fue del 40%), y las familias en las que los dos miembros trabajan. La creciente –y positiva- incorporación de la mujer al mercado de trabajo está creando espacios de desatención hacia los hijos, no por culpa de las mujeres, sino por la no existencia de políticas prácticas de apoyo para la atención de los niños y jóvenes en periodo de tiempo fuera de la escuela. Y lo mismo podríamos decir de la atención a las personas mayores.

Los cambios en las condiciones familiares están afectando y mucho a la escuela y a su función social. Hay coincidencia en admitir que la escuela hoy día –utilizando la escuela en términos generales para referirme a las instituciones educativas de educación obligatoria- está asumiendo funciones de socialización, de cuidado y atención, que antes correspondían a la familia (Senge, 2000). Pero también vemos una escuela que empieza a sentir el descenso de la natalidad (en la mayoría de los países de la OCDE ha caído por debajo de 2), así como se constata un incremento visible del envejecimiento de la población. Por primera vez, en los países de la OCDE la proporción de personas mayores de 65 años se equipara a los menores de 15 (OCDE, 2001).

Y nos encontramos con unas nuevas generaciones –denominada generación Nintendo- con una mayor competencia en el uso de las nuevas tecnologías, con una activa presencia en el mercado como consumidores activos, pero, según el informe de la OCDE titulado *Schooling for tomorrow*, con una cierta tendencia al individualismo, fragmentación y poca implicación política.

Los cambios en las personas y en las instituciones tienen que ver con otros cambios más profundos que se están produciendo en la manera de entender los sistemas social, económicos y políticos. Una de las características del mundo en el que vivimos y en mayor medida en el que vivirán las generaciones que hoy día están en la escuela, es la creciente diversidad cultural, religiosa, étnica. El aumento constante de la inmigración en los países de la OCDE, motivada por el aumento de las diferencias entre países ricos y pobres, está poniendo a nuestras sociedades ante diatribas nunca antes contempladas. Sociedades acostumbradas a la monoculturalidad y al monolingüismo, ven cómo sus escuelas se llenan de chicos y chicas de procedencias geográficas, culturales y lingüísticas muy diferentes. Y el discurso de la interculturalidad se enfrenta al de la multiculturalidad; el de la integración al de la segregación; el de la seguridad al de la convivencia.

Pero los cambios a los que anteriormente me he referido no se explican sin una mirada a las profundas transformaciones que en las últimas décadas se han producida en los sistemas económicos y productivos. Existe actualmente un discurso plenamente legitimado que destaca el papel de la economía en la definición de los problemas de las personas y las sociedades. Una economía que evoluciona, cambia sus patrones, sus identidades y que se hace más difusa y global. Una economía que permite que, como si de un efecto mariposa se tratase, una crisis económica en los países asiáticos produzca una recesión en Chile. Una economía que destaca de manera creciente la importancia de la Gestión del Conocimiento en las empresas, pero que se permite jubilar anticipadamente a trabajadores experimentados con más de 50 años, o contratar a trabajadores procedentes de empresas de trabajo temporal.

Una de las características de la nueva economía es su estructura en red y su dependencia del conocimiento y de las nuevas tecnologías. Se trata de una economía en la que la productividad y el poder están más asociadas a la generación, procesamiento y transmisión de la información que a la transformación de las materias primas (Castells, 1997). Una sociedad informacional cuyas características son según este eminente sociólogo español:

- La información es su materia prima, son tecnologías para actuar sobre la información, no sólo información para actuar sobre las tecnologías como en el caso de revoluciones previas.

- La capacidad de penetración de los efectos de las nuevas tecnologías. Puesto que la información es una parte integral de toda actividad humana, todos los procesos de nuestra existencia individual y colectiva están directamente moldeados por el nuevo medio tecnológico.

- La lógica de la interconexión de todo sistema o conjunto de relaciones que utilizan estas nuevas tecnologías. La configuración de red se acomoda a las nuevas relaciones.

- Flexibilidad: los procesos se flexibilizan y se acomodan; flexibilidad de trabajo de tiempo de distancias.

- Convergencia creciente de tecnologías específicas en un sistema altamente integrado: la microelectrónica, telecomunicaciones, optoelectrónica, ordenadores se integran en sistemas de información.

El discurso sobre la nueva economía nos habla de un horizonte laboral diferente al que actualmente conocemos. Castell afirma que "*en general, la forma tradicional de trabajo, basada en un empleo de tiempo completo, tareas ocupacionales bien definidas y un modelo de carrera profesional a lo largo del ciclo vital, se está erosionando de manera lenta pero segura*" (1997:297). Y parece que la palabra *flexibilidad* resume la nueva manera de entender el contrato social. Flexibilidad de tiempos, de espacios, de conocimientos, de tareas, de relaciones, de trabajo, etc. Flexibilidad entendida como un valor que el trabajador debe poseer para poder seguir sobreviviendo. Flexibilidad para acomodarse a nuevas situaciones y contextos laborales, para desplazarse sólo o con su familia a otro país o continente; flexibilidad para aprender nuevas habilidades en el lugar donde se encuentre, en el trabajo, en casa o en un hotel; flexibilidad para coordinarse con trabajadores de otras partes del mundo que participan en el proceso de producción dentro de su propia empresa.

Flexibilidad sostenible es el título de un informe que la OCDE publicó en 1997. En él se afirma que "*una nueva organización social y económica basada en las tecnologías de la información intenta descentralizar la gestión, individualizar el trabajo, y adecuar el mercado a los consumidores, a la vez que fragmenta el trabajo y segmenta a las sociedades. Al mismo tiempo las nuevas tecnologías facilitan la descentralización de las tareas laborales y su coordinación mediante una red de comunicación en tiempo real, ya sea entre continentes o entre diferentes pisos del mismo edificio.*" (p.9). Las empresas de la nueva economía tienden a una producción flexible y adaptada a la demanda, personalizando los productos en función de las necesidades del cliente. Esa producción flexible, que intenta mejorar la producción en serie propia de la era industrial, tiene unas repercusiones importantes en los procesos laborales y en la concepción del puesto de trabajo. La fragmentación de la producción está llevando a que el proceso de creación de un producto puede realizarse en lugares muy distantes. Piezas de decoración que se diseñan en España y que se fabrican en China. Componentes informáticos que se fabrican en Taiwán y se integran en Irlanda.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Otra de las características de la nueva economía, a la que anteriormente aludimos es su estructura en red: "*las redes son el elemento fundamental del que están y estarán hechas las nuevas organizaciones*"(Castells, 1997:196). Las características de esta estructura han contribuido a una producción flexible, a la interconexión entre las empresas, a la existencia de una estructura empresarial más horizontal, organizada en torno al proceso, no a la tarea, con jerarquías planas, gestión en equipo, medida de los resultados por la satisfacción del cliente; recompensas basadas en los resultados del equipo; maximización de los contactos con los proveedores y los clientes; información, retención y formación de los empleados en todos los niveles (Castells, 2001). Estas características destacadas también por el informe de la OCDE al que hemos hecho referencia anteriormente: *"Los dos elementos claves de esta transformación son la flexibilidad de los procesos del trabajo y el funcionamiento en red de las empresas, tanto internamente como en sus relaciones con el exterior. Por flexibilidad entendemos la adaptación constante de las tareas a realizar sobre productos, procesos y mercados que cambian, así como la creciente autonomía de los trabajadores a los que se les demandan mayores habilidades, capacidad de autogestión, y responsabilidad individual. Por funcionamiento en red (networking) nos referimos a una nueva lógica de las empresas, en las que las jerarquías y formas organizativas están basadas en conexiones interactivas entre diferentes capas y posiciones dentro de la empresa, entre empresas y con el mercado. Las nuevas tecnologías de la información permiten una mayor flexibilidad y funcionamiento en red; y la globalización destaca la interdependencia, la interacción y la constante adaptación a un ambiente cambiante"* (OCDE, 1997:12).

Una clara repercusión de los cambios que estamos destacando tiene que ver con el concepto de trabajo. La incorporación de las nuevas tecnologías de la información está redefiniendo los procesos laborales y a los trabajadores y, por tanto, el empleo y la estructura ocupacional. Por una parte, se está demando una mejor formación para una cantidad considerable de puestos de trabajo mientras que otra gran cantidad está desapareciendo por la automatización tanto en la fabricación como en los servicios. Los trabajos a tiempo parcial, temporales, el horario flexible de trabajo y el autoempleo están creciendo en todas las sociedades. Una de las repercusiones de este fenómeno es el aumento creciente de los denominados *teletrabajadores*. Son profesionales, cuyo puesto de trabajo es volante. Su oficina puede ser su casa, un telecentro o simplemente un ordenador portátil conectado a internet desde el que se envían datos a la oficina central. Padilla comenta en relación con el teletrabajo, que "*es una fórmula organizativa compleja (permite organizar a los empleados de forma que se rompe el binomio espacio-tiempo u oficina tradicional-horario de trabajo, permitiendo el que éstos puedan realizar sus funciones de manera más flexible), que viene a cambiar estructuras establecidas desde hace décadas, no por arbitrariedad de sus defensores sino por razones económicas (fundamentalmente reducción de costes y aumento de la productividad) y organizativas (fundamentalmente adaptabilidad y flexibilidad), que conviene conocer, ya que permite que la empresa pueda obtener una ventaja competitiva sostenible basada en competencias y capacidades"* (Padilla, 1998, XIII).

El teletrabajo es una respuesta de las empresas, pero también de los trabajadores individuales (autoempleados) para aprovechar las oportunidades que las nuevas tecnologías ofrecen en provecho de una mayor rentabilidad y competitividad. Oportunidades que se generan en la medida en que los trabajadores (por cuenta propia o ajena) están conectados y aprovechan las ventajas de Internet. Oportunidades que pueden hacer que más personas puedan incorporarse al trabajo independientemente de sus condiciones físicas, como es el caso de los minusválidos (Fernández Villalta, 1998).

El teletrabajo, en sus distintas formas coincide en una creciente disgregación e individualizacion de los procesos y de los propios trabajadores. Ello no quiere decir necesariamente aislamiento, ya que a la vez que aumenta la especialización, se generaliza lo que se ha llamado "toyotismo", o forma de organización empresarial que achata la tradicional estructura piramidal de las organizaciones empresariales, tendiendo hacia una estructura más horizontal en la que el trabajo en equipo, la coordinación y colaboración se priman como formas de asegurar la calidad de los procesos de producción.

Esto que hemos enunciado tiene repercusiones en lo que se ha venido entendiendo como el "desempeño del puesto de trabajo". La hiperespecialización y rutinización de tareas ha dado paso a una necesaria multifuncionalidad de tareas a realizar por los trabajadores. Por ello es frecuente el desplazamiento de funciones y tareas dependiendo de las necesidades así como de las innovaciones introducidas en el proceso de producción o venta. Todo ello repercute en que los trabajadores vean continuamente incrementadas y diversificadas las tareas que deben realizar, lo que lleva a tener que aprender continuamente nuevas habilidades y conocimientos. Esto tendrá una repercusión muy importante en la formación continua como veremos más adelante.

Las innovaciones tanto en los procesos gestión, de producción, de control de calidad, como de ventas y comercialización generan nuevos conocimientos y habilidades que los trabajadores deben incorporar continuamente. El mercado de trabajo es cambiante y a la vez que elimina ocupaciones obsoletas, abre nuevas vías de desarrollo y crecimiento. El informe *Oferta y demanda de empleo cualificado en la nueva economía* muestra que las empresas de informática y telecomunicaciones son las que más empleo generan en España: El 14.09% de las ofertas de trabajo proceden del sector informático, mientras que el 9.84% del de las telecomunicaciones, lo que supone un 23.93% de los empleos (El País, 13 de agosto, 2000).

Pero no sólo las ocupaciones relacionadas con las nuevas tecnologías son las que ofrecen nuevos espacios laborales. Se están produciendo en nuestra sociedad cambios que conducen necesariamente a la aparición de nuevas ocupaciones, o lo que se ha venido en llamar *nuevos yacimientos de empleo*, definidos como "*aquellas actividades destinadas a satisfacer nuevas necesidades sociales que actualmente se configuran como mercados incompletos, que sean intensivas en el empleo y que tengan un ámbito de producción/prestación definido en el territorio"* (Jiménez, Barreiro y Sánchez, cit. Por García Fraile, 2000, p. 284). El Informe encargado por el Ministerio de Trabajo y Asuntos Sociales, y elaborado por Cachón (1998) destaca los siguientes factores en la aparición de estos yacimientos de empleo:

- La inversión de las pirámides de población, consecuencia del alargamiento de la esperanza de vida y de la caída de natalidad.
- La extensión de los sistemas educativos, lo que determina nuevas demandas educativas y formativas en el sistema escolar y en el de formación permanente
- La importante incorporación de la mujer al mercado de trabajo y la transformación de las estructuras familiares.
- El desarrollo de las nuevas tecnologías de la información y la comunicación.
- Los cambios en las pautas de consumo y del uso del tiempo social, de ocio y cultura.

Estos factores están creando posibles espacios en los que es posible desarrollar iniciativas de empleo. Se han agrupado en los siguientes:

- *Servicios de la vida cotidiana*: servicios a domicilio, atención a la infancia, nuevas tecnologías de la información y la comunicación, ayuda a los jóvenes con dificultad.
- *Servicios de mejora de la calidad de vida*: mejora de alojamientos, seguridad, transportes colectivos locales, revalorización de espacios urbanos, comercio de proximidad, gestión de la energía
- *Servicios de ocio:* turismo, audiovisual, valorización del patrimonio cultural, desarrollo cultural local, deporte
- *Servicios medioambientales:* gestión de residuos, gestión del agua, protección y mantenimiento de zonas rurales, reglamentación y control de la polución y las instalaciones correspondientes

Estos yacimientos de empleo no representan por sí solos sino oportunidades, opciones que pueden fructificar si se dispone de apoyos, iniciativa y conocimiento. También están influidos por factores sociales y culturales que pueden favorecerlos o dificultarlos. Y uno de los factores determinantes es poder disponer de personas con conocimientos y formación para hacer realidad las demandas de la sociedad. Por ejemplo, en relación con las nuevas tecnologías de la información se viene insistiendo en la necesidad de disponer de personas cualificadas para desempeñar ocupaciones relacionadas con ordenadores. Se ha sabido la oferta que Alemania ha hecho para que especialistas hindúes se desplacen a Alemania a trabajar en ocupaciones relacionadas con las nuevas tecnologías. Igualmente se está hablando de la necesidad de "reconvertir" a licenciados en Física, Química, Matemáticas, y otros hacia estudios informáticos.

Todo lo dicho anteriormente lleva a reconocer el hecho –ya sabido- de que en la sociedad que nos está tocando vivir, los conocimientos que adquirimos en nuestra etapa de formación inicial tienen una *fecha de caducidad*. No podemos seguir esperando que la formación profesional inicial nos dote de un bagaje de conocimientos del que podamos disponer a lo largo de toda nuestra vida profesional activa. Por el contrario, tanto por la aparición constante de nuevas ocupaciones y profesiones, como por el imparable avance de los conocimientos, se requiere de las personas, de los ciudadanos una actitud de permanente aprendizaje.

Las situaciones que anteriormente he descrito nos muestran un panorama ya vislumbrado cuando la Unión Europea encargó en 1996 el informe titulado *Teaching and Learning. Towards the Learning Society*. Lo que se ponía de manifiesto en aquel informe era que los cambios que se estaban produciendo generaban unas necesidades de formación y unas actitudes en los ciudadanos que debían atenderse para poder aprovechar con toda su amplitud las oportunidades que la sociedad informacional iba a generar. Y se apuntaba hacia el peligro de exclusión social que una falta de respuesta adecuada podría producir, afirmando que existe el riesgo de una grieta en la sociedad entre aquellos que pueden interpretar; aquellos que sólo pueden usar; y aquellos que quedan fuera de la sociedad y dependen de ella para sobrevivir: en otras palabras, entre los que conocen y los que no conocen.

Tanto por las condiciones de trabajo como por las oportunidades de empleo que anteriormente hemos comentado, se percibe la necesidad de contar con una ciudadanía con una formación de base lo suficientemente fundamentada como para que pueda darse esa flexibilidad y adaptación a la que nos hemos referido. Y esta formación de base es la que debe proporcionar el sistema educativo obligatorio. Una formación que, frente a la temprana especialización que algunos plantean, debe atender a aspectos de formación general. A este respecto, el informe de la propia Comisión Europea hablaba de que la escuela debería desarrollar un conocimiento base que permita a las personas dar significado a las cosas, comprender y hacer juicios, desarrollar la capacidad de analizar cómo funcionan las cosas: observación, sentido común, curiosidad, interés por el mundo físico y social, inventar. Aprender a cooperar debe ser también una habilidad a adquirir en la escuela puesto que las modernas empresas están organizándose en círculos de calidad, que introducen la planificación entre trabajadores, destacando su autonomía. Un conocimiento que permita a los ciudadanos dominar los

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

idiomas que le faciliten una mayor movilidad laboral y también cultural.

Adalberto Ferrández insistió a lo largo de su vida en la importancia de entender la formación de base como el sustrato imprescindible para cualquier propuesta formativa con opciones de éxito. Él hablaba de que tendría que ser una educación con moldes de 'álgebra conceptual', es decir, creadora de estructuras flexibles, mentalmente hablando, a la vez que polivalente: estructuras abiertas que puedan ser modificadas rápidamente, de acuerdo a los datos que surgen de su intorno y entorno (1988:174). La formación de base debe aspirar a permanecer en un mundo donde todo cambia, a dotar a las personas de autonomía personal, capacidad de comunicación, conocimiento de los procesos de resolución de problemas, manejo de información, etc.

Plantear la formación de base como un caleidoscopio más que como un binocular, conduce a asumir que su función no es más que permitir que las personas puedan continuar pedaleando aunque cambie el terreno o la forma de la bicicleta. Lo que aprendemos en un momento de nuestra vida tiene una utilidad relativa en función de los avances del conocimiento producido por la investigación.

Como consecuencia de ello, poco a poco nos vamos dando cuenta que la división clásica entre el mundo del estudio y el mundo del trabajo está dejando de tener sentido. La idea de que existe un tiempo para la formación (básica, inicial) en la que adquirimos el bagaje de conocimientos que vamos a necesitar para toda nuestra vida profesional no se mantiene hoy en día. La formación inicial es una formación básica que nos permite empezar a desenvolvernos en el mercado laboral. Pero el mercado laboral es todo menos estable. Muchas profesiones u ocupaciones surgirán en los próximos años que aun hoy en día no sospechamos de su existencia. Por otra parte, el incremento exponencial de los conocimiento hace que lo que aprendemos en la formación inicial tenga una fecha de caducidad fijada. Como decía Delors en su informe, es que ya no basta con que cada individuo acumule al comienzo de su vida una reserva de conocimientos a la que podrá recurrir después sin límites. Sobre todo, debe estar en condiciones de aprovechar y utilizar durante toda la vida cada oportunidad que se le presente de actualizar, profundizar y enriquecer ese primer saber y de adaptarse a un mundo en permanente cambio.

La necesidad de aprender a lo largo de toda la vida se ha convertido en un lema cotidiano. Zabalza (2000) hablaba de que hemos convertido *"la agradable experiencia de aprender algo nuevo cada día, en un inexcusable principio de supervivencia"* (165). Y en nuestro contexto, las estructuras y procesos que facilitan ese aprendizaje toman el nombre de **formación.** En otro tiempo uno se formaba para toda una vida, hoy día nos pasamos la vida formándonos. Y la formación se nos aparece como el dispositivo que empleamos para adaptar la formación de base que hemos adquirido (educación secundaria, universitaria, profesional, etc.) a nuestras necesidades o las de la empresa en la que trabajemos.

3. El Aprendizaje en el Punto de Mira: El Derecho de Aprender y el Papel de las Escuelas

Las transformaciones que nuestras sociedades están viviendo no pasan por delante de las escuelas sin llamar a la puerta. Quizás sea el mundo educativo en general, pero el escolar en particular, el que menos se haya dado como aludido por las profundas transformaciones que se están produciendo y a las que anteriormente me he referido de manera somera. Una pléyade de pensadores e investigadores están mirando desde un punto de vista crítico a nuestros actuales sistemas escolares para someterlos a consideración. El informe de la OCDE al que me refería anteriormente concluía con una declaración que me parece de interés reproducir: *"Quizás la transformación más urgente y difícil pero necesaria que deben hacer los países de la OCDE sea organizar la escuela en torno a una educación post-secundaria universal, que promueva la independencia, ajustes rápidos al cambio y movilidad. Los sistemas educativos en el pasado se han utilizado no sólo para impartir habilidades cognitivas sino como selectores sociales, distribuyendo a los niños de diferentes procedencia socioeconómicas en sus niveles "apropiados" de educación, que les permitiera elegir trabajos apropiados. Esto ha funcionado razonablemente bien en un sistema industrial jerárquico basado en trabajos poco cualificados y con pocos cambios en la vida laboral de los individuos... Hoy en día, esa estratificación resulta socialmente mucho más contraproducente que en el pasado. Los jóvenes con educación secundaria se encuentran cada vez más en situación de riesgo en gran medida porque tanto el sistema educativo como los empleadores los ven como sujetos poco preparados para trabajos de gran habilidad y flexible"* (2001:36-37).

Y no es que la principal meta de la escuela sea la de preparar para el trabajo. Es que una ciudadanía activa no puede construirse con sistemas educativos obsoletos en cuanto a su organización y estructura tanto didáctica como curricular. Unos sistemas escolares que siguen anclados en los principios de selección y clasificación, donde se asume que los alumnos llegan a las escuelas con deficiencias que las escuelas deben arreglar; que el aprendizaje tiene lugar en la cabeza y no en el cuerpo en su conjunto; que todos aprenden o deberían aprender de la misma forma; que el aprendizaje tiene lugar en las aulas, no en el mundo; que hay chicos listos y torpes y que eso es inevitable; que el conocimiento es por naturaleza fragmentado, que la escuela comunica la verdad, y que el aprendizaje es principalmente individualista y la competición acelera el aprendizaje (Senge, 2000). Tanto el currículo como la forma de organización del trabajo en el aula que actualmente se lleva a cabo en nuestras escuelas no se adecua a las necesidades de educación de la nueva ciudadanía. Como planteaban Osin y Lesgold *"Las escuelas convencionales agrupan a los estudiantes de la misma edad en periodos fijos de tiempo. No existen razones educativas que puedan justificar este enfoque. La diversidad de ritmos de aprendizaje de los individuos muestra que es absurdo esperar que todos los alumnos en una misma cohorte de edad aprendan la misma cantidad de contenidos en la misma cantidad de tiempo"* (1996:644).

Chapman y Aspin (2001), editores del *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, plantean la necesidad de realizar profundas transformaciones en los sistemas educativos actuales para que podamos enfrentarnos a los desafíos de la sociedad del conocimiento. Estos autores plantean una serie de principios que nos parecen de interés:

- La necesidad de ofrecer oportunidades educativas que respondan a los principios de: eficacia económica, justicia social, inclusión social, participación democrática y desarrollo personal.
- La necesidad de reevaluar los curriculum tradicionales y las formas de enseñar en respuesta a los desafíos educativos producidos por los cambios económicos y sociales y las tendencias asociadas al surgimiento de una economía del conocimiento y una sociedad del aprendizaje.
- La reevaluación y redefinición de los lugares donde el aprendizaje tiene lugar, así como la creación de ambientes de aprendizaje flexibles que sean positivos, estimulantes y motivadores, y que superen las limitaciones de currículo estandarizados, división por materias, limitados tiempos y rígidas pedagogías.
- Una aceptación de la importancia del valor añadido que aporta el aprendizaje.
- La consciencia de que aunque se empiece a entender que la escuela no sea la principal fuente de adquisición de conocimiento, se está convirtiendo en institución fundamental en la socialización de la gente joven.
- La idea de que los itinerarios de aprendizaje entre las escuelas e instituciones de educación superior, trabajadores y otros proveedores de educación tendrá un alto impacto en la formación de relaciones entre la escuela y la comunidad.
- La necesidad de promover la idea de la escuela como comunidad de aprendizaje y como centros de aprendizaje a o largo de la vida.

Son muchos los autores que vienen decantándose en la misma dirección: la necesidad de una profunda y fundamentada reflexión acerca de las nuevas misiones de las escuelas como instituciones que promueven el conocimiento y el aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida. Keating (1998) plantea la necesidad de que las escuelas se conviertan en organizaciones que aprenden. Darling-Hammond (2000) insiste en la necesidad de que las escuelas garanticen el derecho de aprender de los alumnos. Dalin (1998) habla claramente de que las escuelas actuales en absoluto están preparadas para ayudar a los alumnos a enfrentarse con las realidades del siglo XXI. Se requieren escuelas y profesores comprometidos con el aprendizaje continuo, flexible, en colaboración. Escuelas que promuevan una enseñanza para la comprensión, la diversidad, la indagación (Dalin y Rust, 1996).

Pero la evolución de los sistemas educativos no parece hoy en día clara. Aunque las señales nos indican que hay una creciente necesidad en colocar el aprendizaje en el centro del debate, poco se ha ido avanzando hasta ahora. Y el riesgo que empezamos a correr es que ya va viéndose que aprendizaje no es sinónimo de escuela (o de Universidad). Que las escuelas puede que no sean las únicas instituciones educativas. Y que, por tanto, la profesión docente acabe desprofesionalizándose. Dalin y Rust (1996) se planteaban algunas preguntas y daban algunas respuestas que nos parecen de mucho interés para el planteamiento que estamos haciendo. Se preguntaban, ¿En el siglo XXI?

¿Qué y Quien Serán Los Alumnos?: En el futuro los alumnos serán desde los recién nacidos hasta los adultos y mayores. El mensaje aquí es que lo importante es el que aprende y la escuela debe dar respuestas a las necesidades.

¿Qué Y Quién Será Profesor?: El profesor tradicional seguirá siendo importante, pero la distinción entre profesor y estudiante será más diluida. Los estudiantes podrán ser profesores y los profesores deberán seguir aprendiendo. Los padres podrán ser recursos adecuados. Habrá contribuciones de voluntarios.

¿Qué Curriculum?: Será muy difícil definir un curriculum comprehensivo, debido a la revolución del conocimiento y debido a las necesidades cambiantes de los alumnos.

¿Qué Libro De Texto?: La información proviene del libro, del ordenador, de CD-ROM.

¿Qué Será Una Clase? La mayor parte de la información no está en la escuela, sino en ordenadores, bibliotecas, locales comunitarios, en los medios, en los lugares de trabajo.

En la misma línea, pero planteando diferentes opciones, se ha mostrado la OCDE, a través de su informe *Schooling for tomorrow. What School for Future?*, al que ya hemos aludido. En este informe se plantean diferente escenarios de desarrollo que pueden seguir los sistemas educativos y que evidentemente repercuten tanto en la calidad de enseñanza, en el trabajo y consideración de los profesores, como en la organización de la educación.

Mantenimiento de la situación actual	**Re-escolarización**	**Desescolarización**

1. Sistema escolar burocrático	3. Escuelas como centros sociales	5. Redes de aprendizaje y sociedad en red
2. Extensión del modelo de mercado	4. Escuelas como organizaciones de aprendizaje	6. Éxodo de profesores

En la página siguiente reproducimos una síntesis de esos escenarios que pueden ayudarnos a comprender las posibilidades, pero también los riesgos de no afrontar los cambios necesarios en la dirección adecuada. Los seis escenarios responden a tres marcos generales. El primero tiene que ver con el mantenimiento de la situación actual de las escuelas con un funcionamiento burocrático y curricular centralizado, como servicio público, impartido por un profesorado funcionario, y con una clara intención de clasificación. A este modelo se le pueden añadir liberalizaciones que permitan que las empresas puedan acceder al mercado de la educación, bien a través del establecimientos de centros privados o bien mediante esponsorización. Al respecto afirmaba Robertson (1998) que "*Ya sea mediante cuasiprivatización o por privatización completa, las escuelas son tan atractivas que las grandes empresas están preparadas para potenciar cualquier movimiento que les permita un mayor acceso a las escuelas y al enorme potencial de mercado que los niños representan. En este clima de creciente recorte de recursos para las escuelas, los profesores han empezado a buscar patrocinios con empresas y recursos curriculares para aumentar las posibilidades. Cuando uno está hambriento, incluso una Big Mac parece buena*" (412).

Un siguiente escenario se plantea como consecuencia de una profunda reestructuración de las escuelas como organizaciones que aprenden y que son capaces de generar espacios de indagación y cooperación con padres y sociedad. Con amplio apoyo y financiación pública y con un fuerte compromiso de los profesores con el desarrollo, mejora y calidad de la educación que imparten. Escuelas caracterizadas por promover un aprendizaje continuo, por tener claridad de sus metas, por poseer estándares académicos altos y universales, un curriculum interdisciplinar y multicultural, comprometida con la idea del estudiante como trabajador y como ciudadano, con una evaluación basada en el rendimiento en competencias claramente definidas, un clima respetuoso, la implicación de las familias, toma de decisiones compartidas, compromiso con la diversidad de los estudiantes y del profesorado, elección libre del centro por los estudiantes y tiempo de planificación conjunta para el profesorado (Darling-Hammond, 2001).

Los dos últimos escenarios dibujados por la OCDE corresponden a situaciones en las que las escuelas dejan de ser instituciones educativas hegemónicas y aparecen nuevas oportunidades de aprendizaje que utilizan internet como vehículo de adquisición de formación y conocimiento. Esta es una realidad presente ya en algunos países, como en Estados Unidos de Norteamérica en donde se estima que 1,5 millones de niños han dejado de ir a las escuelas para ser educados por sus padres en casa (Senge, 2000). Esto se explica también por el teletrabajo al que nos referimos al comienzo de este texto.

	Escenario 1 **Sistema Escolar Burocrático**	**Escenario 2** **El mercado en el sistema escolar**	**Escenario 3** **Escuelas como centros sociales**	**Escenario 4** **Escuelas como organizaciones que aprenden**	**Escenario 5** **Redes de aprendizaje y sociedad en red**	**Escenario 6** **Éxodo de profesores**
Actitudes, expectativas, apoyo político	La educación y la escuela, politizada. Oposición a cambios radicales a pesar de las quejas	Reducción de la confianza en el valor público de la educación. Cultura de competencia entre escuelas	Reconocimiento del valor de la educación pública y de recursos públicos. Cooperación entre las autoridades y profesores Papel de la escuela como centros de la comunidad	Amplio acuerdo sobre la educación como bien público Alto apoyo a las escuelas. Preocupación por igualar las diferencias	Generalizada insatisfacción con la escuela como institución, por su naturaleza burocrática e incapacidad. Desafío a las escuelas por las clases altas.	Amplia insatisfacción del público y de los medios con el estado de la educación. Falta de profesorado Impotencia política para impedir la pérdida de docentes
Metas y funciones	Atención al currículo común y a los exámenes y estándares Certificación formal	Indicadores, eficiencia y calidad como criterios. Declinar de estructura curriculares establecidas Énfasis en conocimiento y habilidades, actitudes de riesgo y cooperación	Escuelas siguen transmitiendo, legitimando y acreditando el conocimiento, pero se hace creciente énfasis en resultados sociales y culturales. Diversas formas de reconocimiento de competencia. Aprendizaje a lo	Currículo con elevadas demandas. Mayor especialización Valor del certificado escolar Desarrollos innovadores en evaluación,	Declinar de unas estructuras curriculares establecidas. Desmantelamiento del sistema escolar.	Estructuras curriculares bajo presión, especialmente en alguna materias. Preocupación por exámenes y rendimiento de cuentas. Movimientos de padres hacia escuelas

		Homogeneidad entre los grupos de clase Límites a la permanencia en la escuela	largo de la vida es explícito. Reducción de desigualdades y ampliación de la diversidad	certificación. Aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida es explícito. Inversión en reducir desigualdades		privadas
Organizaciones y estructuras	Sistema escolar burocrático Modelo un profesor/clase Uso de TIC pero sin cambios en la enseñanza	Privatización, acuerdos público/ privado, sistema de cheque. Individualización y educación en casa Uso de TIC Existen Redes donde hay ganancias	Escuelas menos burocráticas, más diversas. Escuela abierta, estudiantes diferentes, mayor mezcla intergeneracional. Revisión de las divisiones entre educación primaria y secundaria Mayor uso de TIC en especial para comunicación entre alumnos, padres, profesores, comunidad	Escuelas como organizaciones que aprenden. Organizaciones más planas. Enfoque de equipos. Atención al nuevo conocimiento Amplia mezcla y variedad en edad, grados y habilidad TIC muy desarrollada como herramienta de aprendizaje, análisis y comunicación. Relaciones entre las escuelas, educación terciaria e industrias del conocimiento	Aprendizaje individualizado o a través de redes de alumnos, padres y profesionales. TIC muy extendidas y utilizadas para aprendizaje, florecimiento del mercado de software Escuelas públicas siguen existiendo para los excluidos del mundo digital	Diversa respuesta organizativa a la falta de profesores. Vuelta a métodos tradicionales en respuesta a caída de estandards Amplio uso de TIC como alternativa a escasez de profesores
Dimensión geopolítica	La nación/Estado mantiene el control. Alguna descentralización de las escuelas Presión por los informes internacionales	Reducción sustancial de las autoridades públicas de educación. Agencias internacionales de acreditación Diversos promotores se introducen en la educación	Nuevas formas de organización. Dimensión local de la escuela apoyada en casos de infraestructuras débiles.	Marco político de apoyo Redes internacionales de estudiantes y profesores Implicación de las multinacionales y las empresas nacionales en las escuelas	Medios de comunicación juegan fuerte para desmantelar el sistema escolar. Nuevas formas de acreditación internacional para las élites. Las autoridades públicas encargadas de cerrar la "brecha digital"	Se incrementa el interés de las empresas y medios de comunicación en la educación. "Préstamos" de profesores entre países
El profesorado	Funcionarios Fuertes sindicatos y asociaciones. Relaciones centralizadas Estatus profesional Modelo de profesionalismo de "oficio" Creciente atención a la formación permanente y	Un profesorado indiferenciado, un nuevo profesionalismo con diferentes perfiles: público, privado, tiempo completo ,parcial. Profesionales a la demanda, dependientes del mercado. Aparición de acreditación para profesionales que	Cuerpo de profesores con alto estatus pero no a tiempo completo. Tipos de contratos variados Otros profesionales, padres, etc. Más relación entre la enseñanza con otras responsabilidades en la comunidad.	Profesorado con alto estatus, disfrutando de buenas recompensas y condiciones. Variedad de contratos Mayor innovación en la enseñanza y aprendizaje. Estar en redes es la norma entre	Las redes aportan formación dependiendo de las necesidades. Aparecen nuevos profesionales del aprendizaje. Aparece la ayuda en línea y la visita a domicilio.	Incremento de incentivos para profesores Peores condiciones de trabajo con problemas en peores áreas Esfuerzo por incorporar a profesores jubilados Crecen semi-profesionales

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

	esfuerzo por retener a los profesores	ejerzan en la enseñanza		profesores		que atienden en casa.

Estos últimos escenarios contemplan también la extensión de la educación más allá de las fronteras de las escuelas y en algún caso vienen a reconocer, al igual que hizo Ivan Illich que la educación debe ser una tarea visible socialmente y que debe implicar a todas las instituciones públicas y privadas. Es la idea de las ciudades educadoras que asumen un compromiso claro y mantenido de las autoridades públicas, empresas privadas, instituciones educativas e investigadoras, organizaciones de voluntarios, con el objetivo de mantener el aprendizaje como centro del desarrollo de la ciudad. Junto a ello, se plantea una clara estrategia que ofrezca oportunidades de aprendizaje a todas las edades, creando servicios basados en el conocimiento; mejora de las capacidades individuales y organizativas para crear un ambiente de aprendizaje, innovación, creatividad y cambio, así como una atención a la cohesión social y ambiental como parte integral del desarrollo de la ciudad (Chapman y Aspin, 2001).

4. Y Las Miradas Se Vuelven Hacia Los Profesores

Los cambios y las nuevas realidades que hemos desglosado brevemente en las páginas anteriores nos dirigen inexorablemente la mirada hacia los docentes. Day afirmaba que "*los profesores son potencialmente el activo más importante de la visión de una sociedad del aprendizaje*" (2001:495). Y efectivamente es así. Si queremos que los peores escenarios descritos más arriba no sucedan, debemos prestar atención muy concreta a los profesores, a su formación inicial, a su periodo de inserción profesional y a su formación continua. El aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida no es sólo un buen slogan. Representa una necesidad urgente para revitalizar una profesión demasiado castigada y desmovilizada desde un punto de vista profesional. Cranston (1998) se preguntaba si los profesores están preparados para enseñar en el nuevo milenio. Y responde que si miramos el trabajo de los alumnos en sus clases y colegios, lo que encontramos es más un modelo del siglo XIX. Afirma que se demanda un cambio en la forma como se concibe la profesión docente: Un profesional que no dedicará toda su vida profesional en un único sistema educativo o incluso en un único país, un trabajador del conocimiento. Y, de la misma manera que los estudiantes, los profesores deben prepararse para trabajar en un ambiente cambiante e impredecible, en donde el conocimiento se construye desde diferentes fuentes y perspectivas.

Pero ocurre que a la tarea de enseñar los profesores siguen enfrentándose generalmente en solitario. Sólo los alumnos son testigos de la actuación profesional de los profesores. Pocas profesiones se caracterizan por una mayor soledad y *aislamiento*. A diferencia de otras profesiones u oficios, la enseñanza es una actividad que se desarrolla en solitario. Como de forma acertada afirma Bullough, la clase es el santuario de los profesores...El santuario de la clase es un elemento central de la cultura de la enseñanza, que se preserva y protege mediante el aislamiento, y que padres, directores y otros profesores dudan en violar (1998). Cuando estamos asistiendo a propuestas que evidentemente plantean la necesidad de que los profesores colaboren, trabajen conjuntamente, etc., nos encontramos con la pertinaz realidad de profesores que se refugian en la soledad de sus clases. Ya resulta clásico el estudio llevado a cabo por Lortie en 1975, en el que mediante entrevistas estableció algunas características de la profesión docente en Estados Unidos, que no sólo son de gran actualidad, sino que son perfectamente aplicables a nuestro país. Una característica identificada por Lortie fue el Individualismo. Este individualismo se produce en opinión del autor por la ausencia de ocasiones en las que los profesores puedan observarse unos a otros, y ello se produce desde los primeros años de formación como profesor y posteriormente durante el proceso de socialización.

El aislamiento de los profesores está favorecido evidentemente por la arquitectura escolar, que organiza la escuelas en módulos estándar, así como por la distribución del tiempo y el espacio, y la existencia de normas de independencia y privacidad entre los profesores. El aislamiento, como norma y cultura profesional tiene ciertas ventajas y algunos evidentes inconvenientes para los profesores. En este sentido señalan Bird y Little (1986) que aunque el aislamiento facilita la creatividad individual y libera a los profesores de algunas de las dificultades asociadas con el trabajo compartido, también les priva de la estimulación del trabajo por los compañeros, y se deja de recibir el apoyo necesario para progresar a lo largo de la carrera. Es más, cuando en el mundo de las empresas se está hablando de la necesidad de gestionar el conocimiento como medio para rentabilizar ese saber hacer que los empleados han ido acumulando a lo largo del tiempo, en la enseñanza, en palabras de D. Hargreaves, los profesores "*ignoran el conocimiento que existe entre ellos; por tanto, no pueden compartir y construir sobre este conocimiento. Al mismo tiempo tampoco conocen el conocimiento que no poseen y por tanto no pueden generar nuevo conocimiento. Hay una compleja distribución social del conocimiento en la escuela: ningún profesor en particular conoce o puede conocer la totalidad del conocimiento profesional que los profesores poseen*" (1999:124). Ello es debido a que gran parte del conocimiento de los profesores es tácito, difícil de articular y el objetivo de la gestión del conocimiento consiste en ayudar a la organización a utilizar su propio capital intelectual.

El aislamiento representa un barrera real frente a las posibilidades de formación y de mejora. Los cambios que se están produciendo en la sociedad inciden en la demanda de una *redefinición del trabajo del profesor* y seguramente de la profesión docente, de su formación y de su desarrollo profesional. Los roles que tradicionalmente han asumido los docentes enseñando de manera conservadora un curriculum caracterizado por contenidos académicos hoy en día resultan a todas luces inadecuados. A los alumnos les llega la información por múltiples vías: la televisión, radio, ordenadores, Internet, recursos culturales de las ciudades, etc. Y los profesores no pueden hacer como si nada de esto fuera con ellos. Salomon nos ofrecía su metáfora respecto a que se está modificando el rol del profesor desde transmisor de información, el solista de una flauta al frente de una audiencia poco respetuosa, al de un diseñador, un guía turístico, un director de orquesta (1992:42). Así, el papel del profesor debería de cambiar desde una autoridad que distribuye conocimientos hacia un sujeto que crea y orquesta ambientes de aprendizaje complejos, implicando a los alumnos en actividades apropiadas, de manera que los alumnos puedan construir su propia comprensión del material a estudiar, trabajando con los alumnos como compañeros en el proceso de aprendizaje.

Los cambios en los profesores no pueden hacerse al margen de cómo se comprende el proceso de aprendizaje de los propios profesores. ¿cómo se aprende a enseñar? ¿cómo se genera, transforma y transmite el conocimiento en la profesión docente? Unos cambios que se concretan en formas distinta de entender el aprendizaje, la enseñanza, las tareas, así como los medios y la evaluación (Blumenfeld, 1998).

	AHORA	ANTES
APRENDIZAJE	Construcción activa Conexiones Situado	Dar información Jerárquica Descontextualizado
ENSEÑANZA	Transformación Andamiaje	Transmisión Directo
CURRICULUM	Maleable	Fijo
TAREAS	Auténticas Conjunto de representaciones	Aisladas Materiales secuenciados
MEDIACIÓN SOCIAL	Comunidades de aprendices Colaboración Discurso	Individual Competición Recitación
HERRAMIENTAS	Uso interactivo e integrado de ordenadores	Papel y lápiz
EVALUACIÓN	Basado en la actuación Carpetas individuales	Pruebas de rendimiento Tests estandarizados

Unos cambios que deben llevar a replantear el trabajo de los profesores en el aula y la escuela, que conduzcan a una estructura escolar más flexible y adaptada a las posibilidades y necesidades individuales de los alumnos. Por ello se requiere un replanteamiento en la educación primaria y secundaria, tanto de los contenidos como de la forma de enseñarlos. Y en cuanto a los contenidos académicos existe la tendencia a incrementar las materias, los programas, ampliando el número de horas de dedicación a las disciplinas escolares. Y si lo que se persigue no es el almacenamiento de la información y la repetición rutinaria de tareas, sino la comprensión de lo que se aprende, habría que asumir el principio enunciado por Gardner y Boix: *menos es más*. Con ello vienen a confirmar que el principal enemigo de la comprensión es completar el temario, la compulsión de tocar todo el libro de texto, en lugar de dar tiempo para presentar materiales desde múltiples perspectivas (1994:203). Pero empeñarse en que los alumnos comprendan en lugar de que meramente recuerden no resulta gratuito para los profesores. Requiere aprender la forma de implicar a los alumnos para que construyan el conocimiento de una forma más activa, participando y colaborando con compañeros, requiere un conocimiento más profundo de la materia que se enseña, así como de la forma de representarla para hacerla comprensible a los niños.

Comprender lo que se aprende y aprender a aprender configuran dos demandas imprescindibles para la escuela actual. Y ello es aplicable tanto a los profesores como a los alumnos. Hemos comentado anteriormente que las características de la sociedad actual en relación a la mundialización de la economía está ejerciendo una gran influencia en las formas de trabajo y en las habilidades y actitudes que las empresas demandan de los trabajadores. La capacidad y la disposición para sobrevivir en todos los sentidos del término están ahora más que nunca asociados a la capacidad de aprender y a la motivación por aprender. Y en esto las escuelas primarias y sobre todo las secundarias están fallando. Por supuesto que los factores asociados a la pobreza influyen en estas altas tasas de abandono, pero quizás también un curriculum esclerotizado y poco adaptado a las necesidades y posibilidades de los alumnos.

La escuela debe promover en los alumnos una identidad propia como personas con capacidad de aprender, de ser responsables y de emprender. Una capacidad para aprender que se concreta en lo que se ha denominado *aprendizaje autorregulado*, mediante el cual se genera en los alumnos un estilo propio de implicarse en la resolución de tareas, estableciendo sus propias metas, planteando sus propias estrategias para evaluar el grado de cumplimiento de las metas, procesando información y encontrando recursos para aprender. Y esto que es necesario para los alumnos en una sociedad cambiante lo es también para los profesores. Más adelante profundizaremos en este tema pero por ahora planteamos la necesidad del aprendizaje autónomo para los profesores.

Junto a la capacidad de aprender, un elemento que se viene considerando como de crucial importancia para dar respuesta a los desafíos actuales de las escuelas primarias es la capacidad de *liderazgo*de los profesores. En la revisión que recientemente realizara Smylie, (1998) encontró que los profesores que aspiraban a liderar, lo hacían por mejorar las escuelas, que poseían las mismas características de personalidad que los no líderes en relación a asumir riesgos, que los profesores en esta posición tienden a dedicar la mayor parte de su tiempo a desarrollar programas curriculares e instruccionales, organizando y desarrollando programas de formación o desarrollando actividades administrativas, destacando el papel de los líderes en la puesta en marcha de programas de cambio, pero queda la duda de la permanencia de estos cambios en el tiempo.

El liderazgo, tal como lo plantean las características anteriormente apuntadas parecería que es una cualidad innata y peculiar de sólo algunas personas. Sin embargo, si deseamos que la profesión docente avance nos parece que todos los profesores debemos convertirnos en líderes. En este sentido coincidimos con Foster (1997) al entender que el liderazgo no es un papel o posición separada y asumida bajo circunstancias específicas. Hemos de pensar que el liderazgo es inherente al papel del profesor como profesional, que los profesores tienen una responsabilidad que cumplir. El compromiso con el liderazgo debe infiltrarse en los profesores que se preparan para entrar en la profesión.

Y es inherente al liderazgo la capacidad de *innovación*. Nos parece que una de las exigencias que la sociedad está haciendo a los profesores de enseñanza primaria y secundaria es la capacidad de seguir aprendiendo e innovando Y para ello está la actitud y el compromiso de los profesores con la mejora que supone la innovación. Y una de las principales innovaciones que se están produciendo en la sociedad en general, y en lo que a nosotros respecta, la escuela, en particular son las *Nuevas Tecnologías de la Información y la Comunicación*. Éstas han introducido dentro de la educación la posibilidad de disponer de recursos altamente orientados a la interacción y el intercambio de ideas y materiales entre profesor y alumnos y de alumnos entre sí. Las oportunidades que ofrecen para la cooperación se extienden no sólo al aprendizaje de los alumnos, sino también a la misma enseñanza, y engloban prácticamente a todas las formas de comunicación habituales en la educación presencial. Este enfoque de aprendizaje cooperativo basado en soportes telemáticos como Internet comienza a conocerse como *educación on-line*, término bajo el que se designa todo un conjunto de métodos que se ajustan especialmente a los principios del aprendizaje adulto, en el que el intercambio de la experiencia personal con relación a un determinado contenido puede desempeñar un papel relevante en el desarrollo colectivo (Marcelo, 2002).

La simple incorporación de las nuevas tecnologías en las escuelas, no obstante, no garantiza la efectividad en los resultados alcanzados, en el sentido de que la selección de medios y recursos interactivos y su incorporación en un diseño global de entorno de teleformación, deben estar sustentados sobre la base de una teoría del aprendizaje que los justifique y delimite. Uno de los aspectos más llamativos de las nuevas tecnologías es su impacto en el Ambiente de Aprendizaje. Las nuevas tecnologías deberían incorporar un cambio en la forma de organizar la enseñanza y el aprendizaje. Y ello requiere de un profesor más centrado en el aprendizaje que en la enseñanza, y por ello es necesario cuidar de la organización y disposición de los contenidos de aprendizaje, así como de la organización del aprendizaje de los alumnos mediante tareas individuales y en grupo, con un cuidado y permanente seguimiento por parte del tutor. Es un modelo de enseñanza centrado en problemas, en donde los alumnos no son meros receptores pasivos de datos estáticos, sino que deben resolver problemas utilizando para ello los contenidos adquiridos. Estos cambios se concretan según Collins (1998) en:

- Desde una enseñanza general a una enseñanza individualizada
- Desde una enseñanza basada en la exposición y explicación a una enseñanza basada en la indagación y la construcción
- Desde trabajar con los mejores estudiantes a trabajar con todos
- Cambios hacia estudiantes más comprometidos con as tareas que realizan
- Desde una estructura competitiva a una estructura cooperativa
- Desde programas homogéneos a programas individualizados
- Desde la primacía del pensamiento verbal a la integración del pensamiento verbal y visual.

Se está demandando, por tanto un profesor entendido como un "*trabajador del conocimiento*", diseñador de ambientes de aprendizaje, con capacidad para rentabilizar los diferentes espacios en donde se produce el conocimiento. Y una profesión docente caracterizada por lo que Shulman (1998) ha denominado *una comunidad de práctica* a través de la que "*la experiencia individual pueda convertirse en colectiva*" (521). Una profesión que necesita cambiar su cultura profesional, marcada por el aislamiento y las dificultades para aprender de otros y con otros; en la que está mal visto pedir ayuda o reconocer dificultades.

La profesión docente ha ido arrastrando a lo largo su historia un déficit de consideración social, basado, según algunos en las características específicas de las condiciones de trabajo que la asemejan más a ocupaciones que a "*verdaderas*" profesiones como la Medicina o el Derecho. Se ha querido comparar sistemáticamente a la docencia con estas otras profesiones para ver si cumple las condiciones de "*un conjunto de individuos que aplican un conocimiento científico avanzado para proporcionar un servicio a los clientes y se agrupan juntos mediante la pertenencia a un cuerpo profesional que asume la responsabilidad de controlar los promedios profesionales, y que les confiere beneficios y puede* *imponer sanciones a los miembros"* (Tomlinson, 1996). Y evidentemente, como Hoyle y John (1995) mostraban, la profesión docente, por sus especiales características, no cumple con estos estrictos y clasistas criterios.

Con el discurrir de los tiempos y la implantación de las reformas educativas la profesión docente ha ido cambiando. Para algunos hacia una desprofesionalización, debido a la pérdida progresiva de autonomía y control interno. Para otros hacia una reprofesionalización, justificada por la necesidad de ampliar las tareas habitualmente asignadas a los docentes (Marcelo, 1999). En el primero de los sentidos se manifestaba David Hargreaves (1997) en un trabajo en el que reflexiona sobre el efecto que los cambios a los que nos hemos referido a lo largo de este artículo están teniendo y van a tener en la profesión docente. Para este autor, las reclamaciones y luchas actuales en el sentido de una mayor profesionalización (mayor autonomía y autocontrol interno de la profesión) de los docentes llega históricamente tarde. El avance imparable de la sociedad de la información, auspiciada como hemos visto por el uso de las Nuevas Tecnologías, va a configurar -según este autor- un escenario caracterizado por una *"progresiva desprofesionalización: una sociedad del aprendizaje donde todo el mundo enseña y aprende y nadie es un experto"* (D. Hargreaves, 1997:19).

Junto al concepto de profesionalización hemos hablado del profesionalismo, entendido en este caso como la capacidad de los individuos y de las instituciones en las que trabajan de desarrollar una actividad de calidad, comprometida con los clientes, y en un ambiente de colaboración. Los estudios sobre profesionalismo han tomado en consideración la necesidad de reprofesionalizar la función docente, y han percibido que la ampliación de funciones es positiva, y muestra un síntoma claro de que los docentes son capaces de realizar funciones que van más allá de las tareas tradicionales centradas en los alumnos y restringidas al espacio físico del aula. Este *nuevo* profesionalismo, o *profesionalismo extendido,* según la consideración de A. Hargreaves y Goodson (1996), principalmente se concreta en las actuales demandas a los profesores para que trabajen en equipo, colaboren, planifiquen conjuntamente, pero que también incluye la realización de funciones mentoras o relacionadas con la formación inicial de los profesores, así como aspectos más centrados en la formación, como la formación basada en la escuela.

Un punto de vista crítico respecto al *profesionalismo extendido* tiene que ver con el auge que se viene haciendo, y que nosotros hemos recogido a lo largo de este artículo, respecto a la necesidad de insertar en la profesión docente normas de colaboración, publicidad, compromiso compartido. Si bien hemos puesto de manifiesto que el aprendizaje organizativo requiere del trabajo planificado en común, voces autorizadas (A. Hargreaves, 1992) nos llaman la atención sobre como la colaboración no puede convertirse en una nueva ortodoxia del cambio y de la mejora educativa. La colaboración está en la base de la reforma del curriculum y de las escuelas. Innovaciones tales como la enseñanza en equipo, la planificación colaborativa, el *"coaching"* entre compañeros, el mentorazgo, o la investigación-acción colaborativa son iniciativas que pueden ir a favor de un ambiente escolar que favorezca el aprendizaje.

Algunos autores están llamando la atención acerca de la ironía de que mientras se está vendiendo a los profesores y a las escuelas la idea de que deberían ser más autónomos y responsables de las necesidades propias, a la vez se les está transmitiendo cómo deben ser sus resultados y cómo debe abordar las prioridades nacionales para mejorar la competencia internacional. Se supone que los profesores están teniendo más autonomía escolar precisamente en el mismo momento en que los parámetros con los que se espera que trabajen y mediante los cuales serán evaluados, están siendo cada vez más serios y limitados (Little y McLaughlin, 1993;Smyth,1995;Day, 2001).

Y, dado que la consideración de profesionalidad no depende sólo de la autopercepción de los profesionales, sino también de la sociedad a la que sirve, y a los clientes con los que interactúa, ha ido apareciendo desde finales de los años noventa un movimiento que llama la atención a la necesidad de establecer *estándares profesionales*, públicos, asumidos por la profesión, como garantía y compromiso ante la ciudadanía. En este sentido, y como han mostrado Yinger y Hendricks (2000), los estándares educativos constituyen una de las herramientas más poderosas para la profesionalización de la enseñanza, ya que juegan un doble papel en el desarrollo de la profesión. En primer lugar, los estándares se constituyen en una buena manera de demostrar al público y a los políticos que la profesión tiene suficientes procesos de control de calidad, controlando el acceso y el ejercicio de una práctica eficaz, y así ganar en legitimidad social. En segundo lugar, los estándares funcionan como parámetros y orientaciones para el desarrollo del trabajo profesional, ya que pueden definir una práctica eficaz en términos de los resultados deseados. Y de esta manera, los estándares se convierten en la base para organizar la formación y inicial y continua de los profesores, algo a lo que volveremos más adelante.

En la misma línea se ha venido mostrando Darling-Hammond (2001), para la que resulta fundamental que la enseñanza desarrolle su propio modelo de profesionalidad. Un modelo de profesionalidad que no pasa necesariamente por seguir el llevado a cabo por otras profesionales que han alcanzado el reconocimiento y prestigio a través de un distanciamiento respecto de los clientes, así como de un conocimiento altamente especializado. A diferencia de este modelo, la enseñanza debe insertarse en la comunidad y conectar con la vida de los alumnos, construyendo comunidades de aprendizaje relevantes y adecuadas para responder a las necesidades e intereses de los alumnos como ciudadanos con derecho a aprender.

Y para caminar hacia ese reconocimiento, entiende que *"la palanca política más importante de que se dispone para mejorar el proceso de enseñanza y aprendizaje es, probablemente, el desarrollo de unos estándares profesionales que contemplen los aspectos más importantes de la profesión docente"* (Darling-Hammond,2001: 391). Estos estándares, públicos y asumidos y desarrollados por la propia profesión pueden ser el eje vertebrador de los programas de formación inicial y continua. Unos programa que, como veremos más adelante, han estado organizados sin tener en cuenta el trabajo global del profesor en la escuela y olvidando que la formación va dirigida a que los profesores aseguren el aprendizaje de los alumnos, último criterio de calidad de la formación.

5. Nuevas formas de aprender

Ya hemos comentado las dificúltades con las que los profesores se encuentran para adaptarse a los cambios que se vienen produciendo en nuestras sociedades. Pero quizás el mayor cambio que tengan que dar aquellos que hoy en día están enseñando, es reconsidera su compromiso con el aprendizaje y la formación. Si es verdad que los profesores han seguido formándose de manera continuada, lo cierto hoy en día es que esos esfuerzos no pueden seguir siendo iniciativas individuales y exclusivamente formales, sino que debemos tender a hacer realidad ese principio, meta u orientación que es el del *aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida*.

Aspin, Chapman, Hatton y Sawano (2001), editores del *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning* comentan en la introducción de la obra, que al aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida le ha llegado su momento. La idea de que la educación y el aprendizaje son actividades y procesos que no empiezan y terminan con el inicio y final de la asistencia del individuo a las instituciones formales de educación es algo asumido desde la antigüedad clásica. Sin embargo, hay algunos fenómenos que han hecho del aprendizaje no una elección sino una obligación. Como ellos comentan, "*Estamos viviendo en una nueva era era en la que las demandas son tan complejas, tan multivariadas y tan cambiantes que la única manera que seremos capaces de sobrevivir es mediante el compromiso con un proceso de aprendizaje individual, colectivo y global a lo largo de nuestra vida y para todos nosotros.*" (xix). Un proceso de aprendizaje y formación abierto que combina la formación formal con la no formal e informal, la formación individual con la grupal.

El aprendizaje a lo largo de la vida no tiene que ver sólo con la adquisición de conocimientos sino con la actitud de desafío, capacidad de emprender, autoestima, innovación no sólo de los individuos de la cultura social (Leicester y Parker, 2001). La *European Lifelong Learning Initiative* (Longworth, 2001) ha ofrecido una definición de Lifelong learning:

- El desarrollo del potencial humano a través de
- Un proceso continuamente apoyado
- Que estimula y capacita a las personas
- Para adquirir
- Todos los conocimientos, valores, destrezas y conocimientos que requieren a lo largo de su vida
- Y para aplicarlos
- Con confianza, creatividad y disfrute
- En todos los roles, circunstancias y ambientes.

Una característica del Aprendizaje a lo Largo de la Vida, y que desde mi punto de vista lo hace sumamente interesante, es que se entiende que TODOS podemos aprender, y que el aprendizaje no tiene por qué estar limitado a las instituciones formales y tradicionales de formación. En otras palabras, el aprendizaje que se considera de valor no sólo es el aprendizaje formal, sino que el aprendizaje no formal e informal cobran la importancia que siempre han tenido aunque no hayan sido reconocidos. Aspin y Chapman (2001) comentaban al respecto que el conocimiento objetivo no sólo se almacena en bibliotecas y está presidido por autoridades que pertenecen a instituciones formales alojadas en escuelas y universidades. También se pueden encontrar en aquellos lugares donde la gente es creativa y desarrolla respuestas imaginativas a preguntas y soluciones a problemas que se pueden proponer como hipótesis para ser falseadas en un discurso público.

El desarrollo y generalización de redes de profesores, la posibilidad de aprender con otros a la distancia, la creación de escenarios abiertos y distribuidos que actualmente están siendo posibles gracias a las nuevas tecnologías de la información y la comunicación, están facilitando la visibilidad de esa forma de aprendizaje que hemos llamando informal. Y este hecho está removiendo los tranquilos cimientos de las instituciones formales de acreditación. Recogemos las palabras de Usher (2001) porque vienen a representar un indicativo del cambio que está produciendo el aprendizaje a lo largo de toda la vida en la educación y formación institucionalizadas. Dice este autor que *"Las instituciones educativas están encontrando dificultades crecientes en mantener el monopolio en la generación y diseminación del conocimiento. Cuando el conocimiento toma la forma de información, circula a través de las redes que evaden el control de las instituciones educativas. Más aun, las instituciones educativas, forman parte del mercado, dentro del negocio de la venta de conocimiento como mercancía y por lo tanto se reconstruyen a sí mismas como empresas dedicadas al marketing de estas mercancías y a competir en el "negocio" del conocimiento. No sólo se convierten en parte del engranaje para producir personal para el post-fordismo, sino que se espera que se comporten de una manera post-fordista*" (2001:175).

En este escenario, el aprendizaje deja de ser un proceso pasivo para ser autodirigido, autointernalizado y autocontrolado. Así, el aprendizaje no está dirigido por el profesor sino centrado en los alumnos. Es un tipo de aprendizaje que contrasta con el aprendizaje formal. Hager (2001) establece las diferencias en los siguientes términos:

- El formador controla el aprendizaje formal mientras que es el alumno el que controla el aprendizaje informal: el aprendizaje formal se planifica mientras que el informal no.

- El aprendizaje formal se desarrolla en instituciones educativas, en el trabajo y es ampliamente predecible. El aprendizaje informal no es predecible y no posee un currículo formal.

- Tanto en las instituciones educativas como en la formación, el aprendizaje es explícito: se espera que el que ha asistido a formación sea capaz de demostrarlo mediante exámenes escritos, respuestas orales, etc. El aprendizaje informal generalmente es implícito, y en general el aprendiz no es consciente de lo que sabe, aunque sea consciente de los resultados de ese aprendizaje.

- En el aprendizaje formal se pone énfasis en la enseñanza, en el contenido y la estructura de lo que va a ser enseñado, mientras que en el aprendizaje informal el énfasis es en el que aprende.
- En el aprendizaje informal el énfasis recae en los alumnos como individuos o en el aprendizaje individual, mientras que el aprendizaje informal a menudo es colaborativo.
- El aprendizaje formal es descontextualizado, mientras que el aprendizaje informal es de naturaleza contextualizada
- El aprendizaje formal toma forma en términos de teoría (o conocimiento) y después práctica (aplicación de la teoría), mientras que el aprendizaje informal tiene que ver más con conocer cómo se hacen las cosas.

Estas ideas sobre el aprendizaje informal nos van a alumbrar más adelante cuando revisemos la investigación sobre el conocimiento de los profesores y hagamos referencia a las aportaciones de Donald Schön sobre la epistemología de la práctica. Por ahora quisiéramos comentar algo que nos ha llamando la atención a partir de la lectura del sugerente libro que sobre la Ética del Hacker ha publicado el filósofo finlandés Pekka Himanen (2001). Para este autor, el paradigma del aprendizaje en la sociedad del conocimiento tiene mucho que ver con la forma como los hackers aprenden. Recordemos que nos referimos al hacker como una persona con conocimientos informáticos y que desarrolla por sí mismo y en colaboración con otros, alternativas y desarrollos informáticos que desafían claramente a las grandes firmas comerciales de este sector.

Pues bien, plantea Himanen, tomando como ejemplo a Linus Torval, autor del sistema operativo Linux, que el aprendizaje, en la sociedad del conocimiento, tiene que estar asociado con la pasión, con el interés por lo desconocido, por las preguntas más que por las respuestas, por el apoyo de otros que conocen, por la resolución de problemas de manera colaborativa. Ese modelo de aprendizaje en el que lo que agrupa a las personas que aprenden no es la edad sino el problema a resolver, algo parecido a la Academia de Platón. Pero, como comenta Himanen, *"La ironía es que la actual academia tiende a reproducir la estructura de aprendizaje emisor-receptor propia de los monasterios. La ironía generalmente se amplía cuando la academia construye una 'universidad virtual': el resultado es una escuela monacal computerizada"* (2001:76).

6. ¿Y qué sabemos sobre cómo aprenden los profesores?

Aprender a enseñar ha sido una constante en la preocupación de los investigadores educativos en las últimas décadas. Cientos de investigaciones y decenas de revisiones se han llevado a cabo para intentar comprender este proceso. Tanto en el tercer (Wittrock, 1986) como en el recientemente publicado cuarto *Handbook of Research on Teaching* (Richardson, 2001) encontramos capítulos en los que se revisa y sintetiza el conocimiento sobre los profesores, su formación y desarrollo. Igualmente en los *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education* (Houston, 1990; Sikula, 1996), pasando por el recientemente aparecido *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching* (Biddle, Good y Goodson, 1997), el *International Handbook of Educational Change* (Hargreaves (1998), o el *Handbook of Educational Psychology* (Berliner y Calfee, 1996) se aborda de manera más o menos amplia la investigación sobre el aprendizaje de los profesores. Estos libros, así como revisiones más recientes, aparecidas en revistas especializadas, como la de Wilson y Berne (1999), Cochran-Smith y Little, 1999), Feiman (2001), Putnam y Borko (2000), Wideen, Mayer-Smith y Moon (1998) o Zeichner (1999) nos permiten configurar un panorama bastante actualizado respecto al conocimiento acumulado sobre el proceso de aprender a enseñar, así como de sus luces y sombras. No puede ser intención de éste que les habla –o escribe- resumir lo que en centenares de páginas, otros investigadores ya han revisado. Pero tampoco dejaremos de lado la oportunidad de volver a recomponer este extenso puzzle que es el proceso de convertirse en un buen profesor.

Y para este propósito creo que puede ser de utilidad dotarnos de algún esquema conceptual que nos permita comprender la amplitud, complejidad y posibilidades de la investigación sobre aprender a enseñar. El cubo que a continuación presentamos pretende resumir en tres dimensiones las investigaciones que se han llevado a cabo. Una primera dimensión tiene que ver con una diferenciación en relación con las **fases** por las cuales transcurre el proceso de aprender a enseñar. Así, podemos diferenciar entre la **formación inicial**, entendida como el tránsito por parte del profesor en formación por un itinerario formativo diseñado específicamente para dotarle de los conocimientos, habilidades y disposiciones necesarias para ejercer su tarea docente. Una segunda fase la constituyen los primeros años de enseñanza, denominados como años de iniciación, inducción o **inserción** profesional. Una última fase de análisis del proceso de aprender a enseñar se refiere a aquellos profesores que han generado su propio repertorio profesional y que avanzan a través de experiencias de **desarrollo profesional**.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

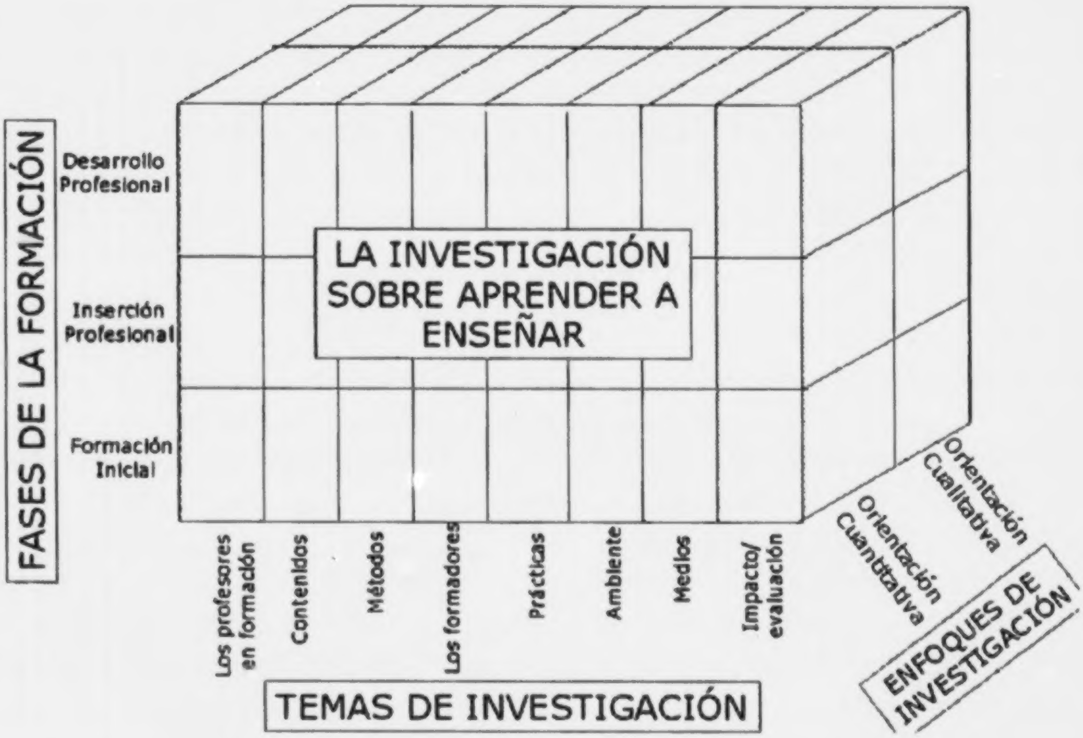


Figura 1. Tres dimensiones para explicar el proceso de aprender a enseñar

Una segunda dimensión que consideramos importante incorporar en cualquier revisión sobre la investigación en el proceso de aprender a enseñar tiene que ver con los **temas.** Hemos hecho un esfuerzo de síntesis diferenciadora para reducir a ocho los temas posibles. Nos basamos en el trabajo que hace ya algunos años realizaron Katz y Rath (1985). Los temas en cuestión se refieren a los profesores, sus conocimientos, creencias, disposiciones, actitudes, autoeficacia percibida, etc., los contenidos de la formación, los métodos y estrategias formativas, los formadores de profesores, las prácticas, así como el ambiente y la evaluación. Estos temas, evidentemente se mezclan en muchas investigaciones pero pueden servir como marco de referencia para clasificar la investigación.

Y una tercera dimensión tiene que ver con el **enfoque** adoptado por los investigadores para abordar los temas seleccionados. Aun a riesgo de simplificar de manera excesiva, nos parece adecuada una diferenciación entre enfoque cuantitativos y cualitativos. Esta ha sido una opción también tomada por Richardson y Placier (2001), en su revisión sobre la investigación en relación con el cambio de los profesores. Estos autores, basándose en un trabajo de Chin y Benne, diferencian dos enfoques principales respecto al cambio, el aprendizaje, desarrollo, socialización de los profesores: un enfoque empírico-analítico que contempla a los profesores como receptores y consumidores de propuestas de cambio que vienen de los asesores, políticos, educadores, investigadores. Se trata de un proceso lineal de cambio originado fuera de las aulas, que aporta una nueva idea, forma de pensar o programa de enseñanza basado normalmente en la investigación o en la teorías. A los profesores se les dice de qué va el cambio, se le demuestra y se espera que lo aplique. En esta visión el cambio es complejo. Una segunda orientación denominada normativa-reeducativa, parte de un movimiento más amplio de estudio fenomenológico sobre la forma como las personas dan sentido y contribuyen a la situación en la que trabajan. Los enfoques de cambio, desde esta perspectiva asumen la necesidad de reflexión profunda sobre las creencias y las prácticas y en el que el diálogo se convierte en una práctica habitual.

En la misma línea, Sykes (1998) llega a identificar tres imágenes que ilustran las características actuales de cómo se investiga el proceso de aprender a enseñar: a) el profesor entendido como *consumidor* dentro de un mercado cuasirregulado, estructurado por unos servicios que se proporcionan burocráticamente. En este caso la formación se planifica, se regula por estructuras jerárquicamente organizadas; b) el profesor entendido como un *artesano independiente* construyendo conocimiento, habilidades y materiales en un enfoque de oficio. Este modelo corresponde al profesor trabajando solo en clase que acumula sabiduría y saber hacer, analizándose cómo se adquiere y renueva el conocimiento; c) Una tercera visión asume al profesor como *profesional* que orienta su trabajo de acuerdo a las normas comunes.

Esta diferencia en los enfoques de investigación, que ya Fenstermacher (1994) utilizó para agrupar su revisión y crítica hacia la investigación sobre el conocimiento de los profesores, ha sido empleada recientemente por Cochran-Smith y Lytle (1999). Fenstermacher se planteaba las preguntas de ¿qué se sabe acerca de la enseñanza eficaz? ¿qué conocen los profesores? ¿qué conocimiento es esencial para la enseñanza? y ¿quién produce conocimiento acerca de la enseñanza?

como forma de diferenciar y clasificar enfoques distintos de investigación sobre aprender a enseñar. Evidentemente, detrás de estas preguntas están los enfoques cuantitativo (presagio-producto y proceso producto) y los enfoques cualitativos (mediacional cognitivo, ecológico). Cochran-Smith y Lytle (1999), siguiendo la idea de Fenstermacher han venido a clasificar la investigación sobre aprender a enseñar tomando como criterio las relaciones que establece entre el conocimiento que se produce y su aplicación en la práctica de la enseñanza. Así, diferencian entre:

- **Conocimiento *para* la práctica**: Esta primera concepción entiende en que la relación entre conocimiento y práctica es aquella en que el conocimiento sirve para organizar la práctica, y por ello, conocer más (contenidos, teorías educativas, estrategias instruccionales) conduce de forma más o menos directa a una práctica más eficaz. El conocimiento para enseñar es un conocimiento formal, que se deriva de la investigación universitaria, y es al que se refieren los teóricos cuando se habla de que la enseñanza ha generado un cuerpo de conocimiento diferente al conocimiento común. La práctica, desde esta perspectiva, tiene mucho que ver con la aplicación del conocimiento formal a las situaciones prácticas.
- **Conocimiento *en* la práctica**: El énfasis de la investigación sobre aprender a enseñar ha sido la búsqueda del conocimiento en la acción. Se ha estimado que lo que los profesores conocen está implícito en la práctica, en la reflexión sobre la práctica, en la indagación práctica y en la narrativa de esa práctica. Un supuesto de esta tendencia es que la enseñanza es una actividad incierta y espontánea, contextualizada y construido en respuesta a las particularidades de la vida diaria en las escuelas y las clases. El conocimiento está situado en la acción, en las decisiones y juicios que toman los profesores. Este conocimiento se adquiere mediante la experiencia y la deliberación y los profesores aprenden cuando tienen oportunidad de reflexionar sobre lo que hacen.
- **Conocimiento *de* la práctica.** Esta última tendencia se incluye dentro de la línea de investigación cualitativa, pero cercana al movimiento denominado del profesor como investigador. La idea de la que parte es que en la enseñanza no tiene sentido hablar de un conocimiento formal y otro conocimiento práctico, sino que el conocimiento se construye colectivamente dentro de comunidades locales, formadas por profesores trabajando en proyectos de desarrollo de la escuela, de formación o de indagación colaborativa (Cochran-Smith y Lytle, 1999).

La investigación sobre aprender a enseñar ha sido abordada con diferentes objetivos y finalidades. En la revisión que sobre los "modos de indagación" en formación del profesorado realizaron Lee y Yarger (1996) clasifican de una manera más amplia las tendencias que nosotros hemos resumido anteriormente. Estos autores describen los diferentes modos de indagación (entendidos una estrategia intelectual seleccionada por el investigador para plantear cuestiones de investigación en formación del profesorado) diferenciando entre los siguientes enfoques:

- Investigación *experimental y cuasi-experimental*: han sido, según estos autores, el modo tradicional de investigación en formación del profesorado. Dentro de la tradición conductista las investigaciones experimentales se han utilizado para formar a profesores para el dominio de estrategias de enseñanza específicas, bien sean conductuales, cognitivas, inductivas. Un buen ejemplo de este tipo de investigación ha sido el análisis de interacción y la microenseñanza.
- Los estudios *correlacionales* son, a partir de la revisión de Lee y Yarger muy escasos en la investigación sobre formación del profesorado. En algunos casos se han contrastado a través de análisis de regresión las características del profesor que contribuyen al rendimiento de los alumnos (paradigma presagio-producto)
- Investigación *descriptiva* tipo "survey": Este tipo de investigación se ha utilizado con amplitud por las instituciones de formación del profesorado intentando conocer las características de los candidatos, la valoración de los componentes de los programas, etc.
- Investigación con *estudio de caso*: Recientemente este modelo de investigación se ha convertido en uno de los modos de investigación más utilizados. Ello es así por las características de la formación del profesorado y la necesidad de comprender los contextos. Se ha investigado el impacto de los programas de formación del profesorado en los conocimientos, habilidades y disposiciones de los profesores en formación. En la línea de la investigación con estudio de caso se sitúa la indagación narrativa y la investigación del profesor
- Investigación *etnográfica*: Considerando que la formación del profesorado es una actividad compleja, la etnografía puede ser una herramienta de utilidad al describir y comprender temas como los grupos, la cultural la participación. Sin embargo hay pocos estudios etnográficos en formación del profesorado y los que se describen así, lo que utilizan son técnicas etnográficas.
- Investigación *histórica*: Este modo de investigación ha sido permanente a lo largo de la investigación sobre formación del profesorado indagando temas como la historia de la enseñanza y de los profesores, contratos, condiciones de trabajo, currículo de la formación del profesorado, etc.

Como hemos visto anteriormente, la investigación que se ha desarrollado en el vasto campo que es la formación del profesorado ha ido avanzando mediante la incorporación de nuevos enfoques que necesariamente han venido a complementar visiones más reduccionistas. Hoy en día conviven las investigaciones que utilizan enfoques cualitativos y cuantitativos, aunque, como señalaban Lee y Yarger (19996), sea el estudio de caso la tabla de salvación de muchos investigadores.

Pero sea un enfoque cualitativo o cuantitativo, algo que ha caracterizado a la investigación sobre formación de profesorado ha sido que los temas de investigación abordados (aquellos que hemos seleccionado para nuestro modelo) rara vez se han abordado de manera transversal. Quiero decir, que las investigaciones se han centrado en uno o dos temas pero que en escasas ocasiones se han integrado análisis de programas de formación en los que intervengan los profesores, los formadores, lo contenidos, los medios, etc. Por ello vamos a revisar algunos de los temas que más atención han recibido, sabiendo que esta revisión necesariamente debe ser selectiva y limitada al espacio que ya nos va quedando en este artículo.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

6.1. Los profesores como objeto de investigación

Uno de los temas sobre los que se ha vertido más tinta y dedicado más horas de estudio tiene que ver –no podía ser de otra forma- con la preocupación por conocer las características de los sujetos que deciden dedicarse profesionalmente a la docencia. Y esta preocupación abarca desde el inicio de la formación inicial hasta la jubilación. Y no se piense que la jubilación deja de tener interés para los investigadores. Recuérdese uno de los escenarios que hemos descrito anteriormente, elaborados por la OCDE (2001) que nos llamaba la atención acerca de la posibilidad de necesitar recurrir a profesores jubilados para que cubran los espacios dejados por otros profesores que abandonaban la enseñanza.

Las creencias de los profesores

La investigación sobre los profesores como objeto de estudio puede clasificarse en los tres momentos que hemos descrito en la Figura 1: formación inicial, inserción profesional y desarrollo profesional. En la formación inicial ha habido una especial preocupación por el análisis de las **creencias** que los profesores en formación traen cuando inician su andadura profesional. Se ha entendido que las creencias son como proposiciones, premisas que mantienen las personas acerca de lo que consideran verdadero. Las creencias, a diferencia del conocimiento proposicional no requieren una condición de verdad contrastada, y cumplen dos funciones en el proceso de aprender a enseñar. En primer lugar, las creencias influyen en la forma como aprenden los profesores; y en segundo lugar, las creencias influyen en los procesos de cambio que los profesores puedan intentar (Richardson, 1996).

La literatura de investigación sobre aprender a enseñar ha identificado tres categorias de experiencias que influyen en las creencias y conocimientos que los profesores desarrollan sobre la enseñanza:

- Experiencias personales: Incluyen aspectos de la vida que determinan una visión del mundo, creencias hacia uno mismo y en relación con los demás, ideas acerca de las relaciones entre la escuela y la sociedad, así como sobre la familia y la cultura. La procedencia socioeconómica, étnica, el sexo, religión pueden afectar las creencias acerca del aprender a enseñar.
- Experiencia con el conocimiento formal: El conocimiento formal, entendido como aquello sobre lo que debe trabajarse en la escuela. Las creencias acerca de la materia que se enseña así como la forma de enseñarla
- Experiencia escolar y de aula: Incluye todas aquellas experiencias como estudiante que contribuyen a formar una idea acerca de qué es enseñar y cual es el trabajo del profesor.

De entre los hallazgos más divulgados está el hecho de que las creencias que los profesores en formación traen consigo cuando inician su formación inicial afectan de un manera directa a la interpretación y valoración que los profesores hacen de las experiencias de formación del profesorado. Esta modalidad de *aprender a enseñar* se produce a través de lo que se ha denominado *aprendizaje por la observación* (Lortie, 1975). Aprendizaje que en muchas ocasiones no se genera de manera intencionada, sino que se va adentrando en las estructuras de cognitivas -y emocionales- de los futuros profesores de manera inconsciente, llegando a crear expectativas y creencias difíciles de remover.

Hay que hacer referencia a Pajares (1992) como uno de los investigadores que ha realizado más contribuciones en relación con el análisis de las creencias. Llamó la atención respecto a la dispersión semántica que ha caracterizado a esta línea de investigaciones, en las que se han utilizado términos como: creencia, actitud, valores, juicios, axiomas, opiniones, ideología, percepciones, concepciones, sistema conceptual, preconcepciones, disposiciones, teorías implícitas, teorías explícitas, teorías personales, procesos mentales internos, reglas de la práctica, principios prácticos, etc. Esta dispersión semántica ha producido que los resultados de investigaciones no puedan compararse por no compartir un mismo marco conceptual. Pajares ha diferenciado entre conocimiento y creencias, poniendo de manifiesto que las creencias, a diferencia del conocimiento poseen una clara connotación afectiva y evaluativa: *"el conocimiento de un tema se diferencia de los sentimientos que tengamos sobre ese tema, de la misma manera que se diferencia entre autoconcepto y autoestima, entre conocimiento de sí mismo y sentimiento del valor propio"* (Pajares, 1992:309).

Desde esta diferenciación, las investigaciones han venido mostrando que los profesores en formación entran en el programa de formación con creencias personales acerca de la enseñanza, con imágenes de buen profesor, imagen de sí mismos como profesores y la memoria de sí mismos como alumnos. Estas creencias e imágenes personales generalmente permanecen sin cambios a lo largo del programa de formación y acompaña a los profesores durante sus prácticas de enseñanza (Kagan, 1992; Feiman, 2001, Wideen, Mayer-Smith y Moon, 1998).

Pajares (1992) (Nota 1) sintetizó los resultados de la investigación de las creencias de los profesores en los siguientes principios:

Las creencias se forman en edad temprana y tienden a perpetuarse, superando contradicciones causadas por la razón, el tiempo, la escuela o la experiencia.

1. Los individuos desarrollan un sistema de creencias que estructura todas las creencias adquiridas a lo largo del proceso de transmisión cultural.
2. Los sistemas de creencias tienen una función adaptativa al ayudar al individuo a definir y comprender el mundo y a sí mismos.
3. Conocimiento y creencias están interrelacionados, pero el carácter afectivo, evaluativo y episódico de las creencias

se convierten en un filtro a través del cual todo nuevo fenómeno se interpreta.

4. Las subestructuras de creencias, como son las creencias educativas, se deben comprender en términos de sus conexiones con las demás creencias del sistema.
5. Debido a su naturaleza y origen, algunas creencias son más indiscutibles que otras.
6. Cuanto más antigua sea una creencia, más difícil es cambiarla. Las nuevas creencias son más vulnerables al cambio.
7. El cambio de creencias en los adultos es un fenómeno muy raro. Los individuos tienden a mantener creencias basadas en conocimiento incompleto o incorrecto.
8. Las creencias son instrumentales al definir tareas y al seleccionar los instrumentos cognitivos con los cuales interpretar, planificar, y tomar decisiones en relación a estas tareas; por lo tanto juegan un papel crucial al definir la conducta y organizar el conocimiento y la información.

Pero al igual que desarrollamos conocimientos y creencias generales acerca de la enseñanza, de los alumnos, la escuela o el profesor, la materia que enseñamos o pretendemos enseñar no se queda al margen de nuestras concepciones. La forma como conocemos una determinada disciplina o área curricular afecta a cómo la enseñamos. Existen múltiples evidencias que nos muestran ciertos "arquetipos" que los profesores en formación tienen sobre la disciplina que estudian, ya sea ésta matemáticas, lengua o educación física. Preguntas como ¿qué son y para qué sirven las matemáticas, lengua, educación física, etc.? son necesarias de plantear cuando pretendemos "*partir de lo que el alumno ya sabe*". Tomando el contenido que se enseña y se aprende como argumento de la indagación, podemos encontrar diferencias en el comportamiento observable de profesores en función del dominio que posean del contenido que enseñan (Onofre, 2001).

El conocimiento de los profesores

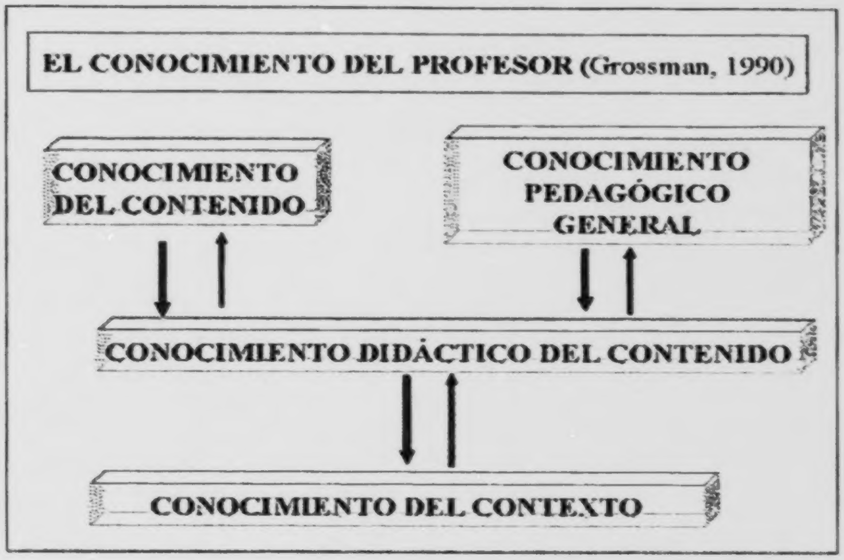
Desde la aportaciones de Shulman (1986) o Schön (1983) en las que llamaron la atención acerca de que la enseñanza no era una actividad técnica, sino que se regía por un tipo de conocimiento ligado a la acción, a la práctica, han sido miles las investigaciones que se han desarrollado en el campo de la formación del profesorado en las que se ha intentado conocer qué conocen los profesores, cómo llegan a conocerlo y –lo que resulta más importante- cómo podemos mejorar el conocimiento de los profesores. Ya hemos hecho referencia a las preguntas formuladas por Fenstermacher (1994) que nos sirven para entender las respuestas investigadoras que se han venido dando a lo largo de estos años. Y a partir de aquí identificamos dos tipos de trabajo: aquellos que pretenden describir qué conocen los profesores (tipos de conocimiento, forma de adquisición) y aquellos otros que buscan determinar qué *deben* conocer los profesores para enseñar de manera eficaz.

En esta última línea de discurso se sitúan Ball y Cohen (1999) cuando plantean los conocimientos que los profesores deberían poseer:

1. Deberían comprender bien la materia que enseñan, de forma muy diferente a la que aprendieron como estudiantes. Necesitan comprender en profundidad el contenido, así como la forma en que éste se conecta con la vida cotidiana para resolver problemas.
2. Además de conocer la materia que enseñan, los profesores deben conocer acerca de los alumnos, cómo son, qué les interesará, etc.
3. Los profesores necesitan aprender que conocer a los alumnos no es simplemente conocer a alumnos individualmente. Debido a que los profesores enseñan a alumnos de procedencia muy diversa deben conocer acerca de las diferencias culturales, incluyendo el lenguaje, clase social, familia y comunidad.
4. Los profesores necesitan también conocer sobre didáctica, modelos de enseñanza , así como sobre la cultura del aula.

Una de las aportaciones que siguen siendo utilizadas para comprender el conocimiento de los profesores es la desarrollada por Grossman (1990) que caracterizó el conocimiento de la siguiente forma:

BEST COPY AVAILABLE


EL CONOCIMIENTO DEL PROFESOR (Grossman, 1990)
CONOCIMIENTO DEL CONTENIDO
CONOCIMIENTO PEDAGÓGICO GENERAL
CONOCIMIENTO DIDÁCTICO DEL CONTENIDO
CONOCIMIENTO DEL CONTEXTO

En primer lugar, Grossman destaca la necesidad de que los profesores posean un conocimiento pedagógico general, relacionado con la enseñanza, con sus principios generales, con el aprendizaje y los alumnos, así como con el tiempo de aprendizaje académico, el tiempo de espera, la enseñanza en pequeños grupos, la gestión de clase, etc. También incluye el conocimiento sobre técnicas didácticas, estructura de las clases, planificación de la enseñanza, teorías del desarrollo humano, procesos de planificación curricular, evaluación, cultura social e influencias del contexto en la enseñanza, historia y filosofia de la educación, aspectos legales de la educación, etc

Junto al conocimiento pedagógico, los profesores han de poseer conocimiento de la materia que enseñan. Saber sobre la asignatura que enseñamos, tener un manejo fluido de la disciplina que impartimos es una zona ineludible del oficio docente. Al respecto, Buchmann nos señala que "conocer algo nos permite enseñarlo; y conocer un contenido con profundidad significa estar mentalmente organizado y bien preparado para enseñarlo de una forma general" (1984:37). Cuando el formador no posee conocimientos adecuados de la estructura de la disciplina que está enseñando, puede representar erróneamente el contenido a los alumnos. El conocimiento que los formadores poseen del contenido a enseñar también influye en el qué y el cómo enseñan.

El Conocimiento del Contenido incluye diferentes componentes, de los cuales dos son los más representativos: conocimiento sintáctico y sustantivo. El Conocimiento Sustantivo se constituye con la información, las ideas y los tópicos a conocer, es decir, el cuerpo de conocimientos generales de una materia, los conceptos específicos, definiciones, convenciones, y procedimientos. Este conocimiento es importante en la medida en que determina lo que los profesores van a enseñar y desde qué perspectiva lo harán. Por ejemplo, en Historia, el marco de análisis cultural, político o ideológico que se escoja, puede determinar el qué se enseña, y cómo se enseña. El Conocimiento Sintáctico del contenido completa al anterior, y se encarna en el dominio que tiene el formador de los paradigmas de investigación en cada disciplina, del conocimiento en relación con cuestiones como la validez, tendencias, perspectivas e investigación en el campo de su especialidad. En Matemática, sería la distinción entre convención y construcción lógica; en Historia incluiría las diferentes perspectivas de interpretación de un mismo fenómeno; en Ciencias Naturales, el conocimiento sobre el empirismo y el método de investigación científica, etc.

El Conocimiento Didáctico del Contenido aparece como un elemento central de los saberes del formador. Representa la combinación adecuada entre el conocimiento de la materia a enseñar y el conocimiento pedagógico y didáctico referido a cómo enseñarla. En los últimos años, se ha venido trabajando en diferentes contextos educativos para clarificar cuáles son los componentes de este tipo de conocimiento profesional de la enseñanza. El Conocimiento Didáctico del Contenido, como línea de investigación, representa la confluencia de esfuerzos de investigadores didácticos con investigadores de materias específicas preocupados por la formación del profesorado. El Conocimiento Didáctico del Contenido nos dirige a un debate en relación con la forma de organización y de representación del conocimiento, a través de analogías y metáforas. Plantea la necesidad de que los profesores en formación adquieran un conocimiento experto del contenido a enseñar, para que puedan desarrollar una enseñanza que propicie la comprensión de los alumnos.

Shulman (1992) manifestaba la necesidad de que los profesores construyeran puentes entre el significado del contenido curricular y la construcción realizada por los alumnos de ese significado. Este prestigioso investigador, afirma que "los profesores llevan a cabo esta hazaña de honestidad intelectual mediante una comprensión profunda, flexible y abierta del contenido; comprendiendo las dificultades más probables que tendrán los alumnos con estas ideas [...] ; comprendiendo las variaciones de los métodos y modelos de enseñanza para ayudar a los alumnos en su construcción del conocimiento; y estando abierto a revisar sus objetivos, planes y procedimientos en la medida en que se desarrolla la interacción con los estudiantes. Este tipo de comprensión no es exclusivamente técnica, ni solamente reflexiva. No es sólo el conocimiento del contenido, ni el dominio genérico de métodos de enseñanza. Es una mezcla de todo lo anterior, y es principalmente pedagógico" (Shulman, 1992:12).

Un cuarto componente del conocimiento que han de adquirir los formadores y los profesores, radica en el dónde y a quién se enseña. Los profesores han de adaptar su conocimiento general de la materia a los alumnos y a las condiciones particulares de la escuela. Yinger ha planteado la dimensión ecológica del conocimiento, entendiendo que el conocimiento no existe en los individuos, sino en las relaciones que se producen entre estos y el ambiente en que se desarrollan. La vida del aula, en este sentido "está constituida por los sistemas culturales, físicos, sociales, históricos, y personales, que existen tanto dentro como fuera de la clase [...] La responsabilidad del profesor en la clase consiste en comprender las conversaciones que están ocurriendo dentro y entre todos los sistemas y reconocer cuáles son apropiados para la actividad de la clase. El profesor actúa como guía y sujeto que traslada la estructura, la acción, y la información incluida en cada sistema" (Yinger, 1991:31).

Lo comentado hasta ahora nos plantea la idea de que el conocimiento de los profesores se construye en interacción con las experiencias anteriores y actuales, en contacto con la práctica, así como en relación con las actividades de formación en las que los profesores participan. Pero además de su carácter *construido*, el conocimiento de los profesores tiene otras dimensiones a las que recientemente Putnam y Borko se ha referido en algunos artículos de interés (Putnam y Borko, 2000a y b). Ellos hacen una propuesta, desde mi punto de vista muy interesante que amplía las estrechas miras de la investigación individualista que ha sido aquélla que ha tratado de analizar el conocimiento de profesores aisladamente. Proponen considerar que el conocimiento de los profesores, además de construido, debe ser entendido como un conocimiento contextualizado, social y distribuido.

Se ha venido entendiendo que la formación y el aprendizaje del profesor puede producirse, como hasta ahora hemos comentado, de forma relativamente autónoma y personal. Pero poco a poco ha ido ganando terreno la teorías que entienden la formación como un proceso que ocurre no de forma aislada sino dentro de un *espacio intersubjetivo* y **social** (Pastré, 1994). Así, aprender a enseñar no debería entenderse sólo como un fenómeno aislado, sino básicamente como una experiencia que ocurre en interacción con un contexto o ambiente con el que el individuo interacciona. Es la tesis del enfoque sociocultural del aprendizaje que establece que la actividad cognitiva del individuo no puede estudiarse sin tener en cuenta los contextos relacionales, sociales y culturales en que se lleva a cabo (Wertsch, 1993).

Esta idea ha sido asumida por Yinger (1991), quien propone utilizar el concepto "working knowledge", para hacer ver que el conocimiento se produce en diferentes situaciones. Este autor habla que *"Estamos comenzando a ver que los enfoques y las concepciones cambian desde lo individual a lo cooperativo y comunitario, de centrarse en la información a hacerlo en la acción, desde supuestos mecanicistas a supuestos organismicos, desde la medición a la narrativa, desde la abstracción a la concreción, desde las operaciones a las conversaciones"* (Yinger, 1991:5).

Resulta de gran interés y proyección este enfoque, puesto que pone de manifiesto que la *unidad de análisis* del proceso de aprender a enseñar son los procesos de interacción social, llamando la atención al análisis conversacional: *"la conversación se considera el contexto natural en el que las habilidades cognitivas de los sujetos se transforman en acciones y se construyen en torno a la interacción interindividual"* (Schubauer-Leoni y Grossen, 1993:452). Así, los grupos sociales crean lo que se ha venido en llamar "comunidades discursivas" que comparten formas de pensar y de comunicarse. Comunidades que establecen redes y que sirven para compartir, intercambiar, situarse en el mundo, recibir apoyo, etc. (Lieberman y Grolnick, 1998).

Completando la idea anterior, se ha venido avanzando en entender que el conocimiento en general y el pedagógico en particular no puede comprenderse al margen del contexto en el que surge y al que se aplica. McLellan afirma que *"el modelo de conocimiento situado se basa en el principio de que el conocimiento está situado contextualmente, y está influido fundamentalmente por la actividad, el contexto y la cultura en la que se utiliza"* (1996:6). No cabe, por tanto, diferenciar de manera radical el conocimiento que se adquiere y el contexto en el que ese conocimiento se utiliza: "el*conocimiento sobre la enseñanza no puede aprenderse de forma independiente de las situaciones en las que éste se utiliza"* (Marx et al. 1998:34). Como consecuencia de entender el conocimiento de manera **contextualizada** se nos plantea con dureza la pregunta de ¿qué utilidad tiene para la formación inicial del profesorado un conocimiento expresado de forma proposicional, sin vínculos con la situación o contexto donde pueda contrastarse o aplicarse?

Hablamos por tanto de la capacidad de transferencia de aprendizaje que nuestros profesores en formación tienen de los conocimientos que la institución de formación considera básicos para aprender a enseñar. También nos plantea la necesidad de revisar la forma como se presenta, comunica y construye ese conocimiento.

Una última característica del conocimiento que caracteriza el aprender a enseñar, es que no reside en una sola persona, sino sino que está **distribuido**, entre individuos, grupos y ambientes simbólicos y físicos (Putnam y Borko, 2000b). Se asume la idea de que para el desarrollo de tareas complejas, y aprender a enseñar evidentemente lo es, ninguna persona posee la totalidad de conocimientos y habilidades de forma individual.

Admitir este principio nos lleva a entender que es el trabajo en equipo lo que conduce a un mejor uso del conocimiento, lo que lleva a mejorar la capacidad de resolución de problemas. Como Senge plantea en su sugerente libro titulado *La Quinta Disciplina*: *"Ya no basta con tener una persona que aprenda para la organización... Ya no es posible "otear el panorama" y ordenar a los demás que sigan las órdenes del "gran estratega". Las organizaciones que cobrarán relevancia en el* *futuro serán las que descubran cómo aprovechar el entusiasmo y la capacidad de aprendizaje de la gente en todos los niveles de la organización"* (Senge, 1992:11-12).

La idea del conocimiento distribuido se ha visto impulsada por el impacto de las Nuevas Tecnologías, principalmente Internet. La posibilidad de que los profesores puedan acceder a conocimientos y contactos personales con profesores distantes geográficamente, la posibilidad de pertenencia a "*comunidades virtuales*" está ampliando las posibilidades de lo que se entiende por aprender a enseñar (Marcelo, 2002).

Los profesores pasan por diferentes fases en el proceso de aprender a enseñar

Esta línea de investigación es una de las pocas que ha presentado resultados transversales en alguno de los ejes que hemos descrito en la Figura 1. Se trata de la investigación que pretende establecer diferencias entre profesores en función de la edad, así como de lo que se ha denominado "expertise". Y esta evolución, salvo en casos excepcionales, se ha comenzado a analizar a partir del primer año de experiencia docente. Por una parte tenemos aquellos estudios que intentan comprender el proceso de convertirse en experto, y por otro aquellos otros estudios que analizan qué hacen y qué caracteriza a los profesores expertos. Dentro de estos estudios ha sido clásico el contraste entre los profesores expertos y principiantes. Hay que señalar que cuando hablamos del profesor experto nos referimos no sólo a un profesor con, al menos, cinco años de experiencia docente, sino sobre todo a una persona con un "*elevado nivel de conocimiento y destreza, cosa que no se adquiere de forma natural, sino que requiere una dedicación especial y constante*" (Bereiter y Scardamalia, 1986: 10). Así, la competencia profesional del profesor experto no se consigue a través del mero transcurrir de los años. No es totalmente cierto, como señala Berliner, que la simple experiencia sea el mejor profesor. Si no se reflexiona sobre la conducta no se llegará a conseguir un pensamiento y conducta experta (Berliner, 1986).

Según Bereiter y Scardamalia, los sujetos expertos -en cualquiera de las áreas- tienen en común las siguientes características: complejidad de las destrezas, es decir, el experto realiza sus acciones apoyándose en una estructura diferente y más compleja que la del principiante, ejerciendo un control voluntario y estratégico sobre las partes del proceso, que se desarrolla más automáticamente en el caso del principiante. En segundo lugar, figura la cantidad de conocimiento que el experto posee en relación al principiante, que posee menos conocimientos. En tercer lugar señalan la estructura del conocimiento. Para Bereiter y Scardamalia, "*los principiantes tienden a tener lo que podemos describir como una estructura de conocimiento 'superficial', unas pocas ideas generales y un conjunto de detalles conectados con la idea general, pero no entre sí. Los expertos, por otra parte, tienen una estructura de conocimiento profunda y multinivel, con muchas conexiones inter e intranivel*" (1986: 12). La última característica que diferencia a expertos de principiantes es la representación de los problemas: el sujeto experto atiende a la estructura abstracta del problema y utiliza una variedad de tipos de problemas almacenados en su memoria. Los principiantes, por el contrario están influidos por el contenido concreto del problema y, por tanto, tienen dificultades para representarlo de forma abstracta (Marcelo, 1999).

Otro de estos estudios fue el que llevaron a cabo Sternberg y Horvarth (1995) que mostró que *"La primera diferencia pertenece al dominio del conocimiento. Los expertos poseen mayor conocimiento y lo emplean de forma más eficaz para resolver problemas que los principiantes. La segunda diferencia tiene que ver la eficacia en la resolución de problemas. Los expertos hacen más en menos tiempo (en su dominio de expertise) que los principiantes. La tercera diferencia tiene que ver con la intuición. Es más probable que los expertos lleguen a las soluciones más apropiadas."* (10).

Pero dejando aparte los estudios sobre profesores expertos, cabe destacar las investigaciones que han intentado establecer etapas evolutivas dentro de la carrera profesional de los profesores. Huberman, Thompson y Weiland (1998) sintetizaron esta línea de investigación, ofreciendo un cuadro comparativo respecto de seis estudios:

Fases Etapas	Unruh & Turner (1970)	Gregorc (1973)	Burden (1982)	Feiman & Floden (1983)	Huberman et. Al. (1989)	Fessler & Christensen (1992)
1	Periodo inicial de la enseñanza (1-6 años)	Llegar a ser profesor	Supervivencia (primer año)	Supervencia	Entrada a la carrera y socialización	Formación inicial
2	Creciendo en seguridad (6-15 años)	Crecimiento	Ajuste (2-4 años)	Consolidación	Diversificación y cambio	Inserción
3	Periodo de madurez (más de 15 años)	Madurez	Madurez (más de 5 años)	Renovación	Estabilización y cuestionamiento	Competencia
4		Funcionamiento completo		Madurez	Serenidad	Entusiasmo y crecimiento
5		Profesional			Conservadurismo	Frustración
6					Desencanto	Estabilidad
7						Cese y salida

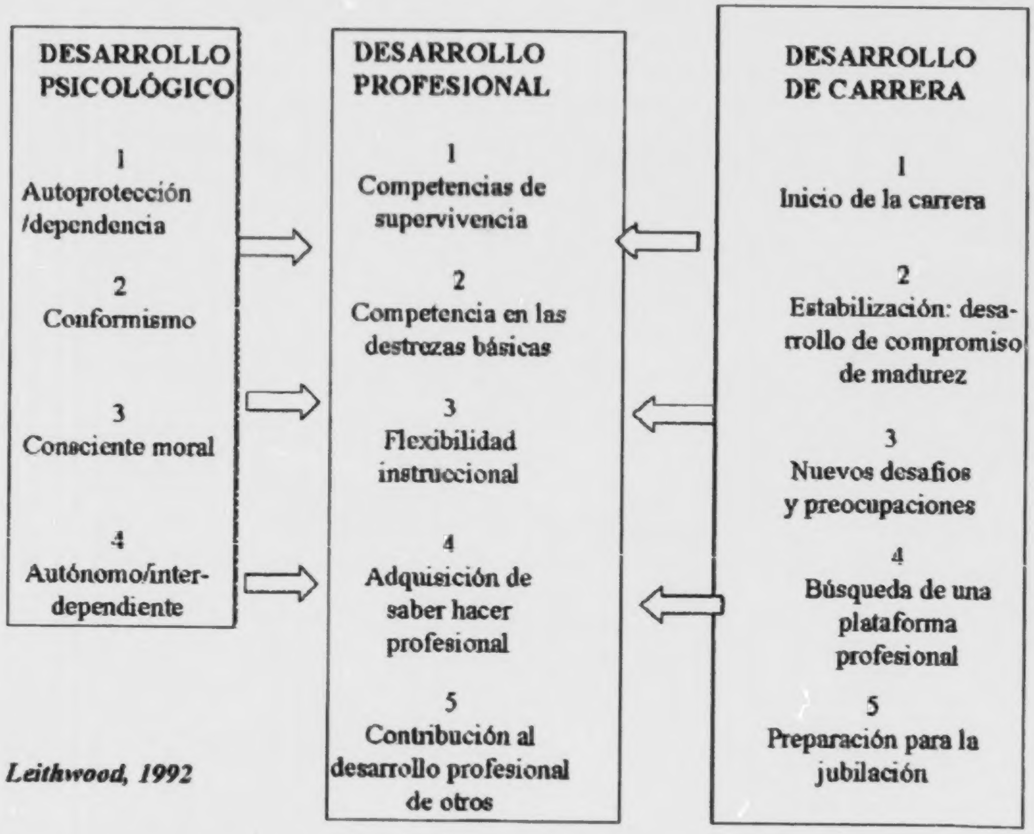
BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Como puede comprobarse por el compendio realizado por Huberman, Thompson y Weiland, existe sintonía entre los investigadores a la hora de encontrar diferentes momentos en el desarrollo de un repertorio docente que posibilite a los profesores una enseñanza de calidad. No deben entenderse las etapas como momentos fijos por los cuales todos los profesores están obligados a pasar y en los mismos momentos, sino como indicadores flexibles (Richardson y Placier, 2001).

En la misma línea, Leithwood (1992) hizo una propuesta que vinculaba tres líneas de investigación que habían venido existiendo de manera independiente. Por una parte, las teorías sobre el desarrollo moral y psicológico de las personas, el desarrollo en la adquisición de competencia profesional, y el desarrollo en el ciclo de la carrera. Como se observa en la Figura N° 2, el desarrollo de la competencia profesional es un proceso en el que se produce una evolución, al igual que ocurre en las diferentes fases del desarrollo personal. Para Leithwood, la primera etapa supondría el Desarrollo de destrezas de supervivencia, en la que el profesor llega a dominar destrezas de gestión de clase, a utilizar diferentes modelos de enseñanza, aunque los profesores en esta etapa sean incapaces de reflexionar sobre la elección de un modelo u otro. A nivel de desarrollo personal, esta fase se correspondería con la fase de autoprotección, y concretismo cognitivo.

La segunda fase sería la de Competencia en las destrezas básicas de enseñanza, e implica que el profesor posee destrezas de gestión de clase bien desarrolladas; destrezas en el uso de distintos modelos de enseñanza y de evaluación formativa de los alumnos. El tercer nivel se denomina de Desarrollo de flexibilidad instruccional, y es aquél en el que el profesor tiene automatizadas las destrezas de gestión de clase; es consciente de la necesidad de conocer y manejar otros modelos de enseñanza, de forma que la elección de un modelo de enseñanza se realiza a partir de analizar el interés para los alumnos. Esta es una etapa que se relaciona con una mayor consciencia moral de los profesores, así como por una implicación en nuevas actividades que le permitan un mayor desarrollo profesional. En la cuarta fase, los profesores adquieren Competencia profesional de forma amplia y reflexiva, tomando la gestión de clase integrada en un programa, y no tratada de forma independiente, así como se posee ya un dominio experto en la aplicación de un amplio repertorio de modelos de enseñanza. La evaluación de los alumnos se lleva a cabo de forma formativa y sumativa, utilizando una variedad de técnicas.

Si las anteriores etapas representaban un proceso de adquisición de competencia profesional a nivel de enseñanza, en las siguientes etapas el componente didáctico deja su lugar al de asesoramiento. Leithwood identifica la etapa que denomina Contribución al desarrollo didáctico de los compañeros, en la cual el profesor puede desempeñar actividades de asesoramiento, mentorazgo, supervisión de compañeros que se encuentren en etapas previas. La última etapa del desarrollo de la Competencia profesional la denomina Leithwood como de Participación en decisiones educativas de alto nivel en el sistema educativo.


DESARROLLO PSICOLÓGICO
1
Autoprotección /dependencia
2
Conformismo
3
Consciente moral
4
Autónomo/inter-dependiente
DESARROLLO PROFESIONAL
1
Competencias de supervivencia
2
Competencia en las destrezas básicas
3
Flexibilidad instruccional
4
Adquisición de saber hacer profesional
5
Contribución al desarrollo profesional de otros
DESARROLLO DE CARRERA
1
Inicio de la carrera
2
Estabilización: desa-rrollo de compromiso de madurez
3
Nuevos desafíos y preocupaciones
4
Búsqueda de una plataforma profesional
5
Preparación para la jubilación

Leithwood, 1992

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Figura N° 3. Modelo de integración del Desarrollo Psicológico, Ciclos Vitales y Desarrollo de la Competencia profesional

Una de las etapas claramente caracterizadas en las diferentes investigaciones tiene que ver con los primeros años de enseñanza, denominado periodo de iniciación o inserción profesional. Éste ha sido un periodo que ha recibido mucha atención por parte de los investigadores.

La inserción profesional en la enseñanza, como hemos dicho, es el periodo de tiempo que abarca los primeros años, en los cuales los profesores han de realizar la transición desde estudiantes a profesores. Es un periodo de tensiones y aprendizajes intensivos en contextos generalmente desconocidos y durante el cual los profesores principiantes deben adquirir conocimiento profesional además de conseguir mantener un cierto equilibrio personal. Es éste el concepto de inducción que asume Vonk, autor holandés con una década de investigaciones centradas en éste ámbito: *"definimos la inducción como la transición desde profesor en formación hasta llegar a ser un profesional autónomo. .. La inducción se puede entender mejor como una parte de un continuo en el proceso de desarrollo profesional de los profesores"* (1996:115).

Los profesores principiantes tienen, según Feiman (2001) dos tareas que cumplir: deben enseñar y deben aprender a enseñar. Independientemente de la calidad del programa de formación inicial que hayan cursado, hay algunas cosas que sólo se aprenden en la práctica y ello repercute en que este primer año sea un año de supervivencia, descubrimiento, adaptación, aprendizaje y transición. Las principales tareas con que se enfrentan los profesores principiantes son: adquirir conocimientos sobre los estudiantes, el currículo y el contexto escolar; diseñar adecuadamente el currículo y la enseñanza; comenzar a desarrollar un repertorio docente que les permita sobrevivir como profesor; crear una comunidad de aprendizaje en el aula, y continuar desarrollando una identidad profesional. Y el problema es que esto deben hacerlo cargados con las mismas responsabilidades que los profesores más experimentados (Marcelo, 1999).

Ray Bolam, autor inglés, también dedicado durante años al estudio del periodo de inserción, lo define como *"el proceso de apoyo y formación que de forma creciente se ve necesario para el éxito en el primer año de enseñanza. Los políticos tienden a interesarse más por la inducción cuando existen problemas de reclutamiento de profesores, viéndolo como el medio que mejora la retención, consiguiendo animar a los profesores principiantes para que permanezcan en la docencia. Los profesionales tienden a estar interesados en la inducción al considerarla un periodo puente entre la formación inicial y la permanente, y por tanto un periodo que sirve de fundamento para del desarrollo profesional continuo"* (1995:613)

El periodo de inserción profesional se configura como un momento importante en la trayectoria del futuro profesor. Un periodo importante porque los profesores deben realizar la transición de estudiantes a profesores, por ello surgen dudas, tensiones, debiendo adquirir un adecuado conocimiento y competencia profesional en un breve período de tiempo . En este primer año los profesores son principiantes, y en muchos casos, incluso en su segundo y tercer año pueden todavía estar luchando para establecer su propia identidad personal y profesional (Esteve, 1997).

Los cambios que sufre el profesor al pasar de estudiante a profesor principiante y de éste a experto o experimentado, se suceden a través de una serie de estadios, *"que normalmente se ven como irreversibles de alguna manera"* (Burden, 1990:311). Lo que conduce al cambio son, fundamentalmente, factores madurativos dentro del individuo y factores interactivos entre las características personales y la estimulación que reciben del entorno.

Fue Simon Veenman (1984) quien ha popularizado el concepto de "choque con la realidad" para referirse a la situación por la que atraviesan muchos enseñantes en su primer año de docencia. Según este autor holandés, el primer año se caracteriza por ser, en general, un proceso de intenso aprendizaje -del tipo ensayo-error en la mayoría de los casos-, y caracterizado por un principio de supervivencia, y por un predominio del valor de lo práctico. Los programas de iniciación tratan de establecer estrategias para reducir o reconducir el denominado "choque con la realidad". Los profesores principiantes se encuentran con ciertos problemas específicos de su estatus profesional. Valli (1992) plantea que son la imitación acrítica de conductas observadas en otros profesores; el aislamiento de sus compañeros; la dificultad para transferir el conocimiento adquirido en su etapa de formación, y el desarrollo de una concepción técnica de la enseñanza, los problemas que más amenazan a los profesores principiantes.

El proceso que siguen los profesores para aprender a enseñar, esto es, para adquirir competencia y habilidad como docentes ha sido explicado desde diferentes perspectivas teóricas. En un caso se hace hincapié en las *preocupaciones de los profesores* como indicadores de diferentes etapas de desarrollo profesional. En otro caso se concibe al profesor desde un punto de vista fundamentalmente *cognitivo* y al aprender a enseñar como un proceso de madurez intelectual. Existe un último marco para el análisis del proceso de iniciación que hace mayor hincapié en los elementos *sociales* y culturales de la profesión docente y en su asunción por parte del profesor principiante.

Desde este ultimo enfoque, se estudia el periodo de iniciación como un proceso mediante el cual los nuevos profesores aprenden e interiorizan las normas, valores, conductas, etc. que caracterizan a la cultura escolar en la que se integran. Se entiende que la socialización *"es el proceso mediante el cual un individuo adquiere el conocimiento y las destrezas sociales necesarias para asumir un rol en la organización"* (Van Maanen y Schein, 1979:211).

El periodo de iniciación a la enseñanza representa el ritual que ha de permitir transmitir la cultura docente al profesor principiante (los conocimientos, modelos, valores y símbolos de la profesión), la integración de la cultura en la personalidad del propio profesor, así como la adaptación del profesor principiante al entorno social en que se desarrolla su actividad docente. Esta adaptación puede ser fácil cuando el entorno socio-cultural coincide con las características del profesor principiante. Sin embargo, este proceso puede ser más dramático cuando el profesor principiante debe integrarse en culturas que les son desconocidas hasta el momento de empezar a enseñar. Es el caso de profesores principiantes enseñando en aulas multiculturales, de las cuales han tenido escasa información hasta el momento de ser destinados a una de ellas.

6.3. Los programas de formación

Una tercera temática de investigación que hemos escogido abarca los diferentes componentes del currículo de la formación del profesorado. En este amplio tema tendremos que diferenciar entre los programas dirigidos a los profesores en formación, a los profesores principiantes y los programas de formación tendentes al desarrollo profesional de los profesores.

Los programas de formación inicial

¿Qué deben saber los profesores? Algunas respuestas se han venido dando a partir de la investigación sobre el conocimiento de los profesores a la que anteriormente hemos hecho referencia. Pero a pesar de ellas, hay escasez de investigaciones que hayan tomado como objeto de estudio el programa de formación de profesorado en su totalidad. Hay sí muchas investigaciones sobre elementos específicos de los programas, especialmente en relación con las prácticas de enseñanza. Y en estas investigaciones generalmente queda ausente la descripción y análisis de los componentes de enseñanza práctica en las instituciones de formación, así como la tarea de los formadores. Y resulta casi una verdad asumida la dificultad de los programas de formación para modificar las creencias que los estudiantes traen consigo cuando se incorporan a un programa de formación (Richardson y Placier, 2001). Feiman, que ha investigado a lo largo de toda su vida sobre la formación de los profesores, concluye su revisión con las siguientes palabras: "*Los programas tradicionales de formación inicial del profesorado y de desarrollo profesional no están diseñados para promover aprendizajes complejos ni en los profesores ni en los alumnos. El típico programa de formación inicial representa una intervención muy débil comparada con la influencia que los profesores en formación han tenido en su etapa escolar, así como de las experiencias de prácticas*" (2001:1014).

Darling-Hammond y MacDonald (2000) han analizado siete programas de formación del profesorado norteamericanos considerados como programas eficaces. El análisis comparado de sus características les lleva a concretar una serie de elementos que los caracterizan:

- *Coherencia conceptual*: La coherencia conceptual es el elemento más importante en un programa de formación inicial del profesorado. Proporciona una visión orientadora acerca del tipo de profesor que se está formando, una visión de aprendizaje, del papel del profesor y de la escuela, e incluye los valores y creencias que después se ven en el currículo y en las oportunidades de aprendizaje para los alumnos en prácticas.
- *Prácticas de enseñanza integradas y con un propósito*: La coherencia en el segmento de prácticas de enseñanza es un elemento fundamental: observaciones, orientación, práctica guiada, aplicación de conocimiento e indagación son elementos importantes. En los programas que estudian Darling-Hammond y MacDonald, las prácticas están organizadas, para promover reflexión y un aprendizaje teórico, utilizan diarios, tareas, seminarios semanales, etc. Se cuida la localización múltiple de los alumnos en prácticas. Igualmente, todos los alumnos en prácticas trabajan con profesores supervisores que han completado cursos especiales ofrecidos por la Universidad. Incluyen mentoring y evaluación.
- *Atención a los profesores como sujetos que aprenden*: La meta del programa de formación del profesorado es que los profesores aprendan. Los profesores se esfuerzan porque los alumnos sigan aprendiendo mediante el apoyo a nuevas ideas de los alumnos, compartiendo ideas y conocimientos. Un reconocimiento del alumno como sujeto que aprende comienza con el reconocimiento de que los profesores en formación llegan con creencias e imágenes que deben ser transformadas.

Una de las críticas a los programas de formación del profesorado es su escasa adaptación a los cambios que se producen, y que hemos analizado en la primera parte de este artículo, en relación con la diversidad de los estudiantes en las aulas. De manera gráfica, Ladson-Billing afirmaba que "*se sigue formando a los profesores para enseñar en escuelas ideales con niños blancos, monolingües, de clase media y de familias con dos padres*" (1998:87). A esta crítica se unen Grant y Wieczorek (2000) al destacar la ausencia de un análisis crítico sobre los aspectos y condicionamientos sociales del conocimiento, que pueden encontrarse en temas como la raza, clase social, género y poder, así como los elementos históricos y políticos ligados a la producción de conocimiento. Al respecto, ya en 1992, Zeichner alertaba sobre la necesidad de atender a la diversidad desde dentro de los programas de formación inicial, cuyos elementos podrían ser los siguientes:

ELEMENTOS CLAVES DE UN PROGRAMA DE FORMACION DE PROFESORES PARA LA DIVERSIDAD
Se ayuda a los estudiantes a desarrollar un mayor conocimiento de su propia identidad étnica y cultural
Se ayuda a los estudiantes a examinar sus propias creencias hacia otros grupos etnoculturales

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Se enseña a los estudiantes la dinámica de prejuicios y racismo, y a como abordarla en educación

Se enseña a los estudiantes sobre la opresión económica y sobre las prácticas educativas que contribuyen a la reproducción de las desigualdades sociales

El curriculum de la formación del profesorado aborda la historia y la contribución de los diferentes grupos etnoculturales

Se proporciona información a los estudiantes sobre las características y estilos de aprendizaje de diferentes grupos e individuos, y se les enseña sobre las limitaciones de esta información

El programa de formación presta mucha atención a la investigación sobre el conocimiento sociocultural que aborda las relaciones entre lenguaje, cultura y aprendizaje

Se enseña a los estudiantes diferentes procedimientos por los cuales pueden obtener información acerca de las comunidades presentes en la clase

Se enseña a los estudiantes cómo valorar las relaciones entre los métodos que se utilizan en la clase, los estilos de aprendizaje, y los estilos de interacción en los hogares y comunidades de los estudiantes

Se enseña a los estudiantes a utilizar una variedad de estrategias de enseñanza y de evaluación que sean sensibles a las variaciones culturales y lingüísticas, así como a adaptar la enseñanza y la evaluación a los recursos culturales que los estudiantes aportan a la escuela

A los estudiantes se les presentan ejemplos de enseñanza eficaz con estudiantes de minorías étnicas y lingüística

Los estudiantes realizan experiencias prácticas con adultos y/o niños de otros grupos etnoculturales, siguiendo una reflexión guiada

Los estudiantes realizan unas prácticas de enseñanza en escuelas a las que asisten estudiantes procedentes de minorías étnicas y lingüísticas

Los estudiantes viven y enseñan en una comunidad minoritaria (inmersión)

La enseñanza se desarrolla en una situación de grupo que propicia el apoyo tanto intelectual como social

Quizás el componente curricular más estudiado en los programas de formación inicial de profesores sean las prácticas de enseñanza. Las practicas de enseñanza se asumen como uno de los componentes curriculares más importantes de la formación del profesorado por varios motivos: les permite a los profesores en formación tomar contacto con situaciones reales de enseñanza; es una situación de aprendizaje mediante la experiencia; suponen un alto grado de implicación emocional; producen crecimiento; las metas se determinan internamente en lugar de externamente como es habitual (McIntyre, Byrd y Foxx, 1996). Durante ellas se espera que los alumnos apliquen sus conocimientos teóricos en las prácticas de enseñanza. Se ha analizado el efecto que las prácticas tienen en los profesores en formación (Zeichner, 1999), llegándose a la conclusión de que el incremento de prácticas por sí solas sin análisis ni reflexión no conduce a un observable desarrollo profesional. Por otra parte el papel de los profesores tutores que reciben a sus aulas a los alumnos en prácticas sigue estando poco investigado. Se sabe de su influencia en algunos alumnos pero no mucho más.

Los programas de inserción profesional

Ya hemos descrito anteriormente que una línea de investigación que se ha llevado a cabo ha tenido que ver con el análisis de los problemas de los profesores principiantes durante su periodo de inserción profesional. Como consecuencia de estos problemas, y de detectar la importancia del periodo de inserción en el subsiguiente desarrollo profesional de los docentes es por lo que se han venido desarrollando programas de inserción. Algunos programas de iniciación incluyen, entre sus actividades, el asesoramiento de los profesores principiantes por medio de otros profesores, que pueden ser compañeros o bien "mentores" (Vaillant y Marcelo, 2001).

A través de la revisión de la literatura, se comprueba que los mentores, en general, son profesores de universidad, supervisores, directores de escuela, pero, en muy pocas ocasiones, compañeros de los profesores principiantes. Independientemente de ello, es preciso destacar la figura del mentor como elemento importante de los programas de iniciación, y señala que sus características han de ser las siguientes: profesor permanente, con experiencia docente, con habilidad en la gestión de clase, disciplina, comunicación con los compañeros, con conocimiento del contenido, con iniciativa para planificar y organizar, con cualidades personales (flexibilidad, paciencia, sensibilidad), etc. La tarea que se asigna al "mentor" es la de asesorar didáctica y personalmente al profesor principiante, de forma que se constituye en un elemento de apoyo. En algunos casos se pueden desarrollar ciclos de supervisión clínica (planificación-observación-análisis de la enseñanza), o bien entrevistas abiertas.

En otro trabajo ya he tenido ocasión de repasar tanto la investigación sobre profesores principiantes como estos programas (Marcelo, 1999), por lo que dirigimos al lector a este trabajo que puede consultarse en Internet. Otros investigadores que han revisado el periodo de inserción, así como los programas que se han en marcha, han sido Wideen, Mayer-Smith y Moon (1998), y concluyen ha habido mucha investigación sobre el primer año de enseñanza, confirmándose la visión ampliamente extendida de que este año supone un choque cultural para los profesores principiantes, especialmente para los que están peor preparados. Un aspecto negativo que señalan los autores es el siguiente: *"encontramos una población homogénea de profesores principiantes intentando aprender a enseñar a una población heterogénea de alumnos en las escuelas. También encontramos muchos programas que tiene muy poco efecto sobre las creencias fuertemente asentadas acerca de la enseñanza que los profesores traen a sus programas de formación. Tales programas frecuentemente parecen tener propósitos cruzados con las experiencias que los profesores en formación se encuentran durante sus prácticas de enseñanza y su primer año como docentes."* (159). Estos programas sólo cumplen una función burocrática pero no hace por crear una identidad profesional en los docentes.

Los programas para el desarrollo profesional

En la primera parte de este artículo hemos analizado los procesos de aprendizaje en la sociedad informacional. Estudiamos el interés que están generando las ideas acerca del aprendizaje a lo largo de toda la vida, así como del aprendizaje informal. informal. El modelo de aprendiz, decíamos citando a Himanen, era el de un sujeto con autonomía y capacidad de indagar, de aprender compartiendo y enseñando a otros. Un modelo de aprendizaje contextualizado y distribuido.

¿Cuáles son las conclusiones que podemos extraer de las revisiones acerca de los programas de desarrollo profesional? Quizás hay un resultado evidente y es que el paradigma tradicional mediante el cual la formación continua se organiza en torno a unidades discretas de conocimientos o habilidades, impartidas por expertos, en lugares alejados de las escuelas, con una duración limitada, con escaso seguimiento y aplicación práctica no tienen ninguna posibilidad de cambiar ni las creencias ni las prácticas docentes de los enseñantes. Joyce encontró que las posibilidades de implantación de cambios siguiendos este modelo eran del 15% (Richardson y Placier, 2001).

Analizar los modelos de desarrollo profesional significa hacer referencia a los modelos de cambio y reforma que a lo largo de los últimos cincuenta años se han venido asumiendo. Y, como se podrá comprender, a estas alturas del artículo, no puede ser nuestra intención entrar a comentar lo que ya de forma magistral otros autores han realizado. Especialmente importante ha sido el *International Handbook of Educational Change*, editado por Hargreves, Lieberman, Fullan y Hopkins (1998). Y de especial interés resulta la aportación de Mat Miles sobre 40 años de cambio (Miles, 1998).

¿Cómo pues, podemos desarrollar programas que afecten a los profesores mejorando su práctica docente? Feiman (2001) concretaba una idea que ya ha venido tomando cuerpo por parte de otros investigadores y formadores: el hecho de que lo que los profesores deben aprender han de hacerlo en la práctica. Los profesores necesitan aprender cómo aprender de la práctica, puesto que la enseñanza requiere improvisación, conjetura, experimentación y valoración. Pero aprender en la práctica no es una proceso que se de naturalmente. Ball y Cohen (1999) establecen tres condiciones para poder esperar algún aprendizaje a partir de la experiencia práctica: a) los profesores tienen que aprender a adecuar sus conocimiento a cada situación, ello significa indagar acerca de lo que los estudiantes hacen y piensan y cómo comprenden lo que se les ha enseñado; b) los profesores deben aprender a utilizar su conocimiento para mejorar su práctica, y c) los profesores necesitan aprender cómo enmarcar, guiar y revisar las tareas de los alumnos. Desde su punto de vista, *"la clave de nuestra respuesta es que estar centrado en la práctica no necesariamente implica situaciones en las aulas en tiempo real" (14)*. Es decir, para aprender, los profesores necesitan utilizar ejemplos prácticos, materiales como casos escritos, casos multimedia, observaciones de enseñanza, diarios de profesores y ejemplos de tareas de los alumnos. Estos materiales podrían permitir que los profesores indagaran acerca de la práctica, analizaran la enseñanza.

Otros investigadores han intentado sintetizar las características de los programas de formación permanente que se han mostrado eficaces. Abdal-Haqq (1995) los caracteriza como: progresivos; incluyen formación, práctica y retroacción, oportunidades para reflexión individual e indagación grupal sobre la práctica, y seguimiento; están basados en la escuela e implican al trabajo del profesor; son colaborativos, proporcionando oportunidades para que los profesores interactúen unos con otros; se centran en el aprendizaje de los alumnos, el cual debería servir para evaluar la eficacia de la formación; anima y apoya iniciativas de profesores en las escuelas; están basados en el conocimiento base para enseñar; incorpora enfoques constructivistas del aprendizaje y la enseñanza; reconoce a los profesores como profesionales su adultos que aprenden; y proporciona un adecuado tiempo y seguimiento (en Wilson y Berne, 1999).

Parece que existe coincidencia en la necesidad de entender que los profesores tienen una gran responsabilidad en dar respuesta a las nuevas demandas sociales generadas por los cambios a los que hemos aludido en la primera parte de este artículo. Se espera de los profesores la necesidad de responder a los cambios en el conocimiento y el aprendizaje; la necesidad de desarrollar habilidad en el uso de nuevas tecnologías; la necesidad de redirigir sus enfoques pedagógicos hacia una enseñanza y aprendizaje más personalizados; la necesidad de acomodarse a la presencia en clase de alumnos de diferentes edades y etapas de desarrollo cognitivo; la necesidad de desarrollar una orientación diferente frente a la autoridad y estilos de gestión de aula; la necesidad de entrar en contacto con otras agencias e instituciones que promueven aprendizaje formal o informal (Chapman, 1996). Y para hacer frente a estas necesidades es preciso buscar nuevas fórmulas más acordes con un aprendizaje para el cambio.

Una de estas iniciativas han sido las **redes**. La formación del profesorado ha abierto de forma tradicional espacios para el aprendizaje entre iguales, para la comunicación entre docentes al margen generalmente de las ofertas oficiales. Aunque minoritarios en sus orígenes han existido movimientos que han reivindicado una formación participativa, democrática, horizontal y profesional. Muchos son los ejemplos que podemos poner de iniciativas en las que los protagonistas de la formación son los propios profesores. El término red se entiende como una malla de personas conectadas por enlaces en torno a los cuales fluyen cosas como objetos, trabajo, afectos, evaluación, conocimiento, prescripciones, influencia y poder, y en las que la mayoría de los participantes están conectados unos con otros. Las redes enlazan a diferentes personas con diferentes propósitos utilizando una variedad de fórmulas (Marcelo, 2001b).

Se han venido aportando diferentes definiciones de lo que se entiende por una red. Miles la definía como "*un conjunto de nodos o puntos conectados por líneas o enlaces. Existe a menudo la implicación de que varias cosas (mensajes, objetos, energía, etc.) viajan a lo largo de líneas, que así sirven como canal... En las redes sociales, los nodos son las personas, grupos u organizaciones. Las cosas que viajan entre los nodos son socialmente relevantes... objetos, trabajos, afectos, evaluación, conocimiento, prescripción/opinión, influencia y poder. De esta forma, una red es un conjunto conectado de actores sociales intercambiando materiales socialmente relevantes*" (Cit. En Clark, 1988:34). De la misma forma, Lieberman y Grolnick, entiende que "*Las redes constituyen una forma de implicar a los profesores en la dirección de su propio aprendizaje; les permite superar las limitaciones de sus roles institucionales, jerarquías y localización geográfica; y les anima a trabajar juntos con muchas gentes diferentes. Los participantes tienen la oportunidad de crecer y desarrollarse en una comunidad profesional que se centra en su propio desarrollo, proporcionando formas de aprendizaje que tienen más que ver con las experiencias profesionales vividas*" (1996:8-9). Por último, Moonen y Voogt definen una red como un como "*un grupo de profesores de diferentes escuelas que cooperan durante un largo periodo de tiempo en la implantación de un proceso que conlleva una cierta innovación en educación*" (1998:103).

El florecimiento de las redes entre profesores tiene mucho que ver con la aversión de los profesores hacia las actividades tradicionales de formación permanente. La popularidad de las redes sugiere que los profesores se alejan de las actividades convencionales de formación -o asisten a ellas sólo cuando se les requiere- no debido a una falta de interés en el desarrollo profesional sino debido a que el formato de la formación permanente no responde a sus necesidades (Lieberman y McLaughlin, 1996). Pero las Redes sólo van a representar un espacio alternativo a la formación tradicional en la medida en que promuevan el aprendizaje y la reflexión sobre la experiencia cotidiana. Day recientemente lo decía con la mayor claridad: "*Por definición, las redes suponen el reconocimiento de que aprender sólo de las propias experiencias limita el desarrollo, y que es probable que los profesores se comprometan con un tipo aprendizaje que tenga significado para ellos. En esencia, por tanto, las redes proporcionan estructuras organizativas que permiten a los grupos de profesores reunirse para hablar de su trabajo, aprender de otros, y conducir temas curriculares y estructurales*" (Day, 1999:177).

Las redes configuran espacios en los que el aprendizaje está distribuido, donde es posible construir colaborativamente y donde los profesores son los protagonistas y responsables de la formación. Las Nuevas Tecnologías de la Información y Comunicación, como he tenido ocasión de desarrollar en un libro de reciente aparición (Marcelo, 2002), ayudan y facilitan la creación de estas redes que mediante el correo electrónico, el chat o los foros comparten y crean conocimiento. (Nota 2)

Conclusiones

Hemos hecho un recorrido por los nuevos y los viejos temas que han venido ocupando la atención de los investigadores que se preguntado sobre los procesos de aprender a enseñar. No ha sido una revisión exhaustiva porque los temas son muchos y el espacio escaso. Podemos tener la sensación de que vamos avanzando en el conocimiento sobre el aprender a enseñar, pero si miramos a nuestro alrededor vemos que muchas de las prácticas más tradicionales permanecen. Me llamó mucho la atención un artículo de Labaree (1998) en el que, después de analizar el tipo de conocimiento sobre el que trabajamos los investigadores educativos, concluía con una frase que me permito reproducir. Decía que ""*Un problema que el conocimiento educativo plantea a aquellos que buscan producirlo es que a menudo les deja con la sensación de estar perpetuamente luchando por avanzar hacia ninguna parte. Si Sisifo fuera universitario, su campo sería la educación. Al final de una larga y distinguida carrera, muchos investigadores en edad de jubilación suelen encontrar que aún se encuentran trabajando en los mismos problemas que abordaban al comienzo de su carrera*" (9).

No es que uno se encuentre ya al final de su carrera, pero sí que cuenta con el tiempo suficiente como para comprobar que muchos temas de investigación aparecen y desaparecen, sirven para marcar agendas investigadoras pero en pocas ocasiones los resultados (o los procesos) de investigación consiguen mantenerse en el tiempo para poder llegar a esponjar la cultura tradicional, es decir, lo que se espera de la formación, esa "sabiduría recibida" de que hablaba Kennedy (1998). Y por lo que vamos viendo en la investigación sobre la formación del profesorado, como nos recordaban Joyce y Calhoun (1998), puede que nos esté pasando como en el chiste del borracho que buscaba la llave bajo la luz de la farola, y no en el sitio donde se le había caído, con el pretexto de que debajo de la farola había más luz. ¿Hemos buscado en los lugares adecuados? Si la formación del profesorado necesita de un replanteamiento de las creencias y concepciones de los aspirantes a profesor ¿hemos analizado cómo esto se lleva a cabo en las aulas de formación? Si Lee Shulman en 1986 encontró un "missing paradigm", una inexistente investigación en relación con el contenido que se enseña, hoy día podemos decir que en la formación del profesorado hay un componente, no circunstancial ni trivial que ha sido escasamente investigado. Curiosamente, aquél que queda bajo la responsabilidad de los propios formadores: el propio proceso de aprender a enseñar en las instituciones universitarias de formación. La investigación sobre los formadores universitarios que imparten su docencia en la formación inicial, como atentamente nos marcaban Wideen, Mayer-Smith y Moon, es prácticamente inexistente. Y lo mismo ocurre con investigaciones que adopten una visión sistémica o ecológica y comprendan múltiples elementos de los programas formativos para conocer el efecto que tienen en los profesores en formación.

Los cambios que se están produciendo en nuestra sociedad, y a los que dedicamos la primera parte de este artículo, nos están demandando un giro tanto en los programas de formación como en la investigación sobre estos programas. Y para ello hace falta un esfuerzo y compromiso compartido hacia una dirección que fomente el aprendizaje, la innovación, la flexibilidad, la autonomía, el trabajo en red y el aprendizaje colaborativo. Y quizás lo que hoy día nos falte, y en esto coincido con Cochran-Smith, es una teoría de la formación que apunte la dirección del cambio y ayude a no perderse en discursos vacíos o en modas pasajeras. Una teoría que reconozca que la formación del profesorado y la enseñanza son "*actividades políticas e intelectuales a la vez que prácticas, que ocurren en un contextos histórico, económico y social complejo. Tal teoría, basada en los datos de la investigación y de la práctica, debe tener el potencial de guiar, sugerir críticas, y más importante, sugerir formas de implementar, comprender e investigar la formación del profesorado para el cambio social*" (1998:918). Los elementos de que disponemos hoy día nos permiten identificar algunas líneas maestras de esa teoría, pero aun nos quedan por resolver muchas cuestiones de investigación que nos ayuden a construir e implementar buenos programas de formación que nos permitan dotarnos de buenos profesores que a su vez consigan hacer realidad uno de los derechos más sagrados: el derecho de aprender.

Notes

1. Recomendamos la página de internet de F. Pajares: http://www.emory.edu/EDUCATION/mfp/

2. Para más información sobre E-Learning recomendamos la dirección: http://www.webformacion.net

Referencias

Aspin, D. and Chapman, J.. Towards a Philosophy of Lifelong Learning. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001) pp. 3-34.

Aspin, D., Chapman, J., Hatton, M. and Sawano, Y. Introduction and overview. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001). pp. xvii-xlv.

Ball, D. and Cohen, DDeveloping Practice, Developing Practitioners. Toward a Practice-Based Theory of Professional Education. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a Learning Professional. Handbook of Policy and Practice.* San Francisco, Jossey-Bass. (1999). Pp. 3-32.

Berliner, D. and Calfee, R. (Eds.) *Handbook of Educational Psychology*, New York, Macmillan, 1996.

Biddle, B. Good, T. and Goodson I. *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching*, London, Kluwer, 1997. La editorial española Paidos ha traducido en tres libros algunos de los capítulos, bajo el título: *La enseñanza y los profesores* (I,II y III).

Bird, T. y Little, J. W. How schools organize the teaching occupation.*The Elementary School Journal*, 86 (4), (1986).pp. 493-512.

Blumenfeld, P. et al. Teaching for Understanding En B. Biddle et al. (Eds.). *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 819-878.

Bolam, R. Teacher Recruitment and Induction. En L. Anderson (Ed.). *International Encyclopedia of Teaching and Teacher Education*, Oxford, Pergamon, 1995, pp. 612-615.

Buchmann, M. The priority of knowledge and understanding in teaching. In L. Katz and J. Raths (Eds.). *Advances in Teacher Education*, Norwood, Ablex, (1984). pp. 29-50.

Bullough, RBecoming a Teacher. En B. Biddle et al. (Eds.). *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 79-134.

Burden, P.R. Teacher Development.En Houston, W.R. (Ed.). *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education* New York, MacMillan Publishing Company, 1990, pp.311-328.

Cachón Rodríguez, L. *Nuevos yacimientos de empleo en España.* Madrid, Ministerio de Trabajo y Asuntos Sociales, 1998.

Castells, M. *La era de la información. Economía, sociedad y cultura. Vol. I. La Sociedad Red.*, Madrid, Alianza, 1997.

Castells, Manuel Informationalism and the Network Society. In Himanen, Pekka. *The Hacker Ethic*, New York, Random House, 2001. pp. 155-178.

Chapman, J. A New Agenda for a New Society. En K. Leithwood et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Leadership and Administration*, Dordrecht, Kluwer Academic Pub., (1996). pp. 27-59.

Chapman, J. And Aspin, D. Schools and the Learning Community: Laying the Basis for Learning Across the Lifespan. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001). pp. 405-446.

Clark, R. School-University Relationships: An Interpretative Review. En K. Sirotnik and J. Goodlad (Eds.). *School University Partneships in action. Concepts, Cases and Concerns.* Chicago, Teacher College Press, (1988) pp. 32-65.

Cochran-Smith, M. Teacher Development and Educational Reform. En A. Hargreaves et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Change*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 916-951.

Cochran-Smith, M. and Lytle, S. Relationships of Knowledge and Practice: Teacher Learning in Communities. En. A. Iran-Nejad and P.D. Pearson. *Review of Research in Education,* Washington, American Educational Research Association, (1999) pp. 249-305.

Cochran-Smith, M. and Lytle, S. The Teacher Research Movement: A Decade Later. *Educational Researcher.* Vo. 28, No. 7, (1999) pp. 15-25.

Collis, B. Pedagogical Reengineering: A Pedagogical Approach to Course Enrichment and Redesign With the WWW. *Educational Technology Review*, 8, (1997) 11-15.

Cranston, N. Preparing Teachers for the New Millennium: are we doing enough?. *Journal of In-Service Education.* Vo. 24, No. 3, (1998) pp. 381-391.

Dalin, P. and Rust, V. *Towards schooling for the twenty-first century.* London, Cassell, 1996.

Darling-Hammond, L. *El derecho de aprender. Crear buenas escuelas para todos,* Barcelona, Ariel, 2001.

Day, C. *Developing Teachers. The Challenges of Lifelong Learning*, London, Falmer Press, 1999.

Day, C. Innovative Teachers: Promoting Lifelong Learning for All. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001), pp. 473-500.

Esteve Zarazaga, J.M. *La formación inicial de los profesores de secundaria.* Barcelona, Ariel,1997.

Feiman-Nemser, S. From Preparation to Practice: Designing a Continuum to Strengthen and Sustain Teaching. *Teachers College Record.* Vo. 103, No. 6, (2001). pp. 1013-1055.

Fenstermacher, G. The Knower and the Known: The Nature of Knowledge in Research on Teaching. *Review of Research in Education*, Washington, AERA, (1994). pp. 3-56.

Fernández Villalta, J. Teletrabajo y discapacidad. En F.J. Martínez López et al. (Eds.). *Teletrabajo. Una visión multidisciplinar.* Huelva, Servicio de Publicaciones de la Universidad, (1998). pp. 49-60.

Ferrández Arenaz, A. Formación docente para la enseñanza profesional. En P. de Vicente y otros (Eds). *La formación de los profesores*, Granada, Servicio de Publicaciones, 1988.

Foster, E. Teacher Leadership: Professional Right and Responsability. *Action in Teacher Education.* Vo. XIX, No. 3, (1997). pp. 82-94.

Gardner, H. and Boix-Mansilla, V. Teaching for understanding in the Disciplines -and Beyond. *Teacher College Record*, Vo. 96, No. 2, (1994). pp. 198-218.

García Fraile, J.A. Educación y formación para el nuevo milenio: el caso de los nuevos yacimientos de empleo. En A. Monclús Estella (coord.). *Formación y Empleo: Enseñanza y competencias,* , Granada, Comares, (2000). pp. 281-306.

Grant, C. And Wieczorek, K. Teacher Education and Knowledge in "the Knowledge Society": The Need for Social moorings in Our Multicultural Schools. *Teacher College Record.* Vo. 102, NO. 5, (2000). pp. 913-935.

Grossman, P. *The Making of a Teacher. Teacher Knowledge and Teacher Education* .Chicago, Teacher College Press, 1990.

Hager, P. Lifelong Learning and the Contribution of Informal Learning. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (1998) pp. 79-92.

Hargreaves, A. Time and Teachers' Work: An analysis of the intensification thesis. Teacher College Record, Vo. 94, No. 1, (1992). pp. 87-108.

Hargreaves, A. and Goodson, I. *Teachers' professional lives: Aspirations and actualities*, London, Falmer Press, 1996.

Hargreaves, D. A Road to the Learning Society. *School Leadership and Management*. Vo. 17, No. 1, (1997), pp. 9-21.

Hargreaves, D. The knowledge-creating school. *British Journal of Educational Studies*. Vo. 47, No. 2,(1999) pp. 122-144.

Hawley, W. And Valli, L. The Essentials of Effective Professional Development. A New Consensus. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a Learning Professional. Handbook of Policy and Practice*. S. Francisco, Jossey-Bass. (1998). pp. 127-149.

Himanen, Pekka. *The Hacker Ethic*, New York, Random House, 2001.

Hoyle, E. and John, P. *Professional Knowledge and Professional Practice*. London, Cassell, 1995.

Houston R. (Ed.) Handbook of Research on Teacher Education, New York, Macmillam, 1990.

Huberman, M., Thompson, C. and Weiland, S. Perspectives on the Teaching Career. En B. Biddle et al. (Eds.). *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 11-78.

Joyce, B. and Calhoun, E. The Conduct of Inquiry on Teaching: The Search for Models more Effective than Recitation. En A. Hargreaves et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Change*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 1216-1241.

Kagan, D. Professional Growth Among Preservice and Beginning Teachers. *Review of Educational Research*, Vo. 62, No. 2, (1992). pp. 129-169.

Katz, L. G. y Raths, J. D*A framework for research on teacher education programs*.Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, Chicago (1985).

Kennedy, M. The Role of Preservice Teacher Education. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a Learning Profession. Handbook of Policy and Practice*. S. Francisco, Jossey-Bass. (1998). pp. 54-85.

Labaree, D. Educational Researchers: Living with a Lesser Form of Knowledge. *Educational Researcher*, Vo. 27, No. 8, (1998). pp. 4-12.

Ladson-Billing, Gloria. Preparing Teachers for Diversity. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a Learning Professional. Handbook of Policy and Practice*. S. Francisco, Jossey-Bass. (1998). pp. 86-121.

Lee, O. and Yarger, S. Modes of Inquiry in Research on Teacher Education. In J. Sikula, T. Buttery and E. Guyton (Eds.). *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education*, New York, Macmillan, (1996). pp. 14-37.

Leicester, M. And Parker, S. From Adult Education to Lifelong Learning. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001). pp. 109-118.

Leithwood, K. The Principal's Role in Teacher Development, En M. Fullan and A. Hargreaves (Eds.). *Teacher Development and Educational Change*., London, Falmer Press, (1992). pp. 86-103.

Lieberman, A. and Grolnick, M. Networks and Reform in American Education. *Teacher College Record*, Vo. 98, No. 1, (1996). pp. 7-45.

Lieberman, A. and Grolnick, M. Educational Reform Networks: Changes in the Forms of Reform. En A. Hargreaves et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Change*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 710-729.

Little, J.W. . Organizing Schools for Teacher Learning. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a*

Learning Professional. Handbook of Policy and Practice. S. Francisco, Jossey-Bass. (1998). pp. 233-261.

Little, J. And McLaughlin, M. Perspectives on Cultures and Contexts of Teaching. En J.W. Little and M.W. McLaughlin (Eds.). *Teachers' Work. Individuals, Colleagues, and Contexts*, New York, Teacher College Press, (1993). pp. 1-8.

Longworth, N. Learning Communities for a Learning Century. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001) pp. 591-618.

Lortie, D. *School Teachers: A sociological study*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1975.

Marcelo, C. *Formación de profesores para el cambio educativo*, Barcelona, EUB, 1999.

Marcelo, C. Estudio sobre estrategias de inserción profesional en Europa. Revista Iberoamericana de Educación, Nº 19, (1999). pp. 101-144. http://www.campus-oei.org/oeivirt/rie19a03.htm

Marcelo, C. , Mingorance, P. and Estebaranz, A. *Networks as Professional Development: The Case of the Andalucian Network of Trainers*. Paper presented at the Conference of the Society for Information Technology and Teacher Education, (2001a). Orlando, USA. http://prometeo.cica.es/idea/mie/pub/marcelo/Networks.doc

Marcelo, C. (Ed.). *La Función Docente*, Madrid, Síntesis, 2001b.

Marcelo, C. E-Learning-Teleformación. Diseño, desarrollo y evaluación de la formación a través de Internet, Barcelona, Gestión2000, 2002. http://www.gestion2000.com/asp/alibrook.asp?busca=6978

Marcelo, C. y Estebaranz, A.(1999). Cultura escolar y cultura profesional: los dilemas del cambio Educar Volumen: Nº 24 pp. 47-69. http://prometeo.us.es/idea/mie/pub/marcelo/Cultura.pdf

Marx, R. Et al. New Technologies for Teacher Professional Development. *Teaching and Teacher Education*. Vo. 14, No. 1, (1998). pp. 33-52.

McIntyre, D., Byrd, D. and Foxx, S. Field and Laboratory Experiences. In J. Sikula, T. Buttery and E. Guyton (Eds.). *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education*, New York, Macmillan, (1996). pp. 171-193.

McLellan, H. Creating Virtual Communities Via the Web. En B. Khan (Edit.) *Web-Based Instruction*.New Jersey, Englewood Cliffs, (1997). pp. 185-190.

Miles, M. Finding Keys to School Change: A 40-Year Odyssey. En A. Hargreaves et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Change*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 37-69.

Moonen, B. and Voogt, J. Using Networks to Support the Professional Development of Teachers. *Journal of In-Service Education*, Vo. 24,No. 1, (1998). pp. 99-110.

OCDE *Sustainable Flexibility. A prospective study on work, family and society in the information age*. Paris, 1997.

OCDE *Schooling for tomorrow. What School for Future? Education and Skills*. Paris, OCDE.2001.

Onofre, M. *Conhecimento prático, auto-eficácia e qualidade do ensino. Um Estudo Multicaso em Professores de Educaçao Física*. Tesis Doctoral. Facultade Motricidade Humana. Universidade Tecnica de Lisboa, 2000.

Osín, L. and Lesgold, A. A proposal for the reengineering of the educational system. *Review of Educational Research*. Vo. 66, No. 4, (1996). pp. 621-656.

Padilla, A. *Teletrabajo. Dirección y organización*, Madrid, RA-MA, (1998).

Pajares, M. F. Teachers' Beliefs and Educational Research: Cleaning Up a Messy Construct. Review of Educational Research, Vo. 62, No. 3, (1992). pp. 307-332.

Pastré, PVariations sur le developpement des adultes et leurs representations. *Education Permanente*, N1 119, . (1994). pp. 33-63.

Putnam, R. and Borko, H. What do new views of knowledge and thinking have to say about research on teacher learning?. *Educational Researcher*, Vo. 29, No. 1, (2000a). pp. 4-15.

Putnam, R. y Borko, H. El aprendizaje del profesor: Implicaciones de las nuevas perspectivas de la cognición. En B. Biddle, T. Good y I. Goodson (Eds.). *La enseñanza y los profesores (I). La profesión de enseñar*. Barcelona, Paidos, (2000b). pp. 219-309.

Richardson, V. The Role of Attitudes and Beliefs in Learning to Teach. In J. Sikula, T. Buttery and E. Guyton (Eds.). *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education*, New York, Macmillan, (1996). pp. 102-119.

Richardson V. (Ed.). *Handbook of Research on Teaching. Fourth Edition.*, New York, American Educational Research Association. 2001.

Richardson, V. and Placier, P. Teacher Change. In V. Richardson (Ed.). *Handbook of Research on Teaching. Fourth Edition.*, New York, American Educational Research Association, (2001). pp. 905-947.

Robertson, H. Public Education in a Corporate-Dominated Culture. En A. Hargreaves et al. (eds.). *International Handbook of Educational Change*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 396-417.

Salomon, G. The changing role of the teachers: from information transmitter to orchestrator of learning. En F. Oser et als. (Eds.). *Effective and Responsible Teaching: The new synthesis*, New York, Jossey-Bass, (1992). pp. 35-49.

Schön, D. *The Reflective Practitioner*, New York, Basic Books, 1983.

Schubauer-Leoni, M.L. and Grossen M. Negotiating the Meaning of Questions in Didactic and Experimental Contracts. *European Journal of Psychology of Education*, Vo. 8, No. 4, (1993). pp. 451-471.

Senge, P. *La Quinta Disciplina. El arte y la práctica de la organización abierta al aprendizaje*. Barcelona, Granica. 1992.

Senge, P. et al. *Schools that learn*. New York, Doubleday, 2000.

Shulman, L. Those Who Understand: Knowledge Growth in Teaching, *Educational Researcher*, Vo.15, No. 2, (1986). pp. 4-14.

Shulman, L.. Theory, Practice, and the Education of Professional, *The Elementary School Journal*, Vo. 98, No. 5, (1998) pp. 511-526.

Sikula, J. Buttery, T. and E. Guyton (Eds.) *Handbook of Research on Teacher Education*, New York, Macmillan, 1996.

Smylie, M. Research on Teacher Leadership: Assesing the State of the Art. En B. Biddle et al. (Eds.). *International Handbook of Teachers and Teaching*, London, Kluwer, (1998). pp. 521-592.

Smyth, J.. Teachers' Work and the Labor Process of Teaching. En T. Guskey and M. Huberman (Eds.). *Professional Development in Education*. New York, Teacher College Press, (1995)pp. 69-91.

Sternberg, R. and Horvarth, J. A Prototype View of Expert Teaching. *Educational Researcher*, Vo. 24, No. 6, (1995). pp. 9-17.

Sykes, G. Teacher and Student Learning. Stregthening Their Connection. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (Eds.). *Teaching as a Learning Professional. Handbook of Policy and Practice*. S. Francisco, Jossey-Bass. . (1998)Pp. 151-179.

Tomlinson, H. Continuing Professional Development in the Professions. EN H. Tomlinson Ed.). *Managing Continuing Professional Development in Schools*. London, Paul Chapman, (1997). pp. 13-26.

Usher, R. Lifelong learning in the Postmodern. In D. Aspin, J. Chapman, M. Hatton, and Y. Sawano (Eds.). *International Handbook of Lifelong Learning*, London, Kluwer, (2001) pp. 165-182

Vaillant, D. y Marcelo, C. *Las Tareas del Formador*, Málaga, Aljibe, 2001.

Valli, L. Beginning teacher problems: Areas for Teacher Education Improvement. Action in Teacher Education, Vo. XIV, No. 1, (1992). pp. 18-25.

Van Maanen, J. And Schein, E. Toward A Theory Of Organizational Socialization. *Research In Organizational Behavior*, Vo. 1, 1979, Pp. 209-264.

Veenman, S. Perceived Problems of Beginning Teachers. *Review of Educational Research*, Vo. 54, (2), 1984, pp. 143-178.

Vonk, J.H.C. A Knowledge Base for Mentors of Beginning Teachers: Results of a Dutch Experience. R. McBridge (Ed.). *Teacher Education Policy*, London, Falmer Press, (1996)., pp.112-134.

Wertsch, J. *Voces de la mente. Un enfoque sociocultural para el estudio de la Acción Mediada*, Madrid, Visor, 1993.

Wideen, M., Mayer-Smith, J. y Moon, B. A Critical Analysis of the Research on Learning to Teach: Making the Case for an Ecological Perspective on Inquiry. *Review of Educational Research*, Vol. 68, No. 2, (1998). pp. 130-178.

Wilson, S. and Berne, J. Teacher Learning and the Acquisition of Professional Knowledge: An Examination of Research on Contemporary Professional Development. En. A. Iran-Nejad and P.D. Pearson. *Review of Research in Education*, Washington, American Educational Research Association, (1999). pp. 173-209.

Wittrock, M. (Ed.). *Handbook of Research on Teaching. Fourth Edition.*, New York, American Educational Research Association, 1986.

White Paper on Education and Training *Teaching and Learning. Towards the Learning Society*. 1996.

Yinger, R. Working Knowledge in Teaching, paper presented at the ISATT Conference, 1991.

Yinger, R. and Hendricks Lee, M. The Language of Standards and Teacher Education Reform, *Educational Policy*, Vo. 14, No. 1, (2000). pp. 94-106.

Zabalza, M. Los Nuevos Horizontes de la formación en la sociedad del aprendizaje (una lectura dialéctica de la relación entre formación, trabajo y desarrollo personal a lo largo de la vida). En A. Monclús Estella (coord.). *Formación y Empleo: Enseñanza y competencias*, , Granada, Comares, (2000). pp. 165-198.

Zeichner, K. The New Scholarship in Teacher Education. *Educational Researcher*, Vo. 28, No. 9, (1999). pp. 4-15.

Zeichner, Kenneth *Educating Teachers for Cultural Diversity*, Michigan, National Center for Research on Teacher Learning, 1992.

Acerca del Autoro

Carlos Marcelo es Catedrático de Didáctica y Organización Escolar de la Universidad de Sevilla (España). Dirige el Grupo de Investigación IDEA (Innovación, Desarrollo, Evaluación y Asesoramiento en Educación) (http://prometeo.us.es/idea). Ha centrado su investigación en el estudio de los procesos de formación inicial y continua de los profesores. Sus libros sobre formación del profesorado, que aparecen en la bibliografía de este artículo, abordan diferentes ámbitos de análisis y estudio de la función docente y del proceso de aprender a enseñar.

Correo-e: marcelo@us.es

URL: Http://prometeo.us.es

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is http://epaa.asu.edu

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-0211. (602-965-9644). The Book Review Editor is Walter E. Shepherd: shepherd@asu.edu . The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
aacosta@cucea.udg.mx

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Research
simon@airbrasil.org

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William J. Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
Arizona State University

Dennis Sayers
Ann Leavenworth Center
for Accelerated Learning

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Andrew Coulson
a_coulson@msn.com

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Richard M. Jaeger
University of North Carolina--Greensboro

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Western Interstate Commission for Higher Education

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois--UC

Robert T. Stout
Arizona State University

---

archives | abstracts | editors | board | submit | comment | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 6472 times since September 6, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 36 **September 6, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Research and Rhetoric on Teacher Certification: A Response to "Teacher Certification Reconsidered"

Linda Darling-Hammond
Stanford University [1]

Citation: Darling-Hammond, Linda. (2002, September 6). Research and rhetoric on teacher certification: A response to "Teacher Certification Reconsidered," *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(36). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n36.html.

Abstract
In October, 2001, the Baltimore-based Abell Foundation issued a report purporting to prove that there is "no credible research that supports the use of teacher certification as a regulatory barrier to teaching" and urging the discontinuation of certification in Maryland. The report argued that large inequities in access to certified teachers for poor and minority students are not a problem because research linking teacher education to student achievement is flawed. In July, 2002, the U.S. Secretary of Education cited the Abell Foundation paper in his Annual Report on Teacher Quality as the sole source for concluding that teacher education does not contribute to teacher effectiveness. The Secretary's report then recommended that requirements for education coursework be eliminated from certification standards, and attendance at schools of education and student teaching be made optional. This article documents the many inaccuracies in the Abell Foundation paper and describes the actual findings of many of the studies it purports to review, as well as the findings of other studies it ignores. It details misrepresentations of a number of studies, including inaccurate statements about their methods and findings, false claims about their authors' views, and distortions of their data and conclusions. The article addresses methodological issues regarding the validity and interpretation of research. Finally, the article presents data challenging the Abell Foundation's unfounded claims that uncertified teachers are as effective as certified teachers, that teacher education makes no difference to teacher effectiveness, that verbal ability is the most important determinant of teaching effectiveness, that private schools staffed by uncertified teachers are more effective than public schools, and that untrained teachers are more qualified than prepared teachers. It concludes with a discussion of the policy issues that need to be addressed if all students are to be provided with highly qualified teachers.

In October, 2001, the Baltimore-based Abell Foundation issued a report purporting to prove that there is "no credible research that supports the use of teacher certification as a regulatory barrier to teaching" (Walsh, 2001, p. 5). (Note 2) The Abell Foundation paper argued against Maryland's efforts to strengthen teacher preparation requirements and defended the continuation of a local short-term alternative route into teaching that had come under criticism. Suggesting that "educators, policymakers, the media, and the public mistakenly equate teacher quality with teacher certification" (p. 1), Kate Walsh, the author of the paper, complained that efforts to improve education for poor and

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

minority children in Baltimore by the state and local superintendents of schools and by local advocacy organizations foolishly sought to secure more fully certified teachers for their schools. She cited as wrong-headed newspaper articles raising concerns, for example, that: "Least prepared teachers are at worst city schools: One-third lack basic credentials for certification," (p. 1). Calling misguided the efforts of a Baltimore community group that released a study which "bemoaned the fact that more uncertified teachers were teaching in the city's high-poverty, predominantly African-American schools than the city's whiter, more affluent schools" (p. 2), the paper sought to demonstrate that these inequalities in access to certified teachers are not problematic if certification can be discounted as a determinant of achievement.

The Abell Foundation proposed that Maryland should 1) "eliminate the coursework requirements for teacher certification" and require only a bachelor's degree and a passing score on an appropriate teacher's exam; 2) "report the average verbal ability score of teachers in each school district and of teacher candidates graduating from the State's schools of education;" and 3) "devolve its responsibility for teacher qualification and selection to its 24 public school districts," delegating all hiring authority to individual school principals (pp. vii-viii).

Although these ideas might seem indefensible to those who are engaged in research regarding teacher preparation and recruitment, the U.S. Secretary of Education echoed these recommendations in his Annual Report on Teacher Quality (USDOE, 2002), a report on the national state of teacher quality required under the 1998 reauthorization of Title II of the Higher Education Act. In this report, the Secretary argued that teacher certification systems are "broken," imposing "burdensome requirements" for education coursework that make up "the bulk of current teacher certification regimes" (p. 8). The report argues that certification should be redefined to emphasize higher standards for verbal ability and content knowledge and to de-emphasize requirements for education coursework, making attendance at schools of education and student teaching optional and eliminating "other bureaucratic hurdles" (p. 19).

The report suggests that its recommendations are based on "solid research." However, only one reference among the report's 44 footnotes is to a peer-reviewed journal article (which is misquoted in the report); most are to newspaper articles or to documents published by advocacy organizations, some of these known for their vigorous opposition to teacher education. (Note 3) For the recommendation that education preparation be eliminated or made optional, the Secretary's report relies exclusively on the Abell Foundation's paper. Though written as a local rejoinder to Maryland's efforts to strengthen teacher preparation and certification, it appears to have become a foundation for federal policy.

This article includes the response I wrote to Walsh's paper (Note 4) when it was first issued, with some additions that respond to a reply she issued with Michael Podgursky (Note 5) and a briefer version of her report recently printed in *Education Next*, a magazine put out by the Hoover Institution (Walsh, 2002).

In order to make a case for her agenda, Walsh attacks all research that has found relationships between teachers' preparation and their measured effectiveness, including students' achievement. She characterizes much of the education research as "flawed, sloppy, aged and sometimes academically dishonest" (p. 13), a characterization that more aptly describes her own paper, which consistently misrepresents the statements of researchers, the findings of studies, and the evidence base for her claims. She claims to have reviewed all of the studies ever cited by proponents of teacher education. In fact, a large number of the references in the paper and appendix are not directly on the topic of teacher education, and many studies of teacher education effects are not included in the report. Furthermore, her paper does not actually review most of the studies it mentions. An original report appendix listing studies shrank from 175 in July, 2001 to fourteen in the version of the report released in October, 2001 selected according to no obvious criteria and omitting many of the most prominent studies on the topic. (Note 6) The "reviews" in a now separate appendix published on the foundation's website are generally not careful assessments of research methods or findings but a list of complaints and random observations—sometimes accurate but often not—about various aspects of the studies or how they have been cited by others. (A number of examples are included below.)

All studies have limitations, and some are too problematic to be relied upon, including a number that Walsh relies upon for her own assertions. However, Walsh's paper, which is littered with inaccuracies, misstatements, and misrepresentations, sheds little light on the research or its implications for teacher education and certification. In what follows I discuss the inaccuracies in Walsh's account, the actual findings of many of the studies she purports to review, and the findings of other studies she chooses to ignore, as well as the implications of her proposals for teachers, their knowledge, and the students they teach.

In the course of the paper, I review some of the studies that have found influences of teacher education and certification on student achievement at the levels of the individual teacher (e.g. Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000; Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985; Monk, 1994); the school (Betts, Rueben, & Danenberg, 2000; Fetler, 1999); the school district (Ferguson, 1991; Strauss & Sawyer, 1986); and state (Darling-Hammond, 2000c). The convergence of findings in analyses using different units of analysis reinforces the strength of the inferences that might be drawn from any single study.

What are the Arguments?

The Abell Foundation report admits that teacher qualifications make a difference but it also tries to make a case that "the backgrounds and attributes characterizing effective teachers are more likely to be found outside the domain of schools of education. The teacher attribute found consistently to be most related to raising student achievement is verbal ability.... usually measured by short vocabulary tests..." (p. v). Later in the report, Walsh suggests that subject matter knowledge may be an additional criterion for hiring secondary teachers, but not for elementary teachers. Walsh objects to the state requirements regarding content coursework in each of the core academic areas for elementary teachers, since many who want to enter through the alternative Resident Teacher program in Maryland have had trouble meeting these requirements.

Walsh then tries to dismiss all studies that find evidence that knowledge about teaching also makes a different for teacher performance, or to claim that studies finding positive effects of teacher education or certification are either too old, too small, too highly aggregated, or dependent on evidence about teacher performance other than student achievement or are not really about certification after all, even if their authors say they are. She often does this by misrepresenting the studies' actual methods and findings, as I detail below.

While there are legitimate concerns to be raised about various studies in the literature—on all sides of the question—this article does not shed much light on them. A thorough review of the quality and accurately portrayed findings of the several bodies of research that bear on this question would be a service to this field. Unfortunately, this document's inaccuracies and misinterpretations make it of little use in this regard.

In what follows, I address five major issues regarding the Abell report and the research base on teaching and teacher education:

1. *Evidence Ignored.* Evidence about student learning in reading and other areas documents the need for teachers to have professional knowledge that includes and extends beyond subject matter knowledge. The Abell Foundation report does not consider this evidence or answer the question of how teachers are to acquire this knowledge if they are not professionally prepared.

2. *Unfounded Claims.* No evidence supports Walsh's claim that either verbal ability or subject matter knowledge alone makes teachers effective. She lacks supporting evidence—and fails to consider contradictory evidence—for her claims about the relative effectiveness of certified and uncertified teachers, the outcomes of teacher education, the primacy of verbal ability as the most important measure of teaching, the effectiveness of private and public schools and the preparation of their teachers, and the attributes of individuals who enter teaching without certification.

3. *Misrepresentations of Research.* Walsh's claim that she has reviewed 100 to 200 studies cited in support of teacher education and found that "none of them holds up to scrutiny" is not true. In fact, she is unable to discount a number of important studies that support teacher education or certification. In addition, a large number of the studies relevant to the question of teacher education effects are not reviewed at all in Walsh's paper. Most of the studies she mentions do not concern teacher education or certification directly: at most 80 of the nearly 200 studies listed in the study or appendix are focused on teacher education or certification. A number of those reviewed are badly misrepresented, including inaccurate statements about their methods and findings, false claims about their authors' views, and distortions of their data and conclusions. Many are not reviewed for their methods and findings, but are dismissed because of their sample size, age, dependent variable, or publication venue—unless Walsh likes one of the findings, in which case she uses the study, sometimes after already having dismissed it. Even the studies that Walsh says she reviewed are missing from the appendix of the report, where she refers readers for evidence. (Note 7)

4. *Methodological Issues and Double Standards in Using Research.* Walsh misunderstands some fundamental research design issues, including the difference between experimental and correlational studies and the interpretation of research conducted at different levels of aggregation. In her effort to make the evidence base about teacher education disappear, Walsh eliminates from consideration studies that have been cited regarding the contributions of various measures of teacher qualifications to teacher effectiveness if they have small sample sizes, if they were published more than 20 years ago, or if they were published as dissertations, technical reports, or conference papers rather than in peer-reviewed journals. She also eliminates all studies that use measures of teacher effectiveness other than student achievement (e.g. supervisors' ratings of performance, researchers' observation-based measures of teacher practice). There are legitimate issues associated with the sample size, age, quality assurance, and measurement that warrant discussion (see below). However, as a blanket means of eliminating evidence from consideration, this strategy is problematic, as Walsh's frequent citations of studies that fail to meet her own criteria suggest.

5. *Illogical Policy Conclusions.* While it is clear that teacher certification systems are not perfect and there are many weak teacher education programs, points that I have frequently made in my own research, it does not follow that the response to these problems should be to eliminate expectations for teachers to acquire the knowledge they need to teach students effectively. The more appropriate policy response is to improve the quality of teacher education—a process that has been underway with important results in a number of states, and one that rests on the processes of accreditation and certification that provide policymakers with levers for change and improvement.

Evidence Ignored

While the Abell Foundation report claims that teachers do not need professional knowledge in order to teach, the field has been moving rapidly to codify the ways in which teaching knowledge makes a difference in student learning. For example, the National Reading Panel of the National Institute of Child Health and Human Development last year published a major review of carefully controlled research which found that children's reading achievement is improved by systematic teaching of phonemic awareness, guided repeated oral reading, direct and indirect vocabulary instruction with careful attention to readers' needs, and a combination of reading comprehension techniques that include metacognitive strategies.

The report notes that teacher education is critical to the success of reading instruction with respect to both instruction in phonemic awareness and more complex comprehension skills:

> Knowing that all phonics programs are not the same brings with it the implication that teachers must themselves be educated about how to evaluate different programs to determine which ones are based on strong evidence and how they can most effectively use these programs in their own classrooms. It is therefore important that teachers be provided with evidence-based preservice training and ongoing inservice training to select (or develop) and implement the most appropriate phonics instruction effectively. (p. 11)
>
> Teaching reading comprehension strategies to students at all grade levels is complex. Teachers not only must have a firm grasp of the content presented in the text, but also must have substantial knowledge of the strategies themselves, of which strategies are most effective for different students and types of content and of how best to teach and model strategy use.... (Data from the studies reviewed on teacher training) indicated clearly that in order for teachers to use strategies effectively, extensive formal instruction in reading comprehension is necessary, preferably beginning as early as pre-service (National Reading Panel, 2000, pp. 15-16).

Studies have documented that professional training can be effective in providing teachers with the strategies that enable them to teach these complex comprehension skills, and teachers who receive such training significantly improve students' reading outcomes (e.g, Duffy, Roehler, Sivan et al., 1987; Duffy & Roehler, 1989, regarding explicit strategy instruction; Palincsar & Brown, 1989, regarding reciprocal teaching).

Similar insights in our understanding of how to develop student proficiency in mathematics and science, and how to develop teachers' skills for doing so, have recently emerged. For example, recent analyses of the National Assessment of Educational Progress (NAEP) which control for student characteristics and a number of measures of school inputs have found that students whose teachers have majored in mathematics or mathematics education, who have had more pre- or in-service training in how to work with diverse student populations and more training in how to develop higher-order thinking skills, and who engage in more hands-on learning do better on the NAEP mathematics assessments. Similarly, students whose teachers have majored in science or science education and who have had more pre- or in-service training in how to develop laboratory skills and who engage in more hands-on learning do better on the NAEP science assessments (Weglinsky, 2000). (Note 8)

A recent review commissioned by the Department of Education, which was carefully vetted by a panel of researchers, disagreed with the Abell Foundation's conclusions. This review, which analyzed 57 studies that met specific research criteria and were published after 1980 in peer-reviewed journals, concluded that the available evidence demonstrates a relationship between teacher education and teacher effectiveness (Wilson, Floden, & Ferrini-Mundy, 2001). The review shows that empirical relationships between teacher qualifications and student achievement have been found across studies using different units of analysis and different measures of preparation and in studies that employ controls for students' socioeconomic status and prior academic performance.

It is ironic that just as the field is learning more about how to prepare teachers to teach children effectively, the Abell Foundation suggests that we truncate teacher education and end the certification policies that would encourage and enable teachers to acquire this knowledge—or at least that we do so for the children of the poor, who also attend school in districts with minimal resources for professional development. The unanswered question is, How are teachers to learn what is known about how to teach well if there are no expectations, incentives, or supports for them to do so?

Unfounded Claims

While ignoring these serious questions, Walsh makes a number of claims that are not supported either by the research she presents or by other evidence in the field. These include the following:

- New teachers who are certified do not produce greater student gains than new teachers who are not certified.
- There is little evidence that the content and skills taught in preservice education coursework is (*sic*) either

retained or effective.

- Verbal ability and subject matter alone are sufficient to produce effective teachers.
- Private schools do not hire certified teachers and they are more effective than public schools.
- Individuals with higher academic ability will be recruited to teaching if certification standards are eliminated.

The Effectiveness of Certified and Uncertified Teachers

For her proposition that "new teachers who are certified do not produce greater student gains than new teachers who are not certified," Walsh cites seven studies, none of which provides support for this proposition, and five of which actually provide evidence that contradicts her claim. Three of the studies (Bliss, 1992; Stoddart, 1992; Lutz & Hutton, 1989) include no data on student achievement at all, although Walsh elsewhere dismisses all other studies that do not use student achievement data as the dependent variable. (In a reply to my response, Walsh and Podgursky (2001) note that these studies have been deleted in a newly printed version, along with some studies Walsh cited that were not peer reviewed, "so that the report ... does not appear to convey a double standard" (p. 15)).

Six of the studies Walsh cites actually deal with alternatively certified rather than uncertified teachers—that is, teachers who had undertaken teacher education at the post-baccalaureate level in university- or school district-based programs that rearrange the way teacher education is delivered. The findings across the studies are mixed, but none of them shows that uncertified teachers do as well as certified teachers, and one of them shows that this is clearly not true. Several of the studies point instead to the value of teacher education: The more positive findings are found for the alternatives that provide more complete preparation.

1. Bliss (1992) wrote about the Connecticut alternative certification program, a two-year training model which the author notes features "a significantly longer period of training than in any other alternate route program" in existence at that time (p. 52). This report does not examine uncertified teachers, nor does it meet Walsh's criteria for inclusion in a review of literature, because it includes no data about teacher effectiveness as gauged by student achievement measures. Bliss notes that most recruits reported their initial training to be helpful, and she briefly mentions results from another researcher's survey of recruits' supervisors which suggested mixed reviews of their performance: 33 percent of supervisors said that the alternate route teachers were weaker than others in classroom management (presumably, then, 67 percent said they were *not* weaker than others in this area), while 38 percent said they were stronger than others in teaching skills (and 62 percent presumably said they were *not* stronger than others in this area).

2. Stoddart (1992) reports on the subject matter qualifications and attrition rates of recruits to the Los Angeles Teacher Trainee Program, also a two-year training model. She found that content qualifications were comparable to those of traditionally trained recruits, except for math recruits, who had lower GPAs than traditionally trained mathematics teachers, and that attrition rates for those who entered were relatively low in the first two years but higher than national rates after 5 years. (Note 9) Results cited by Stoddart from other studies about the observed practices of these teachers in comparison with university-trained teachers produced mixed results: university-trained English teachers appeared more skillful than alternate route teachers, but the levels of skill appeared lower for mathematics teachers from both groups.

3. Lutz and Hutton (1989) compared the demographic characteristics, attitudes, certification test scores, and opinions of Dallas Public Schools' alternative certification (AC) recruits with other first year teachers in the district. Like the other studies noted above, this study did not examine student achievement gains of the recruits' students. The program provides summer training to recruits and then places them in mentored internships during the school year while they are completing other coursework. The study found many similarities but some differences between AC recruits and other first year teachers, including significantly lower rates of expected long-term continuation in teaching for the AC recruits (40% vs. 72% for other first year teachers). They also examined supervisors' perceptions of recruits—a measure that Walsh argues should eliminate other studies from consideration. These were positive for the 54% of the pool (59 out of 110) defined as "successful" interns in the study—those who completed the intern year without dropping out (10%) or being held back for another year or more due to 'deficiencies' in various areas of performance (36%). The study also reported data from another evaluation of the program by the Texas Education Agency (Mitchell, 1987), which surveyed principals, finding that:

> The principals rated the [traditionally-prepared] beginning teachers as more knowledgeable than the AC interns on the eight program variables: reading, discipline management, classroom organization, planning, essential elements, ESL methodology, instructional techniques, and instructional models. The ratings of the AC interns on nine other areas of knowledge typically included in teacher preparation programs were slightly below average in seven areas compared with those of beginning teachers. It might therefore be assumed that pre-service teacher education programs are doing something right! (p. 250).

In the paragraph cited above, Lutz and Hutton wax enthusiastic about preservice teacher education programs that seemed in these data to outperform the alternative route. Later they wax enthusiastic about the alternative route, given results from another survey of principals, most of whom felt that alternative credential candidates who eventually made through the program were comparable to other beginning teachers. At the end of the piece, they note that the high attrition rates and difficulty maintaining the program suggest the alternate route will not likely be a long-term solution to teacher supply problems. Although Walsh cites Lutz and Hutton's enthusiastic feelings about the AC program, she does not accurately report the complete data from the study, including the low rates of successful program completion, the low rates of planned retention in teaching, and the mixed reviews of their performance. In her appendix, she includes this study with the following "review:" "Darling-Hammond ignores the unqualified authors' *(sic)* endorsement of the merits of alternative route to teaching...." One presumes that she means to reference the authors' "unqualified endorsement" rather than to call the authors themselves unqualified. Yet as the above excerpts make clear, the study does not provide an unqualified endorsement of the program.

Walsh repeats this mistake in the appendix when she critiques a review of alternate certification programs (Darling-Hammond, 1992). She states that, "Darling-Hammond cites the findings from many studies that looked at alternative programs; but she does not include findings that show alternatively trained teachers are *at least as effective at raising academic achievement* as those who graduate from traditional programs," (p. A-3), citing Lutz and Hutton (1989), despite the fact that their study presented no empirical data on academic achievement of students and presented mixed evidence about the rated performance and retention rates of these recruits.

Two other studies Walsh cites do include student achievement data, but they do not, as she states, compare certified with uncertified teachers. Both deal with alternatively certified teachers who receive a substantial amount of education coursework while they are undertaking mentored teaching supervised by both university supervisors and classroom mentors.

4. Miller, McKenna, & McKenna (1998) is a matched comparison group study of what the study's authors call a "carefully constructed" university-based alternate route program for middle school teachers. Reflecting the characteristics of alternative routes endorsed by the National Commission on Teaching and America's Future (1996), this program offered 15 to 25 credit hours of coursework before interns entered classrooms where they were intensively supervised and assisted by both university supervisors and school-based mentors while they completed additional coursework needed to meet full standard state certification requirements. Forty-one of these teachers were compared to a group of 41 traditionally certified teachers matched for years of experience, using ratings of their teaching conducted by trained observers. Then student test score data were collected for 18 of these teachers. Although the sample size is too small to meet Walsh's criteria (Note 10) for studies worth considering (a point she seems to have forgotten here), and data are not provided on student pre-test scores, the study appears reasonably well-conducted.

   The traditionally trained teachers in this study felt somewhat more confident in their practice and scored slightly higher on the two sub-scales of an observation instrument used by trained observers to rate their teaching. However, these differences were not significant, and the authors report, without including the actual data analyses, that there were no significant differences in the student achievement of 18 teachers from the two groups by the 3rd year of practice after both had completed all of their education coursework. (The authors did not control for prior achievement levels of students; however, they stated that the initial differences in student achievement across groups were not significant.)

   Because the design of this program was so different from many quick-entry alternative routes, Miller, McKenna, and McKenna note that their studies "provide no solace for those who believe that anyone with a bachelor's degree can be placed in a classroom and expect to be equally successful as those having completed traditional education programs.... The three studies reported here support carefully constructed AC programs with extensive mentoring components, post-graduation training, regular in-service classes, and ongoing university supervision" (p. 174). This finding does not support Walsh's contentions throughout her paper that only general intelligence and subject matter knowledge make a difference for teacher effectiveness, her statement that uncertified teachers do as well as certified teachers, or her claim that there is no evidence which supports teacher education and certification.

5. The other study on alternative certification cited favorably by Walsh (Bradshaw & Hawk, 1996) was not published as a peer-reviewed article or research report—one of Walsh's criteria for rejecting the results of other reports. It is actually not an empirical study but a literature review that, like other reviews Walsh criticizes, is based on a mixture of unpublished papers and on studies that, for the most part do not examine student achievement. Some of the papers cited do not include empirical evidence at all. Walsh characterizes the report's findings as providing "mixed, inconclusive" evidence. This is certainly true. Studies examining measures of knowledge, teacher beliefs and attitudes, teacher ratings, and student views report no differences on some measures and differences, typically favoring traditionally prepared teachers, on others, especially measures of professional knowledge and performance.

   With respect to student achievement, Bradshaw and Hawk list five papers that discuss outcomes for differently trained teachers. The first, an unpublished paper by Barnes, Salmon, and Wale (1989) does not present any empirical data or discussion of specific studies, but it includes a statement that two districts in Texas reportedly found equivalent outcomes for alternative and traditional program teachers. While it does not mention what programs might have been compared, it does include a table listing teacher education programs designated as alternatives. This list includes one- and two-year university-based master's programs (which are called "alternative" in Texas because they are not undergraduate models) along with district alternative programs that generally offer only a few weeks of summer training before teachers are assigned to classrooms. Thus, the "alternative" group included programs providing extensive graduate level training of the sort that many states would call 'traditional," along with programs that provide little formal preparation. Aside from the unanswered question of what analyses some unnamed parties might have been done to support assertions about relative effects, the wide range of program models included as "alternative" precludes any inferences about the effects of preparation on teacher effectiveness.

A second study, by Denton & Peters (1988) provides another example of the definitional problems associated with the terms "alternative" and "traditional". This paper actually studied two versions of a university's college-based teacher education program. The one called "alternative" in their paper was in fact an expansion of the regular teacher education program, rather than a reduction in coursework. Graduates of this more extensive curriculum had students who had stronger performance in earth and physical sciences, while scores in mathematics were stronger for students of the regular teacher education program

Of the remaining studies, two found that student achievement gains were higher for the students of traditionally prepared teachers in language arts (Gomez & Grobe, 1990, in a comparison with alternatively certified teachers) and mathematics (Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985, in a comparison with uncertified mathematics teachers). The last (Stafford & Barrow, 1994) did not present original research but referenced studies reporting differences associated primarily with teaching experience between the performance of alternative program teachers, other first-year teachers, and experienced teachers.

In combination, these studies do not provide any support for the statement that uncertified teachers are as effective as certified teachers. In addition to its other inaccuracies, Walsh's review confuses alternative certification—a strategy that provides candidates with preparation that is differently packaged from what various states deem "traditional" training (usually the difference is that training is post-baccalaureate rather than undergraduate and is streamlined into about a year rather than spread across four years of college)—with lack of certification—which generally indicates a lack of preparation. Having already missed this critical distinction, Walsh does not begin to attempt to sort out the effects of the differences in preparation experiences and outcomes associated with different models of teacher education. Thus, she does not note that program designs that include a comprehensive and coherent program of coursework and intensive mentoring (e.g. Miller, McKenna, & McKenna, 1998) have been found to produce more positive evaluations of candidate performance than models that forego most of this coursework and supervised support.

For example, a comparative study of more than 200 alternative certification candidates in New Hampshire, who are certified via three years of on-the-job training in lieu of formal preparation, found they were rated by their principals significantly lower than university-prepared teachers on instructional skills and instructional planning, and they rated their own preparation significantly lower than did the university candidates (Jelmberg, 1995). To understand the outcomes of different approaches, studies of alternatives need to acknowledge the differences in program models.

Finally, Walsh cites two additional studies that include uncertified teachers, but she gets the findings wrong. Neither study shows that uncertified teachers do as well as certified teachers. One shows that the reverse is true.

6. In one study (Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000), the authors found that high school students who had a certified teacher in mathematics did significantly ***better***, after controlling for initial achievement and student demographic factors, than those who had uncertified teachers. The same trends were true in science, but the influences were somewhat smaller. The effects of certification on achievement were larger than—and in addition to—the effects of a subject matter degree. In this sample, students of a small number of science teachers who held emergency or temporary certification (24 out of the 3,469 teachers in the overall sample) did no worse than the students of certified teachers, although they, too, did better than the students of uncertified teachers. Another analysis of these data (Darling-Hammond, Berry, & Thoreson, 2001) showed that in this sample most of the teachers on temporary / emergency certificates were experienced and most had education training comparable to that of the certified teachers. Most appeared to be already licensed teachers from out-of-state who were in the transition period to securing a new state license or experienced teachers teaching out of their main field. Only a third were new entrants whose characteristics may have suggested a content background with little education training. The students of this sub-sample of teachers had lower achievement gains in an analysis of co-variance that controlled for pre-test scores, content degrees, and experience than those of the more experienced and traditionally trained teachers.

7. Finally, Walsh cites a recently released study of Teach for America (TFA) by Raymond et al. (2001). This study is relevant to Walsh's discussion of the Resident Teacher Program through which she notes that many

TFA recruits enter teaching in Maryland. However, the study did not compare certified to uncertified teachers, as Walsh claims. Although they had the data to do so, the authors chose not to examine how TFA teachers performed in comparison to trained or certified teachers. The study examined the influences of TFA teachers on student achievement scores, using regression methods that controlled for teacher experience and school demographics; thus, the comparison was between TFA recruits and other inexperienced teachers in high-minority schools in Houston—where most underqualified teachers are placed. Since about 50% of Houston's new hires are uncertified and about 35% were found to lack a bachelors degree in the most recent year of the study, TFA recruits were compared to an extraordinarily underprepared set of teachers. In this comparison, students of TFA teachers did about as well as those of other inexperienced, largely untrained teachers, many of them without bachelors degrees. (Reviewers of this report have noted that the report should have compared TFA recruits to other BA holders and to prepared or certified teachers; based on the statistics shown, it is not clear that the results of these comparisons would be favorable to TFA.) (Note 11) Another study that compared TFA teachers to certified teachers found significantly higher scores for the students of certified teachers (Laczko-Kerr and Berliner, 2002). The Raymond et al. report also indicated that minority students in Houston, who are disproportionately taught by these underprepared teachers, lose ground academically each year. In addition, only about 50% of African American and Latino 9th graders in Houston graduate from high school four years later (Haney, 2000; NCES, 2000). It would be hard to argue that the assignment of so many underprepared teachers to these students has nothing to do with their lack of success.

The TFA study found that students of experienced teachers performed significantly better than students of inexperienced teachers, including TFA recruits. Along with the report's finding that, over a three year period, between 60% and 100% of TFA candidates had left after their second year of teaching, this finding raises additional questions about Teach for America's contribution to the education of Houston students, since they do not stay long enough to gain the experience that could support student achievement. Earlier data from the Maryland Department of Education showed that TFA recruits in Baltimore had similar attrition rates, with 62 % gone by the third year of teaching (Darling-Hammond, 2000b).

These high attrition rates resemble those found in some other studies of short-term alternative routes (Darling-Hammond, 2000c) and suggest another important outcome of teacher preparation policies. Both the Houston study and Walsh's own review indicate that experienced teachers are more effective than inexperienced teachers (Walsh, pp. 5-6), yet many short-term alternative program recruits leave quickly. Other research indicates that those who complete 5-year teacher education programs enter and stay in teaching at much higher rates than 4-year teacher education graduates, who stay in teaching at higher rates than teachers hired through alternatives offering only short-term summer training before full-time teaching (Andrew & Schwab, 1995; Darling-Hammond, 2000b). One reason for this might be the fact that 5-year program graduates typically have both a disciplinary major and a full-year of student teaching tightly integrated with education coursework.

Student teaching appears to make a strong difference in teacher retention. In a longitudinal study of recent college graduates who entered teaching in 1993, a recent NCES report notes that recruits without student teaching—most common among untrained recruits or those who enter through shorter-term alternative routes—leave teaching at rates nearly twice as high as those who have had this kind of clinical training (Henke, Chen, & Geis, 2000). The authors noted:

> In comparison with new teachers who had less training in pedagogy, those with more training were less likely to have left teaching without returning by 1997. Fifteen percent of those who had student taught had left the profession and not returned by 1997, compared with 29 percent of those who had not student taught. Where as 14 percent of certified teachers had left by 1997, 49 percent of those without certification had not done so (p. 49).

Findings about the high attrition rates of those hired without full preparation for teaching raise questions about the cost-effectiveness of a recruitment strategy that relies on teachers with little preparation who are likely to leave the profession before they can learn to become effective with children. Meanwhile, the children they have taught—almost always the most disadvantaged students in the most disadvantaged schools—have not had the benefit of a teacher with either professional knowledge or experience—two sources of greater teaching skill.

A recent study in Texas showed that teacher attrition costs school systems at least $8,000 for each recruit who leaves in the first few years of teaching (Texas Center for Educational Research, 2000). It estimated that the high attrition of beginning teachers in Texas, a growing number of whom enter with little or no preparation and receive few supports in learning to teach, costs the state more than $200 million per year (p. 16). This and other studies of teacher attrition suggest that policymakers should consider both teaching effects and retention patterns when they think about how to recruit and prepare teachers.

Walsh chooses to ignore other studies showing that certified teachers do better than uncertified teachers.

8. One of these by Hawk, Coble, & Swanson (1985), entitled "Certification: It Does Matter," found—in contradiction to Walsh's statement cited above—that teachers' certification in mathematics has a large and

statistically significant effect on student achievement gains in both general mathematics and, to an even greater extent, in algebra. It compared pre- and post-test scores of students whose teachers who were certified in mathematics as compared to those of teachers with similar levels of experience who were uncertified in mathematics. This study is dismissed in one part of Walsh's review as too small (p. 34), so that its findings can be discounted with respect to certification. However, the size of the study does not appear to matter to Walsh when she chooses to cite it as a basis for arguing that only subject matter makes a difference to teaching effectiveness (p. 65). This double standard about the use of research permeates the report. A study is declared inadequate when it finds any contribution of teacher education or certification to any measure of teacher effectiveness but a study of comparable size or methodology—often the same study—is embraced elsewhere and used to support a different argument.

While the study does have a small sample size (it examined 36 teachers, paired by school, course, and ability level of students being taught and the 826 students they taught), it is a reasonably well-controlled matched comparison design. The study does support the idea that subject matter knowledge matters to teaching. However, Walsh misrepresents the study as suggesting that *only* subject matter knowledge matters. The study did not directly examine the isolated effects of subject matter knowledge but the combined effects of subject matter knowledge and educational knowledge—including methods courses in the teaching of the content area—that are part of the certification requirements for an in-field credential. Authors Hawk, Coble, and Swanson concluded:

> The results of this study lend support to maintaining certification requirements as a mechanism to assure the public of qualified classroom teachers... " (p. 15). (Note 12)

As this and other studies reviewed here suggest, content knowledge in combination with content pedagogical knowledge—that is, knowledge about how to teach the content, which, together with student teaching, constitute the major components of certification—appear to make contributions to student learning that exceed the contributions of either component individually. An important policy point from this and other studies of certification is the fact that teachers would not have been guided or encouraged to acquire the content knowledge and content pedagogical knowledge represented by in-field certification unless there were certification requirements. While Walsh and the Fordham Foundation manifesto she endorses would turn all hiring decisions over to principals, it was principals in these schools—and in many others across the country—who hired and assigned out-of-field teachers to teach mathematics as well as other subjects (Ingersoll, 1998). In a policy world that eliminates teacher certification, there would be no barrier to that practice occurring on an even more widespread basis.

9. Another, much larger study resulted in similar findings about teacher certification in California. Fetler (1999) examined the relationship between school scores on the state's mathematics test and teachers' average experience levels and certification status in 795 high schools, after controlling for student poverty rates and test participation rates. It found that the percent of teachers on emergency credentials exerted a strong and highly significant negative influence on student achievement. The author concluded that, "After factoring out the effects of poverty, teacher experience and preparation are significantly related to achievement" (p. 13).

This study is cited but never discussed in Walsh's revised report. In her original appendix, Walsh applauded the study's methods but then sought to dismiss its findings with two inaccurate assertions. First, she suggested, incorrectly, that the study's results pertained to subject matter knowledge alone, not to the combination of subject matter and teaching knowledge represented by certification. She misread both the study and the requirements of California's credentialing system to make this claim, appearing to believe that individuals who have passed only the subject matter requirement of a content test are granted full credentials in California (they are not), that individuals who are certified through internship programs (California's alternative route) do not have to complete pedagogical requirements (this is false), and that individuals are hired on emergency permits solely if they lack content knowledge (this is also false). (Note 13) Walsh also suggested, incorrectly, that the study "may have some basic methodology problems, by reaching conclusions using aggregated state-wide data." However, all of the study's data are aggregated to the school level, not the state level. (See the author's confirmation of this statement, below.) In the original appendix, (Note 14) Walsh stated:

> The article would be only be of interest if someone tried to assert that a teacher who knows no math could be a good math teacher. Any attempt to use this study as evidence against the practice of hiring alternatively trained teachers, as appears to be Darling-Hammond's implies (sic) and as Wilson et al. interpret it, loses all of its impact after reading Fetler.... In fact the author.... is primarily advocating ensuring that math teachers take more subject matter coursework, and is clearly disinterested in any effect that may be had from coursework in "professional knowledge."

The author, Mark Fetler, took strong issue with this interpretation of his findings. When I shared Walsh's statement with Fetler, he wrote in reply:

> I am surprised that Kate Walsh makes those statements. I had a brief telephone conversation

> with her, but she was not forthcoming about her intent. Meeting the subject matter requirement involves both knowing the topic, e.g., Algebra, and the specific procedures needed to teach it in the classroom. Someone who knows how to solve quadratic equations, but does not know how to convey that information to children in a classroom, is a poor teacher. Both math subject knowledge and math pedagogy are essential. I believe that my study is consistent with these statements.... I would be surprised to hear of any research that demonstrated successful teaching that lacked either of those elements. My study supports the importance of appropriate credentials. Supposing that you could find people who know math to teach, if they lack the ability to communicate effectively with children, they will not succeed in the classroom and will create dissatisfied students, parents, colleagues, administrators, and board members. It will be a mess. Higher standards, not lower, are the solution.

Fetler also noted that, "the unit of analysis in my paper is the school. It is not based on statewide aggregated data."

Two other recent school-level studies in California have found significant negative relationships between average student scores on the state examinations and the percentage of teachers on emergency permits, after controlling for student socioeconomic status and other school characteristics (Betts, Rueben, & Dannenberg, 2000; Goe, forthcoming). Like Fetler's study, these studies also found smaller positive relationships between student scores and teacher experience levels, with negative effects on student achievement associated with the proportion of beginning teachers.

California's experience is a good example of what happens when pressures and supports for hiring credentialed teachers are relaxed. After nearly a decade of inadequate and unequal salaries, easy access to emergency permits and waivers, and few incentives for the training and equitable distribution of qualified teachers for high-need fields and locations, California, now one of the lowest-achieving states in the nation, found itself with more than 40,000 teachers teaching on emergency permits or waivers by 1999-2000. The vast majority of these teachers were teaching in a small number of urban school systems in schools with the highest proportions of low-income students and students of color. High-minority schools were nearly seven times as likely to have uncredentialed teachers as low-minority schools. Low-achieving schools were nearly five times as likely to have uncredentialed teachers as high-achieving schools (Note 15) (Shields et al., 2000, pp. 41-43).

These results mirror those already noted in Baltimore, Houston, and other cities. The pattern appears across the country. For example, a recent series in the Chicago "Sun Times" (Note 16) documented that "children in the state's lowest-scoring, highest-minority and highest-poverty schools were roughly five times more likely to have teachers who had flunked at least one certification test" and were least likely to have teachers who were "correctly certified." The burden should be on those who argue against efforts to ensure minimally qualified teachers for all students to prove that the confluence of race, poverty, and low achievement with the presence of untrained and uncertified teachers does not further disadvantage our nation's most vulnerable students.

Evidence about Preservice Teacher Education

For the proposition that "there is little evidence that the content and skills taught in preservice education coursework is (sic) either retained or effective" (p. 7), Walsh cites two articles (Murnane, 1983; Veenman, 1984) from among the many dozens of studies of teacher education that could have been retrieved from the peer-reviewed literature, had she done a search. Both of these are very old pieces, published long before recent reforms in teacher education. Neither of them makes any statement in support of Walsh's claim.

1. Veenman (1984) describes the most frequently cited problems by novice teachers. These included concerns about topics ranging from classroom management to teaching loads and class sizes. Nowhere in the article does he suggest that what teachers learned in preservice education was not retained or effective. In fact, he notes that researchers should look more to the conditions of schooling than to teacher education for explanations for many of the problems beginning teachers cite. Veenman notes that the outcomes of teacher education may vary by characteristics of programs, citing studies finding that those who had had more intense student teaching, more competency-oriented teacher education coursework, or who were more satisfied with their teacher education experiences reported fewer problems in the classroom.

2. Murnane's (1983) article is not an empirical study but a brief commentary on the work of another author who proposed the development of doctoral degrees for teacher leaders. While he questions the value of doctoral education for developing pedagogical skills (as would I), Murnane is careful to point out that there are forms of teacher education that may be helpful, and that lack of evidence in large data sets about the effects of preservice education may be related to the lack of data collected on the topic at that time, nearly 20 years ago. (See additional discussion of this point under "Evidence about Verbal Ability" below.)

3. Walsh ignores the findings of other studies on this topic, including some she has cited for other propositions. She criticizes Evertson, Hawley, and Zlotnik (1985) for their interpretion of the findings of Edward Begle (1979), "a respected mathematician" regarding his findings about teachers' subject matter preparation (p. 34). In one of the few early data sets providing evidence about teacher preparation—a mammoth study of 112,000 students conducted through the National Longitudinal Study of Mathematical Abilities—Begle (reported in Begle & Geeslin, 1972 and, with additional data, in Begle, 1979) found that measures of teacher subject matter knowledge did not exert strong influences on student achievement. He also found that coursework in mathematics methods had a stronger effect on student achievement than higher-level coursework in the subject matter (discussed in Begle, 1979). On the lack of influence of subject matter knowledge in his earlier study (Begle & Geeslin, 1972) Begle noted, and Walsh reports, that the teachers in the study may have had stronger content knowledge than the norm, since they had all been accepted to a National Science Foundation Summer Institute. This is an appropriate point.

   However, Walsh chooses to ignore Begle's findings about the value of education coursework. She does not explain why. Walsh cites Begle's work at several points in her text, and refers readers to her appendix for a review of his work that is no longer there. In her separately-published appendix, Walsh admits of Begle (1979) that, "this is a scholarly work, employing defensible analyses at the time it was written for examining the data." She then nonetheless sought to dismiss it with a vague statement about possible aggregation bias (although achievement data were aggregated only to the classroom level), "too many variables" in the data set, and "much greater variance in the number of subject matter courses teachers took than the number of methodology courses they took." This last complaint is particularly odd. The implications of greater variability in subject matter courses contradicts the point she makes above about the possibly high levels of subject matter knowledge among sample members (in re: Begle & Geeslin, 1972). In fact, wider variability would generally make it easier to find effects, if they are there to be found, rather than harder. In another instance (regarding Byrne, 1983), Walsh notes, correctly, that the limited variability in subject matter coursework levels may have made effects more difficult to find. Walsh seems confused about the research findings and their implications but clear about her goal of discrediting any results that support the value of teachers learning about how to teach their content to others.

4. Monk (1994) offers similar findings on this question from a more recent data set that incorporates more fine-grained variables about teacher education. Using data on 2,829 students from the Longitudinal Study of American Youth, Monk (1994) found that teachers' content preparation, as measured by coursework in the subject field, is positively related to student achievement in mathematics and science, but he notes that the relationship is curvilinear, with diminishing returns to student achievement of teachers' subject matter courses above a threshold level (e.g., five courses in mathematics). In addition, teacher education coursework (e.g. methods courses in the content area) had a positive effect on student learning in mathematics, exhibiting "more powerful effects than additional preparation in the content area" (p. 142). Monk concluded that "a good grasp of one's subject area is a necessary but not a sufficient condition for effective teaching" (p. 142).

   Monk told me that when Walsh first shared her brief appendix review of his work with him, he was surprised that she had used his work to emphasize the importance of subject matter knowledge without acknowledging his findings on the value of education courses. He noted in an email to me that he had communicated to Walsh that:

   > My study of relationships between teacher course taking experiences and subsequent student gains in performance showed that the number of both content courses and content-specific pedagogy courses in a teacher's background is positively related to pupil test score gains in the relevant content area. It is misleading to report the positive results for the content courses and to not acknowledge the positive results for the pedagogy courses.

   After Monk communicated with Walsh, she did acknowledge in her appendix that Monk's study provides support for the contention that education coursework has a positive effect on teaching performance; however, she did not incorporate this admission in her claims that "not one" of the studies ever cited on this topic provides such support.

5. In addition to newer databases that allow some large-scale examinations of the influences of teacher education variables on student achievement, recent studies have begun to look at the outcomes of different teacher education program designs. For example, studies of 5-year teacher education programs—programs that include a bachelor's degree in the discipline plus an additional year of education study and extended student teaching—have found graduates to be more confident and better rated than graduates of 4-year programs in the same institutions and as effective as more senior teachers, as well as more likely to enter and remain in teaching (Andrew & Schwab, 1995; Denton & Peters, 1988). Walsh does not review or cite any of these studies, even those that were available for her information from previous research she claims to have scrutinized.

The Influence of Verbal Ability on Teacher Effectiveness

There is little disagreement about the fact that verbal ability and subject matter knowledge influence teacher effectiveness, although Walsh tries to set up a straw man by suggesting, inaccurately, that some researchers, including myself, have argued otherwise. (See the section on "Misrepresentations of Research" below.) There are two areas of real disagreement, however. One is whether verbal ability alone is the only or best measure of teacher effectiveness. The other is how to evaluate the size of relative contributions of various kinds of knowledge to teacher effectiveness.

As examples cited earlier illustrate, the literature on teacher characteristics and their effects on teacher performance has been a captive of the measures most likely to be available in large data sets at any moment in time. While there are many studies evaluating the influences of teachers' standardized test scores, especially measures of verbal or general academic ability, because these variables have been readily available in large-scale data sets since the 1960s, data on teachers' course-taking backgrounds or teacher education experiences have been included in large data sets only since the early 1990s. Thus, there are more studies finding influences of variables that have most often been measured.

Finally, most of the studies that have included measures of verbal ability or content knowledge have not included measures of teacher education or certification. In a recent review, Wayne and Youngs (in press) found five studies that observed relationships between measures of teachers' verbal or general academic ability and student achievement and that met the standard of having controlled for students' socioeconomic status and prior achievement. Four of these studies employed data sets from the 1960s and 1970s and none of the five included measures of teacher education or certification. Looking across studies in these different eras, in many cases, the relative effect sizes of verbal ability measures are no larger than those of teacher education and certification measures in the studies that use these instead.

1. Walsh uses an article by Murnane (1983) written nearly 20 years ago to argue for the primacy of verbal ability as a correlate of teacher effectiveness. She states, illogically, that, "to concede this relationship would mean acknowledging that formal teacher preparation is not as critical to student achievement as some would advocate" (p. 41). However, Murnane pointed out in his article that evidence about the influence of verbal ability was partly a function of the fact that teachers' standardized test scores were one of the few variables about teachers available in large-scale databases at that time, which did not include good measures of teacher education. In discussing the results on verbal ability, he diverges from Walsh's interpretation, stating:

> Clearly one should not interpret these results as indicating that intellectual ability should be the sole criterion used in recruiting teachers or that formal teacher training cannot make a difference. In fact, the lack of evidence supporting formal preservice training as a source of competence may be to some extent a result of limitations in the available data. For example, all databases suitable for examining the correlates of teaching effectiveness as measured by student achievement gains pertain to a single school district. Since there is less variation in training among teachers within a district than among teachers in the country at large, these databases do not permit the most powerful possible tests of the efficacy of alternative teacher training programs (p. 565).

2. Walsh tries to use another article by Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine (1996) as evidence that verbal ability is the only critical variable influencing teacher effectiveness, and misrepresents a communication she had with Larry Hedges, one of the study's authors, regarding the appropriate interpretation of his findings. Characterizing Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine's article as "a sound review of 60 studies," she then criticizes a direct reference to its findings in a report by the National Commission on Teaching and America's Future (Walsh, p. 17). Her criticism first alludes, incorrectly, to a chart in the Commission's report (which in fact referred to another study, (Note 17)) then she criticizes the interpretation of the chart. The correct chart in the Commission's report (Figure 5, entitled "Effects of Educational Investments" in Darling-Hammond, 1997, p. 9) was reproduced directly from Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine's table 7, column 1 (p. 379) with the same variable labels and statistics as presented in the original source. It describes the size of increase in student achievement for every $500 spent on several different kinds of investments. Here is a reproduction of the table from Greenwald et al.'s study:

Table 7
The effect of $500[a] per student on achievement[b]

	Sample	
Input Variable	**Full Analysis**	**Publication bias robustness**
Per pupil expenditure	0.15	0.15
Teacher education	0.22	0.20
Teacher experience	0.18	0.17
Teacher salary	0.16	0.08

Teacher/pupil ratio	0.04	0.04

[a]1993-94 dollars

[b]All achievement outcomes are in standard deviation units.

In explaining the table, study authors noted that

> The magnitudes (of the effects) for teacher education and teacher experience are higher than, but of the same magnitude, as PPE (per pupil expenditures). That is, one would expect comparable and substantial increases in achievement if resources were targeted to selecting (or retaining) more educated or more experienced teachers. (p. 380)

The Commission used this finding, as Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine had done, as an indicator that investments in teacher education showed stronger influences on pupil achievement gains than investments in other resources, like reduced teacher/pupil ratios. We noted in discussing their overall study that the authors had found evidence of the influences of teacher ability and experience, along with teacher education. However, Walsh criticizes the Commission's two-sentence characterization of the research (which she calls a discussion "in considerable detail") for failing to note that Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine found more studies supporting the influences of teacher verbal ability on achievement than what they labeled "teacher education" (measured in their study as masters degrees because this was the most widely used measure in large data sets.) She suggests that Hedges disagrees with the Commission's characterization, a view that Hedges clarified was inaccurate when I spoke to him. He indicated that Walsh had not revealed her interpretation of his findings when she contacted him, and wrote the following to explain his own view of the proper interpretation of his findings:

> It is true that the relationship between teacher verbal ability and student achievement is relatively large and consistent across the few studies that have examined it. However this does not imply that investing in teacher ability (among possibly poorly qualified teachers) is a cost effective way to enhance student achievement. There are two reasons. First, teacher ability (among qualified teachers) may be more expensive than other resources that could be purchased to improve achievement. That is, there could be a strong relationship but high cost. Second, and more important, the relations found in the studies Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine (1996) reviewed were studies of practicing teachers. There is no reason to expect that the same relation holds among those who are not part of the teaching workforce.

The point here, similar to that made by Murnane (above), is not that verbal ability is not important, but that the evidence does not prove it is the only important contributor or the most efficient way to achieve teacher effectiveness. In fact, most current certification systems combine tests of basic skills and general academic ability, subject matter, and teaching knowledge with evidence of successful supervised clinical experience and coursework focused on teaching knowledge and skills to help candidates assemble many sources of expertise in a more coherent way than would otherwise be the case.

In pursuit of her argument that only verbal ability makes a difference, Walsh seeks to discount other studies that have found strong influences of teacher certification test scores on teacher effectiveness as being relevant only to the measurement of verbal ability and irrelevant to the broader question of teacher certification. These studies are also misrepresented.

3. In her discussion of Schalock (1979) in the appendix (B13), Walsh seeks to dismiss his review's findings about the limited evidence regarding the relationships between teachers' measured intelligence and other indicators of effectiveness because the review is "old, old!!" and because, she argues, "More recent research such as Summers and Wolfe, 1977; Ferguson, 1991; Ferguson & Womack, 1996 *(sic)*; Murnane, 1983; Hanushek, 1971; Strauss and Sawyer, 1986 suggest that intelligence (measured by SAT, verbal ability tests and college selectivity) are indeed substantially important."

   Aside from the facts that two of these "more recent" studies pre-date the review she dismisses as "old, old!" and one (Murnane, 1983) is not a study at all, Walsh here cites two studies that she dismisses elsewhere for "aggregation bias" (Ferguson, 1991 and Strauss & Sawyer, 1986, see Walsh, p. 27) and another (Ferguson & Womack, 1993) that she dismisses without stating a reason (see discussion of Wilson et al., in Appendix B). (Note 18) Walsh's readers are referred to Appendix B for reviews of these issues, but the studies are not included there.

4. Walsh cites Ferguson (1991) for a number of her propositions, including the fact that teacher quality matters (p. 5), that teacher race does not matter (p. 6), and that verbal ability matters (p. 6). Later, she claims—when she wants to dismiss the study for its findings about teacher education and certification—that the study suffers from aggregation bias, a concern I address in the next section on methodological issues. Ferguson's analysis of nearly 900 Texas school districts controlled for student background and district characteristics; he

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

found that combined measures of teachers' expertise—scores on a state teacher licensing examination, master's degrees, and experience—accounted for more of the inter-district variation in students' reading and mathematics achievement (and achievement gains) in grades 1 through 11 than student socioeconomic status. An additional, smaller contribution to student achievement was made by lower pupil-teacher ratios and smaller schools in the elementary grades. The effects were so strong, and the variations in teacher expertise so great, that after controlling for socioeconomic status, the large disparities in achievement between black and white students were almost entirely accounted for by differences in the qualifications of their teachers.

As I noted in an earlier review of this study (Darling-Hammond, 2000c), of the teacher qualifications variables, the strongest relationship was found for scores on the TECAT, a state licensing examination described by the test developer as a test that measures basic skills and professional knowledge. The Texas Education Agency's published outline of the test content shows that it seeks to measure verbal ability, logical thinking, research skills, and a set of items on professional knowledge. Walsh takes issue with this description of the test and argues that the study does not support the value of teacher certification because the test should be considered primarily a basic literacy test. In Walsh's view, this makes it irrelevant to the question of teacher certification—even though it is required for teachers to maintain their certification. She also argues that the relatively smaller influence of master's degrees in Ferguson's study (which accounted for about 5% of the explained variance) means that teacher education is unimportant, and she criticizes the fact that I discuss the three variables associated with teacher quality (TECAT scores, experience, and masters degrees) in combination, although this is also the way in which Ferguson discusses them at several points in his analysis.

Walsh's arguments are illogical in several ways. First, while it is true the TECAT measures basic skills, it also measures other academic abilities and professional knowledge, as confirmed by the test maker's documentation and administering agency's descriptions. There is no basis for making judgments contrary to the claims of the developers. In addition, the test would not exist at all if there were not a state certification system requiring it. Like all of the other variables one can evaluate in studies of this kind, the test scores are a rough proxy for many aspects of teacher capacity that may matter for their performance. In a regression equation of this sort where one variable stands in for others for which data are not available, it undoubtedly captures the effects of other unmeasured factors. Even if it were true that the test was a weak measure of professional knowledge, this would not mean that professional knowledge is unimportant or that verbal ability is the only important variable for predicting teaching ability. Only a better measure of professional knowledge (coursework or a more in-depth test of teaching knowledge) would allow a test of this question. Finally, as Hedges notes above, since the Ferguson study was based on practicing teachers, its findings do not shed light on the relative effectiveness of non-teachers who might score differently on the tests.

Masters degrees and experience are other very partial measures of teacher knowledge and skill that show a modest effect in this study and a larger effect in Ferguson and Ladd's (1996) similar study in Alabama that included a weaker test measure of pre-college general skills (the ACT), which is not designed to capture knowledge relevant to teaching. However, masters degrees are also a very crude proxy for teacher education, given the wide variability in the content of masters degrees pursued by teachers, many of which have been pointed at jobs outside of teaching, such as administration, counseling, measurement and evaluation. In fact, aside from MAT preparation programs in a small number of institutions and specialist programs for reading and special education, there were few masters degree programs for the study of teaching until the recent advent of 5-year teacher education programs and masters degrees developed around the National Board for Professional Teaching Standards that focus on content pedagogy. Thus, there is reason to expect that some masters degree studies would affect teaching ability, but not much reason to expect the effect of masters degrees as an undifferentiated variable to be uniform or large in the aggregate, a point I have made in earlier commentary (Darling-Hammond, 2000a). Goldhaber and Brewer (1998, 2000) have made the same point and have completed research that documents the greater influence of both bachelors and masters degrees in the content area taught (e.g. mathematics or mathematics education) as compared to undifferentiated degrees.

It makes more sense to consider these variables together as proxies for expertise than to treat them as mythically precise measures of totally unrelated constructs. As I have argued elsewhere, research on teaching suggests a view of expertise that includes general knowledge and ability, verbal ability, and subject matter knowledge as foundations; abilities to plan, organize, and implement complex tasks as additional factors; knowledge of teaching, learning, and children as critical for translating ideas into useful learning experiences; and experience as a basis for aggregating and applying knowledge in nonroutine situations (Darling-Hammond, 2000a). David Berliner's studies of expertise in teaching, for example, include experience along with several other traits as a critical aspect of expertise (see e.g. Berliner, 1986). All of these factors combine to make teachers effective; furthermore, one cannot fully partial out the effects of one factor as opposed to another as many are highly correlated.

5. Walsh also cites Strauss and Sawyer (1986) for her proposition that verbal ability matters (p. 6), but fails to report the study's actual findings and seems unconcerned that it might suffer from "aggregation bias." In a study of 145 school districts in North Carolina, these researchers found that teachers' average scores on the National Teacher Examinations (NTE) had a strong influence on average school district test performance. Although the authors did not specify which portion(s) of the NTE were used as measures, the Weighted Common Examinations Test (WCET) was required in North Carolina at that time The WCET included separate subtests measuring general knowledge and professional knowledge about teaching. Walsh apparently

wants to count this as a test of verbal ability, but does not acknowledge the Professional Knowledge Examination portion of the test.

The authors found that, taking into account per-capita income, student race, district capital assets, student plans to attend college, and pupil/teacher ratios, teachers' certification test scores had a strikingly large effect on students' failure rates on the state competency examinations: a 1% increase in teacher quality (as measured by NTE scores) was associated with a 3 to 5% decline in the percentage of students failing the exam. The authors' conclusion is similar to Ferguson's (1991):

> Of the inputs which are potentially policy-controllable (teacher quality, teacher numbers via the pupil-teacher ratio and capital stock), our analysis indicates quite clearly that improving the quality of teachers in the classroom will do more for students who are most educationally at risk, those prone to fail, than reducing the class size or improving the capital stock by any reasonable margin which would be available to policy makers (p. 47).

The same illogic holds in regards to the dismissal of this study as the previous one.

In addition to questions about the content of tests used in various studies, the measures that appear in large data sets are always relatively crude proxies for the constructs under study, so it is impossible to know with great precision exactly what trait is being represented when a variable shows an effect. For example, scores on tests of academic ability like the SAT have generally been strongly correlated with scores on ETS subject matter and professional knowledge tests (Gitomer, Latham, and Zimek, 1999); in eras when higher degrees were less common (e.g. pre-1980), verbal ability scores were also strongly correlated with masters degrees. Where certification tests are in place, test scores correlate with certification status. And both certification status and masters degrees typically correlate with teacher experience, since most states require teachers to obtain certification in order to remain in the workforce and most teachers have traditionally secured masters degrees by taking courses over time while teaching. (This is changing to some extent where beginning teachers are being trained in post-baccalaureate or 5-year programs and sometimes enter the workforce with a masters degree).

These interrelationships do not invalidate studies that have used one or more of these variables, but they are one reason why it is difficult to say with certainty which of these measures—or other unmeasured variables that are related to them—are associated with measured effects. The correlational studies that Walsh relies on almost exclusively do not establish causation; they point to possible relationships for further, more fine-grained exploration. However, Walsh often dismisses other large studies and the more fine-grained studies from consideration, at least when the findings do not suit her predilections.

6. Walsh also cites Ferguson & Womack (1993) for her proposition that verbal ability matters most, although the reason for this is unclear. This study of more than 250 candidates from a single teacher education program examined the influences on 13 dimensions of teaching performance of education and subject matter coursework, NTE subject matter test scores, and GPA in the student's major. The ratings of performance were based on detailed descriptors of teaching on 107 items evaluated by subject matter specialists and education supervisors. The authors found that the amount of education coursework completed by teachers explained more than four times the variance in teacher performance than did measures of content knowledge (NTE specialty scores and GPA in the major). It is possible that Walsh cites this study as support for verbal ability influences because she has confused the NTE specialty tests of subject matter knowledge with other components of the NTE battery measuring general academic ability. In any event, the strength of the relationship was very small. Given her willingness to cite the study for a very weak finding about verbal ability, it is interesting that she does not cite it for its much stronger finding that education coursework mattered for teaching performance.

   In her separately-published appendix, Walsh seeks to dismiss the Ferguson & Womack study because it is limited to a single institution (Note 19) and uses "supervisor's evaluations" as the measure of performance. As noted earlier, she is willing to use studies based on such measures for her own claims, despite her assertions that they should not be included. More important, in this study the ratings are not the global ratings from school principals that have often been found to be relatively low in reliability. They are lower-inference ratings based on a detailed protocol used by subject matter specialists and university supervisors, which are typically more reliable. In addition, the limitations on generalizability created by the use of a single institution are not fatal to consideration of the findings. They require that the study be considered in the context of other studies on similar questions using different samples. Such studies have been conducted.

7. In a similar study which compared relative influences of different kinds of knowledge on 12 dimensions of teacher performance for more than 270 teachers, Guyton and Farokhi (1987) found consistent strong, positive relationships between teacher education coursework performance and teacher performance in the classroom as measured through a standardized observation instrument (the Georgia Teacher Performance Assessment Instrument), while relationships between classroom performance and subject matter test scores were positive but insignificant and relationships between classroom performance and basic academic skill scores were almost nonexistent. (The two measures of basic academic skills were the Georgia Regents' test, a required

examination for public university students, for which the researchers used reading and essay scores, and the states' Teacher Competency Test.)

The researchers noted that extensive reliability studies had been conducted to support the reliability of the TPAI performance measure, which was used statewide as an assessment for certification. Walsh eliminates this study from consideration because it is a single institution study and refers the reader to Appendix B for her review (p. 25). In her appendix, Walsh criticizes the study for its reliance on supervisors' ratings, again failing to distinguish the research on principals' general teacher evaluation ratings from the research on the reliability of the TPAI as an observational instrument. She also apparently failed to read the study carefully, questioning why the numbers of teachers differ for various comparisons, not having noted the authors' explanation that all correlations depended upon the number of teachers for whom data on both variables were available (p. B11).

Whereas Walsh tries to paint an unambiguous picture about the value of such measures as verbal ability (suggesting, for example, that these scores be reported statewide as a primary measure of accountability) and the lack of value of teacher education, the real picture is decidedly more complex. Her evidence for her claims confuses measures of verbal ability with measures of professional knowledge and subject matter knowledge, and often includes studies that actually show influences of these other kinds of knowledge that are at least as strong as measures of verbal ability. The world is just not as simple as Walsh would like to make it appear. Even strong advocates of the notion that academic ability matters are not willing to make the kinds of over-assertions Walsh urges. For example, Hanushek (1992), whom Walsh cites repeatedly for her defense of verbal ability as a key measure concludes:

> The closest thing to a consistent finding among the studies is that "smarter" teachers who perform well on verbal ability tests do better in the classroom. Even for that the evidence is not very strong (p. 116).

While it would be ridiculous to argue that verbal ability and subject matter knowledge do not matter for teaching, it is equally ridiculous to argue that knowledge of teaching and learning and the opportunity to learn to teach under the close supervision of a master teacher through student teaching and other guided experiences do not matter at all. The literature just does not support this reading or the policy implications that Walsh would draw.

The Academic Ability of Teachers who Lack Certification

Another argument made by those who would eliminate certification is that an unconstrained market would allow the recruitment of individuals with higher verbal or general academic ability who do not now enter teaching. While it is probable that some individuals would choose to teach if they did not have to prepare, it is not clear that most of these entrants would be more academically able, that they would be better teachers, or that they would stay long in teaching. It is also unlikely that given current wages, individuals who are now preparing for much higher-paying careers in medicine, the law, engineering, and other professions that require much more onerous preparation and licensing processes would choose teaching as a career simply because they did not have to be certified.

Labor market contexts are relevant to this question. The qualifications of individuals preparing for teaching improved noticeably between the early 1980s and the early 1990s in terms of both academic attainment and ability measures, in part because of the changes in admissions requirements to teacher education adopted by states and universities but also likely because of the substantial increases in real wages for teachers that occurred during the 1980s. Whereas prospective teachers were disproportionately drawn from the bottom quartile of college students in the early 1980s (Lanier & Little, 1986), both grades and test scores improved for teacher candidates by the 1990s.

The Recent College Graduates Survey, which tracks college graduates into the labor market, found that the grade point averages of newly qualified teachers in 1990 were higher than those of the average college graduate, with 51% earning a GPA of 3.25 or better as compared to 40% of all graduates (Grey et al., 1993). However, average GPAs were significantly ***lower*** for the 15% of college graduates entering teaching who were neither certified nor eligible for certification. Most of the uncertified entrants (57%) had grade point averages *below* 3.25, and 20% had GPAs below 2.25. Attrition was also high for the untrained candidates. By the time of the survey (one year later), only one-third of the uncertified entrants were still engaged in teaching as their primary jobs (Grey et al., 1993).

In addition, the Educational Testing Service found that among 270,000 test-takers in 1995 through 1997, college admissions test scores were highly correlated with initial teacher licensing scores (Praxis I and Praxis II), and the lowest average scores on both kinds of tests were those held by individuals who entered teaching without preparation (Gitomer, Latham, and Zimek, 1999). (Walsh describes this 14% of the sample as an "error" in the study since the individuals had not enrolled in a teacher education program; she misunderstands the fact that these Praxis test-takers were the entrants to teaching who used emergency or alternative routes. (Note 20) Prepared teachers scored much higher than unprepared teachers.

While students who prepare to enter fields other than teaching have higher average test scores on measures like the

SAT than do those preparing to enter elementary school teaching, there is no significant difference for prospective secondary teachers, most of whom earn a disciplinary degree along with their teaching certificate. The narrowing of this gap between prospective teachers and others is likely a function of the more rigorous admissions requirements for teacher education enacted in most states and the growth in wages between the early 1980s and the mid-1990s.

Finally, the study found that graduates of NCATE-accredited colleges of education passed the Praxis subject matter tests for teacher licensing at a significantly higher rate than did graduates of unaccredited programs, boosting their chances of passing the examination by nearly 10 percent (Gitomer, Latham, and Zimek, 1999). Walsh suggests that this higher Praxis pass rate might simply reflect the fact that NCATE schools could be located in states with low cutoff scores. However, additional analyses of the data by ETS and another independent study (Note 21) indicate that this is not the case. A more likely explanation is that NCATE's requirements that colleges demonstrate how they screen applicants for general ability and that they ensure strong content backgrounds translate into somewhat greater attention to these matters in institutions that are accredited. These data suggest that standards may increase the general as well as specialized qualifications of prospective teachers. They do not suggest that removal of certification requirements brings higher ability individuals into teaching or keeps them there.

It is important to recognize that labor market incentives operate among individuals actually entering teaching. For example, several studies of alternative certification programs found that the academic records of recruits varied substantially by teaching field, with alternatively-certified candidates in high demand shortage fields, such as mathematics and science, having much poorer academic records than candidates in other fields and than candidates from traditional teacher education programs in those same fields (see Natriello & Zumwalt, 1992, re: New Jersey; Lutz and Hutton, 1989 re: Dallas; Stoddart, 1992, re: Los Angeles). It is unlikely that eliminating requirements for training would increase the career attractions to teaching for academically able candidates as much as increased wages would. Meanwhile, eliminating training requirements could result in a less well-qualified teaching force, especially if the elimination of certification standards not only reduced the knowledge of entrants but also reduced pressures for competitive wages.

The Private School Argument

Finally, a claim sometimes made by opponents of teacher certification, including Walsh, is that private schools are more effective than public schools, and that this is because—or at least is not impeded by—the fact that private school teachers are not certified. There are two major problems with the private school "proof": First, there are conflicting findings about the relative effectiveness of public and private schools, with credible evidence on both sides of the question. Second, most private school teachers are certified and an even larger majority have specific preparation for teaching, even when they have not sought certification.

On the effectiveness of private schools, Walsh cites Coleman, Hoffer, & Kilgore (1982), who examined data from the first wave of High school and Beyond surveys, conducted in 1980, and found evidence of higher performance for comparable students in Catholic and other private schools as compared to public schools. The researchers attributed their findings primarily to differences in student behavior across school sectors, measured by variables like lower rates of absenteeism, cutting class, and fighting, along with factors like more time spent on homework and higher individual student attendance. They also found that achievement was actually ***higher*** for comparable students who were in public schools that had these characteristics. Subsequent studies have produced findings that favor both public and private schools after controlling for student characteristics and school organization (Bryk & Lee, 1992; Lee & Bryk, 1988; Lee, Dedrick, & Smith, 1991). Most studies have pointed to variables like school and class size, school organization, and curriculum differentiation as critical variables in determining both public and private school effectiveness. When these factors are controlled, public school students often do as well or better than private school students in schools with similar features.

Furthermore, differences in the preparation of public and private school personnel are not as large as many people assume. More than 30 states certify private school personnel (Feistritzer, 1984), and, when Coleman did his analysis, more than 85% of private and parochial school teachers were certified, as compared to about 95% of public school teachers (NCES, 1985). This has changed only slightly in the years since. Although certification is not required for private school teachers in all states, only 34% of private school teachers in 1993-94 (the most recent year for which national data are available), were not certified in their primary assignment field. Some of these teachers were certified in fields other than their primary assignment field. Many undertook teacher preparation, even though they did not apply maintain a state license or certificate. In 1993-94, public and private school teachers were almost equally likely to have received an undergraduate degree in education (68.9% for public vs. 61.5% for private elementary teachers and 19.8% for public vs. 19.3% for private secondary teachers) (NCES, 1997, p. 25). The education degree as an indicator of preparation is quite partial, since the education degree has waned as certification increasingly requires a content degree with an education minor or credential. The percentage of 1992-93 bachelor's degree recipients who had taken education courses was 87.1% for public school teachers and 71.6% for private school teachers, (Note 22) and the average number of education credits earned was 37.4 for public school teachers as compared to 35.2 for private school teachers (NCES, 1997, table A-51). (Note 23)

Public school teachers were also more likely to have taken subject matter degrees in their teaching fields than private school teachers. For example, 66% of public school mathematics teachers held a major or minor in the field, as compared to 58% of those in private school. (Goldhaber and Brewer, 2000 reported a similar finding.) The same differentials hold in other fields to somewhat lesser extents. The greater content preparation of public school teachers is likely a function of the fact that certification has required increasing amounts of subject matter coursework in the field to be taught, thus leveraging stronger content preparation for public school teachers in states where private school teachers are not required to hold certification. Almost all states now require certified teachers to hold at least a minor in the field to be taught, and many require a major in the field.

Finally, even if it were true that untrained teachers were unusually effective in some private schools for students of comparable initial achievement levels—a point about which there is no published evidence—it would be a large leap of faith to assume that such teachers would be equally effective in schools where many students have much greater educational needs and students are not pre-selected for their academic ability, their positive school attendance and behavior, and their parents' income and interest in education. There are very large differences in the populations of students attending public and private schools in the United States, (Note 24) which have important implications for teachers' knowledge and skills. It is one thing for a teacher to offer information in whatever manner comes instinctively to students who are academically able, have learned to learn independently, and are well-supported at home by educated parents, tutors, and other supports for their learning. It is quite another thing to teach by the seat of the pants when students do not have these learning supports at home and may present a variety of language and learning differences. Being effective with students who need substantial support for their learning requires greater diagnostic ability and knowledge of how to present information and structure experiences in ways that help them become successful. Systematic knowledge about how to organize curriculum and reach students with special learning needs is most needed in the schools that serve most students with these needs.

Other Misrepresentations of Research Findings

The remainder of Walsh's review continues the kind of misrepresentations documented above, appearing to rely on the belief that readers will read its accusations, but will not read or understand the research itself. Although she prepared a draft appendix with 192 studies that sought to critique many of the studies she dismisses (often inaccurately), it was not published with the report. Appendix B, to which the reader is repeatedly referred for reviews, includes only 14 studies. Throughout the report, the reader is referred to this appendix for critiques of studies that do not appear there. The selection of research included in the published version of the report's appendix is very strange. Many strong studies—some of the key citations in the field—are omitted, along with the flawed rationales for dismissing them that now appear in a separately-published appendix. Some much less important and less well-designed studies are included, with the apparent goal of critiquing their size or designs as though they represented the dozens of studies not mentioned or excluded. Thus, the paper does not include information regarding most of the studies Walsh claims she has reviewed and does not provide evidence for her claim that, of all the studies cited in support of teacher education and certification, "none bear up to scrutiny."

Here are just a few additional examples of major misrepresentations.

1. Goldhaber & Brewer (2000). In a string of citations, Walsh lists a study by Goldhaber and Brewer (2000), for its finding that teachers with a degree in their subject matter are more effective than those without such degrees. This study fits all of Walsh's desiderata: It is large (using a data set that includes more than 3,000 teachers), recent, and published in a peer-reviewed journal. However, Walsh does not cite the authors' findings that certification status has an even greater influence on teachers' effectiveness than a degree in the subject area. Later, Walsh states, "...most research indicates that the most distinct problem in schools serving poor children is the number of teachers who are teaching subjects in which they have no expertise (Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000; ... Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985). These studies do not show that certification status, as an isolated variable, has any significant effect on the achievement level of children who are poor or minority." (p. A6). Neither study examined the subject matter expertise of teachers in low-income schools, and both found strong effects of certification on student achievement. In fact, Goldhaber and Brewer wrote:

> Turning to an examination of the effect of teacher certification, we find that the type (standard, emergency, etc.) of certification a teacher holds is an important determinant of student outcomes. In mathematics, we find the students of teachers who are either not certified in their subject (in these data we cannot distinguish between no certification and certification out of subject area) or hold a private school certification do less well than students whose teachers hold a standard, probationary, or emergency certification in math. Roughly speaking, having a teacher with a standard certification in mathematics rather than a private school certification or a certification out of subject results in at least a 1.3 point increase in the mathematics test. This is equivalent to about 10% of the standard deviation on the 12th grade test, a little more than the impact of having a teacher with a BA and MA in mathematics. Though the effects are not as strong in magnitude or statistical significance, the pattern of results in science mimics that in mathematics. Teachers who hold private school certification or are not certified in their subject area have a negative (though not statistically significant) impact on science test scores (p. 139).

The authors note that the effect size of "having a teacher with a standard certification in mathematics rather than a private school certification or a certification out of subject" is "a little more than the impact of having a teacher with a BA *and* MA in mathematics." Of course, the certification itself includes requirements for subject matter knowledge as well as for knowledge of teaching and learning. In fact, certified mathematics teachers are more likely to have a degree in the field than non-certified teachers. The fact that the study found a significant effect of certification status even after controlling for whether teachers had a degree in their field and after controlling for experience suggests that whatever is represented by the certification variable has an influence above and beyond the influence of content knowledge and classroom experience.

2. Druva & Anderson (1983). This meta-analysis of 65 studies examined relationships between science teacher characteristics and teaching behaviors, student achievement in science, or both, using meta-analytic techniques to translate results from a wide range of studies into Pearson correlation coefficients in order to compare them. It found that ratings of teaching effectiveness by principals and students were most strongly correlated with the number of education courses taken, followed by student teaching grades, and teaching experience. On a teacher "effectiveness" scale composed of many teaching behaviors associated in process-product research with student achievement, both science training (examined in 28 studies) and education coursework and performance (examined in 47 studies) were related to effectiveness, as were teacher attitudes, values, and temperament. Associations with cognitive and affective student outcome measures were found for both science training and, to a somewhat smaller extent, for education coursework and performance, based on 34 studies for each of these sets of variables. The authors concluded that:

> Student outcomes are positively associated with the preparation of the teacher, especially science training, but also preparation in education and academic work generally.... While the hiring official seeking a new science teacher certainly must look beyond information on the teacher characteristics considered in this study, information on some of these characteristics certainly is worthy of inclusion in the decision-making process.... In general, the hiring official would be well advised to employ teachers with thorough preparation in both professional education and the sciences being taught. There is a relationship between teacher preparation programs and what their graduates do as teachers (p. 477).

Walsh seeks to dismiss the results of this study in part by misreporting them. She states the study "did not show the benefit of education coursework on student achievement" (p. 19), and that education coursework is not significantly related to student outcomes, although significance statistics were not reported in the study. This assertion is not supported by the authors' reported findings that both science coursework and education training showed a relationship to teacher effectiveness as defined by student outcomes (in both cases, though to a greater extent for science coursework) (Note 25) as well as teaching behaviors and ratings (reported in the case of education coursework only).

3. Darling-Hammond (2000). Walsh criticizes and misquotes a study that this author conducted, which examined both the literature on teacher characteristics and student achievement and conducted a regression analysis of state-level data from the National Assessment of Educational Progress and the Schools and Staffing Surveys (Darling-Hammond, 2000). The study found that measures of teacher preparation and certification were by far the strongest correlates of student achievement in reading and mathematics, both before and after controlling for student poverty and language status. The conclusion discussed a number of potential reasons for these large effects:

> The strength of the "well-qualified teacher" variable may be partly due to the fact that it is a proxy for both strong disciplinary knowledge (a major in the field taught) and substantial knowledge of education (full certification). If the two kinds of knowledge are interdependent as suggested in much of the literature, it makes sense that this variable would be more powerful than either subject matter knowledge or teaching knowledge alone. It is also possible that this variable captures other features of the state policy environment including general investments in, and commitment to, education, as well as aspects of the regulatory system for education, such as the extent to which standards are rigorous and the extent to which they are enforced.... Finally, there may be unmeasured correlations between the extent to which states enact and enforce high standards for teachers and the extent to which they have enacted other policies that are supportive of public schools. Although it does not appear that teaching standards are strongly related to investments regarding class sizes or to overall education spending, it is possible that there are other factors influencing student achievement which generally co-exist with teacher quality and which were unmeasured in these estimates.

Walsh seeks to invalidate these findings by raising two complaints, one of which is inaccurate and the other of which is a matter of legitimate discussion in the field. She states, incorrectly, that, "Darling-Hammond did not control for class size differences among the states" (p. 26). State-level differences in average class size were in fact included in the analyses, and the variable had a very small, insignificant effect. Walsh also complains that the state-level analyses suffer from aggregation bias because they used average student test scores—a critique she also levels against other studies she cited approvingly for their findings in other parts of the paper (see e.g. Ferguson, 1991; Strauss & Sawyer, 1986; Coleman, 1966). (Note 26) There are legitimate debates in the field on this point, and I addressed this question in the study itself, as I do again below in the section on "Methodological Issues." For purposes of tracking broad policy trends at the state level, analyses of state level data offer one useful lens. This perspective was shared by the nine reviewers who recommended this paper's publication in a peer-reviewed journal and a peer-reviewed research report series.

Finally, the literature review contained in this study is repeatedly mischaracterized throughout Walsh's paper and her appendix as minimizing or ignoring the influences of verbal ability and subject matter preparation for teaching.

On the relationship between academic ability and teacher effectiveness, Walsh states:

> Darling-Hammond (1999, p. 6) claims there is "little or no relationship between teachers' measured intelligence and their students' achievement." She supports this statement with two studies by Soar, Medley and Cocker (sic) (1983) and Schalock (1979). These two studies simply recycle research from the 1940s and earlier, none of which is retrievable for scrutiny (p. 21).

Walsh misrepresents this analysis by quoting a portion of a sentence out of context and citing the reviews that summarized research on IQ tests as an example of the inappropriate use of older studies. Here is what I actually said:

> While studies as long ago as the 1940s have found positive correlations between teaching performance and measures of teachers' intelligence (usually measured by IQ) or general academic ability (Hellfritsch, 1945; LaDuke, 1945; Rostker, 1945; Skinner, 1947), most relationships are small and statistically insignificant. Two reviews of such studies concluded that there is little or no relationship between teachers' measured intelligence and their students' achievement (Schalock, 1979; Soar, Medley, & Coker, 1983). Explanations for the lack of strong relationship between measures of IQ and teacher effectiveness have included the lack of variability among teachers in this measure and its tenuous relationship to actual performance (Vernon, 1965; Murnane, 1985). However, other studies have suggested that teachers' verbal ability is related to student achievement (e.g., Bowles & Levin, 1968; Coleman et al., 1966; Hanushek, 1971), and that this relationship may be differentially strong for teachers of different types of students (Summers & Wolfe, 1975). Verbal ability, it is hypothesized, may be a more sensitive measure of teachers' abilities to convey ideas in clear and convincing ways (Murnane, 1985)."

Walsh's attempt to distort the text misses two critical points: First, studies of the relationship between IQ and teaching effectiveness (which I noted had found positive though small relationships) were primarily conducted before the 1960s, because IQ tests came into question as measures of ability at that time and were no longer often available in large data sets thereafter. Measures of verbal ability became more popular and widely available in data sets in the 1960s and following, and showed somewhat stronger relationships with teacher outcomes, as I reported in my summary. The studies I cited include many of the same ones that Walsh cites for this proposition—a point she does not acknowledge as she tries to suggest, inaccurately, that I minimize the value of measures of academic ability for teachers. (Note 27)

On the topic of subject matter knowledge, Walsh also suggests on numerous occasions that I seek to minimize the importance of teachers' knowledge of content. She offers my work as an example of her sweeping statement that "certification advocates ... offer evidence that knowledge of subject matter has little effect on teaching performance" (p. 19). Here is what I actually said in my brief summary of the literature, offering an analysis that clearly acknowledges the importance of subject matter knowledge for teaching and interprets the mixed results of studies in terms of what teachers may need to know in order to teach different things.

> Byrne (1983) summarized the results of thirty studies relating teachers' subject matter knowledge to student achievement. The teacher knowledge measures were either a subject knowledge test (standardized or researcher-constructed) or number of college courses taken within the subject area. The results of these studies were mixed, with 17 showing a positive relationship and 14 showing no relationship. However, many of the "no relationship" studies, Byrne noted, had so little variability in the teacher knowledge measure that insignificant findings were almost inevitable. Ashton and Crocker (1987) found only 5 of 14 studies they reviewed exhibited a positive relationship between measures of subject matter knowledge and teacher performance.
>
> It may be that these results are mixed because subject matter knowledge is a positive influence up to some level of basic competence in the subject but is less important thereafter. For example, a controlled study of middle school mathematics teachers, matched by years of experience and school setting, found that students of fully certified mathematics teachers experienced significantly larger gains in achievement than those taught by teachers not certified in mathematics. The differences in student gains were greater for algebra classes than general mathematics (Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985). However, Begle and Geeslin

> (1972) found in a review of mathematics teaching that the absolute number of course credits in mathematics was not linearly related to teacher performance.
>
> It makes sense that knowledge of the material to be taught is essential to good teaching, but also that returns to subject matter expertise would grow smaller beyond some minimal essential level which exceeds the demands of the curriculum being taught. This interpretation is supported by Monk's (1994) more recent study of mathematics and science achievement. Using data on 2,829 students from the Longitudinal Study of American Youth, Monk (1994) found that teachers' content preparation, as measured by coursework in the subject field, is positively related to student achievement in mathematics and science but that the relationship is curvilinear, with diminishing returns to student achievement of teachers' subject matter courses above a threshold level (e.g., five courses in mathematics).
>
> It may also be that the measure of subject matter knowledge makes a difference in the findings. Measures of course-taking in a subject area have more frequently been found to be related to teacher performance than have scores on tests of subject matter knowledge. This might be because tests necessarily capture a narrower slice of any domain. Furthermore, in the United States, most teacher tests have used multiple-choice measures that are not very useful for assessing teachers' ability to analyze and apply knowledge. More authentic measures may capture more of the influence of subject matter knowledge on student learning. For example, a test of French language teachers' speaking skill was found to have significant correlation to students' achievement in speaking and listening (Carroll, 1975).
>
> It seems logical that teachers' abilities to handle the complex tasks of teaching for higher-level learning are likely to be associated, to varying extents, with each of the variables reviewed above: verbal ability, adaptability and creativity, subject matter knowledge, understanding of teaching and learning, specific teaching skills, and experience in the classroom, as well as interactions among these variables. In addition, considerations of fit between the teaching assignment and the teacher's knowledge and experience are likely to influence teachers' effectiveness (Little, 1999), as are conditions that support teachers' individual teaching and the additive effect of teaching across classrooms, such as class sizes and pupil loads, planning time, opportunities to plan and problem solve with colleagues, and curricular supports including appropriate materials and equipment (Darling-Hammond, 1997).

Finally, Walsh suggests in several places that I have characterized the research as indicating a "negative relationship between student outcomes and the NTE subject matter tests" (p. 19). In fact, I stated that "Studies of teachers' scores on the subject matter tests of the National Teacher Examinations (NTE) have found ***no consistent*** relationship between this measure of subject matter knowledge and teacher performance as measured by student outcomes or supervisory ratings. Most studies show small, statistically insignificant relationships, both positive and negative (Andrews, Blackmon & Mackey, 1980; Ayers & Qualls, 1979; Haney, Madaus, & Kreitzer, 1986; Quirk, Witten, & Weinberg, 1973; Summers & Wolfe, 1975)." (Note 28) Walsh misrepresents this statement numerous times.

Methodological Issues

One of the ways that Walsh seeks to make much of the research on teacher education disappear is by suggesting that it is inappropriate to cite studies that are older, smaller, use measures of performance other than student achievement scores, are aggregated at a level above the classroom, or are published in venues other than peer-reviewed journals.

As noted above, Walsh uses a double standard in selecting research to reject when it finds evidence of the influence of teacher education on student learning and research to cite for her own purposes. While she discounts the findings of many dissertation studies and technical reports because they were not published in peer-reviewed journals, in making her own claims, she cites at least 15 studies that were not published in peer-reviewed journals or technical report series and at least 20 that were published before 1980, including some that she elsewhere dismissed from consideration because she did not like specific findings. For findings she likes, she also cites several that use supervisory ratings as the only measures of teacher effectiveness and others that she later dismisses for aggregation bias. Sometimes she represents the studies' findings accurately; sometimes not. Many of the studies she cites for various propositions do not contain the findings for which they are cited—or, in several cases, any data on the question at all.

I would not argue, as Walsh does, that none of these studies have value as contributions to the literature. However, the double standard she applies in using studies of different eras, sizes, aggregation levels, dependent variables, and publication statuses perhaps proves the point that to evaluate the weight of evidence in a field it is often necessary to triangulate findings that used different methods, over different time periods, and at different levels of aggregation to see where there is an accrual of evidence over time and across methods. Of course it is important to do this with appropriate attention to the methodological strengths and weaknesses of various studies and lines of research. Unfortunately, Walsh often does this poorly, appearing to misunderstand critical research design issues. Below, I discuss the issues of study size and design, level of aggregation, choice of dependent variable (including the use of supervisory ratings of teacher performance), age, and venue of publication.

Study Size and Design

In one part of her review, Walsh bemoans the lack of experimental research. She then rejects the results of studies with experimental designs because of their smaller sample sizes and cites almost exclusively non-experimental correlational studies, which—though larger—lack direct controls for the variables of interest and must rely on statistical manipulations of data to account, indirectly, for these other influences. This kind of correlational research is, of course, legitimate for staking out broad possibilities in relationships among variables, but it has its own limitations. Many of the more carefully controlled experimental designs can in fact offer more solid evidence about effects, because the "treatment" they are studying is known and the samples can be better controlled than is true for large correlational studies that use proxies and statistical controls rather than direct observation of the phenomena of interest. Medical research, for example, typically uses small sample experimental research as the basis for establishing the possibilities of effects, while using large correlational studies as rough indicators of possible relationships that then require further examination. Single case studies of clinical findings are part of the medical research base along with small experiments sometimes carefully controlled and sometimes not, larger clinical trials, and correlational studies looking at broad tendencies.

The usefulness of small, experimental and quasi-experimental studies—including those that Walsh cites and sometimes dismisses (and other times embraces, depending on her reading of and agreement with the findings)—is not in the definitiveness of their individual findings but in their contribution to a larger body of work from which a preponderance of evidence can be examined. Although medical researchers generally consider correlational studies to comprise a weaker source of evidence about effects than smaller experimental designs, they recognize that mixed methods of research serve complementary purposes.

Of course, one of the reasons correlational studies must be interpreted with caution is that there is always the question of what direction the correlations may point, sometimes referred to as "reverse causation." There is also the problem that variables in these studies are frequently crude proxies for the actual measures of interest and may either fail to capture the intended construct or in fact be reflecting the influences of other unmeasured variables. As noted above, many of the variables that can arguably be said to reflect constructs of interest are highly correlated with one another. Furthermore, many of the variables of interest are not well-represented in large data sets. Thus it is critical to represent in any review of research a range of studies that can tease apart the different relationships of interest with a range of measures.

Level of Aggregation

Another criticism used to dismiss some studies' findings as irrelevant is the charge of "aggregation bias." For example, Walsh dismisses studies that include favorable findings about the value of teacher education in which data are aggregated at the level of the school or district, although she, herself, cites similarly aggregated data for her conclusion that verbal ability matters most (e.g. Coleman, 1966; Ferguson, 1991; Strauss & Sawyer, 1986). More important, this critique misses a crucial point about how research results accrue and are triangulated to look at possible relationships among conditions and outcomes. Just as individual level data about health practices and outcomes inform medical research, for example, so do highly aggregated data at the level of cities, counties, and even countries when researchers seek to understand why, for example, women in some nations have low levels of breast cancer or men have low levels of heart disease. Studies at different levels of aggregation provide different kinds of insights about the phenomena under study. In building a corpus of research on any topic, a wide array of research strategies and levels of analyses are used.

It is true that the size of measured effects of different variables can vary at different levels of the system; however, it is not always clear in which way the bias will operate. Often, the general direction of the results holds at different levels of the system, even if effect sizes differ. For example, in their Alabama study, Ferguson and Ladd (1996) found the effects on student achievement of teachers' test scores, masters degrees, and experience held at both the district and school levels in terms of both significance and directionality. There are pros and cons of both kinds of analyses. On the one hand, disaggregated data can exhibit greater measurement error. On the other hand some analysts have argued that omitted variables may bias the coefficients of school input variables upward when data are aggregated to the district or state level (Hanushek, Rivkin, & Taylor, 1995). However, this generalization does not always prove true. For example, although Summers and Wolfe (1975) found that selectivity ratings of each teacher's undergraduate institution were important in explaining 6th grade students' achievement when examined at the individual teacher level, this relationship disappeared with they aggregated the college ratings and other school inputs into school-level averages. This contradicts the assumption about the usual direction of aggregation bias.

Of course, omitted variables can bias results at any level of the system. Sometimes, especially when the goal of a study is to evaluate broad trends and policy influences, it is important to have data aggregated and analyzed at multiple levels. For interpreting the weight of evidence on a particular issue, the most important question is whether consistent results are found at different levels of aggregation. Just as Walsh cites highly aggregated data as well as less aggregated data on the question of the influences of verbal ability, so the studies examined here reveal influences of measures of teacher education and certification on student achievement at the levels of state (Darling-Hammond, 2000c), school district (Ferguson, 1991; Ferguson & Ladd, 1996; Strauss & Sawyer, 1986), school (Ferguson & Ladd, 1996; Fetler, 1999), and individual teacher (Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000; Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985; Monk, 1994).

Measures for Assessing Teacher Performance

Walsh argues that studies using various ratings of student performance other than student achievement test scores should be discounted, noting that supervisory ratings "can be too subjective to measure teacher quality accurately" (p. 20). As support for this, she cites in her appendix a review of research on teacher evaluation I conducted with colleagues at the RAND Corporation (Darling-Hammond, Wise, & Pease, 1983). While her statement of why I cited the review in another article is completely inaccurate, (Note 29) she is correct when she notes that teacher evaluations by principals and other school-based supervisors have been found to lack strong reliability. Our study of evaluation practices noted that this has been a function of principals' lack of time, inadequate expertise for evaluating all teaching situations, insufficient evaluation training, and inappropriate instrumentation. However, this critique does not extend to ratings of performance that are based on structured observations conducted by trained, expert raters that have been developed and demonstrated to have high reliability. Some of the studies Walsh dismisses use systematic ratings systems by trained observers (e.g. Ferguson & Womack, 1993; Guyton & Farokhi, 1987). The extent to which ratings of performance should be considered or discounted depends on who conducts the rating process, with what training and instrumentation, under what conditions, and with what efforts to enhance reliability.

Age of Studies

The age of studies is also a legitimate but not determinative issue. Studies do not become invalid merely because they are old. While Walsh argues that many older studies using large data sets lacked certain kinds of variables as controls, this does not stop her from citing many of these studies for propositions with which she agrees. More important, the designs of some older studies are at least as strong as some of the more recent studies, and weak studies exist now as then. There is not a strong relationship between study vintage and quality. It is certainly true that teacher education programs and certification requirements have changed over time, so that inferences from studies conducted in one era do not automatically generalize to others; the extent to which one can learn something of use from a study depends on how well the variables are defined and on a knowledge of their relevance to more recent conditions as well as on the strengths and limits of its methodology.

Vintage does influence the prevalence of studies of certain kinds. With respect to studies of the effects of teacher education and certification, a large number of studies were conducted in the high-demand era of the 1960s and '70s when there was great variability in entry pathways and much interest in the topic. It is also true that federal funding for educational research was substantially larger before 1980 than it was during the severe budget cuts of that decade. In addition, in times of relatively low demand, like most of the 1980s, virtually all teachers were certified and there was too little variability to find effects of this variable in large-scale studies. Few studies were concerned with these issues and few data sets had measures of teacher education variables. Interest and data on this topic have just begun to return in the 1990s. Those who are interested in the extent to which—and the ways in which—different kinds of preparation may matter for teacher performance and student learning can and should be informed by earlier studies where they are applicable to the questions under study.

Publication Venue

Although Walsh is incorrect in her statement that dissertations are not retrievable (there are library systems for doing so, if sometimes less than convenient), it is legitimate to suggest that the kind of review they have received is often more variable, and may be less strenuous depending on the university and department, than for many peer-reviewed journals. There are certainly some universities whose dissertation review process is more rigorous than some journals, but the reverse is also certainly true. The same variability in review stringency is true for conference papers and technical reports. However, Walsh herself cites a substantial number of unreviewed papers in support of various positions she takes. There are different schools of thought about how to treat these papers in reviews. Some would argue, as does Veenman (1984), a reviewer cited by Walsh, that the use of all identified studies is justified for a review that seeks to delineate global trends where large numbers of findings are similar (p. 166). Others would argue that papers that have not been published with peer review should be used only when the review includes a critique of each study's methods. Still others might argue, as Walsh does (at least rhetorically if not in practice), that such studies should be excluded from consideration. I accept the point that it is a useful common ground to rely on research published in peer-reviewed journals, and I restrict the analysis in this paper to those studies. Even with this criterion, there is substantial evidence to be weighed and discussed.

Who is Affected by this Debate?

The critical issue here is not the protection of researchers' reputations or the turf of schools of education but the protection of students, especially low-income students and students of color who are disproportionately taught by unprepared and uncertified teachers. As Walsh's paper shows in her references to data on the disparities in access to qualified teachers for students in Baltimore, the children most affected by these arguments are economically and educationally disadvantaged children in central cities who are substantially abandoned by the funding and hiring protections that should operate to provide a foundation for their education. These are the students whose education is most undermined by their lack of access to teachers who have the knowledge and skills to ensure that they learn to the new high standards the society and the state demand.

What the statistics on the lack of certified teachers actually mean on the ground is that many of Baltimore's most educationally vulnerable children—most of them African American—are taught in their elementary school years by teachers who have had no training in how to teach them to read, much less to develop other basic and higher order skills they must have to succeed in school and life. When they fail to learn, they begin the tortuous process of educational failure that will end for many of them in dropping out or being unable to pass the state tests that would grant them a diploma. This then launches a life spent either in a marginal part of the economy that barely yields subsistence wages or, as is true for more than 50% of high school dropouts, in the inability to gain any job at all. In today's economy, these young people are fated to become part of the growing criminal justice system, as incarceration is increasingly linked to inadequate education. More than half of the growing number of inmates in the United States are functionally illiterate and cannot gain access to today's labor market. This is not unrelated to the fact that so many low-income students have been taught by teachers who never learned how to teach them to read.

Illogical Policy Conclusions

The disparities in access to qualified teachers in Maryland are a function of a state school finance system that has underfunded Baltimore's schools for decades, along with inadequate incentives—for example, service scholarships, forgivable loans, and recruitment attractions like salaries and housing assistance—to encourage individuals to acquire strong training and then teach in high-need fields and locations. The Abell Foundation report does not argue for more equitable funding for the schools that serve Maryland's poor and minority students or for stronger incentives to attract well-prepared teachers to these schools. In fact, the report cites approvingly a paper prepared to stave off an equity lawsuit in Maryland (Hanushek, 1996b) which argues against district investments in smaller class sizes or higher salaries in Baltimore, asserting that "Baltimore City would not benefit from additional resources as much as it could benefit by better school management." (Note 30) The Abell Foundation report argues that the enormous disparities in resources and qualified teachers between Baltimore and other districts are not a problem because teacher certification does not mean anything, and that in fact the solution is to do away with certification altogether.

In suggesting that devolving all hiring decisions to principals is the answer to the problem of recruitment for the schools serving minority and poor children, Walsh ignores the fact that, even if all principals had infinite information at their disposal about the likely effectiveness of teachers and made wise, fully informed choices (two assumptions that have been challenged by some research on teacher selection practices), principals do not control the major levers for addressing the problems of unequal supply: unequal district revenues, noncompetitive teacher salary levels, and the policies that govern recruitment and preparation that would allow them to seek out and hire the individuals they might most want to recruit.

Eliminating certification requirements would eliminate pressures for competitive wages or recruitment incentives for teachers, since an open marketplace in a resource-constrained public sector could resolve shortages by lowering standards. In addition, eliminating certification requirements would eliminate evidence about disparities in students' opportunities to learn, for if there are no minimum standards, there will be no evidence of differences in the extent to which they have been achieved by teachers working with different groups of students. This would in turn reduce pressures for the creation of policies to rectify these inequities. Finally, eliminating such standards would remove the mechanisms states have been developing and improving to be sure that teachers know their content well, know how to teach the content to students, know how to teach fundamental skills like reading, and have the ability to meet the special needs of learners who may have learning disabilities that require distinct teaching strategies, whose first language is not English, or who simply struggle with certain kinds of academic tasks and need diagnostic assistance.

The outcome of Walsh's argument, were it to be successful in the policy community, would be continued inequality in funding, depressed salaries for teaching in high-need areas, continued lack of access for poor children to a stable teaching force of well-qualified teachers by any definition, and tragic loss of a productive future for students who are underserved.

To be sure, certification is but a proxy for the subject matter knowledge and knowledge of teaching and learning embodied in various kinds of coursework and in the evidence of ability to practice contained in supervised student teaching. It is true that certification is a relatively crude measure of teachers' knowledge and skills, since the standards for subject matter and teaching knowledge embedded in certification have varied across states and over time, are differently measured, and are differently enforced from place to place. The quality of preparation in both university programs and other alternatives has varied as well, although a number of states have made substantial recent headway in strengthening teachers' preparation and reducing this variability. Given the crudeness of the measure, it is perhaps remarkable that so many studies have found significant effects of teacher certification.

This does not mean that we should be sanguine about certification policies. There are questions about the quality of tests, courses, and institutions that are the subject of study and action across the country (see, for example, Darling-Hammond, Wise, & Klein, 1999). The answer to flaws that may be perceived, however, is not to eliminate or undermine the pathways that enable and require teachers to gain knowledge and students to have access to teachers who have the knowledge they need. If teacher knowledge and skill about both content and how to teach it is important, as substantial evidence suggests it is, the most sensible policy goal is to work to improve preparation opportunities and certification standards so that they increasingly approximate what teachers need to know and do in order to be successful with diverse students.

As Levin (1980) noted, certification is a critically important exercise in the economics of information that should be a target of continual improvement:

> (T)he facts that we expect the schools to provide benefits to society that go beyond the sum of those conferred upon individual students, that it is difficult for many students and their parents to judge certain aspects of teacher proficiency, and that teachers cannot be instantaneously dismissed, mean that somehow the state must be concerned about the quality of teaching. It cannot be left only to the individual judgments of students and their parents or the educational administrators who are vested with managing the schools in behalf of society. The purpose of certification of teachers and accreditation of the programs in which they received their training is to provide information on whether teachers possess the minimum proficiencies that are required from the teaching function. Because this is an exercise in the provision of information, it is important to review the criteria for setting out how one selects the information that is necessary to make a certification or accreditation decision (p. 7).

Conclusion

Kate Walsh has dismissed or misreported much of the existing evidence base in order to argue that teacher education makes no difference to teacher performance or student learning and that students would be better off without state efforts to regulate entry into teaching or to ensure certain kinds of teachers' learning. While she argues for recruiting bright people into teaching (and who could disagree with that?), her proposals offer no incentives for attracting individuals into teaching other than the removal of preparation requirements. While this proposal is couched as the elimination of "barriers" to teaching, evidence suggests that lack of preparation actually contributes to high attrition rates and thereby becomes a disincentive to long-term teaching commitments and to the creation of a stable, high ability teaching force. Lack of preparation also contributes to lower levels of learning, especially for those students who most need skillful teaching in order to succeed.

The evidence from research presented here and elsewhere makes clear that the policies Walsh endorses could bring harm to many children, especially those who are already least well served by the current system. Those who make such arguments for eliminating one of the few protections these children have should bear the burden of proof for showing how what they propose could lead to greater equity and excellence in American schools.

Notes

1. The research assistance of Lisa Marie Carlson is gratefully acknowledged.

2. "Teacher Certification Reconsidered: Stumbling for Quality" is published through the Abell Foundation website: www.abellfoundation.org. The version of the report that was publicized and published on this website in October, 2001 is the basis for this response. The report has since been amended. In a reply to my response posted to the Abell Foundation website, Walsh noted that some of the errors I pointed out have been removed in the hard copy version the foundation published in December 2001.

3. In addition to the Abell Foundation, these include the Fordham Foundation, which has issued a "manifesto" urging the elimination of teacher education and certification requirements.

4. See The Research and Rhetoric on Teacher Certification: A Response to Teacher Certification Reconsidered, at http://www.nctaf.org.

5. See Teacher Certification Reconsidered: Stumbling for Quality, A Rejoinder (November, 2001) at www.abellfoundation.org.

6. A separate appendix is published on the Abell Foundation website. Soem of its entries have changed as criticisms of the report have been lodged.

7. See, for example, footnote 18 on p. 13 where Walsh refers readers to Appendix B for analysis of six studies, only two of which (Guyton & Farokhi, 1987; Monk, 1994) are actually included there. Appendix B of the published version of Walsh's report includes only 14 of 192 studies originally included in her draft of July 23, 2001 and does not include most of the key studies on the topic. A longer appendix was later added to the Abell Foundation website. Readers who consult with that document will find that many of the studies listed are not concerned with teacher education but are cited for other reasons related to one of Walsh's own arguments; many others are not reviewed because they were not retrieved or were deemed too old or too small; still others are "reviewed" only in the sense that

complaints are made about them or about the way they were cited by another researcher.

8. In a reply to my response, Walsh and Podgursky (2001) suggest that Wenglinsky referred only to in-service education. However, the NAEP questions Wenglinsky analyzed for evidence of teacher learning covered coursework or professional development teachers had encountered before or after entering teaching. The stem for these questions was in each case one of the following: "During the past five years, have you taken courses *or* participated in professional development activities in any of the following?" or "Have you ever received training in any of the following, either in courses or in-service education?"

9. Another study by the California Commission on Teacher Credentialing found the attrition rates of Los Angeles Teacher Trainees who dropped out before they entered teaching to be quite high. Of the first cohort, 80.3% completed the first year of training and only 64.6% completed the second year and received a clear credential the year after (Wright, McKibbon, and Walton, 1987). This 35% attrition rate prior to graduation from the program added to the 53% attrition rate of those who completed the program but left the district within the subsequent 7 years (Stoddart, 1992) left only about 30% of the original cohort in the district after 7 years.

10. In her *Education Next* article, Walsh (2002) lists a set of studies with sample sizes of up to 55 teachers as "too small to produce results that are reliable or that can be generalized to the larger population," (on-line version, p. 9). However, in her reply to me (Walsh and Podgursky, 2001, p. 14), she states that because Miller, McKenna, & McKenna's study was a matched pair study, a "gold standard of research," its small numbers (18 teachers for examining student achievement effects) are justified. Yet just pages earlier in the same document (p. 8), she and Podgursky criticize another matched pair study (Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985) which has a larger sample (36 teachers) and stronger design for evaluating student achievement (Miller et al. drop most of their teachers and the matched comparison design when they evaluate student test scores) as lacking statistical controls (also missing in the Miller et al. study) and failing to adjust for pre-test scores of students (Miller, McKenna and McKenna do not even present the pre-test scores of students). The Hawk et al. study, which Walsh originally cited approvingly as an argument for content knowledge is now dismissed by Podgursky as "small and not well-controlled" to avoid having to acknowledge its results, which find positive effects of teacher certification on student achievement.

11. Personal communications with economist Susanna Loeb and statistician William Billet.

12. As one of dozens of examples of general sloppiness, neither the Goldhaber and Brewer study nor the Hawk, Coble, and Swanson study cited by Walsh for this proposition even treated the question of whether "the most distinct problem in schools serving poor children is the number of teachers who are teaching subjects in which they have no expertise." Neither study examined or reported on the socioeconomic status of students or the distribution of teachers in schools serving different children.

13. As the study clearly states, California uses emergency permits for those who lack either subject matter competence or pedagogy or both. The requirement for a clear credential is passage of both subject matter competence and a set of pedagogical requirements, whether these are completed in a "traditional" or an "alternative" program, which in California would be an internship model requiring the candidates to meet the same standards as traditional programs. In fact, the composition of the emergency permit pool in California is nearly the opposite of what Walsh seems to surmise. This pool includes many teachers who have passed the subject matter test (or alternative content course requirements) in mathematics but who have not completed teacher education requirements. It also includes many teachers who have passed a basic skills test but have not completed either the subject matter or teacher education requirements for a clear credential. It includes very few individuals who have completed teacher education requirements but who have not completed subject matter requirements, since demonstration of subject matter competence is a prerequisite for entering the student teaching or internship portion of teacher education in California. Furthermore, experienced teachers who may be teaching math out of field would generally have been included in Fetler's data set as credentialed, since out of field teaching is not monitored by the state through the data set he used.

14. The original appendix was included in Walsh's draft dated July 23, 2001. Her final complete appendix published in October, 2001 modifies this statement only slightly, stating, "The author's principal and clear lament is the lack of subject matter knowledge in mathematics, with little mention at all of education coursework that may be lacking."

15. High-minority schools were defined as those with more than 90% students of color; low-minority schools had fewer than 30%. High-achieving schools were defined as those in the top quartile of achievement on the SAT-9 tests used by the state; low-achieving schools were those in the bottom quartile.

16. Rosalind Rossi, "Teacher woes worst in poor schools," Chicago Sun Times, October 10, 2001.

17. Walsh states that, "L. Darling-Hammond ... presents a chart using an ambiguous term 'Teacher Qualifications' which accounted for nearly half of the student achievement gains." (p. 17). The chart to which Walsh alludes actually referred to another study by Ferguson (1996) and was clearly labeled as such. Another chart next to this one was drawn directly from a table in the Greenwald, Hedges, and Laine study, and was also clearly marked.

18. In a later response to my reply (Walsh & Podgursky, 2001), Walsh notes that she cited Ferguson & Womack in

error and meant to cite Ferguson and Ladd (1996). However, this study is one she should have discounted due to its level of aggregation if she were adhering to her own standards for evaluating research.

19. One odd criticism is that the institution, Arkansas Tech, has "low entrance requirements, making it unlikely that enough variance in student ability, background and coursework is present to reflect a broader population. The variance may be too narrow or at least skewed." Walsh seems to be unaware that the variance in student ability measures is usually much larger in large state universities like this one than it is in more selective colleges, thus making some kinds of inferences more, rather than less supportable. The more appropriate question about single institution studies is whether they may generalize to unlike institutions, a legitimate point that Walsh does not raise, and that should be answered by conducting studies within and across institutional contexts.

20. Some may also have been those teachers who needed to take the Praxis as an entrance examination for a post-baccalaureate teacher education program.

21. The ETS re-analysis is soon to be published. An earlier analysis of the federal Baccalaureate and Beyond data base found that 1993 graduates of NCATE-accredited teacher education programs were about 50% more likely to have scored above the 50th percentile on SAT and ACT tests than graduates of non-NCATE teacher education programs (Shotel, 1998). NCATE graduates had also taken more social science, computer science, advanced foreign language credit, pre-college mathematics, and teaching coursework and fewer remedial English courses than non-NCATE graduates, with other areas being approximately equal (Shotel, 1998).

22. The proportions who had taken other kinds of liberal arts coursework also differed little. For example, the proportion of 1992-93 bachelor's degree recipients who had taken college coursework in mathematics at the level of calculus and above was 18.3% in public schools and 16.9% in private schools; science was 77.2% vs. 73.5% (table A-51).

23. These statistics pertain to the youngest teachers in public and private schools: 1992-'93 bachelors degree recipients hired by 1993-94. These teachers are the least likely to be certified, even though they have taken education coursework at rates nearly as high as public school teachers. This suggests that many of these teachers may have prepared to teach but did not seek or secure state certification. In 1993-94, NCES reports that about 36% of private school teachers held no certificate in their primary assignment field (the data are not presented regarding their certification in another field other than the primary teaching assignment). The rates of non-certification ranged from 27% for those with 20 or more years of teaching experience to 51% for those with 3 or fewer years of teaching experience (NCES, 1997, table A3.14a).

24. For example, while most private school students (52%) attend schools that are less than 10% minority, only 31% of public school students do (NCES, Digest of Education Statistics, 1999, p. 71, table 60 and p. 119, table 99). African American and Latino students are at least 50% more likely to attend public than private schools. (NCES, 1997, Table A2.13). Most low-income students and students of color now attend public schools in urban public school districts.

25. Walsh objects to a composite "education and performance" variable created by the authors, which included the amount of education coursework, student teaching grade, GPA, and science teaching experience.

26. In Walsh's original appendix, this study is further critiqued because the reviewer was not clear on the meaning of the term "out-of-field" in the study when referencing elementary school teachers. The article defined the proportion of "well-qualified teachers" as the proportion holding state certification and the equivalent of a major (either an undergraduate major or masters degree) in the field taught. For elementary teachers, the equivalent of a major was defined an elementary education degree for generalists who teach multiple subjects to the same group of students or as degree in the field taught for elementary specialists (e.g. reading, mathematics or mathematics education, special education). The study defined "out-of-field" for elementary teachers in the same way it was defined for secondary teachers: holding less than a minor or the equivalent in the fields described above (elementary education in the case of generalists or the specialist field (e.g. reading or mathematics in the case of specialists).

27. For some mysterious reason, Walsh also tries to make a point that I differentiate (wrongly in her view) between cognitive ability or IQ and verbal ability (see her footnote 14, p. 8), despite the fact that this is a standard distinction in the literature made by many of the analysts Walsh herself quotes for support of the importance of verbal ability measures. Few measurement experts would argue that IQ, as it was defined and measured in the 1940s and '50s, represents the same construct as verbal ability, as Walsh seems to be invested in proving.

28. Walsh makes a hash of the research cited here on the relationship between teacher test scores and measures of teacher effectiveness, striving to prove that studies which found largely insignificant positive and negative relationships between NTE scores and student achievement at least did not find significant negative relationships. Since there is little disagreement about the value of having teachers demonstrate their basic skills and subject matter knowledge through either coursework or testing, I do not review each of these older studies here.

29. In her separately-published appendix, Walsh states that, "In 1999, Darling-Hammond summarized the main point

of this article as a call for using student achievement as the measure of teacher quality." In fact, in Darling-Hammond (1999), I cited this review for an entirely different point. I cited it for the proposition that "Teachers' abilities to structure material, ask higher order questions, use student ideas, and probe student comments have also been found to be important variables in what students learn."

30. Cited in the separately-published appendix entry 88, p.50.

References

Andrew, M. & Schwab, R.L. (1995). Has reform in teacher education influenced teacher performance? An outcome assessment of graduates of eleven teacher education programs. *Action in Teacher Education, 17*: 43-53.

Andrews, J.W., Blackmon, C.R., & Mackey, J.A. (1980). Preservice performance and the National Teacher Examinations. *Phi Delta Kappan, 61(5)*: 358-359.

Ashton, P. & Crocker, L. (1987). Systematic study of planned variations: The essential focus of teacher education reform. *Journal of Teacher Education,* 2-8.

Ayers, J.B., & Qualls, G.S. (1979). Concurrent and predictive validity of the National Teacher Examinations. *Journal of Educational Research, 73 (2)*: 86-92.

Begle, E.G. (1979). *Critical variables in mathematics education: Findings from a survey of the empirical literature.* Washington, DC: Mathematical Association of American and National Council of Teachers of Mathematics.

Begle, E.G. & Geeslin, W. (1972). *Teacher effectiveness in mathematics instruction. National Longitudinal Study of Mathematical Abilities Reports No. 28.* Washington, DC: Mathematical Association of America and National Council of Teachers of Mathematics.

Berliner, D.C. (1986). In pursuit of the expert pedagogue, *Educational Researcher* (August/September): 5-13.

Betts, J.R., Rueben, K.S., Danenberg, A. (2000). Equal resources, equal outcomes? The distribution of school resources and student achievement in California. San Francisco: Public Policy Institute of California.

Bliss, T. (1992). Alternative certification in Connecticut: Reshaping the profession. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67 (3)*: 35-54.

Bowles, S., & Levin, H.M. (1968). The determinants of scholastic achievement- An appraisal of some recent evidence. *Journal of Human Resources, 3*: 3-24.

Bradshaw, L. & Hawk, P. (1996). *Teacher Certification: Does It Really Make a Difference in Student Achievement?* Greenville, NC: Eastern North Carolina Consortium for Assistance and Research in Education.

Bryk, A.S. & Lee V.E. (1992). Are politics the problems and markets the answer? An essay review of "Politics, markets and America's schools." *Economics of Education Review, 11(4)*: 439-451.

Byrne, C.J. (1983). *Teacher knowledge and teacher effectiveness: A literature review, theoretical analysis and discussion of research strategy.* Paper presented at the meeting of the Northwestern Educational Research Association, Ellenville, NY.

Carroll, J.B. (1975). *The Teaching of French as a Foreign Language in Eight Countries.* New York: John Wiley and Sons.

Coleman, J.S., Campbell, E.Q., Hobson, C.J., McPartland, J., Mood, A.M., Weinfeld, F.D., & York, R.L. (1966). *Equality of Educational Opportunity.* Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.

Coleman S. J., Hoffer T., and Kilgore, S. (1982). Cognitive outcomes in public and private schools. *Sociology of Education, 55* (2-3): 65-76.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1992). Teaching and knowledge: Policy issues posed by alternate certification for teachers. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67(3)*: 123-154.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1997). *Doing What Matters Most: Investing in Quality Teaching.* NY: National Commission on Teaching and America's Future, Teachers College, Columbia University.

Darling-Hammond, L., Wise, A.E., & Klein, S.P. (1999). *A license to teach.* San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Darling-Hammond, L. (2000a). Reforming teacher preparation and licensing: Debating the evidence. *Teachers College Record, 102,* (1): 28-56.

Darling-Hammond, L. (2000b). *Solving the Dilemmas of Teacher Supply, Demand, and Standards: How We Can Ensure a Competent, Caring, and Qualified Teacher for Every Child.* NY: National Commission on Teaching and America's Future.

Darling-Hammond, L. (2000c). Teacher quality and student achievement. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8(1)*: http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n1.html

Darling-Hammond, L., Berry, B., & Thoreson, A. (2001). Does Teacher Certification Matter? Evaluating the Evidence. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 23(1)*: 57-77.

Darling-Hammond, L., Hudson, L., & Kirby, S. (1989). *Redesigning Teacher Education: Opening the Door for New Recruits to Science and Mathematics Teaching.* Santa Monica: The RAND Corporation.

Darling-Hammond, L., Wise, A.E. & Pease, S.R. (1983). Teacher evaluation in the organizational context: a review of the literature. *Review of Educational Research, 53*: 285-237.

Denton, J.J., & Peters, W.H. (1988). *Program Assessment Report: Curriculum Evaluation of a Non-traditional Program for Certifying Teachers.* Texas A&M University, College Station, TX.

Druva, C.A., & Anderson, R.D. (1983). Science teacher characteristics by teacher behavior and by student outcome: A meta-analysis of research. *Journal of Research in Science Teaching, 20(5)*: 467-479.

Duffy, G. & Roehler, L. (1989). The tension between information-giving and mediation: Perspectives on instructional explanation and teacher change. In J. Brophy (ed.), *Advances in research on teaching, Vol. 1.* Greenwich, CT: JAI.

Duffy, G., Roehler, L., Sivan, E., Rackliffe, G., Book, C., Meloth, M., Vavrus, L., Wesselman, R., Putnam, J., & ; Bassiri, D. (1987). Effects of explaining reasoning associated with using reading strategies. *Reading Research Quarterly, 22*(3): 347-368.

Evertson, C., Hawley, W., & Zlotnick, M. (1985). Making a difference in educational quality through teacher education. *Journal of Teacher Education, 36* (3), 2-12.

Feistritzer, C.E. (1984). *The Making of a Teacher.* Washington, DC: National Center for Education Information.

Ferguson, R.F. (1991). Paying for public education: New evidence on how and why money matters. *Harvard Journal of Legislation, 28(2)*: 465-498.

Ferguson, R.F. & Ladd, H.F. (1996). How and why money matters: An analysis of Alabama schools. In Helen Ladd (ed.) *Holding Schools Accountable*, pp. 265-298. Washington, DC: Brookings Institution.

Ferguson, P. & Womack, S.T. (1993). The impact of subject matter and education coursework on teaching performance. *Journal of Teacher Education, 44* (1): 55-63.

Fetler, M. (1999). High school staff characteristics and mathematics test results. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 7(9)*: http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v7n9.html

Gitomer, D.H., Latham, A.S., & Ziomek, R. (1999). *The Academic Quality of Prospective Teachers: The Impact of Admissions and Licensure Testing.* Princeton, NJ: Educational Testing Service.

Goe, L. (forthcoming). Legislating equity: The distribution of emergency permit teachers in California. Berkeley: Graduate School of Education, University of California, Berkeley.

Goldhaber, D.D. & Brewer, D. J. (1998, October). When should we reward degrees for teachers? *Phi Delta Kappan*, 134-138.

Goldhaber, D.D. & Brewer, D.J. (2000). Does teacher certification matter? High school certification status and student achievement. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 22*: 129-145.

Greenwald, R., Hedges, L.V., & Laine, R.D. (1996). The effect of school resources on student achievement. *Review of Educational Research, 66*: 361-396.

Grey, L., Cahalan, M., Hein, S., Litman, C., Severynse, J., Warren, S., Wisan, G., & Stowe, P. (1993). *New Teachers in the Job Market: 1991 Update*. Washington, DC: U. S. Department of Education, Office of Educational Research and Improvement.

Guyton, E. & Farokhi, E. (1987). Relationships among academic performance, basic skills, subject matter knowledge and teaching skills of teacher education graduates. *Journal of Teacher Education* (Sept-Oct.): 37-42.

Haney, W., Madaus, G., & Kreitzer, A. (1987). Charms talismanic: testing teachers for the improvement of American education. In E.Z. Rothkopf (Ed.) *Review of Research in Education, 14*: 169-238. Washington, DC: American Educational Research Association.

Haney, W. (2000). The myth of the Texas miracle in education. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8* (41): http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n41/

Hanushek, E. (1971). Teacher characteristics and gains in student achievement: Estimation using micro data. *The American Economic Review 61(2)*: 280-288.

Hanushek, E. (1992). The trade-off between child quantity and quality. *Journal of Political Economy, 100*: 84-117.

Hanushek, E.A., Rivkin, S.G., &Taylor, L.L. (1995). *Aggregation bias and the estimated effects of school resources.* Rochester, NY: University of Rochester, Center for Economic Research.

Hanushek, E. (1996b). *School Resources and achievement in Maryland*. Baltimore, MD: Maryland State Department of Education.

Hawk, P., Coble, C.R., & Swanson, M. (1985). Certification: It does matter. *Journal of Teacher Education, 36(3)*: 13-15.

Hellfritzch, A.G. (1945). A factor analysis of teacher abilities. *Journal of Experimental Education, 14*: 166-169.

Henke, R., Chen, X., & Geis, S. (2000). *Progress through the teacher pipeline: 1992-93 college graduates and elementary/secondary school teaching as of 1997.* Washington, DC: National Center for Education Statistics, U.S. Department of Education.

Ingersoll, R. (1998). The problem of out-of-field teaching. *Phi Delta Kappan,* (June): 773-776.

Jelmberg, J. (1995). College-based teacher education versus state-sponsored alternative programs. *Journal of Teacher Education, 47*(1), 60-66. (Jan-Feb 1996).

Laczko-Kerr, I. & Berliner, D. (2002). The effectiveness of Teach for America and other under-certified teachers on student academic achievement: A case of harmful public policy. *Educational Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(37). Available: http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n37/.

LaDuke, D.V. (1945). The measurement of teaching ability. *Journal of Experimental Education, 14*: 75-100.

Lanier, J. and J. Little. (1986). Research on Teacher Education. In M. Wittrock (ed.), *Handbook of Research on Teaching, Third Edition*. New York: Macmillan.

Lee, V.E. & Byrk, A.S. (1988) Curriculum tracking as mediating the social distribution of high school achievement. *Sociology of Education, 61*: 78-94.

Lee, V.E., Dedrick, R.F., & Smith, J.B. (1991) The effect of the social organization of schools on teachers' self efficacy and satisfaction. *Sociology of Education, 64*: 190-208.

Levin, H. M. (1980). Teacher certification and the economics of information. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 2 (4)*: 5-18.

Little, J.W. (1999). Organizing schools for teacher learning. In L. Darling-Hammond and G. Sykes (eds.), *Teaching as the Learning Profession*, pp. 233-262. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Lutz, F.W. & Hutton, J.B. (1989). Alternative teacher certification: Its policy implications for classroom and personnel practice. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 11(3)*: 237-254.

Miller, J.W., McKenna, M.C., & McKenna, B.A. (1998). A comparison of alternatively and traditionally prepared teachers. *Journal of Teacher Education, 49(3)*: 165- 176.

Mitchell, N. (1987). *Interim Evaluation Report of the Alternative Certification Program (REA87-027-2)*. Dallas, TX: DISD Department of Planning, Evaluation, and Testing.

Monk, D. (1994). Subject area preparation of secondary mathematics and science teachers and student achievement. *Economics of Education Review, 12(2)*: 125-142.

Monk, D. & King, J. (1994). Multi-level teacher resource effects on pupil performance in secondary mathematics and science. In R.G. Ehrenberg (ed.), *Choices and Consequences*. ILR Press, Ithaca, NY.

Murnane, R.J. (1985). *Do Effective Teachers have Common Characteristics: Interpreting the Quantitative Research Evidence.* Paper presented at the National Research Council Conference on Teacher Quality in Science and Mathematics, Washington, DC

Murnane, R.J. (1983). Understanding the sources of teaching competence: Choices, skills and the limits of training. *Teachers College Record, 84(3)*: 564-569.

National Center for Education Statistics (NCES) (1985). *The Condition of Education, 1985*. Washington, DC. U.S. Department of Education.

National Center for Education Statistics (NCES) (1997). *America's Teachers: Profile of a Profession*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education.

National Center for Education Statistics (NCES) (2000). *Digest of Education Statistics, 1999*. Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education.

National Commission on Teaching and America's Future (1996). *What Matters Most: Teaching for America's Future.* New York: Author.

National Reading Panel (2000). *Teaching Children to Read: An Evidence-based Assessment of the Scientific Research Literature on Reading and Its Implications for Reading Instruction*. Washington, DC: National Institute of Child Health and Human Development.

Natriello, G. & Zumwalt, K. (1992). Challenges to an alternative route for teacher education. In Lieberman, A. (Ed.). *The 91st Yearbook of the National Society for the Study of Education,* Vol. 1, pp. 59-78. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Quirk, T.J., Witten, B.J., & Weinberg, S.F. (1973). Review of studies of concurrent and predictive validity of the National Teacher Examinations. *Review of Educational Research, 43*: 89-114.

Palincsar, A.S. & Brown, A.L. (1984). Reciprocal teaching of comprehension-fostering and comprehension-monitoring activities. *Cognition & Instruction, 1*: 117-175.

Raymond, M., Fletcher, S., & Luque, J. (2001). *Teach for America: An Evaluation ofTteacher Differences and Student Student Outcomes in Houston, Texas*. CREDO, The Hoover Institution, Stanford University. Available: http://www.rochester.edu/credo

Rostker, L.E. (1945). The measurement of teaching ability. *Journal of Experimental Education, 14*: 5-51.

Schalock, D. (1979). Research on teacher selection. In D.C. Berliner (ed.), *Review of Research in Education (vol. 7)*, Washington, DC: American Educational Research Association.

Shields et al., Stanford Research International (SRI) (2000). *The Status of the Teaching Profession, 2000: An Update to the Teaching and California's Future Task Force.* Santa Cruz, CA: The Center for the Future of Teaching and Learning.

Shotel, J.R. (Summer 1998). *Does NCATE Make a Difference? Quality in Teacher Education.* Washington, DC: George Washington University.

Skinner, W.A. (1947). *An Investigation of Factors Useful in Predicting Teaching Ability.* University of Manchester. Master of Education thesis.

Soar, R.S., Medley, D.M., and Coker, H. (1983). Teacher evaluation: A critique of currently used methods. *Phi Delta Kappan, 65(4)*: 239-246.

Stafford, D. & Barrow, G. (1994). Houston's alternative certification program. *The Educational Forum, 58*: 193-200.

Stoddart, Trish (1992). An alternate route to teacher certification: Preliminary findings from the Los Angeles Unified School District Intern Program. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67(3).*

Strauss, R.P. & Sawyer, E.A. (1986). Some new evidence on teacher and student competencies. *Economics of Education Review, 5(1)*: 41-48.

Summers, A.A., & Wolfe, B.L. (1975). Which school resources help learning? Efficiency and equality in Philadelphia public schools. *The American Economic Review, 67(4)*: 639-652.

Texas Center for Educational Research (2000). *The Cost of Teacher Turnover*. Austin, TX: Texas State Board for Teacher Certification (SBEC).

U.S. Department of Education. (2002). *Meeting the highly qualified teachers challenge: The Secretary's Annual Report on Teacher Quality.* Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education, Office of Postsecondary Education, Office of Policy Planning and Innovation.

Veenman, S. (1984). Perceived problems of beginning teachers. *Review of Educational Research, 54*: 143-178.

Vernon, P.E. (1965). Personality factors in teacher trainee selection. *British Journal of Education Psychology (35)*: 140-149.

Walsh, K. (2001). *Teacher certification reconsidered: Stumbling for quality.* Baltimore, MD: Abell Foundation. Available: http://www.abellfoundation.org.

Walsh, K. (2002, Spring). The evidence for teacher certification. *Education Next, 2*(1): 79-84.

Wayne, A.J., & Youngs, P. (under review). Teacher characteristics and student achievement gains: A review. *Review of Educational Research.*

Wenglinsky, H. (2000). *How teaching matters: Bringing the classroom back into discussions of teacher quality.* Princeton, NJ: Educational Testing Service.

Wilson, S., Floden, R., & Ferrini-Mundy (2001). *Teacher Preparation Research: Current Knowledge, Gaps, and Recommendations.* University of Washington: Center for the Study of Teaching and Policy.

Wright, David P., Michael McKibbon, & Priscilla Walton (1987). *The Effectiveness of the Teacher Trainee Program: An Alternate Route into Teaching in California.* California Commission on Teacher Credentialing.

About the Author

Linda Darling-Hammond
School of Education
Stanford University

Email: ldh@leland.stanford.edu

Linda Darling-Hammond is Charles E. Ducommun Professor of Education at Stanford University and was Founding Executive Director of the National Commission on Teaching and America's Future. Her research, policy, and teaching focus on teacher education and teaching quality, school restructuring, and educational equity. Among other writings, she is author of *The Right to Learn,* which received the Outstanding Book Award from the American Educational Research Association in 1998.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

William McInerney
Purdue University

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

Rollin Kent (México)

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)

Departamento de Investigación Educativa-
DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 10498 times since September 6, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 37 **September 6, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Effectiveness of "Teach for America" and Other Under-certified Teachers on Student Academic Achievement: A Case of Harmful Public Policy[1]

Ildiko Laczko-Kerr
Arizona Department of Education

David C. Berliner
Arizona State University

Citation: Laczko-Kerr, I., & Berliner, D.C.. (2002, September 6). The effectiveness of "Teach for America" and other under-certified teachers on student academic achievement: A case of harmful public policy," *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(37). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n37/.

Abstract

The academic achievements of students taught by under-certified primary school teachers were compared to the academic achievements of students taught by regularly certified primary school teachers. This sample of under-certified teachers included three types of under-qualified personnel: emergency, temporary and provisionally certified teachers. One subset of these under-certified teachers was from the national program "Teach For America (TFA)." Recent college graduates are placed by TFA where other under-qualified under-certified teachers are often called upon to work, namely, low-income urban and rural school districts. Certified teachers in this study were from accredited universities and all met state requirements for receiving the regular initial certificate to teach. Recently hired under-certified and certified teachers (N=293) from five low-income school districts were matched on a number of variables, resulting in 109 pairs of teachers whose students all took the mandated state achievement test. Results indicate 1) that students of TFA teachers did not perform significantly different from students of other under-certified teachers, and 2) that students of certified teachers out-performed students of teachers who were under-certified. This was true on all three subtests of the SAT 9—reading, mathematics and language arts. Effect sizes favoring the students of certified teachers were substantial. In reading, mathematics, and language, the students of certified teachers outperformed students of under-certified teachers, including the students of the TFA teachers, by about 2 months on a grade equivalent scale. Students of under-certified teachers make about 20% less academic growth per year than do students of teachers with regular certification. Traditional programs of teacher preparation apparently result in positive effects on the academic achievement of low-income primary school children. Present policies allowing under-certified teachers, including those from the TFA program, to work with our most difficult to teach children appear harmful. Such policies increase differences in achievement between the performance of poor children, often immigrant and minority children, and those children who are more advantaged.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

There has been growing interest in "teacher quality," a catch phrase for a host of teacher characteristics, including a teacher's content knowledge, classroom behavior, academic ability, advanced degree work, salary, and teacher education experiences. Among the many characteristics under investigation as an indicator of teacher quality has been teacher certification. This study examines the effects of different kinds of teacher certification on student achievement. Reviews of this issue may be found in Darling-Hammond, 1999 and 2002; Evertson, Hawley & Zlotnik, 1985; and Ashton, Crocker, & Olejnik, 1986.

In Arizona, a state with a strong commitment to standards based reform, policies were needed to ensure that quality teachers would be available for students to meet the new and more rigorous mandated standards. Thus the Arizona Educator Proficiency Assessment (AEPA) was developed as a tool in the state certification process to ensure the quality of new teachers. One part of the test purports to measure teachers' professional knowledge, including pedagogy, teaching methods, and educational theory. The second part of the test covers content knowledge, either elementary content, or for secondary teachers, a subject specific content area. A passing score on the test, clearance by the police of any criminal record, and an accredited university's recommendation that a person is prepared to work as a classroom teacher earns a regular certificate to teach from the State.

Arizona's efforts are part of a national movement to improve the quality of teachers through assessments like the AEPA ("Quality Counts," 2000; Higher Education Reauthorization Act, 1998). But not every district in the state or nation can find regularly certified teachers, giving rise to other policies that appear to work against the goal of increased teacher quality. For example, in Arizona and elsewhere, attempts at improving the quality of the teaching force seem contradicted by the continuing practice of issuing emergency certification (see "Quality Counts," 2000; Olson, 2000). Critics of hiring uncertified teachers ask whether complex, standards—based reforms can be enacted with teachers who are, to varying degrees, untrained. Supporters of hiring uncertified teachers claim that the advantages of traditional teacher education programs are unproven, and some question, as well, whether such training is even necessary. Stated in its simplest form as a research problem the question is: "Do students taught by teachers with emergency certification learn as much or achieve as well as students who are taught by regularly certified teachers?" An answer to this simple question would inform us whether policies designed to improve teacher quality are being undermined by the simultaneous adoption of policies that allow the use of uncertified teachers.

The dilemma associated with using uncertified teachers is not limited to Arizona where, currently, one out of six teachers are estimated to be uncertified (Go, 2002). For example, the Chicago "Sun Times" (Rossi & Grossman, 2002) reports an audit by the Chicago Board of Education showing that 22 percent of teachers in the system's 81 probationary schools—those with the greatest academic needs and the lowest test scores—were not fully qualified to teach. These were teachers missing what the state calls "initial" or "standard" certificates. Other teachers were found with certificates, but they were teaching subjects they were not certified to teach. In all, 900 teachers, about one of every five in Chicago's worst-performing public schools appeared unqualified to teach during the school year 2001-2002. New York State appears to be no different. Lankford, Loeb and Wycoff (2002) report that in a recent school year, in some New York schools, less than half the teachers held certification for the courses they taught. These schools were invariably urban and serving the poor.

With the passage of the *No Child Left Behind Act of 2001* (HR1), federal law will require schools to have a "highly qualified" teacher in every classroom by 2005-2006. Thus research on the effectiveness of uncertified and certified teachers takes on added significance as the designation of teachers as uncertified and certified becomes entwined with the evaluations of teachers so that the highly qualified can be distinguished from those less qualified.

Related Research

The review that follows explores the difference between licensure and certification, reasons for teacher certification, the role of certification in the professionalizaton of the teaching workforce, on-the-job training for teachers, and the assessment of beginning teachers' competency. After those topics are discused briefly, research that bears on a broad range of certification issues and teacher effectiveness is discussed in somewhat more detail. These areas are all highly contested and interpretations of this literature are, more than usual, intertwined with the ideology of the researchers (Cochran-Smith & Fries, 2001).

Licensure and Certification

Teacher certification, at its core, is based on the need to ensure that every public school teacher has had rigorous screening and training and been judged qualified to teach. Certification is designed to protect the public from harm. But there is a difference between certification and licensure. Lawyers, cosmetologists, and physicians represent a few of the many professions that require a practitioner to hold a license in order practice their profession. The goal of licensing tests is to set a minimum level of competency. Professions that require licensure make it illegal for someone without a license to practice that occupation (Pyburn, 1990). A person without a law or cosmetology license would be committing a crime if caught practicing law or working in a hair-dressing salon. No such legal protection is afforded the public when it comes to education. Teachers without certification are simply not allowed to use the title of "certified teacher" but there are no legal impediments for teaching without certification. This difference between certification and licensure allows states to issue emergency certificates but not emergency licenses. Issuance of these emergency certificates produces considerable moral difficulty. A newspaper report on Chicago public schools makes this case dramatically (Rossi & Grossman, 2002). The journalists document that at Howland elementary school, one of Chicago's poorest:

> 55 percent of teachers were "not fully certified" to teach all of their students.... That included four of six teachers in high-stakes classrooms, where kids must repeat a grade if they don't do well on annual tests. All four held substitute certificates, although two were in teacher preparation programs. Assigning uncertified substitutes to low-scoring kids who face high-stakes tests "should be illegal," said Kati Haycock, head of the Education Trust, a Washington, D.C., research and advocacy group. "That's educational malpractice." However, in Chicago, no policy governs who can teach such students.

The "Philadelphia Inquirer" wondered what the city of Philadelphia was going to do about the same problem (Hundreds of teachers, 2002). President George W. Bush had just asked America to ensure that there was a highly qualified teacher in every classroom. But Philadelphia has 30,000 students in classrooms where teachers are uncertified and the city cannot figure out how to solve that problem. President Bush did not mention that while Governor of Texas, during the 1996-97 school year, he allowed 760,000 of the state's 3.8 million students to be taught by uncertified teachers. Nor did he note that the students with uncertified teachers were found not to do as well on the state achievement tests as did students in the classes of regularly certified teachers (Students of certified, 1999). President George W. Bush has now passed on to the nation the problem that Governor George W. Bush could not solve.

Reasons for Certification

Those who defend the process of teacher certification claim it is a necessary component in the development and maintenance of the profession of teaching, as well as the means by which the state can ensure the quality of those who enter the profession. Wise (1994a) notes, however, that there are two methods of controlling entry into the profession, professional control and popular control.

Professional control allows the teaching profession to monitor who becomes a teacher. By specifying standards for certification and through various political mechanisms, the profession controls the quality of teachers who enter the profession. When professional control is present we often see teacher input in the design of teacher certification tests. On the other hand, popular control allows public demand to control who is placed in classrooms, with much less concern for their qualifications. Emergency certificates to teach during times of "shortages" are an example of popular control. Wise (1994b) advocates professional control as the primary means to allow the promotion of teaching within the economic sector. He believes that without certification teaching becomes a trade rather than a profession.

Among other characteristics, a profession is also defined as possessing a distinct body of knowledge and having control of the education and licensing of its members (Pratte & Rury, 1991; Burbules & Densmore, 1991). Labaree (1992) describes professionalization as the ability to demonstrate formal knowledge and to have autonomy in the work place. He explains that any occupational group:

> ...must establish that it has mastery of a formal body of knowledge that is not accessible to the layperson and that gives it special competence in carrying out a particular form of work. In return, the group asks for a monopoly over its area of work on the grounds that only those certifiably capable should be authorized to do such work and to define appropriate practice in the area (p. 125).

Both Wise (1994b) and Roth (1994) fear that demand-based policies allowing for uncertified teachers can be devastating to the profession. They argue that such policies are likely to reduce the quality of teaching, lower the livable wage of teachers, and change the resources that are spent on and in schools. In effect, downgrading the importance of certification and training prevents teaching from meeting one of the criteria by which an occupational group calls itself a profession.

> [A] shift in locus of preparation [from university programs to alternative certification programs] moves teaching in the direction of trade. On-the-job training is not characteristic of a profession. Dismissing the requirement of professional preparation and a credential prior to practice is also uncharacteristic of a profession (Roth, 1994, p. 267).

This battle over control of training is not new. For over 150 years *who* certifies teachers and *how* that certification is to be done has been a topic of intense debate. At all times, as might be expected, professional educators have fought to control the process, using medicine and law as their models (Angus, 2001).

On-the-job Training and Teacher Certification

To counter the argument that teachers can learn all that is required to be effective on the job, Darling-Hammond (2000), Howey and Zimpher (1994), and others argue that there is an inadequate amount of supervision and training provided to novice teachers by schools. Principals and veteran teachers who could serve as mentors generally do not have the required skills, training, or time to provide novices with quality supervision for on-the-job training. With few exceptions, school districts do not now have access to the additional resources needed for the training of teachers, and it is unlikely that such resources can be obtained. Hawley (1992), articulating the views of many others, claims also that there is a body of subject-matter content and subject-matter method, as well as skills and pedagogical knowledge, that needs to be learned prior to teaching. He and other teacher educators argue that it is unlikely that someone without training in subject matter methods could get in front of a class of students and be a successful teacher. This group of scholars rejects the idea that effective teaching can be learned on the job.

Ordinarily, certification should assure the public that a minimal level of competency has been achieved, thereby insuring that unqualified people are not practicing the profession. Darling-Hammond (2000) believes the extant data supports that claim. For example, in an analysis of state level data she found the percent of new teachers in a state who were uncertified correlated negatively with performance on six different state assessments conducted by the National Assessment of Educational Progress. These correlations ran from -.40 to -.63. She found equally large positive correlations for the percent of teachers in a state having regular certification and a major in the field in which they were teaching, again using six NAEP data sets. These correlations ran between +.61 and +.80. Even for state level data the correlations Darling-Hammond found seem to be quite large, allowing her to assert with confidence that students achieve better when they have certified teachers as instructors.

Certification and Competency Testing for Novice Teachers

There are disputes about what should be covered on teacher certification exams because there is conflict about what is necessary for teachers to know in order for them to be effective. Nevertheless, and despite the problem of defining these areas unambiguously, teacher certification exams currently focus on measuring basic skills, content and pedagogical knowledge (Kearns, 1984).

In 42 states, "Candidates [for certification] are required to pass one or more tests of basic skills, general knowledge, subject matter knowledge, or teaching knowledge" (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001, p. 44). But critics maintain that the basic skills certification tests "measure verbal and mathematical achievement at about the 10th grade level. And many states set their passing scores so low that virtually anyone can succeed" (Olson, 2000). Even Minnesota, usually one of the highest scoring states in the nation on standardized tests, has a teacher basic skills test that currently passes over 99% of the applicants (Scores needed, 2002). The Arizona basic skills assessment was also of this kind. It had only a 1% failure rate (Crehan, Hess, Lawrence, & Sabers, 2000). This basic skills test was abandoned, in part, because of its low failure rate and also because of adverse impact on some of Arizona's minority group candidates. The low failure rates nationwide suggest that teacher competence testing in basic skills areas is much more about symbolic politics (the need to appear as if standards have been put in place), and a lot less about genuine and systematic attempts to upgrade the quality of the profession.

In the area of pedagogical skills and methods, the test developers often determine what good teaching looks like based on some definition of teacher quality. But teacher quality often is defined as having the necessary knowledge, skills, abilities and behaviors of a good teacher, a circular definition providing little guidance. Moreover, ideas about quality change from one decade to the next, as well as from one test developer to another, and the criteria for measuring teacher quality (the knowledge, skills, and abilities a teacher possesses) is not readily agreed on from person to person (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001).

The National Research Council (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001) reviewed past and present definitions of teacher quality and competency, finding that past definitions of teacher quality emphasized teachers' virtue. In its more modern form teachers are still expected to be role models for students, representing high standards of personal behavior and expected to transmit worthy cultural and education values. With no diminishment over time, it is still assumed that effective teachers possess certain personality traits, including enthusiasm, curiosity, and compassion, as well as democratic values. And, as always, effective teachers have been thought talented in teaching the prescribed curricula, an increasing concern after states have invested heavily in the development of standards and accountability systems.

Today, most definitions of teacher competence from which assessments follow, are the product of three organizations, namely, the National Board for Professional Teacher Standards (NBPTS), the Interstate New Teacher Assessment Support Consortium (INTASC) and the National Council for Accreditation of Teacher Education (NCATE). The National Research Council (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001) notes that all three sets of standards of quality promoted by these organizations examine teaching in the light of student learning, a relatively new concern. While a focus on learning seems obvious to parents and politicians, this is a much more problematic an issue then it appears to be. The three organizations also acknowledge that teachers' actions or performances depend on many different kinds of knowledge as well as the dispositions to use that knowledge. And they recognize that teachers must also work with others to support the learning and success of all students. The standards of competence described by the three organizations relate to a teacher's commitment to students and their students' learning, requiring that teachers:

- should act on the belief that all students can learn;
- should have deep subject matter knowledge about the substance and structure of their disciplines;
- need to manage and monitor student learning, identify learning goals and choose from teaching styles to meet these goals;
- need to be reflective about their teaching, evaluate their decisions and experiences to make adjustments in their teaching;
- must be part of a larger community consisting of school staff, parents, and the broader non-parent community.

As the National Research Council notes, the standards currently in use "...illustrate the wide range of knowledge, skills, abilities and dispositions that contemporary educators believe competent teachers must possess and demonstrate in the classroom" (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001, p. 31). Given the wide range and lengthy descriptions of the knowledge, skills, abilities and dispositions that the various assessors of teachers' competence have considered necessary to begin to teach, it seems anomalous that arguments to drop teacher education or to provide emergency certificates would have any credibility at all. Test developers find effective classroom teaching to be extremely complex, requiring the coordination of many different kinds of skills and dispositions, many of which cannot be observed directly. It is hard to imagine that an occupation with these characteristics can be effectively learned on-the-job.

This very same occupational complexity also handicaps the developers of teacher certification testing, leading Sabers to note that, "test developers and researchers haven't done a good job of telling the public that they can't measure everything with a test" (in Crehan, et al., 2000). The public believes that a certification exam will eliminate poor teachers from schools and in essence guarantee that teachers who pass these exams are of high quality. But we do not yet have such tests. At present, it is fair to say that many aspects of teaching cannot be assessed by using a multiple choice or essay exam, and if performance tests of teaching were used such testing would be prohibitively expensive (Crehan, et al, 2000).

Validity problems with certification tests

. All teacher certification exams have problems with construct, content, consequential and criterion-referenced validity (Laczko-Kerr, 2002). In brief, there is no evidence that the construct measured in teacher certification exams is understood. In addition, course content varies more widely across teacher training institutes then, say, law schools or medical schools. This invites criticisms about the content validity for teacher certification exams. Additionally, certification tests limit the pool of potential teachers based on race and ethnic background (Murnane, 1991). As the need for teachers of color increases because of the increase in children of color in our public schools, the numbers of minority teachers seems to be decreasing (Gitomer et al., 1999). One reason for this is the increased requirements for insuring teacher quality, including certification testing for teachers. But these exams have an adverse impact on the teacher supply and this raises concerns about the consequential validity of the exams. Finally, teacher certification exams do not appear to have criterion-related or predictive validity (Smith & Hambleton, 1990; see also Glass, 2002). Certification tests simply do not predict success in teaching. Rather, their intent is to screen out certain applicants from the teaching pool (Sabers in Crehan, et al., 2000). Jaeger, quoted in the National Academy of Science/National Research Council report has an additional concern, namely, that " the sorts of experimental or statistical controls necessary to produce trustworthy criterion-related evidence [are] virtually impossible to obtain" (Mitchell, Robinson, Plake, & Knowles, 2001, p. 72). These problems with validity, particularly predictive validity, seem to bolster the arguments of those who support emergency certification. If the tests cannot predict teaching competency, they argue, why must they be required for certification? The answer offered to that question by supporters of teacher certification tests is that passing the tests ensures familiarity with a broad teacher education curriculum, without which beginning teachers would not do well. This debate can be restated as a version of the simple question we noted above: Does teacher education and the certification that accompanies such programs make a difference in the achievement of students?

Research on Certified Teachers and Student Achievement

Three major areas of research are salient for understanding the importance of certification. First is the research on the effects of certification regarding teachers' content knowledge, particularly mathematics and science knowledge, as it affects student achievement. A second area of research deals with the effects of certification regarding a teachers' pedagogical knowledge, and its effects on student achievement. It is clear that the federal government is having troubles deciding on the relative importance of these two areas, paying lip service to the latter but more often endorsing the former. As "Washington Post" reporter Jay Mathews notes (2002), first the Bush administration pushes through an education bill that demands a "highly qualified" teacher in every classroom. Then the administration releases a report arguing that the nation's education schools spend too much time on classroom methodology.

Mathews points out that mixed messages are being sent to the public. But in fact, they aren't very mixed.

Education Secretary Roderick Paige and other Education Department officials claim that schools of education need to spend less time on pedagogical issues and spend more time worrying about whether teachers understand what they teach. The current mantra of federal educational administrators seems to be "You can't teach what you don't know" (Mathews, 2002). Not mentioned explicitly, but implied, is that schools of education should have little role in the training of teachers. Secretary Paige's comments are all the more puzzling from some one who advocates evidence- based research. His own Department of Education recently requested a review of "rigorous empirical research" on teacher preparation (Wilson, Floden & Ferrini-Mundy, 2002). The authors of this government commissioned report concluded that subject matter knowledge is not sufficient for effective teaching to take place.

> [The studies reviewed] suggest that the subject matter preparation....prospective teachers currently receive is inadequate for teaching toward high subject matter standards, by anyone's definition. [Without training in pedagogy] it appears that prospective teachers may have mastered basic skills but lack the deeper conceptual understanding necessary when responding to student questions and extending lessons beyond the basics (p.192).

The third area of research focuses on two sub-areas that both deal with traditional certification and alternatives to it. One of these areas of research is on the effects of regularly certified teachers teaching in or out of their area of expertise. In this literature in-field vs. out-of-field teaching performance is compared, such as when an English teacher is assigned to teach algebra. Out-of-field teaching can be viewed as teaching without the appropriate certification to do so. The second sub-area is concerned with the effects of alternatively certified teachers in comparison to traditionally certified teachers. Present government policy has decided that alternate means to certification are appropriate, with officials claiming that:

> [T]here is no evidence that lengthy preparation programs achieve [their] goals any better than streamlined programs that quickly get talented teachers into the classroom....Requiring excessive numbers of pedagogy or education theory courses acts as an unnecessary barrier for those wishing to pursue a teaching career (Mathews, 2002).

Our evaluation of this literature, reviewed in more detail below, is that there is sufficient evidence to conclude that 1) subject-matter knowledge is an important, but not sufficient, factor in a certified teacher's success with mathematics and science students in the upper grades; 2) that teachers who have training in pedagogy outperform teachers without such training; and 3) that traditionally certified teachers teaching in their area of certification outperform both certified teachers teaching out-of-field and alternatively certified teachers. The data on these issues, however, is certainly not unequivocal, and dissenters to all these conclusions exist (see Ballou & Podgursky, 1999; Peck, 1989; Miller, McKenna, & McKenna, 1998). We look at these literatures next.

Teacher Subject-matter Knowledge

. Studies related to teacher subject matter often either evaluate 1) whether a major or minor in a subject area, e.g., mathematics, effects student achievement (Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985; Goldhaber & Brewer, 1996; Monk & King, 1994); 2) whether a passing score on a certification exam provides evidence that certain subject matter has been mastered or that certification affects student achievement (Ashton & Crocker, 1987; Byrne, 1983; Strauss & Sawyer, 1986; Glass, 2002); or 3) whether advanced degrees, e.g., master's degree, or professional development increase student achievement (Goldhaber & Brewer, 1996, 2000; Fetler, 1999; Ehrenberg & Brewer, 1994). Each of these areas of evidence will be reviewed separately.

Researchers have usually, though not always shown that having a major or minor in mathematics or science is beneficial to student achievement in those content areas. Hawk, Coble, and Swanson (1985) provide research on that issue obliquely, by comparing in-field and out-of-field teaching; concluding that student achievement, for general mathematics as well as algebra, is greater for students who are taught by teachers certified in mathematics (in-field teachers, possessing a major or minor) than is the achievement of students taught by teachers certified in some other content area (out-of-field teachers, neither a major or minor in the area). The researchers hypothesize that the greater success of these in-field teachers' appears to be their greater ability to successfully impart content specific knowledge to students, as compared to their out-of-field counterparts. It is important to note that these studies compare teachers who hold a standard teaching certificate in their subject area (indicating specialized content knowledge training) with teachers who also hold a standard teaching certificate in another subject area (indicating a lack of specialized content knowledge training). The study supports the case for certification in a content area, and suggests deficiencies can be expected among those who are teaching in areas for which they are not prepared.

From their research Goldhaber and Brewer (1996) conclude that "in mathematics and science, teacher subject-specific training has a significant impact on student test scores in those subjects" (p. 206). These same researchers go on to say that their results suggest that it is subject-specific training, not teacher ability that leads to such findings. These authors believe that achievement in technical subjects can be improved by a cessation of out-of-field teaching. The generalizability of these results to the humanities and for teachers in the primary grades is unknown.

Monk and King (1994) also evaluated subject-matter preparation and student performance. In an earlier analysis Monk (1994) had found that there was a "positive relationship between the number of subject-related courses in a teacher's background and subsequent performance gains of these teachers students within the indicated subject area" (as cited in Monk & King, 1994, p. 36). Continued investigation of this phenomena revealed interactions, among them, that, "low-pretest students' performance gains in mathematics were more sensitive to the mean level of their previous teachers preparation than were the high-pretest students" (p. 56). This suggests that lower achieving students will profit more from teachers who are well prepared in their subject matter, than might better achieving students. Thus policies that promote uncertified teachers as the instructors of the poorest and the lowest achieving students, which is the way those policies are usually realized, may be particularly harmful.

Byrne (1983) provides a review of thirty studies that relate teachers' subject matter knowledge, measured by subject knowledge exams or coursework taken, to student achievement. These results were contradictory. A majority of the studies showed a positive relationship (17), while a large number (14) showed that no relationship existed. Byrne does not provide more than a tally analysis of the studies included, which is insufficient given the capabilities of meta-analytic research. A re-analysis using meta-analysis would be helpful.

The National Teacher Exam (NTE) was once used as a measure of subject matter knowledge and was extensively studied. It measured both subject matter content knowledge and pedagogical knowledge. Quirk, Witte, and Weinberg (1973) found only a single study, Lins (1946), in which NTE scores were correlated positively with students' average gain in performance from pretest to posttest. But this finding must be reconsidered in light of the work of Strauss and Sawyer (1986). They analyzed the determinants of average student performance on standardized exams and found that a "1% increase in teacher quality, ceteris paribus, as measured by standardized test scores [NTE], is accompanied by a 3-5 % decline in the level of failure or rate of failure of students on high school competency examinations" (p. 41). Simply put, increased scores by teachers on the NTE exams, reflecting increased subject matter knowledge and increased pedagogical knowledge, decreased student rates of failure. Research on the PRAXIS tests, successor to the NTE, has been conducted by Gitomer, Latham, and Ziomek (1999), and will be reported below.

Teachers' advanced degrees are another indicator of subject matter competency. Goldhaber and Brewer (1996), as part of the study reported above, also found that teachers' degree level is significantly related to student achievement in the area in which the degree was obtained. However, when a general production function model is used, teachers with master's degrees appeared to be no more effective than teachers without advanced degrees. Results varied depending on the statistical models that were used to analyze teacher effects. Goldhaber and Brewer (2000) report that mathematics students who have teachers with bachelors or masters degrees in mathematics have higher test scores than students of teachers without these degrees. They report, however, that there is no comparable impact of degree in science. Fetler (1999) confirms the findings in mathematics, noting that "Schools with more experienced and more highly educated mathematics teachers tend to have higher achieving students" (p. 13). But of course, higher achieving students have access to better schools, and thus these kinds of studies require caution when interpreting them.

Ehrenberg and Brewer (1994), however, report unambiguously that teachers' degree level does matter. "The greater the percentage of teachers with at least a masters degree...the higher black students' scores are [on measures of mathematics, reading, and vocabulary that are associated with the High School and Beyond study]" (p. 10). On the other hand, with a Texas sample, Rivkin, Hanushek, and Kain (2000), note just the opposite, namely, that there "is no evidence that a masters degree raises teacher effectiveness" (p. 3). However, these researchers also report "teacher quality is a very important determinant of the quality of education" (p. 30). Thus the conclusions in this report appear contradictory.

Kain (1998) also studied this issue. He reports that in his earlier research, teachers accounted for at least 7% of total variation in student achievement, indicating that a set of teacher characteristics, including certification and training, affect student achievement.

To analyze the affect of teacher degree on student achievement, Goldhaber and Brewer (2000) used data from the National Educational Longitudinal Study of 1998 (NELS: 88), which provided information about students and their teachers in 10th and 12th grades. Students were surveyed as well as tested on one or more mathematics, science, English/writing and history exams. The researchers found that "having a degree in education has no impact on student science test scores and, in mathematics, having a BA in education actually has a statistically significant (at the 10% level) negative impact on mathematics scores of students" (pp. 138-139). Goldhaber and Brewer's research focused on secondary grades. The complexity of the content taught in secondary mathematics classes is undoubtedly greater than that taught in elementary school, so advanced training in mathematics may be required to effectively transmit that content. That same depth of subject matter knowledge may not be required for elementary teaching.

There is some support for this hypothesis, although research on the effects of advanced degrees and subject matter majors for primary grade students is scanty. One such study, however, was published by the National Center for Educational Statistics (NCES) (as cited in Hawkins, Stancavage, & Dorsey, 1998). These results concerned fourth-grade mathematics students who took the National Assessment of Educational Progress (NAEP). The researchers note that "fourth-grade students who were taught by teachers with an undergraduate or graduate minor in mathematics or mathematics education did not perform better on the 1996 mathematics assessment than students whose teachers had an undergraduate or graduate major in education" (p. 12). But the NCES report also states that, unlike fourth-grade, eighth-grade students who were taught by a teacher with a major in mathematics outperformed students taught by teachers with majors in education.

One conclusion to be drawn from these data is that a teacher's depth of knowledge in a subject matter influences students' achievement more in the upper grades than the primary grades. But the broader conclusion might be that as the content in a subject matter area becomes more complex, teachers need a much deeper knowledge of that subject matter area to help their students learn at high levels. It is not grade level per se, we think, but the complexity of the ideas to be taught that requires the specialized subject matter knowledge of a teacher. Thus the claim made by TFA, that an individual with a subject matter major from an elite college who elects to teach elementary school without certification is bringing great strength to the schools, may be questioned. It seems probable that after basic college level content is mastered, after some threshold of competency in a subject matter domain is crossed, as it is for most college majors, then pedagogical training for teaching in the elementary grades is more important to success than is content knowledge. Support for this interpretation comes from Rowan, Correnti and Miller (2002), in their study of teacher subject matter competency in the early grades. We look at this issue next.

Professional Knowledge/Pedagogical Content Knowledge

The findings from research that examines a teachers' level of education related coursework and their effectiveness with students is extensive, but often contradictory. We believe, however, that some interpretations of this literature are possible, though we note that better research in this area is possible and badly needed.

Ferguson and Womack (1993) found that the amount of education coursework teachers completed explained about 16% of the variance in teaching performance, as measured by supervisor evaluations; this was more variance accounted for than with teachers' content knowledge, as measured by NTE specialty scores. This research suggests that education coursework is a strong predictor of teaching effectiveness, over and above grade point average in a teachers' major and their NTE specialty scores. In their review of research on this same issue Ashton, Crocker, and Olejnik (1986) also found education coursework to have a significant relationship to teacher performance.

More recent research by Wenglinsky (2002), on the link between teacher quality and student performance, supports the belief that teacher inputs do influence student performance. He notes that the greatest influence on student's achievement comes from classroom practices and the professional development that supports them. Wenglinsky's research indicates that "regardless of the level of preparation students bring into the classroom, decisions that teachers make about classroom practices can either greatly facilitate student learning or serve as an obstacle to it" (p. 7). That is, teacher pedagogical decisions and activities (which are separate from but not unrelated to teacher subject matter knowledge) independently make a difference in student achievement.

Rowan and colleagues (Rowan, Correnti & Miller, in press) reached similar conclusions. These researchers found relatively large effects on young students that could be attributed to teachers, independent of school, social class, previous achievement, and so forth. For any given year, looking at a single score, at a single point in time, teachers accounted for 4% to 18% of the variance in student's reading and mathematics achievement. This yielded effect sizes of .21 to .42. Across years, looking at student growth, the effects of teachers on students were magnified. Analysis of the teachers' effects on student growth in reading yielded effect sizes of from .77 to .88. The teachers' effects on growth in mathematics achievement were equally impressive, yielding effect sizes of between .72 and .85. The effect of teachers' characteristics on student achievement growth, across time, is roughly three times greater than they are on student achievement status measured at only one point in time. When searching for which teacher characteristics make a difference, these investigators found that the most consistent predictor of young children's achievement was teacher experience. Experience was found to be a much better predictor of student achievement than was subject matter competency. Here again we see the relative importance of pedagogy over content knowledge in influencing the achievement of young children.

What is often not discussed in research reports connecting some teacher quality variable and student achievement is that the great bulk of a teacher's pedagogical training and understanding of beneficial classroom practices is provided in their teacher training programs. Clearly experience matters; but that means that preparation to profit from experience must matter as well. And that suggests that the experience gained from intensive student teaching, over a sufficient time period, might also matter. Such experiences are provided as a matter of course in most traditional teacher certification programs, and are missing from most alternative and emergency certification programs. Without adequate teacher training, then, emergency certified teachers and other under-certified teachers could retard student learning as they engage in teacher learning. We examine teacher experience in more detail next.

Teacher Experience

Teacher experience is another teacher quality variable that influences student learning and is indirectly related to issues of certification. Hawkins, Stancavage, and Dorsey (1998) report that in the 1996 AEP analysis, students who were taught by teachers with less than 5 years of teaching experience performed below the level of those students whose teachers had 6-10 years or 25 or more years of experience (p. 22). Fetler (1999) also supports the finding that number of years teaching is positively related to student test scores. Lopez (1995), using a large data set from Texas, reports that teachers require about 7 years of experience in order to be able to maximize their students' test performance. Similarly, Rivkin, Hanushek, and Kain (2000) report that there are small but significant relationships between student achievement gains and teacher experience: "The teacher experience investigation concentrates on entering teachers and supports the notion that those in the first two years of experience do worse than more experienced teachers. New teachers' average student gains are lower by roughly 20 percent of a standard deviation in both 4th and 5th grades" (p. 27). They also report that 4th and 5th grade student achievement on the Texas Assessment of Academic Skills (TAAS) is effected by overall teacher experience. The results indicate a small but significant relationship between achievement gains and teacher experience. The study of Rowan et al., (in press) cited above, supports this conclusion as well.

The point of this discussion about experience is that virtually all university teacher certification programs include both early field experiences and student teaching in their curriculum to provide experience to novice teachers. While we have little empirical evidence to determine what kinds and amounts of experience are the most beneficial, it seems likely that teacher induction programs that offer little or no experience will be deficient. This is a criticism of the TFA program and any other programs supporting emergency or alternative certification that allow un-experienced and inexperienced teachers to become classroom instructors. Reviewing similar literature for the Department of Education, Wilson, Floden and Ferrini-Mundy (2002) conclude that the parts of the teacher education experience that make a difference are unknown, but that "the research suggests that there is value added by teacher preparation (p. 194)." They also state that clinical experiences and field-work, such as that provided through student teaching, are seen as powerful forces—maybe the most powerful force—in programs of teacher preparation.

Interestingly, if a state policy provides for emergency certification to teach for only a short period of time, they may do a disservice to students, since it is through experience that teachers acquire their competency. The logic is this: It may be wrong to employ emergency certified teachers, but to dismiss them solely on the basis that they served two years, the maximum for an emergency certificate in some states, is to negate and reject how much they may have learned in that time. On a case-by-case basis, it may be better to decide if an emergency teacher has been reflective about his or her experience and thereby learned enough to be effective. It may compound the original error to dismiss them after a short period of time.

The review of research on content knowledge, pedagogical knowledge, and experience, given above, focuses on where these abilities and characteristics of teachers are to be learned, and in what mix, but there is no major dissent about their importance for student learning. Wenglinsky (2002) makes this case best using data from the National Assessment of Educational Progress (NAEP) to examine the role teachers and their instructional practices play in influencing student achievement. He summarizes his findings as follows: "The study finds that the effects of classroom practices, when added to those of other teacher characteristics, are comparable in size to those of student background, suggesting that teachers can contribute as much to student learning as the students themselves."

Appropriate Assignment of Certified Teachers

Some research on certification status supports the fact that teachers who are certified and teaching in the area in which they are certified outperform teachers who are less than fully certified and teachers who have no certification (Darling-Hammond, Berry, & Thoreson, 2001; Darling-Hammond, 1992; Fenstermacher, 1992; Evertson, 1984). Unfortunately, however, not all certified teachers are assigned to teach in the areas for which they have been trained (Goldhaber & Brewer, 1996; 2000; Ehrenberg & Brewer, 1994). In fact, large numbers of the certified teaching staff are assigned duties for which their certification is irrelevant. This kind of out-of-field teaching is exemplified in the elementary grades when a fifth grade teacher is assigned to teach a second grade class, or in high school, when an English teacher is assigned to teach an American History or a biology class. The most cited reason for out-of-field teaching is a lack of fit between the teachers on the staff and the teaching assignments that an administrator must make (Ingersoll, 1999a).

In some curricula areas such as bilingual and special education, science, and mathematics, there is a teacher shortage. This appears to be caused by increased student enrollments, retirements due to the "graying" of the teaching profession, increased turnover by teachers due to increased difficulties in carrying out their jobs, and the increased remuneration for mathematicians and scientists for work in other fields. If faced with difficulty filling positions, school boards and administrators think of three solutions: they hire less qualified teachers, they assign teachers trained in another subject area to teach in the understaffed areas, or they make extensive use of substitute teachers.

There are many problems with the teacher shortage explanation for out-of-field teaching. First of all, this explanation does not provide an answer for why large numbers of out-of-field teachers exist in fields like English and social studies, two areas of teaching that have long had a surplus of teachers. Another problem with this explanation is that it has only been within the past few years that schools have had trouble filling teaching openings, while the problem of out-of-field teaching has been with us for a significantly longer period of time. Finally, the teacher shortage is based on the assumption that there are too few teacher candidates. But in fact, the biggest difficulty is that teachers are choosing to leave their profession for other jobs (Ingersoll, 1999a). Ingersoll (1999a) comments, "Out-of-field teaching is common, I believe, because it is not only legal but also more convenient, less expensive and less time consuming than the alternatives" (p. 7).

Ingersoll (1996) evaluated data from the School and Staffing Survey to determine the proportion of teachers who teach out-of-field. He provides data indicating that one-fifth of public school students enrolled in 7th-12th grade English courses are taught by teachers who did not have at least a minor in English or some other closely related field. Of the students enrolled in 7th-12th grade mathematics courses, more than a quarter are taught by teachers without a minor in mathematics or mathematics education. The results are less drastic in other areas of course work. In Arizona, 35% of teachers in English, 39% of teachers in Math, 35% of teachers in Social Studies and 27% of teachers in Science were assigned to teach secondary courses without a major in that subject area ("Quality Counts," 2000).

Research also supports the belief that out-of-field teaching is related to levels of school poverty (Ingersoll, 1996; 1999b; Haycock, 2001). Ingersoll (1996) reports, " in no fields did high-poverty schools have less out-of-field teaching than did low poverty schools, while in several fields, students in high poverty schools received distinctively more out-of-field teaching than in low poverty schools" (p. 5). This trend is similar for students who are placed within different educational tracks in their courses. High track students are exposed to less out-of-field teaching than low track students (Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000; Rivkin, et al, 2000, Ingersoll, 1996), while "minority and poor students are disproportionately placed in lower track and lower achievement courses, [which] critics claim are taught by the least qualified" (Ingersoll, 1996, p. 1). Darling-Hammond (1997b) reports that in the most heavily minority schools and inner cities less than 50% of the teachers in mathematics and science are licensed and have a degree in the subject they teach. Darling-Hammond remonstrates that throughout the country we have the least qualified teachers teaching the most disadvantaged students, while the most qualified teachers are teaching the most advantaged students.

At the secondary level the relationship between in-field teaching and student achievement is stated forcefully by Hawk, Coble, and Swanson (1985). They conclude that:

> In field certified math teachers know more math and show evidence of using more effective teaching practices than their out-of-field counterparts. Further, and most important, students of in field certified math teachers achieve at a higher level than do students taught by out-of-field teachers (p. 15).

In short, a certified teacher teaching in the field for which they were prepared performs better than when assigned to areas for which they were not prepared. Preparation matters.

Alternative Routes to Teaching

Much of the research that draws attention to alternative certification programs does not adequately address the issue that many such programs are similar in both the level and rigor of training provided by traditional certification programs (Buck, Polloway, & Robb, 1995; Miller, McKenna, & McKenna, 1998; McKibbin, 1988; Bliss, 1992; Stoddard, 1992; Darling-Hammond, Berry, & Thoreson, 2001). On the other hand, many of the alternative teacher training programs are poorly designed and administered, providing little in the way of appropriate training (Wilson, Floden, Ferrini-Mundy, 2002). Although increasing dramatically in number, there are currently no standards for assessing alternative certification programs. The large variability in alternative certification programs makes research on this phenomenon difficult. (Of course, to be equally fair, we must note the variability in traditional programs of teacher education, whose design and administration have also been noted by many to be equally slipshod. Even accredited programs have, in our opinion, some embarrassing design characteristics.)

Advocates of alternative certification, however, claim that they provide teachers for urban and rural schools and in specific shortage areas, i.e., mathematics and science. Zumwalt (1991) summarizes research on several alternative certification programs and reports that they do attract teachers who are more willing to work in rural or urban poor districts than traditionally trained teachers. McKibbin and Ray (1994) also report that alternative certification programs attract people with subject matter majors like mathematics and science who are interested in teaching, but not interested in traditional teacher certification.

Alternative certification is also seen as a cost-effective way to train people who did not or will not enroll in conventional undergraduate or graduate education programs. Such programs are cheaper (Zumwalt, 1991), as might be expected from programs that are shorter in duration and provide less instruction, supervision and assessment of their students.

Proponents of alternative certification claim that these programs attract better quality candidates who are more academically able than those who attend traditional certification programs (Kanstroom & Finn, 1999). Participants of these programs are generally people who have majored in traditional academic subjects rather than education. It is a major assumption of alternative programs that subject matter content knowledge is more important to teaching than is education related coursework (Jelmberg, 1996). But some studies show that the teachers in alternative routes to certification have high drop-out rates from both the programs of instruction and from actual teaching. (Wilson, Floden & Ferrini-Mundy, 2002). Other studies show that alternative certification recruits in mathematics and science have lower grade point averages than recruits in traditional teacher education programs (Stoddart, 1992). Moreover, to date, these alternatively certified teachers have not demonstrated strong skills in their content area. Furthermore, teachers from alternative routes to education, including TFA teachers, when compared to those trained in more traditional teacher education programs, report many more problems with their preparation programs. For example, on 39 of 40 different questions the TFA teachers rated their preparation more poorly than did those who were trained in more traditional programs. The self-confidence and sense of efficacy of those prepared in traditional programs was higher than for those who came to teaching through alternative programs (Darling-Hammond, Chung, & Frelow, 2002).

When these facts about alternative routes to teaching are added to research that debunks the belief that subject matter knowledge is more important than education related coursework (Darling-Hammond, 2000; Gitomer, Latham, and Ziomek, 1999; Monk and King, 1994; Wilson, Floden & Ferrini-Mundy, 2002), we see evidence of an educational policy that must be seriously questioned.

Proponents of alternative certification also make the claim that traditional certification programs attract mostly twenty-something, white women, a problem because the students of the public schools in urban areas are not often white, and some commonality and similarity in life experience is probably a better background for teaching positions in these more difficult settings. Proponents of alternative certification correctly note that they often attract a more diverse group of candidates, specifically men, older adults, minorities and retried military personnel (Bradshaw & Hawk, 1996; Eifler & Potthoff, 1998; Hawley, 1992; Houston, Marshall, & McDavid, 1993; Keltner, 1994; Kennedy, 1991; Kwiatkowski, 1999); Natriello & Zumwalt, 1993; MacDonald, Manning, & Gable, 1994; and Stoddart, 1993). Wendy Kopp (1994), Teach for America founder, notes that short alternative certification programs allow young adults who are unsure of their career options an opportunity to serve students.

Alternative certification may actually be an improvement over simple emergency certification, which allows almost anyone with a bachelors degree to teach without any preparation to speak of. But some researchers (Bradshaw & Hawk, 1996; Berry, 2001) are critical of the level of professional knowledge demonstrated by alternatively certified teachers. Alternatively certified teachers tend to have a limited view of curriculum and a lack of understanding of student ability as well as motivation; they experience difficulty translating content knowledge into meaningful information for students to understand; they are less effective planners of instruction; and they tend not to learn about teaching through their experiences. Research is also critical of the supervision and mentoring support that is given to preservice teachers in most alternative certification programs (Smith, 1991; Darling-Hammond, 1992; McKibbin & Ray, 1994; Bradshaw & Hawk, 1996; Jelmberg, 1996; Miles-Nixon & Holloway, 1997; Berry, 2001). It appears likely, from the extant research and criticism, that poorly run and short alternative certification programs, particularly those that do not provide much classroom experience and supervision, may actually not be any better than simply hiring emergency certified teachers with no teacher education experiences.

Teach for America

The most familiar of the alternative certification programs is Teach for America (TFA). This ambitious program recruits graduates from top universities, provides them minimal training, and places them in public school classrooms across the nation to teach. The public schools, however, are all in either rural or poor urban districts (Darling-Hammond, 1994). Research conducted on TFA has been less than encouraging.

> Four separate evaluations found that TFA's training program did not prepare candidates to succeed with students, despite the noticeable intelligence and enthusiasm of many of the recruits. Most criticism of a corps member's teaching behavior (classroom management was the greatest area of concern, followed by insufficient knowledge of the fundamentals of teaching and learning) was qualified by the cooperating teachers' perceptions of limitations of the program in providing the corps member with adequate practice or theory to be successful (Darling-Hammond, 1997a, p. 310).

From an interview study by Stevens and Dial (1993), TFA teachers apparently decide to teach because they like working with children; they didn't have other options; and they felt that TFA was their best alternative given their "circumstances and indecisiveness at the time" (p. 70).

Jonathan Schorr (1993), a former TFA teacher, describes the inadequate training and preparation that he and other TFA teachers received prior to being placed into schools. He notes, "just eight weeks of training ... is not enough for teachers" (p. 316). Schorr admits, "I was not a successful teacher, and the loss to the students was real and large" (p. 318). Schorr offers the first-hand experience that makes Darling-Hammond (1994; 1997a; 2001) quite critical of TFA, specifically due to the program's limited training of candidates, lack of evaluation, and the fact that such a program perpetuates the placement of poorly trained teachers with the most needy students in the nation.

Raymond, Fletcher, and Luque (2001) conducting research for the Center for Research in Education Outcomes (CREDO), released a report evaluating the Teach for American program in Texas. The report compares scores on the Texas Assessment of Academic Skills (TAAS) of students taught by TFA teachers and non-TFA teachers, and lauded the performance of TFA teachers. However, the National Commission on Teaching and America's Future released a response outlining serious concerns with the research (see Darling-Hammond, 2001 and 2002). The most important of the criticisms is that the performance of the TFA teachers was never compared to the performance of regularly certified teachers. The comparison used to assess the TFA teachers was other uncertified teachers, some of whom didn't even have four-year college degrees.

It should also be noted that when we tried to access the data for this report, we were informed from both the primary researcher and the Texas school district responsible for the data that it was not available for independent review. We were told that the data was not the property of the researchers who reported the study, nor did it belong to the district, and that neither had a complete data set to provide for independent analysis. In our opinion, therefore, it is appropriate to regard this report as irrelevant, given that the comparison used to assess TFA teachers was faulty, the data are not available for verification or replication by other scientists, and the report has not been published in a peer-reviewed journal.

Traditional Teacher Certification

In this section we discuss traditional programs of teacher certification, with the understanding that they vary enormously, as do the alternative certification programs. The Holmes Group (1986), active in teacher education reforms, reports that competent teaching consists of three elements: subject matter knowledge, systematic knowledge of teaching, and reflection on experience. Members of the Holmes group defended teacher education in the universities by arguing that they do, in fact, prepare people to successfully integrate these three elements into their professional lives. In their defense we note that teachers entering the field from university teacher education programs are generally more academically able than the average college student, while unlicensed entrants into teaching have significantly lower levels of academic achievement than most college students and were lower also then those who were prepared by the university to teach (Gitomer, Latham, & Ziomek, 1999). In fact, "reviews of research over the past thirty years, summarizing hundreds of studies, have concluded that even with the shortcomings of current teacher education and licensing, fully prepared and certified teaches are better rated and more successful with students than teachers without this preparation" (Darling-Hammond, 1997a, p. 308; Evertson 1984). Apparently disregarding this research, Former Secretary of Education Chester Finn proposes that the common sense route to boosting teacher quality is to simplify entry and hiring. Fundamentally, he argues, we should let anyone who wants to teach do so, and simply deregulate the teacher certification process (Kanstroom & Finn, 1999; Finn & Kanstroom, 2000). Finn is also the president of the foundation that helped support the unverifiable Raymond, Fletcher, and Luque (2001) study that is so supportive of uncertified teachers. Nationally syndicated conservative columnist Thomas Sowell supports Finn's position. Sowell (2002) says bluntly that college of education courses are "drivel" and falsely reports that the academic record of those who enter teaching through the university route is deficient in comparison to almost all other college majors.

The research martialed in support of prepared and certified teachers includes research demonstrating that teachers hired without preparation or only partial training experience difficulty meeting the needs of the students in their classrooms. Such individuals have more difficulties than fully prepared teachers do in accomplishing their day-to-day job requirements (Darling-Hammond, 1997a). Prospective teachers apparently perform better if they have completed a teacher preparation program focused on content knowledge, pedagogical course work (including learning theories, developmental theories, theories of motivation and issues of student assessment) and practice teaching. Although variations in the philosophy, implementation and quality of teacher education programs are enormous, research nevertheless suggests that many versions of this form of preparation are successful in providing adequately trained teachers for the complexity of classroom instruction (Ashton & Crocker, 1987; Darling-Hammond, 1992; Wilson, Floden, & Ferrini-Mundy, 2002).

McDiarmid and Wilson's (1991) research is relevant to this point. They demonstrated that subject matter knowledge is not sufficient to prepare teachers for teaching the concepts in these fields to students. They did this by evaluating mathematics majors in alternative certification programs that stressed subject matter knowledge and found that those teachers had strongly held misconceptions about the subject matter and the appropriate ways to teach the content. Their results indicated that these teachers were unable to integrate their subject matter knowledge with teaching practices to allow for effective instruction. In effect, because they were lacking in education coursework, they were unable to provide the appropriate instruction to students.

Another aspect of good quality certification programs is that they provide experiences for the preservice teachers in classrooms both under direct supervision and with continued mentoring. Darling-Hammond (1992) notes that skills need to be learned in context, where they can be practiced under supervision. The student teaching experience allows the preservice teacher to transform information from coursework in order to learn its character in the context of the real world of teaching in classrooms. Jelmberg (1996), cited above, compared traditionally certified teachers with alternatively certified teachers' performance based on their experience. His results showed that experienced teachers from traditional certification programs are rated higher on instructional skills and planning by their principals, and perform better, than did experienced teachers who came from alternative certification programs.

Emergency certification

The reviews of research, above, compared alternative certification programs, some of which provide enough preparation for graduates to receive full certification, while others provide minimal training resulting in graduates receiving either a provisional or emergency certificate. Research reviewed above also compared fully certified teachers to one another, distinguishing between teachers who taught in-field or out-of-field. There is little research comparing emergency certified teachers and regularly certified teachers.

Emergency certificates are issued to prospective teachers who have met some, but not all of the requirements for state certification. Minimum requirements are often a bachelor's degree and a passing score on a certification exam. Emergency certificates are issued for a limited time period, usually one to two years. Some states allow for these to be renewed, while others states issue a one time only, nonrenewable certificate. In 1998 data about certification waiver rates were available from 39 states (U.S. Department of Education, 1999). Sixteen of the 39 states had waiver rates greater than 2% of their teaching population, eight had rates over 5% while some had rates as high as 17%.

Emergency certified teachers are more likely to be hired in already low performing schools, schools that serve low SES students, schools in rural and inner city areas, and for positions that are hard to fill (Darling-Hammond, 1997a; Darling-Hammond, 2001; Ingersoll, 2001; Gitomer, Latham, & Ziomek, 1999). Since high poverty schools are more likely to have high rates of out-of-field teaching as well as more emergency certified teachers, it may that some states are failing to provide the "adequate education" that most state constitutions require (Ingersoll, 2001; Hirsh, Koppich & Knapp, 2001; Rivkin, et. al., 2000). And now that federal government has waded in on this issue, requiring a highly qualified teacher in every classroom, the competency of teachers with emergency certification is sure to be questioned further.

Emergency certification is justified on the basis of three arguments. First, it is argued, that there is a teacher shortage requiring that states emergency certify teachers to provide enough teachers for every classroom. But the shortage may not be as severe as many claim (Feistritzer, 1994; Ingersoll, 1997, 2001; Ballou, 1996; Hirsh, Koppich, & Knapp, 2001; Hardy, 1998). The National Center for Education Statistics indicates that the teaching force will grow to more than 3 million teachers by the year 2008 (US Department of Education, 1999). But it is a misconception that colleges of education will need to train millions of new teachers to meet the needs of school districts. Darling-Hammond (cited in Hardy, 1998) believes that this potential shortage is not universal, claiming that "there are districts that experience difficulty hiring qualified teachers, but overall, we have a surplus of teachers" (p.20). The teacher shortages are seen in subject areas like mathematics and science; in the service areas for special needs populations, such as special education and bilingual education; and shortages exists in rural areas and in inner city school districts (Wayne, 2000; Natriello & Zumwalt, 1993; Hardy, 1998; Hirsch, Koppich, & Knapp, 2001).

The projected teacher shortage is also based on assumptions of increased student enrollments and an aging workforce. But these assumptions have similarly been questioned. Research evaluating the Survey of Recent College Graduates (Ballou, 1996) has shown that:

> In every year there were at least twice as many [qualified] applicants as there were persons hired in full-time public school positions. Far from indicating that the nation faces a teacher shortage, these data show that the teacher labor market as a whole has been in a chronic state of excess supply, though shortages may arise in specific locations and subject areas (p. 101).

Research also indicates that regularly certified teachers are in short supply because of poor pay; low levels of job satisfaction, particularly when working with disadvantaged minority students (Hanushek, Kain & Rivkin, 2001); and because limited faculty input about the management of schools discourages college graduates from teaching and drives current teachers out of the profession. Ingersoll (2001) suggests that:

> The imbalance of teacher supply and demand at the root of school staffing problems is neither synonymous with, or primarily due to, teacher shortages in the technical sense of a deficit in the quantity of qualified candidates. Rather than insufficient supply, the data indicate that school staffing problems are primarily due to excess demand, resulting from a 'revolving door'—where large numbers of teachers depart their jobs for reasons other than retirement. Thus the solution...does not primarily lie in increasing supply, but rather in decreasing demand (p. 501).

A second argument for emergency certification is that there are many people who would teach, but do not, because standard certification requirements prohibit them from doing so. Thus opponents of traditional teacher education programs call for the removal of certification requirements, claiming that there is no "special body of knowledge" that teachers need to know in order to be successful. These advocates for the abolition of requirements claim that what needs to be learned by new teachers can be learned in the first year of teaching (Roth, 1994; Kanstroom & Finn, 1999; Finn & Kanstroom, 2000). In fact, anecdotal evidence claiming that teachers learn more in the first year of teaching than they do in their education courses is quite strong. Armed with this knowledge, it is then argued that a person who holds a college degree, in possession of some level of content knowledge, and with some limited experience teaching youth, is competent enough to begin to teach. Such beliefs drive the movement against certification despite research that argues against this position (McDiarmid & Wilson, 1991).

Traditional certification programs are rejected by many adults who would be interested in teaching as a second career but who will not or cannot engage in time consuming and expensive regular teacher certification programs. Proponents of alternative certification believe that these adults, called career transitioners, have skills that they have learned in their other employment that could be used to teach children (MacDonald, Manning, & Gable, 1994). Additionally, some believe that adults have unique life skills and experiences that can be useful to students (Zumwalt, 1991). Research does indicate that alternative certification programs attract an older and more diverse population, through their more flexible schedules, less stringent requirements, and so forth; however, it is unclear from this research that certification needs to be waived in order to recruit a more diverse teaching population with many life skills and employment experiences (Natriello & Zumwalt, 1993; Bradshaw & Hawk, 1996; Hawley, 1992).

The third argument for emergency certification makes use of the long-standing lack of confidence by state officials and the general public in the quality of the teachers who graduate from colleges of education. Too often colleges of education are perceived to attract less able students, thus producing under qualified teachers. This is simply not true. Research supports the assertion that the academic quality of students entering colleges of education is quite good. For example, Gitomer, Latham, and Ziomek (1999) showed in their analysis of ACT and SAT scores that students from colleges of education were as academically skilled as students with other college majors. They also reported that traditionally certified teachers have the highest passing rates on certification exams (PRAXIS I and II) compared to alternatively certified and emergency certified teachers, even though they appeared to be similar in initial achievement, based on SAT scores. They concluded that traditional certification (having training in teaching methods, pedagogy and practice in teaching) makes a difference on licensure. They attribute the better performance of traditionally certified teachers to the training and instruction, provided by colleges of education.

Summary of Related Research

With regard to teacher subject matter the current research suggests to us that in mathematics, especially, and at the upper grades, in particular, subject matter competency as assessed by college majors, courses taken, and degrees held, leads to higher student achievement. Professional pedagogical knowledge appears equally important a contributor to student achievement at the upper grades, and may even be more important than content knowledge in the elementary grades.

With regard to experience through teacher education course work and by means of learning on the job, the research suggests that student achievement is affected in positive ways. The powerful effects of content knowledge, pedagogical knowledge, and experience, contribute to success in teaching in one's own field. When teaching out-of-field, such knowledge and skill is of less use and teacher effectiveness is compromised.

When we examined alternative routes to teaching we found them to be quite variable. Still, in comparison to traditional teacher education programs (that are also quite variable) the alternative programs take less time, are less costly, attract more diverse students, but also record higher drop-out rates. Because they usually take much less time, alternative programs may suffer from under-preparing students for the classroom, a problem compounded by the lack of supervision and support given by the hiring districts. Teach for America, as one alternative route to teaching, appears to suffer from the ordinary and typical problems inherent in the designs of such programs. While criticisms abound, there is a substantial body of literature suggesting that traditional teacher education programs, warts and all, seems to provide more competent appearing teachers whose students perform better.

The research suggests that emergency certified teachers are probably the least prepared to do well. Unfortunately, such teachers are typically hired into districts with the hardest to teach students.

After reviewing this literature it seemed as if the conditions necessitating out-of-field teaching and the hiring of alternate and emergency certified teachers could easily be modified, eliminating the need for these practices to exist. In the past, however, neither politicians nor school boards had the will to do that. But under the new federal *No Child left behind Act of 2001,* school districts will have to have a "highly qualified" teacher in every classroom or loose federal funding. It will be an interesting few years as ways to define "highly qualified" and the related term "competent" are worked on to meet the letter of the law. The research in these areas is also likely to be reinterpreted in light of that law. In the near future, surely both the definitions of, and the research associated with the idea of teacher quality, will find their ways into courtrooms of America. This study may help the courts in thinking about what it means to have a highly qualified teacher in the classroom.

Method

Research Design

An ex-post-facto archival research design was used to study the performance of students in the classes of the under-certified and certified teachers in selected districts of the state of Arizona. Districts provided both the information about the teachers participating in this study and their Stanford Nine (SAT 9) class means. The SAT 9 data provided by districts were also compared with the same data obtained from the Arizona Department of Education. SAT 9 data were available from 1997-2000, but was not available for the 2000-2001 academic year.

Sample

In Arizona under-certified teachers have three labels: "emergency" (for holders of bachelor degrees from accredited institutions, with little or no educational coursework, who can get clearance of criminal background through fingerprint analysis); "temporary" (a rarely used designation similar to "emergency"); and "provisional" (for those with some, or even considerable teacher education training, who are short certain units or requirements that could earn them a standard certificate). In opposition to the under-certifed teachers are the regularly certified teachers who meet all of the state requirements for certification. These teachers hold a bachelor's degree from an accredited institution, have completed 45 semester hours of elementary or secondary education course work, obtained a passing scores on the AEPA, demonstrated that they understand both the Arizona and US constitution, and been vetted for any criminal background through analysis of their fingerprints. (The definitions of under-certified and certified teachers, given above, were accurate through the year 2000, when the Arizona Department of Education made changes to the certification laws. Certification requirements are still in flux, and so current Arizona certification policies may not be the same as those reported in this study.)

Among the under-certified teachers in this study are some from an alternative route to traditional teacher training, the program "Teach for America (TFA)." Teach for America is a popular alternative certification program. Its mission calls for placing energetic, bright, but unqualified teachers into poor, urban school districts (Darling-Hammond, 1994). The instructional effectiveness of under-certified teachers in general, and the TFA teachers in particular, is of considerable interest to the policy community.

District Selection. Arizona school district superintendents listed by the department of education as participating in the Federal Teacher Shortage Loan Deferment Program (Arizona Department of Education, http://ade.az.gov/researchpolicy/ts) were invited to participate in this study. This federal program requires the State Department of Education to generate a ranking of school districts in the state by the percent of under-certified teachers in each district. This list of school districts provided a convenient population from which to obtain a sample. Of the school districts receiving a request to participate (N=24 for the 1998-1999 dataset, N=12 for the 1999-2000 dataset) five school districts responded positively. These five school districts represent 20.8% and 16.6%, respectively, of the school districts designated by the state as having severe teacher shortages. All five school districts chosen for this study were included in the Department of Education's 1998-1999 classification of school districts. Only two of these school districts were also included in the Department of Education's 1999-2000 classification of school districts with severe shortages. All of the participating school districts shared similar characteristics. They all serve inner city student populations, largely minority, and all participate in the Teach for America (TFA) program. All the schools in these districts have difficulty filling teaching positions.

Methods of data collection. The five participating school districts provided lists of new hires for the 1998-1999 and 1999-2000 school years. In some cases this list contained information about the teachers' certification status, while in other cases further research was necessary to obtain this information. We were granted permission to access individual teacher personnel files in order to collect the necessary data on the school where the teacher was employed, the grade level taught, the teachers' certification status, their highest degree earned, the date and institution where there degree was earned, their age (determined from year of their birth), and teaching experience.

Of the teachers included in the dataset, 64% had no prior teaching experience, a judgment based on their hire date, employment history, resume and application. The majority of newly hired teachers were recent graduates from college. Some of the new teachers, however, had delayed their entrance into teaching for many years after graduation, but they had no prior teaching experience indicated in their personnel files. Teachers were removed from the sample if they taught kindergarten, first grade, art, music or special education, grades and subjects not assessed by the Stanford Nine (SAT 9).

The assessment departments of each school district provided test scores aggregated at the classroom level. Included were the teachers' class totals as raw scores, scaled scores, grade equivalent, national percentile rank, stanine, national normal curve equivalent, as well as class percentile rank and class stanine. Individual student scores were not needed or provided. Additionally, state level SAT 9 data was later obtained from the Research and Policy division of the State Department of Education in order to confirm the accuracy of the SAT 9 data collected from the school districts. State level data was aggregated, by teacher name, for each of the school districts. In the event of a discrepancy between the two sets of data, we opted to use the state level data. This discrepancy occurred with only one of the school districts data files.

Matching Procedure

In the five districts studied, 293 teachers were hired in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000 who met the requirements for inclusion in this study. In order to participate teachers personnel files were required to contain the demographic data necessary for analysis, as well as classroom level SAT 9 scores. Teachers' data files were matched using SPSS procedures to sort the files. Teachers in each district were first categorized on the basis of their certification status, under-certified teachers (labeled emergency, provisional or temporary certified teachers by their districts) constituted one group, certified teachers made up the other group. Teachers from each group were then matched based on grade level and highest degree attained. Teachers for whom no matches could be found were removed from the analysis.

Matches were made using the following rules: 1) matches were first made within the same school, 2) matches were made within the same school district, and 3) matches were made between similar school districts. The first and second matching rules serve to minimize exogenous variables associated with student achievement scores, e.g., socio-economic status, school characteristics, curriculum, etc. It is assumed that teachers in the same school teach similar students, an imperfect but reasonable assumption. The identical assumption can be made about schools within the same district boundaries, since Arizona school district boundaries are based on relatively homogenous geographic areas. Conversations with district personnel, in the course of collecting the data at the district offices, provided no evidence that the certified or under-certified teachers were "tracked" in any way. The assignment of teachers to schools, and to classrooms within schools, appears to have been unbiased. Similarly, we have no reason to believe

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

that class size or student ability was different in any way for the certified or under-certified teachers in our sample.

The cross-district matching of teachers, however, is more problematic than the within district matching. We made these matches based on the "sameness" of the two districts. Sameness was determined using data collected from the Education Finance Statistics Center, a subdivision of the National Center for Education Statistics (U.S. Department of Education, 2001). Using public school district financial records for the latest year available, 1996-1997, data about each of the participating school districts were collected for: student teacher ratio, administrative ratio, median income, percent of householders with high school graduates, percent of non-white children, percent of limited English proficiency, and percent of children in poverty. School districts that shared similar characteristics were matched to one another. This procedure matched the Osborn Elementary School District to the Creighton Elementary School District, and matched the Roosevelt Elementary School District to both the Nogales Elementary School District and the Murphy Elementary School District. These are not pseudonyms, but the actual names of the Arizona school districts that generously helped us in this study.

Synthesizing data from the various state departments of education, GreatSchools.net also provided data that were used to match schools having similar characteristics. Sameness matches were also made based on: AIMS reading and math scores, SAT 9 reading and math scores, teacher experience, percent of teachers with masters degrees, attendance rate, open enrollment, percent free and reduced lunch, and ethnic breakdown within the school district. These data support the matches that were made using the NCES finance data with the exception that the Murphy School District was found to more closely match the Creighton School District. Teacher matching across districts, therefore, was accomplished by finding similar school districts serving similar student populations with similar economic bases. The assertion that teachers in these different school districts are sensibly matched is well substantiated, but we acknowledge that the nature of the matching procedures used constitutes a potential flaw in studies such as this. Random assignment of under-certified and certified teachers to classes within districts would have provided a stronger design, but this was not possible. It is important to note, however, that the matches in this study were made with out any knowledge of the teachers' class scores on the SAT 9.

Descriptive analyses were conducted on the complete sample of teachers in the data set (N= 293). These results are provided in Table 1.

Table 1
Descriptive Statistics for 1998-1999 and 1999-2000 Datasets

	Certified Teachers N=159	**Emergency Certified Teachers N=89**	**Temporary Certified Teachers N=19**	**Provisionally Certified Teachers N=26**
District				
Murphy	21	13	10	1
Creighton	64	34	0	0
Osborn	21	2	2	2
Roosevelt	41	35	19	19
Nogales	12	5	4	4
Grade				
2	25	9	3	7
3	19	8	2	5
4	29	7	2	4
5	24	13	1	2
6	21	22	4	5
7	22	14	3	2
8	19	16	4	1
College				
ASU	74	13	6	9
U of A	9	6	1	2
NAU	16	5	3	3
U of Phoenix	0	4	0	0
Ottawa	8	0	2	1
Grand Canyon	0	1	0	1
Out-of-State (large	14	25	2	4

public)				
Out-of-State (small public)	13	8	1	1
Out-of-State (large private)	4	7	0	0
Out-of-State (small private)	6	8	2	4
Foreign Education	9	10	0	0
Prescott College	1	2	2	0
Other	4	0	0	0
	Certified Teachers N=159	**Emergency Certified Teachers N=89**	**Temporary Certified Teachers N=19**	**Provisionally Certified Teachers N=26**
Major				
Education	9	7	1	0
Elem. Ed.	74	7	14	19
Second. Ed.	5	1	0	0
Early Child.	4	0	0	0
C & I	6	0	0	0
Ed. Admin.	6	0	0	0
Bilingual Ed.	8	0	2	0
Spec. Ed.	2	0	0	0
Phys. Ed.	1	0	1	0
Liberal Arts	10	12	0	0
Soc. Sciences	23	25	11	4
Sciences	4	17	0	3
Business	4	7	0	0
Languages	1	11	0	0
Other	2	2	0	0
Degree				
BA	126	77	17	25
MA	32	12	2	1
PhD	1	0	0	0
TFA Status				
Yes	0	32	0	2
No	159	57	19	24

Note: N = 293

From this population, teachers for whom no matches were found were removed from the analysis. The initial matching procedures produced 116 pairs of teachers (N=232 individual teachers) out of the total teacher pool of 293, thereby using 79% of the original dataset. We undertook analyses of the quality of the matching procedures that were used. These are reported on, below, and each analysis is based either on the entire sample drawn (N = 293), or on the pairs that were created by the matching procedure that was used (N = 232).

However, the process of matching produced 28 mismatched pairs consisting of teachers who did not share class score data for the same test administrations. This occurred, for example, when one teacher in a pair had scores for 1998 and the other teacher had scores for 1999. Additional matches were then made based on all of the above matching rules, but eliminating cross year matches. This finally resulted in N=109 matched pairs, using 74% of the original data set. **The appendix to this study contains descriptive information about the 109 pairs of teachers who comprise the sample for this study. The data are also available as a Microsoft Excell spreadsheet..**

Matching in primary schools across grades 3-8, however, created a problem inherent in archival studies such as this one. To design this study sensibly we needed teachers of self-contained classes. If departmentalization (more than one teacher working with the class) were occurring we would have problems inferring a teacher's affect on student learning. But we have no knowledge of what went on in every school at these upper grade levels. We were told, however, that these schools used little departmentalization, and that the teachers for whom we had files were the classroom teachers of record for the district and the state. The 218 teachers in our sample were, therefore, the teachers designated by administrators as those responsible for their student 's achievements on the SAT 9 tests. Since these were the responsible teachers we included all the matches from grades 3 to 8. Nevertheless, because we worried about the issue of departmentalization in the upper two grade levels, we ran separate analyses. One set of analyses was done with the full sample of 109 pairs of certified and under-certified teachers, and another set of analyses was done with a reduced sample, eliminating all the pairs of teachers in the 7th and 8th grade. The appendix to this report describes all 109 pairs of teachers by grade level and thus identifies which pairs were eliminated from the second analysis. In the discussion that follows, when the second analysis using the smaller sample of pairs of teachers from grades 3-6 produces results different from the analysis of the entire sample, we will note these differences.

Instruments

The Stanford Achievement Test, Ninth Edition (SAT 9), a nationally norm referenced standardized test is used by all districts in the state of Arizona and was used, as well, in this study. The test assesses student achievement in reading, math and language arts (Harcourt Brace, 1997). The SAT 9 is believed by the State Department of Education to relate to Arizona academic standards, which teachers use as a guide to instruction. It is claimed that The SAT 9 tests between 70-80% of the material outlined in the state's academic standards (ADE personal communication, 2001). This relationship is strongest for the reading and mathematics subtests, and in grades 2 through 8. The language subtest of the SAT 9 is not as well related to state standards because it does not require a writing sample of students, an ability that is promoted in the standards. The analysis of the State Department of Education suggests that the SAT 9 is a reasonable indicator of student achievement, perhaps more for reading and mathematics than for language. Furthermore, in Arizona the test is often used as an indicator of teacher and school effectiveness.

Scoring. Once teachers were matched to one another their Stanford Achievement Test, Ninth Edition (SAT 9) scores were aggregated at the class level. For each pair of teachers their mean National Normal Curve Equivalent (NCE) scores for SAT 9 reading, math and language were analyzed. The NCE scores are a type of normalized standard score resulting form the division of the normal curve into 99 equal units. This score is traditionally used for research purposes, enabling researchers to interpret differences in NCEs more readily because of the equal-interval nature of the NCE scores. Differences between NCEs obtained by different groups have the same meaning regardless of what part of the scale is referenced. For the purposes of this study individual student scores were not collected and thus cannot be reported.

Analyses of Matching Procedures

The credibility of the matching procedure for pairing uncertified and certified teachers is important in the interpretation of the results of this study. Therefore, we undertook some analyses to explore that issue. We began by looking at the similarity of the SAT 9 test scores in each school and district to determine their comparability to each other, a check on the level of "sameness" of each school and district to one another. These analyses were conducted using NCE scores on the mathematics, reading and language sub-tests of the SAT 9, for both the 1998-1999 and 1999-2000 data sets. Alpha levels were set at $p = .05$.

Matching Analysis 1. To answer the question about whether students' test scores on the SAT 9 are different as a function of which school they attend, a one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was conducted on the entire data set (N=293) to evaluate the relationship between the school assignments and student achievement scores. The independent variable was teachers' school assignment; the dependent variable was mean student achievement scores of these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. The ANOVA was not significant with the exception of mathematics scores in the 1999 sample. These results are provided in Table 2. The results indicate that, overall, the schools from whom teachers in the sample came showed no statistically significant differences from each other in terms of mean NCE scores on the SAT 9, except for the special case of mathematics scores in the 1999 sample, $F(41,190) = 1.65$, $p = .01$. It is unlikely that there are inherent differences in the schools that could bias the findings of subsequent analyses.

Table 2
ANOVA Results for School Sameness

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	2853.47	36	79.26	1.00	0.487
	Within Groups	7389.23	93	79.45		
	Total	10242.70	129			
Math 1998	Between Groups	2801.62	36	77.82	1.07	0.385
	Within Groups	6753.20	93	72.62		

	Total	9554.82	129			
Language 1998	Between Groups	3887.73	36	107.99	1.20	0.237
	Within Groups	8341.16	93	89.69		
	Total	12228.89	129			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	4621.26	41	112.71	1.42	0.060
	Within Groups	15037.23	190	79.14		
	Total	19658.49	231			
Math 1999	Between Groups	6176.95	41	150.66	1.65	0.014*
	Within Groups	17398.93	190	91.57		
	Total	23575.88	231			
Language 1999	Between Groups	4831.13	41	117.83	1.37	0.083
	Within Groups	16363.21	190	86.12		
	Total	21194.3404	231			

Note. * Indicates significance $p = .05$
To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= each school with cases N= 37, df = 37-1= 36
WG= each case (130) – total groups (37) df = 130-37=93
Total df = N-1, 130-1 = 129
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG = each school with cases N = 42, df = 42-1= 41
WG= each case (232) – total groups (42) df = 232-42 = 190
Total df = N-1, 232-1 = 231

Matching Analysis 2. To answer the question about whether the test scores of students whose teachers might be paired in later analyses differed as a function of which district they attend, a one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was conducted on the entire data set (N=293) to evaluate the relationship between the district assignments and student achievement scores. The independent variable was teachers' district assignment; the dependent variable was the classroom mean student achievement scores of these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. The results indicate significant differences between the mean NCE scores for all subtests and for both years of data. For the 1998-1999 data set the ANOVA was significant, $F(4,126) = 3.20$, $p = .02$ for reading, $F(4,126) = 2.81$, $p = .03$ for mathematics, and $F(4,126) = 3.38$, $p = .01$ for language. For the 1999-2000 data set, $F(4, 228) = 8.19$, $p = .01$ for reading, $F(4, 228) = 8.75$, $p = .01$ for mathematics, and $F(4, 228) = 6.93$, $p = .01$ for language. These results are provided below in Table 3.

Table 3
ANOVA Results for District Sameness

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	957.57	4	239.39	3.20	0.015*
	Within Groups	9413.53	126	74.71		
	Total	10371.10	130			
Math 1998	Between Groups	799.17	4	199.79	2.81	0.028*
	Within Groups	8964.88	126	71.15		
	Total	9764.05	130			
Language 1998	Between Groups	1183.68	4	295.92	3.38	0.011*
	Within Groups	11045.56	126	87.66		
	Total	12229.24	130			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	2471.10	4	617.78	8.19	.000*
	Within Groups	17200.50	228	75.44		
	Total	19671.60	232			
Math 1999	Between Groups	3144.95	4	786.24	8.75	.000*
	Within Groups	20486.51	228	89.85		
	Total	23631.46	232			

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Language 1999	Between Groups	2297.24	4	574.31	6.93	.000*
	Within Groups	18902.61	228	82.91		
	Total	21199.85	232			

Note. * Indicates significance $p = .05$
To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= each district N= 5, df= 5-1= 4
WG= each case (131) – total groups (5) df= 131-5=126
Total df= N-1, 131-1= 130
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG= each district N= 5, df= 5-1= 4
WG= each case (233) – total groups (5) df= 233-5=228
Total df= N-1, 233-1= 232

The results of this ANOVA indicate that at the district level the mean student NCE scores were statistically different from one another for the teachers who comprise the population from which our sample would be analyzed. This suggests that the procedures we used to match teachers across districts were not faultless. But analysis of the mean student scores across districts suggests that only one district may have been an outlier, with slightly higher SAT 9 scores than the others. Since only 38% of all teachers had to be matched with teachers from another district, it is likely, therefore, that only a small percent of those matches could have been problematic, totaling less than 10% of all the matches that were made. In addition, the matching of teachers across district lines was based on multiple measures of district sameness; NCE scores provide only one such measure. Because of that, we believe that the matching of teachers across district lines can still be defended as a reasonable way to obtain a sample for analysis of the student achievement of certified and uncertified teachers.

The discrepancy between the results for the ANOVA on the participating schools and the participating districts is curious and remains an issue to be resolved. This is, of course, one of the reasons that hierarchical designs have become necessary in the analysis of classroom, school and district level data. But for the purposes of this study, it is not clear that this discrepancy would cause any systematic bias in the data analyses to follow.

Matching Analysis 3. After the 109 pairs of matched teachers were identified we then inquired whether the average SAT 9 scores of certified teachers differed as a function of whether they were matched with teachers within their same school district or with teachers from another participating school district. A one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was used in this analysis. The independent variable was teachers' district assignment, either within or between school district. The dependent variable was the student achievement scores of these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. ANOVA results indicate no significant differences between the mean NCE scores for the certified teachers matched within the same district as compared to certified teachers matched between districts. These results are provided below in Table 4.

Table 4
ANOVA Results for Certified Teacher Matches
Within and Between Districts

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	66.66	1	66.66	0.84	0.36
	Within Groups	4195.26	53	79.16		
	Total	4261.92	54			
Math 1998	Between Groups	56.29	1	56.29	0.76	0.39
	Within Groups	3932.17	53	74.19		
	Total	3988.46	54			
Language 1998	Between Groups	8.88	1	8.88	0.11	0.74
	Within Groups	4251.57	53	80.22		
	Total	4260.45	54			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	30.45	1	30.45	0.36	0.55
	Within Groups	7566.44	89	85.02		
	Total	7596.89	90			
Math 1999	Between Groups	4.68	1	4.68	0.05	0.82
	Within Groups	8336.88	89	93.67		

	Total	8341.56	90			
Language 1999	Between Groups	23.20	1	23.20	0.33	0.57
	Within Groups	6279.82	89	70.56		
	Total	6303.02	90			

To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= match type N= 2, df= 2-1= 1
WG= each case (55) – total groups (2) df= 55-2=53
Total df= N-1, 55-1= 54
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG= match type N= 2, df= 2-1= 1
WG= each case (91) – total groups (2) df= 91-2=89
Total df= N-1, 91-1= 90

Matching Analysis 4. After the 109 pairs of matched teachers were identified we then inquired whether the average SAT 9 scores of under-certified (emergency, temporary or provisional certified) teachers' differed as a function of whether they are matched within the same school district or with teachers from another participating school district. A one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was conducted. The independent variable was teachers' district assignment, either within or between school district. The dependent variable was the student achievement scores of these teachers, as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. In general, the ANOVA results indicate no significant differences between the scores of under-certified teachers matched within district as compared to under-certified teachers matched between districts. But that was not true for all tests. Significant differences in NCE scores were found for mathematics in the 1999-2000 data set. For mathematics, $F(1, 93) = 8.08, p = .01$. The exclusion of 7th and 8th grade teachers yielded similar results; $F(1, 67) = 4.12, p = .047$. These results are provided below in Table 5.

Table 5
ANOVA Results for Under-Certified Teacher Matches Within and Between Districts

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	0.93	1	0.93	0.02	0.90
	Within Groups	2214.40	35	63.27		
	Total	2215.33	36			
Math 1998	Between Groups	19.52	1	19.52	0.45	0.51
	Within Groups	1503.55	35	42.96		
	Total	1523.07	36			
Language 1998	Between Groups	14.09	1	14.09	0.17	0.68
	Within Groups	2936.85	35	83.91		
	Total	2950.94	36			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	69.52	1	69.52	0.82	0.37
	Within Groups	7849.48	93	84.40		
	Total	7919.00	94			
Math 1999	Between Groups	688.59	1	688.59	8.08	0.01*
	Within Groups	7928.94	93	85.26		
	Total	8617.53	94			
Language 1999	Between Groups	246.32	1	246.32	3.27	0.07
	Within Groups	6856.38	91	75.35		
	Total	7102.71	92			

Note. * Indicates significance $p = .05$
To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= match type N= 2, df= 2-1= 1
WG= each case (37) – total groups (2) df= 37-2=35
Total df= N-1, 37-1= 36
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG= match type N= 2, df= 2-1= 1

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

WG= each case (95) – total groups (2) df= 95-2=93
Total df= N-1, 95-1= 94
For 1999-2000 Language: Total cases= 93

It has been argued, above, that the matching procedures used in this study were sensible. The four statistical analyses intended to evaluate the matching procedures provide evidence that they were not perfect, but that evidence does not lead to the conclusion that the approach taken in this study was unreasonable or would lead to faulty conclusions. The matching of the pairs of teachers, one certified with one under-certified, within and across district lines, took place before the SAT scores of the teachers in each pair were scrutinized. Thus the matching procedures appear to be unbiased with regard to the research questions that are of interest. The results of the analyses appropriate to these research questions are considered next.

Results

We first chose to look at whether the three kinds of under-certified teachers differed among themselves. We believed that subsequent analyses would be simpler if the SAT 9 NCE scores of the students of these three groups of teachers were not statistically different from each other. If that were the case, we could treat the three sub-groups of under-certified teachers as a single group.

A one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was conducted in which the independent variable was teachers' certification, while the dependent variable was the student achievement scores of these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. Results indicate that the NCE scores for all under-certified teachers (emergency, temporary and provisional) were not statistically different from one another. These results are provided below in Table 6. Because of this finding we subsequently treated all uncertified teachers as a homogeneous group. In all subsequent analyses we will compare certified teachers to the total group of under-certified teachers (emergency, temporary and provisional).

Table 6
ANOVA Results for Emergency, Temporary & Provisional Certified Teachers

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	16.91	2	8.46	0.13	0.88
	Within Groups	2198.42	34	64.66		
	Total	2215.33	36			
Math 1998	Between Groups	68.48	2	34.24	0.80	0.46
	Within Groups	1454.59	34	42.78		
	Total	1523.07	36			
Language 1998	Between Groups	176.61	2	88.31	1.08	0.35
	Within Groups	2774.33	34	81.60		
	Total	2950.94	36			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	116.51	2	58.25	0.69	0.51
	Within Groups	7802.49	92	84.81		
	Total	7919.00	94			
Math 1999	Between Groups	131.56	2	65.78	0.71	0.49
	Within Groups	8485.97	92	92.24		
	Total	8617.53	94			
Language 1999	Between Groups	120.69	2	60.35	0.78	0.46
	Within Groups	6982.02	90	77.58		
	Total	7102.71	92			

To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= match type N= 3, df= 3-1= 2
WG= each case (37) – total groups (3) df= 37-3=34
Total df= N-1, 37-1= 36
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG= match type N= 3, df= 3-1= 2
WG= each case (95) – total groups (3) df= 95-3=92

Total df= N-1, 95-1= 94
For 1999-2000 Language: Total cases= 93

To answer the key question in this study, whether students taught by certified teachers outscore students taught by under-certified teachers, a correlated *t*-test was conducted to evaluate the difference in student achievement scores of the certified and under-certified teachers. The results indicate that for 1998-1999, students taught by certified teachers outperformed students taught by under-certified teachers. More specifically, the reading scores of the students of certified teachers were significantly higher (*M*=36.52, *SD*= 9.59) than were the reading scores obtained by the students of under-certified teachers (*M*=30.67, *SD*= 8.02), *t* (27)= 2.36, *p*= .01. In this same year, on the language test, the scores of the students taught by certified teachers were significantly higher (*M*=34.33, *SD*= 9.17) than were the scores of the students taught by under-certified teachers (*M*=29.89, *SD*= 9.82), *t* (27)= 1.81, *p*= .04. While the difference between the certified and the under-certified teachers on the mathematics test were not found to be significant, the results were in the same direction as they were for the reading and language tests. Students taught by certified teachers scored higher (*M*=38.80, *SD*= 8.77) than did the students taught by under-certified teachers (*M*=35.82, *SD*= 7.32).

Results for 1999-2000 replicated the results of the data from 1998-1999. Students taught by certified teachers significantly outperformed students taught by under-certified teachers on every test. In reading, the scores of the students of certified teachers were significantly higher (*M*=35.62, *SD*= 9.31) than were the scores of students instructed by under-certified teachers (*M*=32.48, *SD*= 9.43), *t* (86)= 2.43, *p*= .01. In mathematics, the scores of students of certified teachers were significantly higher (*M*=39.75, *SD*= 9.52) than were the scores obtained by students of under-certified teachers (*M*=35.22, *SD*=9.77), *t* (86)= 2.95 *p*= .001. And in the area of language, the scores of the students of certified teachers were significantly higher (*M*=35.60, *SD*= 8.57) than were the scores of the students instructed by under-certified teachers (*M*=33.47, *SD*= 8.90), *t* (84)= 1.71, *p*= .05. These results are provided below in Table 7. The exclusion of 7th and 8th grade teachers yielded similar, and more dramatic results; the average difference between these two groups increased. Moreover, in this analysis of only grades 3-6, all subtests across both years were found to be significantly different.

Table 7
Correlated t- test Results Comparing
Certified and Under-Certified Teachers

SAT 9 Subtest and Year	Mean of Differences	St. Dev.	St. Error of Mean	95% Conf. Int. Lower Limit	95% Conf. Int. Upper Limit	t	df	Sig.
Reading 1998	5.85	13.11	2.48	0.77	10.93	2.36	27	0.01*
Math 1998	2.97	11.44	2.16	-1.47	7.41	1.37	27	0.09
Language 1998	4.44	13.01	2.46	-0.60	9.49	1.81	27	0.04*
Reading 1999	3.14	12.07	1.29	0.57	5.71	2.43	86	0.01*
Math 1999	4.53	14.31	1.53	1.48	7.58	2.95	86	0.00*
Language 1999	2.13	11.49	1.25	-.35	4.61	1.71	84	0.05*

Note. * Indicates significance *p*= .05
To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
Number of matches N=28
Total df= N-1, 28-1= 27
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
Number of matches N=87
Total df= N-1, 87-1= 86
For 1999-2000 Language: Total cases= 85

The NCE scale provides a metric for evaluating the differences between certified teachers and under-certified teachers. Students taught by certified teachers outscored their counterparts by 6 NCE points in reading, 3 NCE points in mathematics and nearly 5 NCE points in language in 1998-1999. The results are similar for 1999-2000. Students taught by certified teachers outscored their counterparts by 3 NCE points in reading, 5 NCE points in mathematics, and 2NCE points in language. Expressed as a proportion of the standard deviation of the NCE scale represented as an effect size, these differences range across the two years from .14 to .28 in reading, 14 to .24 in mathematics and .09 to .19 in language. These results are provided below in Table 8. The exclusion of 7th and 8th grade teachers from this analysis yielded similar, yet more dramatic results in terms of effect size. Across the two years the range of the effect sizes were from .19 to .38 in reading, .24 to .28 in mathematics and .14 to.33 in language. For ease of discussion it is appropriate to choose a summary statistic to represent these data. A reasonable way to do that is to conclude that the average ES across all sub-tests of the SAT 9, across both years of testing, and across analyses, is around .20. Because of the relationship between effect size (ES) and yearly progress on standardized tests (Glass, 2002), one could expect that during one academic year in the primary grades, the students of certified teachers would make approximately 2 months more academic growth than would the students of under-certified teachers. The academic year is a 10-month year so the loss of two months or 2/10ths of a year is the loss incurred by students placed with under-certified

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

teachers. That is, students pay approximately a 20% penalty in academic growth for each year of placement with under-certified teachers.

Table 8
NCE Differences between Certified and Under-Certified Teachers & Effect Size (ES) * Ranges for 1998-1999 and 1999-2000

SAT Sub-Test	1998 – 1999	1999 – 2000	ES Range
Reading	6	3	.14 – .28
Math	3	5	.14 – .24
Language	4	2	.09 – .19

Note. *Effect sizes (ES) when using normal curve equivalencies (NCE) must be calculated with a standard deviation of 21.06 NCE units.

To answer the question whether the test scores of students of teachers in the Teach for America program are different from the scores of students who studied with other under-certified teachers, a one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was conducted. The independent variable was TFA trained vs. all other forms of training among the under-certified teachers. The dependent variable was the student achievement scores of these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. ANOVA results indicate that the NCE scores of TFA teachers were not statistically different from the NCE scores for other under-certified teachers. These results are provided below in Table 9.

Table 9
ANOVA Results Teach for America Teachers & Other Under-Certified Teachers

SAT 9 Subtest and Year		Sum of Squares	df	Mean Square	F	Sig.
Reading 1998	Between Groups	34.00	1	34.00	0.55	0.47
	Within Groups	2181.33	35	62.32		
	Total	2215.33	36			
Math 1998	Between Groups	21.30	1	21.30	0.50	0.49
	Within Groups	1501.78	35	42.91		
	Total	1523.08	36			
Language 1998	Between Groups	261.64	1	261.64	3.41	0.07
	Within Groups	2689.30	35	76.84		
	Total	2950.94	36			
Reading 1999	Between Groups	92.74	1	92.74	1.10	0.30
	Within Groups	7826.26	93	84.15		
	Total	7919.00	94			
Math 1999	Between Groups	1.31	1	1.31	.01	.91
	Within Groups	8616.22	93	92.65		
	Total	8617.53	94			
Language 1999	Between Groups	19.94	1	19.94	0.26	0.61
	Within Groups	7082.77	91	77.83		
	Total	7102.71	92			

To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
BG= TFA or under-certified N= 2, df= 2-1= 1
WG= each case (37) – total groups (2) df= 37-2=35
Total df= N-1, 37-1= 36
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
BG= TFA or under-certified N= 2, df= 2-1= 1
WG= each case (95) – total groups (2) df= 95-2=93
Total df= N-1, 95-1= 93

For 1999-2000 Language: Total cases= 93

Given the previous analyses, in which the students of certified teachers outperformed the students of under-certified teachers and the students of TFA teachers scored no different than did the students of other under-certified teachers, it may be that the next analysis is superfluous. Nevertheless, because of the intensity of the debate about the performance of TFA teachers described in the literature reviewed above, we chose to inquire whether students taught by certified teachers outperformed students taught by Teach for America (TFA) teachers.

A correlated t-test was used for this analysis and it indicated that for the 1999-2000 data set, in reading, the scores of the students of the certified teachers were significantly higher (M=35.53, SD= 9.87) than were the scores of the students of TFA teachers (M=30.51, SD= 6.85), t (21)= 1.87, p= .04. In mathematics, the scores of the students of the certified teachers were significantly higher (M=41.15, SD=9.21) than were those obtained by students of teachers from the TFA program (M=35.34, SD= 7.67), t (21)=2.13, p= .02. Finally, in language, the scores of the students in the classes of the certified teachers were significantly higher (M=36.43, SD= 9.48) than were the scores of the students of teachers trained by TFA (M=32.11, SD= 8.71), t (21)=1.79, p= .04.

Although the same pattern of results were found for the 1998-1999 sample, the differences between the two groups were not statistically significant. We believe this occurred because of the smaller sample size in the 1998-1999 analysis. These results are provided below in Table 10. The exclusion of 7th and 8th grade teachers yielded similar, and more dramatic results; the average difference between these two groups increased. In this analysis the differences were found to be significant in both years, in all subtests, except for math in 1998-1999.

Table 10
Correlated t-test Results Comparing Certified Teachers and Teach for America Teachers

SAT 9 Subtest and Year	Mean of Differences	St. Dev.	St. Error of Mean	95% Conf. Int. Lower Limit	95% Conf. Int. Upper Limit	t	df	Sig.
Reading 1998	4.28	10.10	3.57	-4.17	12.73	1.20	7	0.13
Math 1998	2.25	10.02	3.54	-6.13	10.62	0.63	7	0.27
Language 1998	2.57	7.15	2.53	-3.41	8.54	1.02	7	0.17
Reading 1999	5.02	12.58	2.68	-0.56	10.60	1.87	21	0.04*
Math 1999	5.81	12.81	2.73	0.13	11.49	2.13	21	0.02*
Language 1999	4.31	11.29	2.41	-0.69	9.32	1.79	21	0.04*

Note. * Indicates significance p= .05
To determine df for 1998-1999 sample:
Number of matches N=8
Total df= N-1, 8-1= 7
To determine df for 1999-2000 sample:
Number of matches N=22
Total df= N-1, 22-1= 21

The data set was also examined to gain information about the role of experience in developing teacher competency. For teachers that were in both the 1998-1999 and the 1999-2000 set of data, we had hoped to look at whether teacher experience effects student SAT 9 scores, and more particularly, whether the differences in performance between the certified teachers and the uncertified teachers was moderated as a function of the increased experience of the uncertified teachers. But the sample of teachers for whom we had data across two years was very small (six pairs across the two years), so no confident answers to these questions can be offered.

One of our analyses was a one-way within-subjects ANOVA, with the factor being experience, as measured in time from 1998-1999 to 1999-2000. The dependent variable was the student's achievement scores for these teachers as measured in Normal Curve Equivalents (NCE) for reading, mathematics and language in 1998-1999 and 1999-2000. The results indicate that there is no significant difference in NCE scores from the first year to the second year. Nevertheless, the scores for each subtest of the SAT increased from the first year to the second, indicating that teacher experience may affect the achievement test scores of their students. The means and standard deviations are provided below, in Table 11.

The scores increased from one to two NCE points in each of the three subtests, with the increase in mathematics being the greatest. The difference in the scores between the first year and second year are provided in Table 12. We also ran an ANOVA on these changes over time, and those results are given in Table 13.

Table 11
Means and Standard Deviations for

Matched Teachers with Two Years of Data

SAT 9 Subtest and Year	Mean	Std. Deviation	N
Reading 1998-1999	36.50	14.25	12
Reading 1999-2000	37.79	7.26	12
Math 1998-1999	39.03	11.49	12
Math 1999-2000	41.07	8.38	12
Language 1998-1999	35.85	13.00	12
Language 1999-2000	37.05	7.38	12

Table 12
Difference in Mean SAT 9 Scores for Matched Teachers with Two Years of Data

SAT 9 Subtest and Year	Mean of Differences	St. Dev.	St. Error of Mean	95% Conf. Int. Lower Limit	95% Conf. Int. Upper Limit	t	df	Sig.
Reading	-1.29	14.54	4.20	-10.52	7.95	-0.31	11	0.38
Math	-2.04	9.29	2.68	-7.95	3.86	-0.76	11	0.23
Language	-1.20	11.71	3.38	-8.64	6.24	-0.36	11	0.36

Table 13
ANOVA for Teachers with Two Years of Data

SAT 9 Subtest	F	df	Error df	Sig.
Reading	.09	1	11	.77
Mathematics	.58	1	11	.46
Language	.13	1	11	.73

In order to evaluate whether the *differences* between certified teachers and under-certified teachers, with two years of data, remained similar, grew or decreased from the first year to the second, mean NCE scores for each group were analyzed. Results indicate that the difference between the scores of certified teachers and the scores of under-certified teachers for the 1998-1999 to 1999-2000 data set, as measured in NCE scores, decreased in reading and language, but increased in mathematics. These results are provided below, in Table 14.

Table 14
Difference between Certified and Under-Certified Teachers' NCE Scores from 1998-1999 to 1999-2000 for Teachers with Two Years of Data

Academic Year	Reading	Mathematics	Language
1998-1999	12.93	7.80	9.51
1999-2000	3.18	9.47	4.02

Note. All scores favor certified teachers over under-certified teachers.

Discussion and Conclusion

Many different values necessarily come into play when making educational policy about the qualifications that are needed to become a beginning teacher. So much is riding on the performance of these individuals, trusted with educating our nation's young. So many skills are needed to do that job well. Thus, a single empirical study of this kind cannot provide answers to complex policy questions about the relative benefits and liabilities of allowing certified and under-certified teachers to teach our young. Nevertheless, there is every reason to think that the results of this study are generalizable and worth considering when educational policies on these issues are debated.

As we understand the national situation it appears not to be very different from that in Arizona. From New York, through Chicago, and on to Los Angeles, teachers in schools that serve the poor are often under-certified, inexperienced, and may be teaching out-of-field. Teachers who serve wealthier students overwhelmingly hold regular certification, have accumulated considerably more teaching experience, and are less often required to teach out-of-field. (Darling-Hammond, 1997a, 1997b; 2001; Ingersoll, 2001; Gitomer, Latham, & Ziomek, 1999; Lankford, Loeb, & Wycoff, 2002).

This study addressed one of these factors—the effectiveness of certification on student achievement. We found what might be expected of those who choose to do complex work, namely, that those who trained longer and harder to do that work do it better. Common sense and empirical data agree. Despite our lack of understanding of how it is accomplished, and despite the extreme variability in the programs of instruction (surely masking both excellent and dreadful programs), the present research study supports the assertion that university prepared teachers are of higher quality than those prepared without an approved program of preparation (see also Evertson, 1984; Darling-Hammond, 1997a).

In this study regularly certified teachers significantly outperformed under-certified teachers with children who are most at risk of school failure and school dropout. These already low achieving children, when assigned to the classrooms of under-certified teachers made gains that were approximately 2 months less per school year on three different subtests of the SAT 9. This is about 20% less academic growth than they would have made had they been assigned to a teacher with regular state certification.

The Rowan et al. (in press) study, cited above, states that the relationship between measures of student growth and measures of teacher competency are much stronger than are the relationships found when a single years measure of achievement is used as the dependent variable, as in this study. Since the districts we studied had relatively large percentages of under-certified teachers the odds of a student getting more than one such teacher during their primary grades is high. If the magnitude of the effects on student achievement growth over time were as high as Rowan et al. believe, then it is likely that exposure to just two under-certified teachers would result in intractable deficits in academic growth in reading, mathematics and language. Although their research methods are hard to follow, Sanders and Rivers (1996) reach similar conclusions: the effects of poor quality teachers are cumulative.

In this era of accountability for schools and students, low test performance can mean the loss of employment for teachers and administrators, while for students, such results can lead to retention in grade or denial of a high school degree. But there are school systems throughout the nation that make regular use of large numbers of under-certified teachers and thus, through their hiring practices, virtually guarantee that their students will achieve relatively low levels of performance on norm-referenced standardized tests. Students, teachers and administrators will each be made to pay for a policy that assures less then desirable outcomes from the school system.

This situation raises broad questions of policy, such as, what are the causes of, and who is accountable for, the placement of the under-certified teachers in the classrooms of our most challenging students? Who should accept responsibility for an educational policy that appears harmful and that clearly handicaps students in the lower social classes? Will the school districts that make heavy use of under-certified teachers all violate the new federal guidelines, since under-certified teachers seem *not* to be highly qualified to teach? And if these districts will not be in compliance with the new federal regulations because they cannot attract qualified teachers to their classrooms what can they do differently to receive funding and change the working conditions so that they can attract and keep qualified teachers?

Policy makers should take the results of this study seriously, perhaps also funding more research of this kind to ensure the validity of our findings. But meanwhile, on the basis of our findings, we see evidence of a harmful educational policy. We believe that those in authority need to attend to the legal and moral issues that arise from our data. It appears that we are systematically providing an inferior education to the children of the poor. They start with academic difficulties and then through the policies we adopt we handicap them 20% more per year when we assign them to classrooms staffed by under-certified teachers.

The data we have collected also inform us that there is no difference between the performance of new teachers from Teach for America and that of all other under-certified teachers. On all tests, and in both years, the certified teachers out-performed the under-certified novice teachers from Teach for America. Our results contradict claims made by TFA advocates that the enthusiasm and subject-matter knowledge, as well as a general education in a prestigious university, prepare these recruits to teach adequately in America's classrooms. The TFA teachers are no better able to teach than any other under-prepared teacher.

In general, research on Teach for America has been limited and the results are often contradictory (Darling-Hammond, 1994; 1997a; 2001; Stevens & Dial, 1993; Schorr, 1993; Kopp, 1994; Raymond, Fletcher, & Luque, 2001). Our findings do, however, directly contradict those reported by Raymond, Fletcher & Luque (2001). We find no evidence to support their claim that TFA teachers produce a positive effect on their students' achievement relative to teachers recruited in other ways. In our view, the preponderance of the available literature raises serious concerns about the TFA program. Although new TFA teachers are required to take a six-week summer training program before their school year begins, and they receive support throughout the school year from TFA personnel, the performance of their students is indistinguishable from that of student's taught by other under-certified teachers. More important for policy makers is that the level of performance of the students of the TFA teachers was lower than that of the students taught by equally inexperienced but fully certified teachers. That is the more important finding

TFA may be a meaningful way for young college graduates to make some money and take a few years out of the ordinary path their careers demand. But they are hurting our young, vulnerable, inner-city students. (We expect that TFA teachers are faring no better in rural communities, but our data does not address that population.) Because an overwhelmingly high percent of the TFA students also leave the profession after their two years of service, their hard earned teaching experience will never be put to use with future generations of students.

While the TFA program appears to be a failure, it is simply part of the larger pattern of failure that attends to the policy of hiring under-certified teachers. The policy of hiring under prepared teachers for the schools that serve America's poor looks like an act of class warfare, a concept that Americans find hard to accept. But states have adopted, or allowed policies to continue unchallenged, that prevent poor and rural American children from receiving the education they need for citizenship or to compete in the economy of the 21st century. These are policies to be ashamed of and abandoned. We hope that the new federal legislation will change things, for if it is taken literally, we might eventually have highly qualified teachers for all of our nations' students to learn from.

Note

[1] This article is based on the first author's dissertation titled *Teacher certification does matter: The effects of certification status on student achievement*, completed Spring, 2002, in the College of Education, Arizona State University. The second author received partial funding for helping with this research from the Rockefeller Foundation, to whom we are grateful. The views expressed in this report, however, are the sole responsibility of its authors and may not reflect the views of The Rockefeller Foundation or the Arizona Department of Education.

References

Angus, D. L. (2001). *Professionalism and the public good: A brief history of teacher certification*. Washington, DC: Fordham Foundaton. Retrieved July 25, 2002 from http://www.edexcellence.net/library/angus/angus.html

Arizona Department of Education Web Page. (2002). Available: http://www.ade.az.gov

Ashton, P., & Crocker, L. (1987). Systematic study of planned variations: The essential focus of teacher education reform. *Journal of Teacher Education, 38*(1), 2-8.

Ashton, P., Crocker, L., & Olejnik, S. (1986). *Does teacher education make a difference? A literature review and planning study*. Executive summary and technical monograph prepared for the Institute on Student Assessment and Evaluation, Florida Department of Education.

Ballou, D. (1996). Do public schools hire the best applicants? *Quarterly Journal of Economics, 3*(2), 97-134.

Ballou, D., & Podgursky, M. (1999). Reforming teacher preparation and licensing: What is the evidence? *Teachers College Record*. Retrieved November 1999 from http://www.tcrecord.org./

Berry, B. (2001). No shortcuts to preparing good teachers. *Educational Leadership, 58*(8). Retrieved January 2002 from http://ascd.org/readingroom/edlead/ 0105/berry.html.

Bliss, T. (1992). Alternative certification in Connecticut: Reshaping the profession. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67*(3), 35-54.

Bradshaw, L., & Hawk, P. (1996). *Teacher certification: Does it really make a difference in student achievement?* Greenville, NC: Eastern North Carolina Consortium for Assistance and Research in Education.

Buck, G. H., Polloway, E. A., & Robb, S. M. (1995). Alternative certification programs: A national survey. *Teacher Education and Special Education, 18*(1), 39-48.

Burbules, N. C., & Densmore, K. (1991). The limits of making teaching a profession. *Educational Policy, 5*(1), 44-63.

Byrne, C. J. (1983). *Teacher knowledge and teacher effectiveness: A literature review, theoretical analysis and discussion of research strategy*. Paper presented at the meeting of the Northeastern Educational Research Association, Ellenville, NY.

Cochran-Smith, M. & Fries, M. K. (2001). Sticks, stones and ideology: The discourse of reform in teacher education.

Educational Researcher, 30(8), 3-15.

Crehan, K. D., Hess, R., Lawrence, A., & Sabers, D. (2000). *Validity issues in teacher certification testing.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of Arizona Educational Research Organization, Tucson Arizona.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1992). Teaching and knowledge: Policy issues posed by alternate certification for teachers. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67*(3), 123-154.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1994). Who will speak for the children? How "Teach for America" hurts urban schools and students. *Phi Delta Kappan, 76*(1), 21-34.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1997a). *The right to learn: A blueprint for creating schools that work.* San Francisco, CA. Jossey-Bass.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1997b). *Doing what matters most: Investing in quality teaching.* NY: National Commission on Teaching and America's Future, Teachers College, Columbia University. Retrieved July 27, 2002 from http://www.nctaf.org/publications/index.html

Darling-Hammond, L. (2000). Teacher quality and student achievement: A review of state policy evidence. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(1). Retrieved January 2001 fromhttp://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n1/

Darling-Hammond, L. (2001). *The research and rhetoric on teacher certification: A response to "Teacher Certification Reconsidered." NY:* National Commission on Teaching and America's Future, Teachers College, Columbia University Retrieved July 26, 2002 from http://www.nctaf.org/publications/index.html

Darling-Hammond, L. (2002). The research and rhetoric on teacher certification: A response to "Teacher Certification Reconsidered."*Educational Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(36). Retreived September 5, 2002 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n36.html

Darling-Hammond, L., Berry, B. & Thoreson, A. (2001). Does teacher certification matter? Evaluating the evidence. *Education Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 23*(1), 57-77.

Darling-Hammond, L., Chung, R., & Frelow, F. (2002). Variation in teacher preparation: How well do different pathways prepare teachers to teach? *Journal of Teacher Education, 53*(4), 286-302.

Eifler, K., & Potthoff, D. (1998). Nontraditional teacher education students: A synthesis of the literature. *Journal of Teacher Education, 49*(3), 187-195.

Educational Testing Service (2002). *PRAXIS information web page.* Retrieved July 25, 2002 from http://www.teachingandlearning.org/licnsure/praxis/prxtest.html

Ehrenberg, R. G., & Brewer, D. J. (1994). Do school and teacher characteristics matter? Evidence from High School and Beyond. *Economics of Educational Review, 13*(1), 1-17.

Evertson, C. (1984). *The characteristics of effective preparation programs: A review of research.* Washington, DC: National Commission on Excellence in Teacher Education.

Everston, C., Hawley, W., & Zlotnik, M. (1985). Making a difference in educational quality through teacher education. *Journal of Teacher Education, 36*(3), 2-12.

Feistritzer, E. (1993). National overview of alternative teacher certification. *Education and Urban Society, 26*(1), 18-28.

Feistritzer, E. (1994). Evolution of alternative teacher certification. *Educational Forum, 58*, 132-138.

Fenstermacher, G. (1992). The place of alternative certification in the education of teachers. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67*(3), 155-185.

Ferguson, R. F. (1991). Paying for public education: New evidence on how and why money matters. *Harvard Journal on Legislation, 28*(2), 465-498.

Ferguson, R. F., & Womack, S. T. (1993). The impact of subject matter and education coursework on teaching performance. *Journal of Teacher Education, 44*(1), 55-63.

Fetler, M. (1999). High school staff characteristics and mathematics test results. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 7*(9). Retrieved January 2000 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v7n9.html.

Finn, C., & Kanstroom, M. (2000). Improving, empowering, dismantling. *The Public Interest.* Manhattan Institute: Authors. Retrieved December 2001 from http://www.manhattan-institute.org/html/_pi-_improving.html.

Galambos, E. C. (1984). *Testing teachers for certification and recertification.* Washington, DC: National Commission on Excellence in Teacher Education.

Gitomer, D., Latham, A. S., & Ziomek, R. (1999). *The academic quality of prospective teachers: The impact of admissions and licensure testing.* Princeton, NJ: Teaching and Learning Division, Educational Testing Service. Retrieved July 27, 2002, from http://www.ets.org/teachingandlearning/rschnews.html#impact

Glass, G.V (1978). Standards and criteria. *Journal of Educational Measurement, 15*(4), 237-61.

Glass, G.V (2002). Teacher characteristics. In A. Molnar (Ed.), *School Reform Proposals: the Research Evidence* (Chapter 8). Retrieved March 2002 from http://www.asu.edu/educ/epsl/Reports/epru/EPRU2002-101/epru-2002-101.html.

Go, K. (2002, July 31). 1 out of 6 teachers in Arizona lacks certification. *Arizona Republic.* Retrieved August 2 from http://www.arizonarepublic.com/news/articles/0731emergency31.html

Goldhaber, D. D., & Brewer, D. J. (1996). *Evaluating the effect of teacher degree level.* Rockville, MD: Westat, Inc.

Goldhaber, D. D. & Brewer, D. J. (2000). Does certification matter? High school teacher certification status and student achievement. *Education Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 22*(2), 129-145.

Greenwald, R., Hedges, L. V., & Laine, R. D. (1996). The effect of school resources on student achievement. *Review of Educational Research, 66*, 361-396.

Hanushek, E. A., Kain, J. F., & Rivkin, S. G. (2001, November). *Why public schools lose teachers* (Working Paper 8599). Washington, DC: National Bureau of Economic Research.

Harcourt Brace Educational Measurement. (1997). *Stanford Achievement Test, Ninth Edition Spring norms book.* San Antonio, TX: Author.

Harcourt Brace Educational Measurement. (2001). *Stanford Achievement Test, Ninth Edition Administrator's interpretive guide: Arizona student achievement program.* San Antonio, TX: Author.

Hardy, L. (1998). A good teacher is hard to find. *American School Board Journal, 185*(9), 20-23.

Hawk, P., Coble, C. R., & Swanson, M. (1985). Certification: It does matter. *Journal of Teacher Education, 36*(3), 13-15.

Hawkins, E. F., Stancavage, F. B., & Dorsey, J. A. (1998). *School policies affecting instruction in mathematics.* Washington, D.C.: National Center for Education Statistics.

Hawley, W. (1992). The theory and practice of alternative certification: Implications for the improvement of teaching. *Peabody Journal of Education, 67*(3), 3-34.

Haycock, K. (2001). Closing the achievement gap. *Educational Leadership, 58*(6). Retrieved February, 2002, from http://www.ascd.org/readingroom/edlead/0103/haycock.html

Hernandez, R. (1998, December 4). Suit says minority students receive an inferior education. *The New York Times.* Retrieved, May 2002, from http://www.nytimes.com/

Higher Education Reauthorization Act. (1998). Pub. L. No. 105-244, 20 U.S.C. § 1021-1030.

Hirsh, E., Koppich, J. E., & Knapp, M. S. (2001). *Revisiting what states are doing to improve the quality of teaching: An update on patterns and trends.* Seattle: University of Washington, Center for the Study of Teaching and Policy.

Holmes Group. (1986). *Tomorrow's teachers: A report of the Holmes Group.* East Lansing, MI: Author.

Houston, R. W., Marshall, F., & McDavid, T. (1993). Problems of traditionally prepared and alternatively certified first-year teachers. *Education and Urban Society, 26*(1), 78-89.

Howey, K., & Zimpher, N. (1994). Nontraditional contexts for learning to teach. *The Educational Forum, 58*, 156-161.

Hundreds of teachers in city lack qualifications. (2002, January 31) Philadelphia Inquirer. Retrieved July 26, 2002 from http://www.edpolicy.org/rgn.iss/2002/ne/week5.htm#article2

Ingersoll, R. (1996). *Teacher quality and inequality*. Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Statistical Association, Chicago, IL.

Ingersoll, R. (1997). Teacher turnover and teacher quality: The recurring myth of teacher shortages. *Teachers College Record, 91*(1), 41-44.

Ingersoll, R. (1999a). Invited commentary: Understanding the problem of teacher quality in American schools. *Education Statistics Quarterly*: National Center for Education Statistics. Retrieved October 2001 from http://www.nces.ed.gov/pubs99/quarterlyapr/2-feature/2-esq11-c.html.

Ingersoll, R. (1999b). The problem of under-qualified teachers in American secondary schools. *Educational Researcher, 28*(2), 26-37.

Ingersoll, R. (2001). Teacher turnover and teacher shortages: An organizational analysis. *American Educational Research Journal, 38* (3), 499-534.

Jaeger, R. (1990). Establishing standards for teacher certification tests. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 9*(4), 15-20.

Jelmberg, J. (1996). College-based teacher education versus state-sponsored alternative programs. *Journal of Teacher Education, 47*(1), 60-66.

Kain, J. F. (1998). *Impact of individual teachers and peers on individual student achievement*. Paper prepared for the annual meeting of the Association for Public Policy Analysis and Management, New York, NY.

Kanstroom, M., & Finn, C. (Eds.)(1999). *Better teachers better schools*. Washington, DC: Education Leaders Council, Thomas B. Fordham Foundation. Retrieved July 26, 2002, from http://www.edexcellence.net/better/tchrs/btbs.htm

Kearns, J. (1984). State competency testing for teacher certification. *Journal of Teacher Education, 35*(2), 58-61.

Keltner, D. (1994). Troops to teachers: Alternative certification and the military. *The Educational Forum, 58*, 182-186.

Kennedy, M. (1991). Policy issues in teacher education. *Phi Delta Kappan, 72*(9), 659-665.

Kopp, W. (1994). Teach for America: Moving beyond the debate. *The Educational Forum, 58*, 187-192.

Kwiatkowski, M. K. (1999). Debating alternative teacher certification: A trial by achievement. In M. Kanstroom & C. Finn (Eds.)(1999). *Better teachers better schools* (pp. 215-237). Washington, DC: Education Leaders Council, Thomas B. Fordham Foundation. Retrieved July 26, 2002, from http://www.edexcellence.net/better/tchrs/btbs.htm

Labaree, D. (1992). Power, knowledge, and the rationalization of teaching: A genealogy of the movement to professionalize teaching. *Harvard Educational Review, 62*(2), 123-154.

Lankford, H., Loeb, S., & Wycoff, J. (2002). Teacher sorting and the plight of urban schools: A descriptive analysis. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis*, *24*(1), 37-62.

Lopez, O. S. (1995). *Classroom diversification: An alternative paradigm for research in educational productivity*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Texas, Austin.

Mathews, J. (2002, July 18). Teacher training: Too much or not enough? *Washington Post*. Retrieved July 20 from http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A41591-2002jul18.html

MacDonald, R., Manning, M. L., & Gable, R. (1994). An alternative certification program: Career transition. *Action in Teacher Education, 16*(2), 19-27.

McDiarmid, G.W., & Wilson, S. (1991). An exploration of the subject matter knowledge of alternative route teachers: Can we assume they know their subject? *Journal of Teacher Education, 42*(2), 93-103.

McKibbin, M. (1988). Alternative teacher certification programs. *Educational Leadership, 46*(3), 32-35.

McKibbin, M., & Ray, L. (1994). A guide for alternative certification program improvement. *The Educational Forum, 58*, 201-208.

Miles-Nixon, C., & Holloway, P. (1997). Alternative certification: The good, the bad and the ugly. *Delta Kappa Gamma Bulletin, 63*(4), 40-47.

Miller, J. W., McKenna, M. C., & McKenna, B. A. (1998). A comparison of alternatively and traditionally prepared teachers. *Journal of Teacher Education, 49*(3), 165-176.

Monk, D. (1994). Subject area preparation of secondary mathematics and science teachers and student achievement. *Economics of Educational Review, 12*(2), 125-142.

Monk, D., & King, J. (1994). Multi-level teacher resource effects on pupil performance in secondary mathematics and science. In R.G. Eherenberg (Ed.), *Choices and Consequences (pp. 29-58).* Ithaca, NY: ILR Press.

Murnane, R. J. (1983). Understanding the sources of teaching competence: Choices, skills and the limits of training. *Teachers College Record, 83*(3), 564-569.

Murnane, R. J. (1991). The case for performance based licensing. *Phi Delta Kappan, 73*(2), 137-142.

Mitchell, K. J., Robinson, D. Z., Plake, B. S., & Knowles K. T. (Eds). (2001). *Testing teacher candidates: The role of licensure tests in improving teacher quality.* National Research Council, Washington, D.C: National Academy Press.

Natriello, G., & Zumwalt, K. (1993). New teachers for urban schools? The contribution of the provisional teacher program in New Jersey. *Education and Urban Society, 26*(1), 49-62.

No Child Left Behind (NCLB). (2001). Conference report to accompany H.R. Rep. No. 107-334, 107th Cong., 1st sess. (2001).

Olson, L. (2000). Finding and keeping competent teachers. *Education Week, 19*(18), 12-18.

Pearce, K. (2000, August 18). Substitutes can teach without college degree. *The Arizona Republic*, pp. B1, B2.

Peck, H. (1989). *The effect of certification status on the performance of mathematics teachers: A pilot study.* Paper presented at the Annual Meeting of the American Educational Research Association, San Francisco, CA.

Pratte, R. & Rury, J. L. (1991). Teachers, professionalism, and craft. *Teachers College Record, 93*(1), 59-72.

Pyburn, K. (1990). Legal challenges to licensing examinations. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 9*(4), 5-6, 14.

Quality counts 2000: Who should teach? The states decide. (2000). *Education Week, 19*(18).

Quirk, T. J., Witten, B. J., & Weinberg, S. F. (1973). Review of studies of the concurrent and predictive validity of the National Teacher Examinations. *Review of Educational Research, 43*(1), 89-113.

Raymond, M., Fletcher, S., & Luque, J. (2001) *Teach For America: An evaluation of teacher differences and student outcomes in Houston, Texas.* Palo Alto, CA: CREDO, The Hoover Institution, Stanford University. Retrieved September 1, 2002 from http://www.rochester.edu/credo.

Rivkin, S. G., Hanushek, E. A., & Kain, J. F. (2000). *Teachers, schools and academic achievement.* Working Paper. Retrieved March 2001 from http://www.utdallas.edu/research/greenctr/Papers.

Roth, R. (1994). The university can't train teachers? Transformation of a profession. *Journal of Teacher Education,* *45*(4), 261-268.

Rowan, B., Correntti, R., & Miller, R. J. (in press). What large-scale, survey research tells us about teacher effects on student achievement: insights from the *Prospects* study of elementary schools. *Teachers College Record.*

Sanders, W. L. (1997). *Teacher and classroom context effects on student achievement: Implications for teacher evaluation.* Retrieved March 2001 from http://www.mdk12.org/practices/ensure/tva.

Sanders, W. L., & Rivers, J. C. (1996). *Cumulative and residual effects of teachers on future student academic achievement.* Knoxville, TN: University of Tennessee Value-Added Research and Assessment Center.

Schaeffer, B. (1996). *Standardized tests and teacher competence.* Fair Test. Retrieved January 2000 from http://www.fairtest.org/empl/ttcomp.html.

Schorr, J. (1993). Class Action. *Phi Delta Kappan, 7*(4), 315-318.

Schalock, D. (1979). Research on teacher selection. In D. C. Berliner (Ed.), *Review of research in education (Vol. 7).* Washington, D.C: American Educational Research Association.

Scores needed to pass Minnesota teacher tests among lowest in U. S. (2002, July 21). *Minneapolis Star Tribune.* Retrieved July 26, 2002 from http://www.startribune.com/stories/462/3090436.htm

Shimberg, B. (1990). Social considerations in the validation of licensing and certification exams. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 9*(4), 11-14.

Smith, I. L., & Hambleton, R. K. (1990). Content validity studies of licensing examinations. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 9*(4), 7-10.

Smith, J. (1991). The alternate route: Flaws in the New Jersey plan. *Educational Leadership, 49,* 32-36.

Soar, R. S., Medley, D. M., & Coker, H. (1983). Teacher evaluation: A critique of currently used methods. *Phi Delta Kappan, 64*(4), 239-246.

Sowell, T. (2002, July 31). Unsettling school data. Washington Times. Retrieved on August 2, 2002, from http://www.washingtontimes.com/commentary/20020731-87081079.htm

Stevens, C. J., & Dial, M. (1993). A qualitative study of alternatively certified teachers. *Education and Urban Society, 26*(1), 63-77.

Stoddart, T. (1992). Los Angeles Unified School District intern program: Recruiting and preparing teachers for the urban context. *Peabody Journal of Education, 26,* 29-48.

Stoddart, T. (1993). Who is prepared to teach in urban schools? *Education and Urban Society, 26*(1), 29-48.

Strauss, R. P., & Sawyer, E. A. (1986). Some new evidence on teacher and student competencies. *Economics of Education Review, 5*(1), 41-48.

Students of certified teachers more likely to pass skills test (1999, April 12). *Abilene Reporter.* Retrieved on July 26, 2002 from http://www.texnews.com/1998/1999/texas/test0412.html

Summers, A., & Wolfe, B. (1975). *Which school resources help learning? Efficiency and equity in Philadelphia public schools.* Business Review. Federal Bank of Philadelphia, PA.

U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics. (2001). *Education finance statistics center peer search detail.* Washington, DC: Author. Retrieved August 2001 from http://www.nces.ed.gov/edfin/search/.

U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics. (1999). (Lewis, L., Parsad, B., Carey, N., Bartfai, N., Farris, E., & Smerdon, B.) *Teacher quality: A report on the preparation of public school teachers.* Washington, DC: Author.

Wayne, A. (2000). Teacher supply and demand: Surprises from primary research. *Educational Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(47). Retrieved December 2000 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n47.html.

Wenglinsky, H. (2002). How schools matter: The link between teacher classroom practices and student academic performance. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(12). Retrieved March 2002 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n12

Wilson, S. M., Floden, R. E., & Ferrini-Mundy, J. (2002). Teacher preparation research: An insider's view from the outside. *Journal of Teacher Education*, 53(3), 190-204.

Wise, A. (1994a). The coming revolution in teacher licensure: Redefining teacher preparation. *Action in Teacher Education, 16*(2), 1-13.

Wise, A. (1994b). Choosing between professionalism and amateurism. *The Educational Forum, 58*, 139-146.

Wong, E. (2000, August 13). Poorest schools lack teachers and computers. *The New York Times*. Retrieved August, 2000, from http://www.nytimes.com/

Wyatt, E. (2000, July 14). Regents support plan to close some Roosevelt schools if standards are not met. *The New York Times*. Retrieved July, 2000 from http://www.nytimes.com/

Zumwalt, K. (1991). Alternative routes to teaching: Three alternative approaches. *Journal of Teacher Education, 42* (2), 83-92

Appendix

In HTML
In Excell Spreadsheet

About the Authors

Ildiko Laczko-Kerr
Arizona Department of Education
Phoenix, AZ

Ildiko Laczko-Kerr is an Education Research Associate in the Research and Policy Unit at the Arizona Department of Education. She received her Ph.D. in Educational Psychology in 2002 from the College of Education at Arizona State University. She holds a BA in Psychology and a MA in Educational Psychology from the University of Arizona. Her current research at the department of education involves working with state assessment data, the development and implementation of the state's achievement profiles, and research relating to Arizona's teaching force. She can be reached by email at ilaczko@ade.az.gov.

David C. Berliner
Regents' Professor of Education
College of Education
Arizona State University
Tempe, AZ 85287-2411

Email: berliner@asu.edu

David C. Berliner is Regents' Professor of Education at the College of Education of Arizona State University, in Tempe, AZ. He received his Ph.D. in 1968 from Stanford University in educational psychology, and has hled positions at the University of Massachusetts, WestEd, and the University of Arizona. He has served as president of the American Educational Research Association (AERA), president of the Division of Educational Psychology of the American Psychological Association (APA), and as a Fellow of the Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences. Berliner is a member of the National Academy of Education. His publications include *The Manufactured Crisis*, Addison-Wesley, 1995 (with B.J. Biddle) and the *Handbook of Educational Psychology*, Macmillan, 1996 (Edited with R.C. Calfee). Special awards include the Research into Practice Award and the lifetime achievement award from AERA, the E. L. Thorndike award from APA, and the 2003 Brock international award for educational achievements. His scholarly interests include research on teaching and education policy analysis.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

William McInerney
Purdue University

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 723 times since September 22, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 38 **September 22, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

District Fiscal Policy and Student Achievement: Evidence from Combined NAEP-CCD Data

Gary G. Huang
Binbing Yu

Synectics for Management Decisions, Inc.

Citation: Huang, G. & Yu, B. (2002, September 22). District fiscal policy and student achievement: Evidence from combined NAEP-CCD data, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(38). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n38/.

Abstract
School restructuring raises questions about the role of school districts in improving student learning. Centralization by state governments and decentralization to individual schools as proposed in systemic reform leave districts' role unsettled. Empirical research on the district role in the context of ongoing reform is inadequate. This analysis of combined data from the NAEP and the Common Core of Data (CCD) was intended to address the issue. We analyzed 1990, 1992, and 1996 NAEP 8th grade mathematics national assessment data in combination with CCD data of corresponding years to examine the extent to which student achievement was related to districts' control over instructional expenditure, adjusting for relevant key factors at both district and student levels. Upon sample modification, we used hierarchical linear modeling (HLM) to estimate the relationships of student achievement to two district fiscal policy indictors, current expenditure per pupil (CEPP) and districts' discretionary rates for instructional expenditure (DDR). Net of relevant district factors, DDR was found unrelated to districts' average 8th grade math performance. The null effect was consistent in the analysis of the combined NAEP-CCD data for 1990, 1992, and 1996. In contrast, CEPP was found related to higher math performance in a modest yet fairly consistent way. Future research may be productive to separately study individual states and integrate the findings onto the national level.

The role of the local school district is problematic in the on-going school restructuring that focuses on student learning. Centralization by state governments and decentralization to individual schools as proposed in systemic reform leaves districts' role unsettled (Elmore 1993). Research is needed to examine the impact of district policymaking on student learning. Such research entails linking standardized achievement measures at the student level to district-level policy information comparable across jurisdictions.

This study explored policy and methodological issues relevant to these concerns. We analyzed NAEP data in combination with the Common Core of Data (CCD) to examine the extent to which student achievement was related to districts' control over expenditure, adjusting for relevant key factors at both district and student levels.

Research Background

Education reformers face a dilemma in trying to redefine the local school district role in relation to state government. On the one hand, the local district, as an independent political entity for local control of public schools, is supposed to buffer the schools against external political influences. On the other hand, as a legal creation of the state, the district is expected to work as an instrument of state government and to implement state policies and regulations with minimal change. The notion of simultaneous decentralization and centralization gives states and individual schools more policymaking authority, but leaves the local districts in an ambiguous position (Hannaway 1992; Clune 1993; Keedy 1994; Marsh 1997). As the authority and responsibility of the state governments continue to expand in public education, districts' role as a governmental unit seems to be diminishing (e.g., see Walberg & Walberg 1994; Elmore 1993).

State governments are playing an increasingly important role in fiscal control and prescriptive policymaking in a wide range of areas that were historically the domains of local district decisionmaking. States are contributing a large and growing share to local school revenue, specifying requirements on staffing and instruction (General Accounting Office 1998). State aid formulas have often incorporated specific mechanisms for district inefficiency control, linking spending to performance (Duncombe & Yinger 1998; Marsh 1997). Frequently, state governments threaten to and occasionally do take over local schools when persistent failure by local administration is confirmed (e.g., Iannaccone & Lutz 1994; Guskey 1993).

The districts' power is also threatened by decentralization in forms of site-based management and the school as a professional community (Marsh 1997; Elmore 1993; Clune 1993; Porter 1994; Newmann & Wahlage 1995). State education departments now often select individual schools as administrative units for deregulation and interact directly with them to encourage local initiatives (Fuhrman & Elmore 1995). Local schools are expanding their options in mobilizing community support, making innovations in instruction and curriculum, and making decisions on spending and staffing (Elmore 1993; Hannaway 1993). Research appears to support such restructuring as recent studies focus on school-level professional autonomy and its link to authentic instruction and achievement outcomes (e.g., Lee, Smith & Croninger 1995; Newmann & Wahlage 1995). One implication is that decentralization is reducing bureaucratic influence—including district influence—in local school decisionmaking.

The 16,000 local districts in the U.S. are, however, more than a historical heritage. National data reports describe local districts as solid administrative units with diverse conditions (e.g., Levine & Christenson 1998; Protheroe 1997). The question for reformers is how to adjust the system to the changing environment, since the underlying logic of American federalism requires multiple jurisdictions that compromise different interests and generate productive tension and dependence among jurisdictions (Elmore 1993). Available research suggests that it is possible for local districts to push reform further by building up strong local constituencies and developing policy initiatives (Fuhrman & Elmore 1990; Admundson 1993). This research, however, has been conducted largely with local or state information sources and has rarely used national data. To conduct research at national scale requires nationwide data on both student achievement and local fiscal conditions. Synthetic analysis of the National Assessment of Educational Progress (NAEP) and the Common Core of Data (CCD), explored in this study, seems an efficient approach to this goal.

Conceptual Framework

Our basic assumption is that although state governments are constitutionally responsible for public education, local districts have an important role in improving instruction. An approach districts take in playing that role is to adjust fiscal policy to increase the proportion of expenditure for instruction above the state average.

Instructional expenditure as a district policy

School districts differ in instructional expenditure. A recent study used the Bureau of the Census Annual Survey of Local Government data from 1980 to 1994 to calculate multiple indicators of cross-district disparity in instructional expenditure (Hussar & Sonnenburg 1999). This study found that while disparity in instructional expenditures across districts seemed to decline in many states, disparity measures and the pattern of decline varied substantially. Furthermore, in a fairly large number of states, the disparity measures were inconsistent, and, in a small number of states, disparity increased over the same period of time. While these disparity measures may imply inequity they also reflect local fiscal policy differences because instructional expenditures, relative to current expenditures, are more subject to government control (Hussar & Sonnenburg 1999).

Research is unsettled about the relationship between school expenditure and student achievement (for reviews and debates, see Conn 1995; Lockwood 1994; Hanushek 1994, 1996; Hedges & Greenwald 1996; Hough 1993). An emerging consensus, however, is that overall funding and per-pupil expenditure may be overly simplistic as a predictor of learning outcomes, since schooling is conditioned by complicated factors of administration, family, and community (e.g., Wainer 1993; Hough 1993). While recent research has provided some evidence supporting the view that increased funding relates to better performance (e.g., Payne & Biddle 1999; Wenglinsky 1997), whether overall revenue or average per-pupil expenditure substantially affects academic outcomes remains controversial (e.g., Hanushek 1996; Hedges & Greenwald 1996). Research needs to relate performance outcomes to variations in resource allocation in general and teaching resources devoted to specific program areas in particular (Brent, Roellke & Monk

1997; Monk & Hussain 2000). How the money is spent may be crucial to improving achievement (Childs & Shakeshaft 1986; Conn 1995). Research examining the impact of public school spending, particularly spending for disadvantaged schools, suggests that learning can be improved if investment targets improving teacher quality (e.g., Kazal-Thresher 1993; Ferguson 1991), core curriculum, and standardized achievement (e.g., Lockwood 1994).

Policy analyses in systemic reform highlight the importance of fiscal control as an incentive/sanction mechanism directly linking to academic performance (Lockwood 1994; Elmore 1994). Under this mechanism, schools and teachers are encouraged to develop pedagogical initiatives for reaching high-standard curricular goals and are held accountable for improving student performance. In this line of thinking, the amount of money spent directly on improving instruction/learning *relative* to the amount spent on administrative operations and support services should be a crucial determinant of achievement outcomes (Childs & Shakeshaft 1986; Elmore 1993). On the other hand, current expenditure per pupil (CEPP), which covers spending on broad and immediate local needs, to some extent indicates local initiatives and priorities in fiscal control. Encompassing obligatory capital outlay and district discretionary spending, CEPP may also be a valid predictor of student achievement.

In this study, we ask how districts change state prescribed patterns of expenditure and how such changes relate to academic achievement. The departure of a district's proportional spending on instruction from the state baseline proportion may imply local autonomy in fiscal policy, which has been advocated as a fundamental mechanism for maintaining local stake and accountability (Murphy 1994; Strang 1987). Conceptualizing fiscal control as an essential element of local autonomy, we attempted to pinpoint a key issue in redefining the district role. We hypothesized that, other conditions being equal, a higher district instructional spending rate relative to the state average is associated with higher district average math achievement. In addition, we also examined CEPP, a more generic indicator of local financial control, by assessing its relationship to student performance.

Factors related to district spending

Communities are often constrained from spending more on instruction by local conditions. For example, poor communities have to spend more on basic social services, and sparsely populated areas must pay more for transportation. A large state contribution to district revenue probably constrains local discretion. The larger the share of the state contribution, the more likely the recipient districts fund instruction at a level close to the state baseline. Local cost of living is another factor that needs to be considered when examining school resources as it obviously affects the spending for teacher hiring and instruction.

The power of districts varies depending on local socioeconomic conditions, enrollment size, and geographic locale. Local socioeconomic conditions as a determinant of local autonomy may alter the intended consequence of district policy. Wealthy districts with their well educated populations and organized political support may push reform farther and benefit more from focusing on instruction and learning (Elmore 1993). In contrast, poor districts with populations of low education and income but high mobility often cannot come up with powerful political support for reform. Increasing spending on instruction may compromise desperately needed social services and ultimately undermine student learning. The influence of district policy probably also varies across urban-rural areas. Traditionally, rural residents are demographically homogeneous within communities but diverse across communities (Nachtigal 1982), have strong ties to local schools, and are skeptical about external governance (DeYoung 1990). Within different sociodemographic contexts, districts' investment in instruction may result in quite different achievement outcomes.

Prior studies have explored school funding in connection to standard achievement by synthetic analyses of data from CCD and NAEP (Wenglinsky 1997, 1998) or international standardized tests (Payne & Biddle 1999). In particular, Wenglinsky (1997) aggregated achievement measures to the district level and used both school-level and district-level variables to predict achievement. Taking the district as the unit of analysis, single-level analyses of aggregated performance show that average performance is positively associated with school resources. While such aggregated studies deal with the broad issues linking school resources to performance, they were not meant to and did not address specific questions concerning *district* fiscal policy in relation to individual student achievement. Furthermore, there are methodological problems in converting NAPE's multi-level stratified sample design into a single-level district sample design. The district sample resulting from attaching aggregated NAEP performance data to CCD district records does not necessarily represent the national population of school districts.

In a second study, Wenglinsky used a hierarchical linear model (HLM) technique to analyze merged 1992 NAEP and CCD data on 12th grade mathematics (Wenglinsky 1998). Again, this analysis did not focus on district fiscal control. It addressed the broad concern of school resources in connection to social distribution of academic achievement. Further, the study did not distinguish district and school spending measures in the analysis. It did not deal with the methodological difficulty stemming from the data merge, namely, the possible unreliability of the estimates resulting from the merged data. (Note 1) Our study was designed to continue this line of research by synthesizing national data on student achievement and district spending, using sampling adjustment procedures and the technique of two-level hierarchical linear modeling.

Research questions

The first question in our study was whether or not student achievement varies across districts. The answer to this question sets the basis for addressing the substantive concern of district-level effect and for statistical testing of two-level models. The second question was how student achievement relates to district instructional spending—and CEPP. As the central issue in this analysis, we asked how district mean achievement related to district fiscal policy, adjusting for other variables at the district level and sociodemographics at the student level. District fiscal policy was indicated by two variables, CEPP and District Discretionary Rate of instructional spending. The latter was simply the difference of the district instructional spending rate from the state instructional spending rate. Compatible to the concept underlying such disparity measures as the coefficient of variation and the Gini coefficient (see Hussar & Sonnenberg 1999), DDR should make it straightforward to interpret the HLM estimates of the district fiscal policy effect.

The third question was: to what extent did DDR and CEPP, together with other district factors, account for the achievement outcome variance after adjusting for relevant district-level factors (e.g., enrollment size, state contributed share to district revenue, minority rate, poverty rate, geographic locale). In addition, we examined the possible interaction effects of DDR with three district conditions: the proportion of district revenue that came from the state, the average socioeconomic status (SES), and urban-rural locale. This would allow us to ask whether DDR had different effects on achievement under different conditions.

A final question about the achievement gaps: did higher district instructional spending help reduce math achievement gaps associated with race and SES? In other words, did increased instruction spending above the state average not only work to promote academic excellence, but also equity?

Data Sources and Methodology

For this study, we combined data from NAEP 1990, 1992, and 1996 National Comparison Grade 8 Files and the Common Core of Data (CCD) in school years 1989—90, 1991—92, and 1995—96. As the most comprehensive and reliable national data source on academic achievement, the NAEP math tests in these three years shared a framework supported by the National Council of Teachers of Mathematics (Reese, Miller, Mazzeo & Dossey 1997).

CCD, covering the universe of U.S. public school districts, provides district-level itemized revenue/expenditures on an annual basis (National Center for Education Statistics 1995). It also contains a state file that gives spending data at the state level, which can be used to compute DDR. CCD offers information for examining district fiscal policies, including core expenditures per pupil, current expenditures per pupil, total expenditures per pupil, percent of total instruction expenditures, and percent of total salary expenditures, as well as related state spending measures. Additionally information on local sociodemographic conditions is available, including extensive 1990 Census data that were incorporated into district records. A linkage file is available for linking NAEP national and state assessments files with CCD data for the years between 1990 and 1998 (Westat 1998).

File Merge

First, we extracted data from the 1990, 1992, and 1996 NAEP National Comparison of math in 8th grade and CCD district files for school years 1989—90, 1991—92, and 1995—96. Using district identification code in both the NAEP and CCD files, we merged the two datasets for these years. With assistance from Westat and ETS, the three years' data were matched reasonably well. Most districts contained adequate numbers of students for two-level analysis (see Table 1).

Table 1
Sample size at district and within-district levels:
Combined NAEP-CCD data (1990, 1992, and 1996, unweighted)

Year	District sample size	Mean within-district student sample size	Standard deviation	Minimum	Maximum
1990	144	43.2	23.2	[1]2.0	157.0
1992	177	45.2	27.1	[2]1.0	185.0
1996	160	34.9	18.6	10.0	113.0

[1] For the 1990 data one district (LEAID 3701530) had two cases and was excluded from the analysis.

[2] For the 1992 data two districts (with LEAIDs 5304920 and 1713970) had fewer than three cases and were excluded from the HLM analysis.

The resulting files contain NAEP 8th grader records, with affiliated district variables attached. Additionally, district-level cross-product terms were constructed to represent the interaction effects of DDR and the child poverty rate, DDR and urban locale, and DDR and the percentage of district revenue from the state (see Tables 2.1—2.3 for unweighted descriptive statistics at the two levels).

Table 2-1
Descriptive statistics at student- and district-levels: 1996 NAEP-CCD data

Student Level 1						
Variable name	Variable label	N	Mean	SD	Minimum	Maximum
DSEX	Student sex	5,590	1.50	0.50	1.00	2.00
MRPCM1	Plausible value 1	5,590	268.97	36.46	127.98	388.50
MRPCM2	Plausible value 2	5,590	269.17	36.03	120.35	393.46
MRPCM3	Plausible value 3	5,590	268.87	36.52	124.06	384.47
MRPCM4	Plausible value 4	5,590	268.89	36.01	138.54	378.93
MRPCM5	Plausible value 5	5,590	269.14	35.87	121.28	381.77
MINORITY	Non-Asian minorities	5,590	0.33	0.47	0.00	1.00
PARHI_ED	Parent education	5,590	0.58	0.49	0.00	1.00
District level 2						
ASIER	Average state instruction expenditure rate	160	60.99	6.48	50.08	77.85
DDR	District Discretionary instruction spending Rate	160	-0.24	6.78	-24.99	17.35
URBAN2	Urban district	160	0.27	0.43	0.00	1.00
RURAL	Rural district	160	0.21	0.41	0.00	1.00
ENROLL_K	District total enrollment in thousand	160	41.84	110.32	0.14	1,049.04
BLACK_P	Black student rate	160	19.00	24.75	0.00	99.00
P7118TP	District poverty rate	160	17.01	11.19	0.00	58.50
PC30ETP	District at-risk student rate	160	3.68	3.40	0.00	15.80
C_STREVP	District revenue percentage from state	160	47.61	18.96	1.80	78.90
CURPPE_K	Current per pupil expenditure in $K	160	5.36	1.43	3.38	11.27
LEV2WT	District weight	160	1.00	1.37	0.06	10.29
DDR_RUL	Interaction DDR by rural	160	-1.11	4.18	-24.99	6.35
DDR_URB	Interaction DDR by urban	160	0.40	2.94	-18.96	13.44
DDR_STP	Interaction DDR by revenue percentage from state	160	-27.66	355.46	-1404.46	921.62
DDR_SES	Interaction DDR by poverty rate	160	-20.10	153.74	-753.19	529.19
DDR_RSK	Interaction DDR by at-risk student rate	160	-2.16	35.07	-189.98	112.78

Table 2-2
Descriptive statistics of at student- and district-levels: 1992 NAEP-CCD data

Student level 1						
Variable name	Variable label	N	Mean	SD	Minimum	Maximum
DSEX	Student sex	8,014	1.48	0.50	1.00	2.00
MRPCM1	Plausible value 1	8,014	258.94	37.53	130.75	372.33
MRPCM2	Plausible value 2	8,014	259.07	37.93	127.82	380.17
MRPCM3	Plausible value 3	8,014	259.29	37.91	110.48	389.45
MRPCM4	Plausible value 4	8,014	259.33	37.65	126.88	380.38
MRPCM5	Plausible value 5	8,014	259.30	37.74	123.39	389.55

MINORITY	Non-Asian minorities	8,014	0.36	0.48	0.00	1.00
PARHI_ED	Parent education	8,014	0.54	0.50	0.00	1.00
District level 2						
ASIER	Average state instruction expenditure rate	177	60.73	6.69	50.08	77.85
DDR	District Discretionary instruction spending Rate	177	0.31	5.20	-13.54	16.26
URBAN2	Urban district	177	0.30	0.45	0.00	1.00
RURAL	Rural district	177	0.15	0.35	0.00	1.00
ENROLL_K	District total enrollment in thousand	177	43.93	98.04	0.17	962.27
BLACK_P	Black student rate	177	15.82	24.58	0.00	99.00
P7118TP	District poverty rate	177	15.94	11.57	0.30	68.70
PC30ETP	District at-risk student rate	177	4.03	4.09	0.00	23.60
C_STREVP	District revenue percentage from state	177	42.40	20.98	0.00	84.60
CURPPE_K	Current per pupil expenditure in $K	177	4.92	1.34	2.98	10.07
LEV2WT	District weight	177	1.00	1.27	0.06	8.55
DDR_RUL	Interaction DDR by rural	177	-0.59	2.40	-13.54	6.42
DDR_URB	Interaction DDR by urban	177	0.38	2.59	-11.16	16.26
DDR_STP	Interaction DDR by revenue percentage from state	177	5.36	266.05	-1063.18	757.29
DDR_SES	Interaction DDR by poverty rate	177	-3.26	100.04	-472.35	306.73
DDR_RSK	Interaction DDR by at-risk student rate	177	-0.05	27.16	-162.26	98.59

Table 2-3
Descriptive statistics at student- and district-levels: 1990 NAEP-CCD data

Student level 1						
Variable name	Variable label	N	Mean	SD	Minimum	Maximum
DSEX	Student sex	6,213	1.48	0.50	1.00	2.00
MRPCM1	Plausible value 1	6,213	256.24	33.43	149.28	370.23
MRPCM2	Plausible value 2	6,213	256.28	33.21	138.77	375.86
MRPCM3	Plausible value 3	6,213	256.61	33.11	159.70	367.46
MRPCM4	Plausible value 4	6,213	256.14	33.44	139.74	377.80
MRPCM5	Plausible value 5	6,213	256.32	33.17	145.25	352.46
MINORITY	Non-Asian minorities	6,213	0.32	0.47	0.00	1.00
PARHI_ED	Parent education	6,213	0.52	0.50	0.00	1.00
District Level 2						
ASIER	Average state instruction expenditure rate	143	59.61	5.71	49.16	76.82
DDR	District Discretionary instruction spending Rate	143	0.19	7.59	-20.70	22.36
URBAN2	Urban district	143	0.26	0.44	0.00	1.00
RURAL	Rural district	143	0.37	0.48	0.00	1.00
ENROLL_K	District total enrollment in thousand	143	37.28	103.39	0.09	918.01
BLACK_P	Black student rate	143	14.92	20.48	0.00	93.00

P7118TP	District poverty rate	143	19.55	12.35	1.00	60.40
PC30ETP	District at-risk student rate	143	4.50	4.55	0.00	25.30
C_STREVP	District revenue percentage from state	143	48.43	18.39	1.60	82.40
CURPPE_K	Current per pupil expenditure in $K	143	4.31	1.15	2.41	8.69
LEV2WT	District weight	143	0.99	1.71	0.01	8.44
DDR_RUL	Interaction DDR by rural	143	-1.17	4.42	-20.70	9.21
DDR_URB	Interaction DDR by urban	143	0.85	3.10	-7.24	15.37
DDR_STP	Interaction DDR by revenue percentage from state	143	10.84	392.55	-1,340.28	1,551.92
DDR_SES	Interaction DDR by poverty rate	143	2.70	169.59	-494.14	673.09
DDR_RSK	Interaction DDR by at-risk student rate	143	3.01	40.59	-142.15	153.75

Sample Modification and Overall Weight

The resulting student subsamples within districts might not have been reliable in presenting the student populations of the given districts, because schools, not districts, were a sampling stage in the original NAEP design. Therefore, we reweighted and poststratified the data to improve its statistical reliability. The purpose was to shift the sampling stage from the school to the district in order to examine differences across groups of students who were hypothetically influenced by local districts' instructional.

The modification of the NAEP school-student sample into a district-student sample entailed reweighting the original sample and establishing the formal statistical status of the district-student sample. Within a sampled PSU, the NAEP school sample via "post-allocation" *induced* a district sample that included districts with which the sample schools were affiliated. With modification the representativeness of the school sample to PSUs would lead to the representativeness of the district sample to PSUs. The procedure is highlighted below; see Appendix I for details.

Student sample weighting

We assigned weights to each sample district within a PSU according to the district's *post-inclusion* probability, which was defined as the inclusion probability of the union of sample schools in the district. The calculation of this probability is described in Appendix I. The post-inclusion probabilities were used as a reference scale for assigning the district weights. The weight assigned to a sample district was proportionate to the reciprocal of its post-inclusion probability.

The students within a district were weighted by the reciprocal of the student sampling rate within the district. To calculate the weight we used the student population size of the sample district at a given grade. The CCD school file provided student enrollment size for each grade of the school, which was aggregated to the district level. We made a ratio adjustment (Deville & Sarndal 1992; Deville, Sarndal & Sautory 1993; Little 1993) of the student weights within the districts via poststratification according to important geographic/demographic features. We used this procedure to improve the representativeness of the student samples within districts to the district student populations.

The PSU weights remained intact. The obtained student weights were further adjusted at the national level in the same way as the poststratification conducted for the 1992 NAEP (see Wallace & Rust 1994, section 5.1.4). The resulting student sample preserved the goal of the original NAEP sampling design; namely, the targeted number of students at the given grades for the assessment were selected at a uniform probability nationwide (Wallace and Rust 1994, chapter 2).

District sample weighting

Multilevel linear modeling requires the use of level-2 unit (district) weights in analysis to assure that the level-2 sample represents the specified population (Bryk & Raudenbush 1992). We weighted the district sample to make it represent the national district population using the national district population information from CCD. To improve the representativeness of the district sample calibration (ratio adjustment), poststratification was carried out along race and Census region. These demographic and geographic characteristics were selected after a comparison of the sample and population distributions of those characteristics (Deville, Sarndal & Sautory 1993; Little 1993) (see Appendix II for the modified sampling distribution of race and Census region).

Analytical Approach

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Before data analysis, we edited the data, examined missing data patterns, and constructed indicators to represent concepts to be analyzed (see Tables 2.1—2.3 for descriptive statistics of the variables at the student- and district levels).

Expenditure measures

District instructional spending measures and other fiscal variables were made comparable across locations by adjusting for local cost of living and inflation. We used the Teacher Cost Index (TCI) for states and districts available from NCES for the adjustment (National Center for Education Statistics 1995; also see Fowler & Monk 2001). TCI, an index of costs for hiring teachers, was developed through a regression analysis that estimated the effects of multiple factors, including the cost of living and quality of life for each state and district. The TCI score for states were centered by the national average of 100 (National Center for Education Statistics 1995).

We multiplied each state's total capital outlay per pupil by the TCI score for the given state and each district's by the district's TCI. Instructional expenditure rates at both district and state were calculated by dividing instructional expenditure per pupil with the adjusted total capital outlay per pupil. The resulting district rate was centered around the given state rate to generate the DDR in instructional expenditure. This TCI adjustment did not change the values of DDRs within a state, but it adjusted the difference in DDR for districts in different states.

Rescaling data

We recoded student race/ethnicity into a binary variable (White/Asian vs. minorities) and parent's education into two binary variables (with some postsecondary education vs. without). All per-pupil total expenditure measures were rescaled in thousands of dollars, total expenditure in millions of dollars, and total enrollment in thousands of students. In HLM modeling, each of the district-level variables was further centered around the grand mean, whereas each student variable was centered around the district mean.

Missing data

We examined nonresponse patterns to assure there were no systematic missing data to bias statistics. Approximately 12 percent of the 1992 NAEP student records and 3 percent of the 1996 records had missing data on one or more district variables due to unmatched records. There were no such missing data for 1990. We flagged the cases that had no district fiscal data in each file with a single missing indicator. One indicator was sufficient because missing data occurred quite consistently for most of the district fiscal measures. We then imputed data with grand mean on each missing variable and examined the missingness in a series of single-level regular regression analyses that included all the predictor variables of math achievement (for rationale see Cohen & Huang 2000; Little & Rubin 1986). We found that the missing data were largely random as the regression coefficient for the missing flag was not statistically significant in the three years. Thus, in the HLM analysis, we simply used the mean-imputed values for the missing data without using the missing flag.

Two-level hierarchical modeling

After reweighting the samples, we conducted univariate and bivariate analyses to examine data quality. Single-level multiple regression analyses were run with conceptually important variables to explore the general pattern of relationships between district variables and math achievement. We also examined the data to make sure that no obvious anomalies existed.

The central research question was whether student achievement was related to district discretionary rates in instructional spending (DDR). To address this question with data for each specified year, the two-level modeling took the math composite plausible values as the independent variables and DDRs as the predictor variables controlling for district- and student-level variables. See appendix III for a formal discussion of the HLM procedure. We used software package HLM Windows 5.03, which has a component to run the repeated procedure with multiple plausible values and to average the estimated coefficients (see Bryk, Raudenbush & Congdon 1996).

We conducted the two-level analysis in four steps. First, we examine the extent to which achievement varied across districts and the proportion of variability attributed to student effects and to district effects. With a *one-way random effects ANOVA model*, we separated the total variance of math achievement into between- and within-district components. By assessing the intraclass correlation and reliability of district means, we determined that district-level variance was substantial and statistically significant for further modeling.

Second, we estimated the relationships of a district's average math score to DDR and CEPP, adjusting for the effects of total enrollment size, minority student rate, poverty rate, state contribution to the district revenue, and geographic locale. With a *random-interception model*, we examined the extent to which district average achievement related to DDR and CEPP, controlling for the district-level variables specified above.

Next, we explored the interaction effects between DDR and district factors that might have potential combined effect on achievement. We asked of the DDR effect on achievement differentiated by some district characteristics. For example, DDR was probably more influential to achievement in disadvantaged districts; or, DDR might affect achievement in districts that relied more on local revenue than on state contributions. We specifically estimated the effect of the cross-product terms of DDR and poverty, DDR and rural-urban locale, and DDR and the state share in district's revenue.

Finally, we tested three important student-level variables—sex, SES, and minority status—in a *random coefficient regression model*. We assess the extent to which these three individual effects varied between districts. Given that these gaps did vary across districts, we then tested full models that included these student variables. The full model accounted for both district average achievement and district achievement gaps. We first determine whether DDR related to district average math score, adjusting for both district- and student-level variables. Then, we asked whether achievement gaps due to sociodemographic backgrounds related to DDR (or, whether DDR helped reduce math achievement gaps).

Including student variables in the model was also methodologically important. Students were not randomly associated with districts; the district-level estimates might be biased if we did not control for student background effects. Second, sex, SES, and minority status at student level were established background factors that strongly related to achievement. Controlling for these variables could reduce unexplained level-1 error and thus improve the precision of the estimates of district spending rates as well as the power of hypothesis tests (Bryk & Raudenbush 1992).

Problems and limitations

It is typically more difficult to model slopes than means with HLM techniques. Prior analyses of the NAEP data have reported unreliable estimation with slope equations (for example, Arnold 1995). While concentrated in intercept models, we did test slope models with limited number of variables at the two levels. The resulting slope estimates were considerably less reliable than those of intercept models.

Findings

Data across the three years appeared reasonably compatible in univariate statistics. At the student level, sex (with male coded 1 female coded 2) and minority (with the Asian and White coded zero, all the other groups coded 1) distributions were quite steady with data of the three years. Parents' educational levels seemed slightly rising. The rate of sample students whose parents had at least some college education was 52 percent in 1990, 54 percent in 1992, and 58 percent in 1996. The NAEP math achievement on average was higher in 1996 than in the other two years (approximately 268 in 1996, 259 in 1992, and 256 in 1990) with compatible standard deviations and ranges (see Tables 2-1 to 2-3).

At the district level, the descriptive statistics were reasonably compatible across years as well. The average state instructional spending rate (ASIER) barely differed over the years, ranging from 59.61 to 60.99 percent. DDR averaged very close to zero because by definition the scores were centered by the state average. This measure's standard deviation was similar across years though the range shifted slightly. CEPP on average rose from $4,310 in 1990 to $5,360 in 1996. The average proportion of district revenue that came from the state (C_STREVP) also seemed acceptable, with estimates ranging from 42.40 percent in 1992 to 48.43 percent in 1990. These sample estimates from the NAEP-CCD combined data were quite consistent with the released national statistics (e.g., National Center for Education Statistics 1996). Likewise, district level demographic statistics (total enrollment, Black student rate, poverty rate, and at-risk student rate) appeared reasonable for the three years. Tables 2.1—2.3 also present descriptive statistics for the interaction terms between DDR and district demographic variables.

A possible anomaly was with the geographic locale. While the rate of urban districts ranged 26 to 30 percent for the years—again reasonable estimates—the rate of rural districts shifted somewhat excessively from 15 percent in 1996 to 37 percent in 1990. This problem could be indicative of the unreliability of the merged NAEP and CCD data.

Bivariate Statistics

A number of patterns revealed in the bivariate correlation analysis must be noted. First, fiscal measures at district level were correlated, often in large magnitude. The total expenditure and current expenditure, for example, had a correlation coefficient around 0.98 in all three years (the full matrix of the correlation coefficients is available upon request to the first author). Per pupil spending items (for example, CEPP, per pupil total expenditure, and per pupil instruction expenditure) were correlated to each other. These measures were substantially correlated with the total expenditure measures, albeit to a moderate extent. Expenditure measures were also closely related to enrollment size. Table 3 shows the estimates of bivariate correlation among the selected district-level variables.

Note that even in this selected group, there were pairs of variables that were well correlated. Proportion of district revenue from the state was strongly associated with CEPP (0.68 in 1996, 0.70 in 1992, and 0.66 in 1990). Poverty rate and at-risk student rate were also strongly related (0.62, 0.75, and 0.40, respectively, for the three years). We excluded at-risk student rate from the equation because it presumably overlapped with poverty rate to indicate the disadvantaged condition of a district, yet its range was smaller than the poverty rate. For similar reasons, we dropped rural locale and retained urban locale to make the model parsimonious. (Note 2)

The high multicollinearity required model specification with high selectivity of independent variables at the district level such that the included variables were not highly correlated to each other and adequately represented our conceptual model. After testing OLS regression analyses with SAS and an initial run of two-level models with HLM, we decided to specify in the final model the following independent variables at the district level:

- District discretionary rate in instructional spending,
- State average instructional spending rate,
- CEPP (in thousands of dollars),
- Proportion of revenue from the state,
- Total enrollment (in thousands of students),
- Black student enrollment rate,
- Child poverty rate, and
- Urban locale (in contrast with suburban).

Table 3
Correlation coefficients of the selected district level variables: NEAP-CCD district level data 1996 1992 and 1990 (weighted with district weight)

1996 (N=160)	State average instruction spending rate	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
DDS (1)	*-0.19								
Total enrollment (thousand) (2)	-0.05	*0.26							
Black student rate (3)	*-0.30	0.03	0.15						
Current expenditure per pupil in $k (4)	*0.68	-0.12	-0.03	-0.15					
Poverty rate (5)	*-0.28	*-0.22	0.00	0.15	-0.11				
At-risk student rate (6)	*-0.34	0.02	0.05	*0.28	-0.14	*0.62			
Percent of revenue from state (7)	*-0.29	*-0.19	-0.14	0.07	*-0.24	0.12	0.08		
Urban district (8)	-0.06	*0.22	*0.24	*0.23	0.02	0.02	*0.18	-0.10	
Rural district (9)	0.04	*-0.50	-0.16	*-0.18	-0.08	0.10	-0.16	*0.29	*-0.31
1992 (N=177)									
DDS (1)	*0.16								
Total enrollment (thousand) (2)	-0.03	*0.18							
Black student rate (3)	0.07	0.08	-0.10						
Current expenditure per pupil in $k (4)	*0.70	-0.01	-0.06	-0.02					
Poverty rate (5)	*-0.30	*-0.28	-0.07	-0.10	*-0.20				
At-risk student rate (6)	*-0.31	-0.13	-0.10	-0.12	*-0.21	0.75			
Percent of revenue from state (7)	*-0.27	*-0.18	0.06	-0.14	*-0.40	*0.35	*0.38		
Urban district (8)	0.00	0.11	*0.32	*-0.19	-0.04	*0.16	0.10	0.08	
Rural district (9)	*-0.28	*-0.47	-0.11	-0.02	*-0.17	*0.16	0.09	0.13	*-0.22
1990 (N=143)									
DDS (1)	*-0.34								
Total enrollment (thousand) (2)	0.00	0.14							
Black student rate (3)	*-0.24	*0.27	0.14						
Current expenditure per pupil in $k (4)	*0.66	*-0.25	0.03	*-0.20					
Poverty rate (5)	*-0.43	0.03	0.02	*0.32	*-0.29				
At-risk student rate (6)	*-0.29	0.11	0.08	0.55*	*-0.30	*0.40			
Percent of revenue from state (7)	-0.12	0.09	-0.04	0.12	-0.05	*0.31	0.01		
Urban district (8)	-0.01	0.12	*0.34	0.14	0.08	0.02	0.08	-0.13	
Rural district (9)	*-0.24	-0.15	-0.13	0.05	*-0.17	*0.41	*0.17	*0.32	*-0.21

* $p < 0.05$

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

HLM Modeling Results

Unconditional models were tested with each year's data. Without any independent variables, the models separately estimated the variance of the student math achievement at individual and district levels. Table 4 presents the estimates of the unconditional models. For each year, a substantial proportion of variance occurred at the district level, meaning that districts differed in their average math achievement. For 1996, 26 percent of the variance was at the district level, as indicated by the intraclass correlation coefficient. A chi-square statistic of 2401 with 159 degrees of freedom was highly significant for the district variance estimate. The reliability of school means (0.71) was also acceptable for further HLM analysis, as these sampled school means on average represented the true school means reasonably well. (Note 3) The two-level variance distribution pattern was similar in the 1992 and 1990 data. These statistics strongly suggested that HLM modeling with random effect at the both levels was necessary for analyzing student achievement in relation to district fiscal variables.

Table 4
Distribution of variance at the student and district levels: Unconditional models with the 1996, 1992, and 1990 NAEP-CCD data

Estimates	1996 NAEP-CCD	1992 NAEP-CCD	1990 NAEP-CCD
Fixed effect			
Coefficient	270.06	260.39	256.29
Average district mean γ_{00}	(1.47)	(1.66)	(1.65)
(standard error)			
Random effect			
District level variance u_{0j}	245.00	373.39	262.38
df	159	176	143
chi-square	2401.18	2950.85	2950.49
p value	0.000	0.000	0.000
Student level variance component r_{ij}	975.56	1160.06	681.59
Intraclass correlation rho	0.20	0.24	0.28
Reliability of the district mean λ_j	0.71	0.78	0.71

District average math achievement in relation to DDR

Using district variables to explain district average math achievement, we tested a series of means-as-outcomes models. At each level, the model specified a random effect. Fixed effects, however, were only specified at the district level, including state average instructional spending rate, DDR, total enrollment in thousands of students, Black student enrollment rate, CEPP in $1000, child poverty rate, at-risk student rate, urban and rural locale (both coded in contrast to suburban), and percent of revenue from the state. The resulting estimates are presented in Table 5.1.

Entering district-level independent variables in the model helped account for approximately a half of the district-level variance (49 percent in 1996, 62 percent in 1992, and 53 percent in 1990). Controlling for other variables, several district variables were found related to district average math achievement in one or more years. District total enrollment was related to low average math achievement in 1992, but not in 1990 and 1996. The minority enrollment rate was strongly related to low average achievement in all three years, with high statistical significance. The child poverty rate was related to low achievement mean, with a significant estimate for each year. These findings were compatible with prior research in school organization and achievement.

The effect of DDR was not substantiated with data for the three years. Net of the effects of other district variables, DDR was not statistically significantly related to district mean math achievement in any year. The estimate in the three years was essentially zero since it was trivial in size and not statistically significant. CEPP, on the other hand, was related to high average achievement, although the estimate for 1992 was not statistically significant (see Table 5).

With the NAEP-CCD combined data for the three years, we failed to find evidence to support our central hypothesis that high district instructional spending relative to the state average would increase district average performance level, holding other things constant.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Table 5
District average achievement and DDR and other district level variables: Means-as-outcomes model (standard error in parentheses)

Estimates	1996[a] NAEP-CCD	1992 NAEP-CCD	1990 NAEP-CCD
Fixed effects			
District mean γ_{00}	268.53 (1.18)	259.23 (1.19)	254.86 (1.28)
State average instructional spending rate γ_{01}	-0.21 (0.24)	-0.19 (0.28)	-0.64 (0.31)
District discretionary rate of instructional spending (DDR) γ_{02}	-0.21 (0.17)	0.42 (0.26)	-0.20 (0.16)
Total enrollment in thousands γ_{03}	-0.01 (0.02)	*-0.03 (0.01)	-0.01 (0.01)
Minority enrollment rate γ_{04}	**-0.45 (0.06)	**-0.54 (0.07)	**-0.36 (0.09)
CEPP $1000 γ_{05}	**2.74 (1.06)	1.49 (1.13)	**4.16 (1.59)
Child poverty rate γ_{07}	*-0.21 (0.11)	*-0.32 (0.14)	**-0.59 (0.13)
Urban district γ_{08}	-0.82 (3.82)	-1.27 (3.01)	1.10 (3.50)
State revenue percentage γ_{010}	-0.03 (0.05)	*-0.16 (0.06)	-0.09 (0.06)
Random effects District mean u0j	125.21	150.41	121.57
chi-square	1303.42	1288.03	1420.38
District level variance explained	0.49	0.62	0.53
Student level variance	974.56	1158.68	671.91

* $p < 0.05$ ** $p < 0.01$

[a] A missing value flag was included in the model but not presented because its coefficient was not statistically significant.

Joint effects between DDR and other district variables

Exploring the possible joint effects between fiscal and demographic variables at the district level, we tested a number of interaction terms and presented selected estimates from the model (see Table 6). We found no evidence of a joint effect between DDR and the state contribution to the district revenue in relation to math achievement. The three years' estimates were all trivial and not statistically significant. In other words, the state funding for local districts and districts' autonomy in instructional spending did not jointly influence achievement in some peculiar way as we might suspect.

Table 6
District average achievement accounted for by DDR and other district-level variables and interaction terms: Means-as-outcomes model (standard error in parentheses)

Estimates	1996[a] NAEP-CCD	1992 NAEP-CCD	1990 NAEP-CCD
Fixed effects			
District mean γ_{00}	268.72 (1.22)	259.17 (1.31)	254.95 (1.17)
State average instructional spending rate γ_{01}	-0.26 (0.23)	-0.15 (0.27)	-0.44 (0.30)
District discretionary rate of instructional spending (DDR) γ_{02}	*-1.03 (0.52)	0.87 (0.65)	0.41 (0.35)

Total enrollment in thousand γ_{03}	-0.02 (0.01)	*-0.03 (0.01)	-0.02 (0.01)
Minority enrollment rate γ_{04}	**-0.47 (0.06)	**-0.53 (0.08)	**-0.36 (0.10)
CEPP $1000 γ_{05}	**2.89 (1.05)	1.57 (1.13)	*3.72 (1.58)
Child poverty rate γ_{06}	-0.10 (0.13)	*-0.41 (0.16)	**-0.58 (0.15)
State revenue percentage γ_{07}	-0.02 (0.06)	*-0.15 (0.06)	-0.09 (0.06)
Urban district γ_{08}	-1.64 (3.69)	-0.11 (3.06)	-0.27 (2.74)
Interaction terms			
DDR x State revenue percentage γ_{09}	0.01 (0.01)	0.00 (0.01)	-0.00 (0.00)
DDR x Urban γ_{010}	-0.36 (0.51)	0.25 (0.63)	**1.47 (0.41)
DDR x Child poverty γ_{011}	*0.03 (0.01)	-0.05 (0.03)	-0.02 (0.01)
*Random*effects District mean u0j	125.47	146.52	116.91
chi-square	1247.82	1306.15	1284.82
District level variance explained	0.49	0.64	0.55
Student level variance	974.18	1158.68	671.91

* $p < 0.05$ ** $p < 0.01$

[a] A missing value flag was included in the model but not presented because its coefficient was not statistically significant.

The combined effect of DDR and urban locale seemed more complicated. It was substantial and statistically significant with the 1990 data (the fixed effect estimate $\gamma_{010} = 1.47$ with $p < 0.001$), but virtually nil with the 1992 and 1996 data. The positive 1990 estimate implied that higher spending on instruction in a district (relative to the state average) was related to higher average achievement for ***urban*** districts and the effect size was fairly large. The finding, were it substantiated with multiple years' data, would offer important policy implications.

Another interaction term was between DDR and the child poverty rate, which also resulted in inconsistent estimates across years. Only in 1996 was the estimate meaningful (0.03 at $p < 0.05$ level), implying that, among high poverty districts, higher instructional spending than the state average was related to slight better average math achievement; but among low poverty districts, there was no such relationship. Again, this finding would be potentially important should it be confirmed. It was not, however, substantiated with data for 1992 and 1990. In fact, the effect disappeared even with the 1996 data in subsequent analysis where additional variables were statistically controlled for (see Table 8.1). Though the findings on combined effects between district discretionary instructional spending were highly tentative, they posed questions for further studies.

Note that the DDR estimate, again, was trivial after the interaction terms entered into the equation, except for 1996, when the estimate was significant at $p < 0.05$ level, modest, and *negative* (- 1.03). This exception, as we see, should not change the overall finding that DDR was largely unrelated to 8th graders' math achievement. On the other hand, net of the additional interaction effects, CEPP estimate remained largely substantial and significant for 1996 and 1990, indicating a positive relationship with math achievement. The estimate was not statistically significant for 1992.

Math achievement gaps associated with sex, race/ethnicity, and SES

To examine the relationships of DDR to math achievement gaps associated with social and demographic categories, it was necessary first to assess the magnitude of the gaps and their variance; that is, how much the gaps varied across districts. We specified a random-coefficient regression model wherein individual student sex, race/ethnicity, and parental educational attainment were estimated as both fixed and random effects. The estimates are presented in Table 7.

Table 7
Math achievement differences relating to sex race/ethnicity and parents' educational attainment: Random coefficient regression model (standard error in parentheses)

Estimates	1996[a] NAEP-CCD	1992 NAEP-CCD	1990 NAEP-CCD
Fixed effects coefficient			
district mean γ_{00}	269.77 (1.46)	260.20 (1.65)	256.05 (1.62)
sex difference γ_{10}	0.01 (1.26)	0.78 (1.26)	0.57 (1.30)
Race-ethnic difference γ_{20}	**-23.33 (2.15)	**-24.09 (2.00)	**-20.16 (1.90)
Parents' educational attainment difference γ_{30}	**16.75 (1.45)	**15.38 (1.38)	**17.89 (1.31)
Random effects District mean u0j (df; chi-square)	**256.42 (136; 2557.89)	**383.49 (153; 3106.93)	**267.97 (117; 2853.21)
sex difference u1j (df; chi-square)	**82.69 (136; 212.05)	**80.35 (153; 220.76)	**91.67 (117; 195.57)
Race-ethnic difference u2j (df; chi-square)	**168.08 (136; 202.07)	**191.28 (153; 233.29)	**105.77 (117; 238.53)
Parents' educational attainment difference u3j (df; chi-square)	**69.07 (136; 219.91)	**44.75 (153; 210.52)	**68.04 (117; 227.77)
Student level variance	778.71	962.97	530.74
Correlation among district effects	t_{00} t_{11} t_{22}	t_{00} t_{11} t_{22}	t_{00} t_{11} t_{22}
District mean t_{00}	1.00	1.00	1.00
Sex difference t_{11}	-0.22	-0.01	-0.03
Race/ethnicity difference t_{22}	0.25 -0.14	-0.17 -0.33	0.02 -0.03
Parents' education difference t_{33}	0.16 -0.18 0.44	0.21 -0.29 0.23	0.11 -0.22 -0.11
Reliability of regression coefficient estimates			
District mean	0.73	0.79	0.71
Sex difference	0.31	0.33	0.34
Race/ethnic difference	0.31	0.32	0.25
Parents' education difference	0.26	0.23	0.28

* $p < 0.05$ ** $p < 0.01$

[a] A missing value flag was included in the model but not presented because its coefficient was not statistically significant.

There was no evidence from each year's data that 8th grade math achievement differed by sex *within districts* as the fixed effect coefficient was close to zero and was not statistically significant. However, the random variation associated with sex was substantial and statistically significant across the three years (e.g., for 1996 $u_{1j} = 82.69$, df = 136, $c^2 = 212.05$), suggesting that sex difference in achievement varied considerably across districts around a mean of zero. This situation was similar to findings from some earlier studies (e.g., Raudenbush, Kidchanapanish, & Kang 1991). Not only the magnitude of the gap, but also the direction of the association, could differ across districts. It is possible to sort out factors that were responsible for the variance in future analysis. However, limited by the scope of this study, we did not include sex as an achievement gap in the subsequent modeling.

Race/ethnicity was clearly a strong predictor of math achievement for all three years. The fixed effect estimate γ_{20} was large (-23.33 for 1996, -24.09 for 1992, and —20.16 for 1990) and highly significant ($p < 0.001$ each year), confirming that minority students (other than Asian American) on average tended to achieve low on the NAEP math test within districts. The random effect for race/ethnicity was substantial and significant, revealing that districts differed in the racial/ethnic gap and that the variance needed further explanation.

As a socioeconomic status indicator, parents' educational attainment was specified in the model. The fixed effect estimate γ_{30} was positive and large for each year (16.75, 15.38, and 17.89 respectively for 1996, 1992, and 1990, all significant at $p < 0.01$ level). The estimate suggested that within districts, on average, students whose parents had college or more education performed better on the NAEP math test. The estimate of the random effect was also substantial and highly significant over the years, revealing that districts differed in the math achievement gap associated with family social background. Obviously, the varying achievement gap relating to parents' education merited further modeling.

Because of the specified student-level variables in the model, student-level variance became considerably small relative to the estimates from the prior means-as-outcomes model (778.71, 962.97 and 530.74 in Table 7, compared with the 974.56, 1158.68, and 681.08 shown in Table 5, respectively, for the three years).

The covariance matrixes generated from the model with the three years' data provided information about the correlation between district-level residual random effects (Table 7, panel 3). One of the consistent findings for all the years was that the district average achievement residual variance positively and moderately related to the residual variance of parents' education-associated achievement gap (0.16, 0.21, and 0.11). This finding implied that, holding other things constant, the higher the district average math test scores, the wider the district-level achievement gap between students whose parents had higher education and students whose parents did not. Another consistent estimate was the correlation between sex gap and parents' education gap (-0.18, -0.29, and —0.22 for the three years). These estimates suggested that, to some modest extent, the wider a district's sex difference in math achievement, the smaller the district's math achievement gap relating to parents' education. The remaining estimates of correlation changed substantially across years and it was impossible to interpret them without further analysis.

A final note for the random coefficient model: For each year, while the reliability of the intercept (district average math achievement) was reasonably high, the reliability measures for slopes (differences associated with sex, race/ethnicity, and parental education) were fairly low. This finding pointed to a frequently encountered problem in HLM analysis of survey data; that is, the difficulty to model the slopes (see Bryk & Raudenbush, 1992, pp. 102—103). Additional analysis was needed to sort out whether the lower reliability for slope statistics was due to the NAEP data collection design, small within-district sample, real differences across districts in the statistics, or simply the error variance in the slope estimation.

Final model

To control for variables at the student and district levels in examining the relationships of DDR and achievement, we integrated the previous modeling into a full HLM model, with both means and slopes as outcomes in the regression analysis. The resulting estimates of fixed effects and random effects are presented separately in Tables 8.1 and 8.2. The findings were consistent with those discussed earlier. Accounting for district's average math achievement, we did not observe any effect by DDR. However, CEPP and a number of district factors did relate to the achievement mean, as interpreted below.

Table 8-1
District mean, racial/ethnic gap, and SES gap in achievement accounted for by DDR and other district variables: Fixed effects (standard error in parentheses)

Estimates	1996 NEAP-CCD[a]		1992 NAEP-CCD		1990 NAEP-CCD	
District average mean γ_{00}	268.64	(1.15)	259.12	(1.17)	254.89	(1.22)
State average instructional spending rate γ_{01}	-0.27	(0.23)	-0.16	(0.27)	-0.44	(0.30)
Total enrollment in thousand γ_{02}	-0.01	(0.02)	-0.03	(0.02)	-0.02	(0.01)
Minority enrollment rate γ_{03}	-0.47	**(0.06)	-0.53	**(0.08)	-0.36	**(0.10)
CEPP in $K γ_{04}	2.85	**(1.07)	1.60	(1.14)	3.69	*(1.56)
Child poverty rate γ_{05}	-0.09	(0.13)	-0.40	*(0.17)	-0.58	**(0.15)
Percent of revenue from state γ_{06}	-0.03	(0.06)	-0.17	**(0.06)	-0.09	(0.06)
Urban locale γ_{07}	-1.97	(3.61)	-0.27	(3.02)	-0.54	(2.79)
DDR γ_{08}	-1.02	(0.52)	0.52	(0.64)	0.38	(0.35)
DDR*urban γ_{09}	-0.36	(0.49)	0.20	(0.64)	1.48	**(0.43)
DDR*state revenue percentage γ_{010}	0.01	(0.01)	0.01	(0.01)	0.00	(0.01)

DDR*poverty rate γ_{011}	0.03	(0.02)	-0.05	(0.03)	-0.02	(0.02)
Race/ethnicity gap γ_{10}	-23.64	**(1.76)	-24.35	**(1.68)	-21.55	**(1.59)
Average state instructional spending rate γ_{11}	0.52	(0.38)	0.56	(0.37)	-0.24	(0.55)
Total enrollment in thousands γ_{12}	0.00	(0.01)	-0.01	(0.01)	-0.03	*(0.01)
Minority enrollment rate γ_{13}	-0.13	(0.10)	-0.07	(0.11)	0.01	(0.15)
CEPP in $K γ_{14}	0.71	(1.74)	0.99	(2.28)	4.08	(2.47)
Child poverty rate γ_{15}	0.04	(0.18)	0.38	*(0.17)	-0.08	(0.23)
Urban locale γ_{16}	0.57	(3.53)	-4.08	(3.91)	-7.37	(4.39)
DDR γ_{17}	0.13	(0.40)	-0.16	(0.54)	0.43	(0.36)
SES (parent education) gap γ_{20}	15.95	**(1.22)	14.81	**(1.15)	17.13	**(1.12)
Average state instructional spending rate γ_{21}	-0.24	(0.25)	0.00	(0.21)	-0.05	(0.32)
Total enrollment in thousands γ_{22}	0.01	(0.01)	0.00	(0.02)	0.01	(0.01)
Minority enrollment rate γ_{23}	-0.08	(0.06)	-0.05	(0.05)	-0.07	(0.09)
CEPP in $K γ_{24}	0.35	(1.04)	1.63	(1.14)	-0.47	(1.70)
Child poverty rate γ_{25}	-0.31	**(0.12)	-0.10	(0.09)	-0.03	(0.15)
Urban locale γ_{26}	-1.18	(2.76)	0.46	(2.60)	-1.03	(2.27)
DDR γ_{27}	-0.42	(0.25)	-0.01	(0.21)	0.00	(0.18)

* $p < 0.05$ ** $p < 0.01$

[a] A missing value flag was included in the model but not presented because its coefficient was not statistically significant.

Table 8-2
District mean, racial-ethnic gap, and SES gap in achievement accounted for by DDR and other district variables: Random effects (standard error in parentheses)

Estimates	1996[a] NAEP-CCD	1992 NAEP-CCD	1990 NAEP-CCD
Random effects			
District mean u_{0j}			
df	132.18	151.91	119.94
chi-square	125	142	105
variance explained:	1325.27	1341.32	1259.89
relative to means-as-outcomes- model	-0.05[b]	[b]-0.03	[b]-0.02
relative to random coefficient regression model	0.48	0.61	0.55
Racial/ethnic gap u_{1j}			
chi-square	152.28	165.78	81.67
variance explained:	187.61	212.61	209.58
relative to random coefficient regression model	0.10	0.14	0.23

SES gap u1j			
chi-square	60.80	42.14	64.82
variance explained:	204.70	199.03	206.78
relative to random coefficient regression model	0.13	0.05	0.06
Student level variance	804.03	988.08	545.27

* $p < 0.05$ ** $p < 0.01$

[a] A missing value flag was included in the model but not presented because its coefficient was not statistically significant.

[b] The estimate implies that the final model accounted for a smaller portion of the variance of this variable.

Fixed effects: The fixed effect estimate for DDR in 1996 was $\gamma_{08} = -1.02$, not statistically significant ($p = 0.051$, see Table 8.1). The other years' estimates were close to zero and statistically insignificant as well. This finding, again, showed no evidence that district discretionary instructional spending relative to the state average spending would lead to higher average math achievement.

The minority enrollment rate was a consistently strong negative predictor of districts' mean math achievement, with estimates of -0.47, -0.53, and -0.36 for the three years, all highly significant. CEPP was quite consistently estimated as a positive predictor of district achievement level, with estimates of 2.85 in 1996, 1.60 in 1992, and 3.69 in 1990, and statistically significant in 1996 and 1990. The child poverty rate was another predictor with fairly consistent estimates over the years (-0.09 for 1996, -0.40 for 1992, and -0.58 for 1990), and the statistic was significant in 1992 and 1990. Note that the state's share of revenue for the district yielded a statistically significant estimate only for 1992 (-0.17, $p < 0.01$). This suggested that holding other conditions constant, districts that received a higher portion of state contribution tended to achieve somewhat lower in the NAEP test in that year, probably due to the fact that states' contribution was typically prioritized for low-achieving local schools.

Estimates of interaction effects from the full model confirmed those from the previous modeling. For one, the interaction between DDR and urban locale was quite strong and statistically significant for 1990 (1.48, at $p < 0.01$ level). DDR seemed to connect to the somewhat higher average math score of urban districts relative to districts in suburban or rural areas. The 1996 and 1992 data, however, failed to produce consistent estimates and therefore this finding is tentative as well. We note that the estimate for the DDR-poverty interaction effect was no longer found to be different from zero for 1996 data with the full model.

Gaps associated with race/ethnicity and parents' education were substantiated with the full model. Controlling for both within and between district variables, both race/ethnicity and parents' education had sizable fixed effect on mean achievement across the three years. For race/ethnicity, the estimate was -23.64 in 1996, -24.35 in 1992, and -21.55 in 1990, significant at $p < 0.01$ level. Two variables showed some unstable effect on the gap, but only for one year. One was district total enrollment, related to a trivially narrowed gap (-0.03 at $p < 0.05$ level) for 1990. The child poverty rate, on the other hand, related to a smaller racial gap (0.38 at $p < 0.05$ level) for 1992, suggesting that in districts of high poverty, minority students' achievement was slightly closer to White and Asian students' than it was in districts of low poverty. Again, without across-year consistent estimates, this interpretation requires additional analyses to confirm.

Accounting for the gap associated with SES as indicated by parents' educational attainment, none of the fixed estimates were statistically significant, except that of the child poverty rate

(-0.31 at $p < 0.01$ level) estimated with 1996 data. This effect may be interpreted in a similar way to that for the poverty rate and race/ethnicity gap. It may imply that for students who attended high poverty districts, parents' education made a smaller difference in their math achievement than it did for students in other districts. Poverty at the district level thus seemed to "dampen" the racial and socioeconomic differences at the student level. We may speculate that this finding perhaps hints of narrow ranges of both student background measures and achievement measures in a high poverty district. In other words, poverty-related social homogeneity might underlie the reduced achievement gaps. Without consistent results across years, such a "dampening" hypothesis about district-level poverty on the individual achievement gaps awaits additional analysis to substantiate.

Random effects:

The final model's goodness of fit estimates were quite comparable for the three years (see Table 8.2). In general, the model has been improved in regard to accounting for the slope but not for the district mean. For example, between-district variance as estimated in the final model was actually smaller than it was estimated in the means-as-the-outcome model (see Table 6), which contained the same district-level variables as did the final model. This pattern, similar across the three years, may suggest that the multiple predictor variables of slopes caused the model to fit less well as most added variables were not related to the slopes as expected. Nevertheless, the variance of the two slopes was substantially reduced. Relative to the random-coefficient regression model which contained only random effect for the slopes, the final estimates showed that the slope equations fit better.

Conclusions

Our findings did not support the hypothesis that drove this study, namely, that local districts could improve academic performance by increasing instructional spending. Net of district factors known to affect student achievement, school district discretionary spending in instruction, defined as the difference between the district instructional spending rate and the average instructional spending rate in a state, did not relate to a district's 8th grade average math performance. The null effect was consistent in the analysis of the combined NAEP-CCD data for 1990, 1992, and 1996. On the other hand, fairly consistently, the analysis has found that some district characteristics were related to average achievement. Specifically, other conditions being equal, a district's current expenditure per pupil (CEPP) was found related to higher math performance in a modest yet consistent way. Demographic attributes at the district level, including the minority student enrollment rate and the child poverty rate, were strongly related to lower math achievement, net of other effects.

The finding of the null effect of local districts' control over instructional spending as indicated by DDR may lead to different directions for future research on the district role in reform. First, considering the complex procedures of local decisionmaking on educational financing, research needs to deepen the inquiry about districts' fiscal policymaking, especially the changing patterns of instructional spending in connection to other capital outlays and revenue. Variation in instructional spending might reflect distinctive school conditions and policy concerns other than academic performance. For example, new technologies and equipment often demand a large budget for upgrading and staff training; school security is a pressing issue calling for increasing funding in some areas; aging buildings incur extremely high costs to renovate. Many continuing or lump sum expenditures may cause instructional spending to fluctuate considerably, which may or may not have an immediate impact on academic test results. On the revenue side, federal or state funding and related requirements may vary depending on changes in the government and the legislation as well as economic conditions in a larger context. Investigators must consider specific motives underlying decisions on spending and the broad conditions leading to such motives, together with DDR in order to understand local fiscal policymaking in relation to academic performance.

The finding that CEPP was positively related to math achievement leads to questions about the value of instructional spending as a key indicator of district fiscal control in explaining student achievement. Instructional spending is probably a concept too narrow to capture the complexities involved in a district's fiscal decisionmaking. In contrast, current spending adjusted to student enrollment could be more predictive of student performance as it appears encompassing such issues as diverse district and community context and various needs for funding. Therefore, future research may test alternative indicators of district fiscal policy control in connection to student academic performance and other outcomes. CEPP definitely should be a useful candidate for such research.

Furthermore, we recognize that the district has limited instructional spending control as the range of DDR was quite narrow (over the years, approximately 20 percent below or above the state average, see Tables 2.1—2.3). Such control may have little impact—relative to district policymaking in other respects—on student achievement. Hence, we may want to shift research attention to other aspects of district policymaking and operation. For example, research may focus on district differences in handling curriculum and instructional standard development; teacher recruitment, training, participation in decisionmaking, and accountability; community involvement and support; effectiveness in managing technological upgrading, school and class size, facilities maintenance, student services, and other administrative roles.

This analysis did offer some interesting albeit unsettled clues for learning about how district discretionary instructional spending might function jointly with other variables to influence achievement. The 1990 data showed that high DDR in urban districts was related to substantially higher average math performance, although the relationship was not evident in analysis of the 1996 and 1992 data. On the other hand, with the 1996 data, higher DDR in poor districts appeared to relate to slightly higher math achievement than it did in other districts. Limited reliability of the reweighted NAEP-CCD data is a likely culprit for the inconsistence. But unknown or shifting circumstances wherein instructional spending interacted with local conditions may also have contributed to such inconsistent patterns. It may be promising to expand the research to conceptualize and examine such joint effects between local instructional spending and local conditions. It is possible that, with more reliable data and precise measures, future inquiries could identify this sort of "equalizing" effect on district instructional spending.

Another intriguing yet uncertain issue that emerged in the analysis was sex difference in math achievement. Within districts, sex difference in 8th grade math achievement was estimated to be virtually zero with the three years' data. But between districts, the variance of sex effect was estimated high and statistically significant for all of the three years. Factors at the institution level—including school and district—should be part of the explanation. However, classroom instructional practice and other organizational environmental influences are probably more salient relative to fiscal policy in explaining the between-district variance of sex difference. Again, this question awaits future investigation.

Combining NAEP and CCD data into a synthetic analysis proved to be a challenging task. A series of difficulties emerged in the process of data merging and data editing because of changes over the years in both data collections (for a detailed discussion, see the Technical Report). In addition to addressing technical problems, future research would call for re-conceptualizing district fiscal management processes, examining district-state interaction regarding education financing, pinpointing joint effects of fiscal policymaking and local/regional conditions, and improving the reliability of the measurement and data quality of district fiscal status.

Specifically, it may be fruitful to separately study individual states and to integrate the findings onto the national level. This approach would require using data from NAEP State Tests and CCD for individual state analyses in a much more extensive scale than that attempted in the current analysis. It would also entail thoughtful interpretation and reconciliation of the possibly incongruent findings from the state analyses to generate cogent narratives about education financing at the state and district levels. Such narratives would probably involve in-depth qualitative analyses with information sources other than the survey data. A study of this sort would be a large-scale, challenging undertaking. But it appears more likely to produce comprehensive and in-depth knowledge about the local district's role in performance-driven reform, particularly its fiscal control in connection to student achievement.

Acknowledgment
We are grateful to Keith Rust and his colleagues at Westat for advice and assistance on methodological and technical issues ranging from the NAEP sample modification to the data file merge. We also want to thank Robert Alfred and other ETS staff who assisted us in dealing with the NAEP and CCD file merge. A number of Synectics colleagues have contributed to this project: Maxime Bokossa, who reviewed our sample modification procedures; Hongwei Zhang, who helped manage data files and data editing; and Elizabeth Walter, who edited the manuscript of the report. We wish to thank Synectics management, especially Jeff Whitesell and Sameena Salvucci, for their continued support and managerial flexibility. Our thanks also go to Deborah Sedlacek and Steven Gorman at NCES for their understanding and patience regarding this exploratory study.

Disclaimer
This research is supported by a grant to Synectics for Management Decisions, Inc., from the NAEP Secondary Analysis program (Award No. R902B000002), U.S. Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics (NCES). The authors assume full responsibility for the content of the report. Neither NCES nor Synectics necessarily approve the viewpoints expressed in the report.

Notes

1. In fact, the two studies came up with quite inconsistent results regarding the relationship between central administration per pupil expenditure and math achievement. The aggregated study indicated a positive strong relationship between the two variables (Wenglinsky 1997 pp. 230—231). The HLM study found no relation at all between the two measures; rather it found per pupil instructional expenditure to be associated with a smaller socioeconomic status (SES)-related achievement gap (Wenglinsky 1998 p. 276). Such inconclusive results call for further research to clarify both the methodological and the substantive issues involved in synthetic analysis of NAEP and CCD data.

2. However, recognizing that rural conditions differ from urban districts, we plan to specifically examine the rural-urban difference in district spending patterns and achievement during another project.

3. With the original NAEP data, the reliability for school means is substantially higher, around 0.90 for the three years. The lower reliability was apparently a result of sample modification.

References

Admundson, K. J. (1993). *Restructuring Reform and Reality: What School Districts Are Really Doing. NSBA Best Practices Series 1993.* Alexandria VA: National School Boards Association ERIC Document No. ED360699.

Allen, N. L., Kline, D. L., & Zelenak, C. A. (1997). *The NAEP 1994 Technical Report.* NCES 97-897. Washington DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Arnold, C. L. (1995). *Using HLM and NAEP Data to Explore School Correlates of 1990 Mathematics and Geometry Achievement in Grades 4 8 12: Methodology and Results.* Washington DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Brent, B. O., Roellke, C. F., & Monk, D. H. (1997). Understanding Teacher Resource Allocation in New York State Secondary Schools: A Case Study Approach. *Journal of Education Finance 23* 2 207-33.

Bryk, A. S., & Raudenbush, S. W. (1992). Hierarchical Linear Models Applications and Data Analysis Methods.

Newbury Park CA: Sage Publications.

Bryk, A. S., Raudenbush, S. W., & Congdon, R. T. (1996). *Hierarchical Linear and Nonlinear Modeling with the HLM/2L and HLM/3L Programs.* Chicago IL: Scientific Software International.

Chambers, J., & Fowler, W. J., Jr. (1995). *Public School Teacher Cost Differences Across the United States: An Analysis to Develop a Teacher Cost Index (TCI).* Washington DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Childs, T. S., & Shakeshaft, C. (1986). A Meta-Analysis of Research on the Relationship between Educational Expenditures and Student Achievement. *Journal of Education Finance 12* 2 249-63.

Clune, W. H. (1993). Systemic educational policy: a conceptual framework. In Furhman S. H. (Ed.). *Designing coherent education policy.* San Francisco CA: Jossey-Bass Inc.

Cochran, W. G. (1977). *Sampling Techniques* third edition. New York: John Wiley.

Cohen, M. P., & Huang, G.G. (2000). *Analyzing Survey Data by Complete-Case and Available-Case Methods: Alternatives to Imputation.* Paper presented at the American Statistical Association Annual Conference Indianapolis IN.

Conn, W. L. (1995). Funding fundamentals: the cost/quality debate in school reform. *West's Education Law Quarterly 4* 1 123-139.

Deville, J. C., & Sarndal, C. E. (1992). Calibration Estimators in Survey Sampling. *Journal of the American Statistical Association* 87 376-382.

Deville, J. C., Sarndal, C. E., & Sautory, O. (1993). Generalized Raking Procedures in Survey Sampling. *Journal of the American Statistical Association* 88 1013-1020.

DeYoung, A. (1990). Introduction. In A. DeYoung (Ed.). *Rural education: Issues and practice.* New York: Garland Publishing Inc.

Doyle, D., & Finn, C. (1984). American schools and the future of local control. *Public Interest 77* 77-95.

Duncombe, W., & Yinger, J. (1998). School Finance Reform: Aid Formulas and Equity Objectives. *National Tax Journal 51* 2 239-62.

Elmore, R. F. (1994). Thoughts on program equity: productivity and incentives for performance in education. *Educational Policy 8* 4 453-459.

Elmore, R. F. (1993). The role of local school districts in instructional improvement. Furhman S. H. (Ed.). *Designing coherent education policy.* San Francisco CA: Jossey-Bass Inc.

Fay, R. E. (1995). *VPLX.* Washington DC: U.S. Bureau of the Census.

Ferguson, R. F. (1991). Racial Patterns in How School and Teacher Quality Affect Achievement and Earnings. *Challenge 2* 1 1-35.

Forsyth, R., Hambleton, R., Linn, R., Mislevy, R., & Yen, W. (1996). *Design/Feasibility Team Report to the National Assessment Governing Board.* NAGB web site.

Fowler, W. J., Jr., & Monk, D. H. (2001). *A Primer for Making Cost Adjustments in Education* NCES 2001—323 Washington DC: U.S. Department of Education National Center for Education Statistics.

Fuhrman, S. H., & Elmore, R. F. (1995). *Ruling Out Rules: The Evolution of Deregulation in State Education Policy.* New Brunswick NJ: Consortium for Policy Research in Education ERIC Document No. ED383057.

Fuhrman, S. H., & Elmore, R. F. (1990). Understanding local control in the wake of state educational reform. *Educational evaluation and policy analysis 12* 82-96.

General Accounting Office. (1998). *School Finance: State and Federal Efforts To Target Poor Students. Report to Congressional Requesters.* GAO/HEHS-98-36. General Accounting Office Washington DC.

Guskey, T. R. (1993). Policy Issues and Options When States Take Over Local School Districts. *International Journal of Educational Reform 2* 1 68-71.

Hajek, J. (1981). *Sampling from a Finite Population*. New York: Marcel Dekker.

Hannaway, J. (1993). Political Pressure and Decentralization in Institutional Organizations: The Case of School Districts. *Sociology of Education 66* 3 147-63.

Hannaway, J. (1992). *School Districts: The Missing Link in Education Reform*. New Brunswick NJ: Consortium for Policy Research in Education. ERIC Document No. ED359644.

Hanushek, E. A. (1996). School resources and student performance. In Burtless G. (Ed.). Does Money Matter? The Effect of School Resources on Student Achievement and Adult Success. Washington DC: Brookings Institution Press.

Hanushek, E. A. (1994). A Jaundiced view of "adequacy" in school finance reform. *Educational Policy 8* 4 460-469.

Hedges, L. V., & Greenwald, R. (1996). Have times changed? The Relation between school resources and student performance. In Burtless G. (Ed.). Does Money Matter? The Effect of School Resources on Student Achievement and Adult Success. Washington DC: Brookings Institution Press.

Hough, J. R. (1993). Educational Finance Issues in North America. *Education Economics 1* 1 35-42.

Hussar, W., & Sonnenberg, W. (1999). *Trends in disparities in school district level expenditures per pupil*. NCES 1999-017. Washington DC: NCES.

Iannaccone, L., & Lutz, F. W. (1994). The Crucible of Democracy: The Local Arena. *Journal of Education Policy 9* 5&6 39-52.

Johnson, E. G. (1989). Considerations and Techniques for the Analysis of NAEP Data. *Journal of Educational Statistics* 14 303-334.

Johnson, E. G., & Allen, N. L. (1992). *The NAEP 1990 Technical Report*. NCES 92-067. Washington DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Johnson, E. G., Mazzeo, J., & Kline, D. L. (1994). *Technical Report of the NAEP 1992 Trial State Assessment Program in Reading*. NCES 94-472. Washington DC: National Center for Education Statistics.

Johnson, E. G., & Rust, K. F. (1992). Population Inferences and Variance Estimation for NAEP Data. *Journal of Educational Statistics* 17 175-190.

Kazal-Thresher, D. M. (1993). Educational expenditures and school achievement: When and how money can make a difference. *Educational Researcher 22* 2 30-32.

Keedy, J. L. (1994). The Twin Engines of School Reform for the 1990s: The School Sites and National Coalitions. *Journal of School Leadership 4* 1 94-111.

Lee, V. E., Smith, J. B., & Croninger, R. G. (1995). Another look at high school restructuring. More evidence that it improves student achievement and more insight into why. *Issues in Restructuring Schools. No. 9*.

Levine, R., & Christenson, B. (1998). *Public School Districts in the United States: A Statistical Profile 1987-88 to 1993-94*. Statistical Analysis Report. NCES-98-203. Washington DC: American Institutes for Research.

Little, J. A. (1993). Post-Stratification: A Modeler's Perspective. *Journal of the American Statistical Association* 88 1001-1012.

Little, J. A., & Wu, M.-M. (1991). Models for Contingency Tables with Known Margins When Target and Sampled Populations Differ. *Journal of the American Statistical Association* 86 87-95.

Little, R. J. A., & Rubin, D. B. (1986). *Statistical Analysis with Missing Data*. New York NY: John Wiley & Sons.

Lockwood, A. T. (1994). *The Future of school finance. Focus in Change no. 13*. Madison WI: Wisconsin Center for Educational Research.

Marsh, D. D. (1997). *School Reform and Decentralization in the United States: The National Alliance Experience*. ED409606. Paper presented at the Annual Meeting of the American Educational Research Association (Chicago IL March 24-28 1997).

Monk, D. H., & Hussain, S. (2000). Structural influences on the internal allocation of school district resources: Evidence from New York State. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis* 22 1 1-26.

Murphy, J. (1994). *Principles of School-Based Management*. Chapel Hill NC: North Carolina Educational Policy Research Center. ERIC Document No. ED373414.

Murphy, J., & Hallinger, P. (1988). Characteristics of instructionally effective school districts. *Journal of Educational Research 81* 175-181.

Nachtigal, P. (1982). Education in rural America: an overview. In P. Nachtigal (Ed.). *Rural education: In search of a better way*. Boulder CO: Westview Press.

National Assessment Governing Board. (1999). *The National Assessment of Educational Progress: Design 2000-2010*. Adopted Unanimously by The National Assessment Governing Board June 23 1999. Washington DC: NAGB.

National Center for Education Statistics. (1995). *Common Core of Data (CCD). Includes Data From 1987/88-1992/93. Installation Guide*. Washington DC: the author.

National Center for Education Statistics (1996). *The Condition of Education 1996*. Washington DC: the author.

New York State Education Department. (1992). *Study on the Generation of Revenues for Education. New York State Board of Regents. Final Report*. ERIC ACCESSION No. ED383106.

Newmann, F. M., & Wahlage, G. G. (1995). Successful School Restructuring: A Report to the Public and Educators by the Center on Organization and Restructuring of Schools. Madison WI: University of Wisconsin-Madison.

Payne, K. J., & Biddle, R. J. (1999). Poor school funding child poverty and mathematics achievement. *Educational Researcher 28* 6 4-13.

Pellegrino, J. W., Jones, L. R., & Mitchell, K. J. (Eds.). (1999). *Grading the Nation's Report Card: Evaluating NAEP and Transforming the Assessment of Educational Progress*. Washington DC: National Academy Press.

Porter, A. C. (1994). National equity and school autonomy. *Educational Policy 8* 4 489-500.

Protheroe, N. (1997). ERS—Local School Budget Profile Study. *School Business Affairs 63*10 42-29.

Rasbash, J., & Woodhouse, G. (1995). *MLn Command Reference Version 1.0*. London UK: University of London.

Raudenbush, S. W., Kidchanapanish, S., & Kang, S. J. (1991). The effects of pre-primary access and quality on educational achievement in Thailand. *Comparative Education Review, 35*, 255-273.

Reese, C. M., Miller, K. E., Mazzeo, J., & Dossey, J. A. (1997). *NAEP 1996 Mathematics Report Card for the Nation and the States.Washington DC: NCES.*

Rust, K., Burke, J., Fahimi, M., & Wallace, L. (1992). *1990 National Assessment of Educational Progress Sampling and Weighting Procedures* Part 2- National Assessment. Rockville MD: Westat Inc.

Shao, J., & Tu, D. (1995). *The Jackknife and Bootstrap*. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Sharp, W. L. (1993). *School Spending: Is There a Relationship between Spending and Student Achievement? A Correlation Study of Illinois Schools*. Paper presented at the Annual Meeting of the American Education Finance Association (Albuquerque NM March 1993). ERIC Document No. ED357503.

Strang, D. (1987). The Administrative transformation of American education: school district consolidation 1938-1980. *Administrative Science Quarterly 43* 352-366.

Wainer, H. (1993). Does Spending Money on Education Help? A Reaction to the Heritage Foundation and the "Wall Street Journal." *Educational Researcher 22* 9 22-24.

Walberg, H. J., & Walberg, H. J. III. (1994). Losing local control. *Educational Researcher 23* 6 19-26.

Wallace, L., & Rust, K. (1994). *1992 National Assessment of Educational Progress Sampling and Weighting Procedures Final Report.* Rockville MD: Westat Inc.

Weng, S. S., Zhang, F., & Cohen, M. P. (1995). Variance Estimates Comparison by Statistical Software. *ASA 1995 Proceedings of the Section on Survey Research Methods.* Alexandria VA: American Statistical Association.

Wenglinsky, H. (1997). How money matters: the effect of school district spending on academic achievement. *Sociology of Education 70* 3221-237.

Wenglinsky, H. (1998). Finance equalization and within-school equity: the relationship between education spending and the social distribution of achievement. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis 20* 4 269-283.

Westat Inc. (1998). *ESSI Work Task 1.2.76.1 1990 Through 1990 NAEP Samples: NCES Identifiers.* (Contract report and memorandum to NCES). Rockville MD: Westat.

Westat Inc. (1996). *A User's Guide to WesVar PC Version 2.0.* Rockville MD.

Wolter, K. M. (1985) *Introduction to Variance Estimation*. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Woodhouse, G. (ed.) (1995). *A Guide to MLn for New Users.* London UK: Institute of Education University of London.

About the Authors

Gary G. Huang, Ph.D.
Senior Research Analyst
Synectics for Management Decisions, Inc.
North Moore St.
Arlington, VA 22209

Phone: 703.807.2324   703.528.2857
Email: garyh@smdi.com

Gary Huang is a research sociologist working in education and public policy related areas. His research interests include minority children's socialization and schooling, institutional effects on learning, rural education, and cross-cultural research and communication. He works mainly with large-scale survey data analyses but has a broad interest in other approaches to research.

Binbing Yu, Ph.D.
Synectics for Management Decisions, Inc.
1901 North Moore Street, Suite 900
Arlington, VA 22209

Appendix I
Modification of the Sample and Weights

Appendix I is available for downloading as a Rich Text Formatted file.

Appendix II
Race-Census Region with Modified Sample

NAEP-CCD 1990

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 10
Based on original weight (ORIGWT) in NAEP data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %
White-Northeast	877022.5	12.37	877022.5	12.37
White-Midwest	1501565	21.18	2378587	33.55

White-West	600752.9	8.47	4955076	69.89
Non-hispanic black	1147326	16.18	6102402	86.08
Hispanic	771106	10.88	6873508	96.95
Non-hispanic other	216087.6	3.05	7089596	100.00

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 11
Based on adjusted weight (ADJWT) for merged NAEP-CCD data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %
White-Northeast	959336.4	13.53	959336.4	13.53
White-Midwest	1393679	19.66	2353015	33.19
White-South	1501023	21.17	3854038	54.36
White-West	964005.8	13.60	4818044	67.96
Non-hispanic black	1137725	16.05	5955769	84.01
Hispanic	838602.6	11.83	6794371	95.84
Non-hispanic other	295224.5	4.16	7089596	100.00

NAEP-CCD 1992

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 19
Based on original weight (ORIGWT) in NAEP data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %
White-Northeast	454207.7	11.27	454207.7	11.27
White-Midwest	766619.7	19.01	1220827	30.28
White-South	982156.5	24.36	2202984	54.64
White-West	523640.3	12.99	2726624	67.63
Non-hispanic black	711623.6	17.65	3438248	85.28
Hispanic	432971.2	10.74	3871219	96.02
Non-hispanic other	160653	3.98	4031872	100.00

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 20
Based on adjusted weight (ADJWT) for merged NAEP-CCD data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %
White-Northeast	446802.1	11.15	446802.1	11.15
White-Midwest	753990.9	18.81	1200793	29.96
White-South	965832.3	24.10	2166625	54.05
White-West	515042	12.85	2681667	66.90
Non-hispanic black	635054.6	15.84	3316722	82.75
Hispanic	505862.2	12.62	3822584 95.37	
Non-hispanic other	185603.8	4.63	4008188	100.00

NAEP-CCD 1996

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 14
Based on original weight (ORIGWT) in NAEP data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %

White-Northeast	402880.7	12.65	402880.7	12.65
White-Midwest	615135.1	19.31	1018016	31.95
White-South	705724	22.15	1723740	54.11
White-West	437100.6	13.72	2160840	67.82
Non-hispanic black	477674.1	14.99	2638514	82.82
Hispanic	402241.1	12.63	3040756	95.44
Non-hispanic other	145152.3	4.56	3185908	100.00

Frequencies of students by region-race using sum of Level-1 weight 15
Based on adjusted weight (ADJWT) for merged NAEP-CCD data

Race-Region	Freq.	%	Cum. Freq.	Cu. %
White-Northeast	389907.8	12.24	389907.8	12.24
White-Midwest	598667.2	18.79	988575.1	31.03
White-South	684636.9	21.49	1673212	52.52
White-West	387357.9	12.16	2060570	64.68
Non-hispanic black	538638.3	16.91	2599208	81.58
Hispanic	432200.4	13.57	3031409	95.15
Non-hispanic other	154499.4	4.85		100

Appendix III
Analytic procedures with two-level HLM modeling

Appendix III is available for downloading as a Rich Text Formatted file.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Calgary

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

This article has been retrieved 697 times since September 23, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 39 **September 23, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Recovering Policy Implementation: Understanding Implementation through Informal Communication

Lee S. Duemer
Sylvia Mendez-Morse
Texas Tech University

Citation: Duemer, L. S. & Mendez-Morse, S. (2002, September 23). Recovering policy implementation: Understanding implementation through informal communication, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(39). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n39.html.

Abstract
This study identifies themes in the theoretical literature on policy implementation that can then be used to develop a research-based framework for the scholar about how qualitative research can be used to analyze policy implementation through the investigation of informal and formal communication lines. This article draws from existing scholarship to bridge the gap between policy studies and qualitative research to explore innovative ways for scholars to expand our understanding of policy implementation. The article uses the literature to propose a framework that can be used to examine policy implementation. The framework is based on the concepts of Orientation, Degree, Resources, Activity, Autonomy, Societal Values, Institutional Values, Rationale and Power Relationship.

Understanding policy implementation is difficult enough when sufficient documentation exists to reassemble events into a coherent picture. The problem becomes more complex when informal communication lines have been utilized to communicate or transfer information (White, 1990). Informal lines are considered to be the people-to-people communications such as conversations and often are labeled the "grapevine." Informal lines of communication are often used rather than formal lines for facility. Why write a memorandum when less effort is expended through a telephone call? Informal interactions such as telephone calls or direct encounters, however, leave little or no archival data for the scholar to reconstruct events. The issue of insufficient documentation is especially problematic with electronic mail as messages are routinely deleted after an interval of time. White (1990) uncovered frequent use of informal lines of communication consisting of unrecorded and unscheduled face-to-face interactions that paralleled a formal communication structure. Parallel systems such as the "chain of command" versus the "open door" have created problems of miscommunication and misunderstanding when enacting policy implementation (White, 1990, p. 14). Formal lines of communication were available but were often not used to transfer information or make implementation decisions.

Informal processes include, but are not limited to, conversations, disposable communications such as electronic mail and reliance on unspoken understandings such as tradition. The use of informal bureaucratic processes enables a rapid and flexible response to difficult and controversial issues. Informal communication processes enable policy to be implemented efficiently and effectively; however, they also eliminate written records of decisions and interactions. Informal patterns of communication leave few alternatives for the researcher but to rely on qualitative methods to recover policy implementation (Duemer, 1999). Even when written records exist, qualitatively based findings add depth and context to the study in question (Blount, 1992). Such context-focused information is sometimes not available from archival sources such as memoranda or minutes of meetings that lack such details for purposes of brevity (Duemer, 1999).

Reliance on informal lines of communication, rather than the formal communication structures established by the organization, suggests a need to explore and understand how informal communication channels function and their impact on policy implementation. Formal communications are directive, regulatory, and structured means of conveying information considered necessary for general audiences (Andrews & Herschel, 1996; Weber, 1947). These areas can be studied using documentary evidence generated by the formal communication process. Items such as memorandums, handbooks, meeting agendas and minutes are readily available to a scholar. The challenge is accessing the informal means of communication—the water cooler talks, the lunchroom chats, conversations in workrooms— which frequently focus on the content of formal communication documents describing policy.

A large body of scholarship exists using qualitative methods as means of emphasizing the human element (Manning, 1990). Such a human emphasis points toward potential usefulness of qualitative research in reconstructing policy implementation; however, there does not exist a direct linkage with policy studies. March and Olsen (1976) inform us that organizational scholarship must pay particular attention to the human factors that influence decision-making. They indicate that personal values and agendas that are not on the surface evident to an investigator often influence decisions. Personal factors do not fit into a rational decision-making framework where individual compliance is expected; however, personal factors can be accounted for by a focus on the human element. The use of the personal element provides a better sense of context (Blount, 1992) through preserving the experiences of those who were involved in policy implementation (Manning, 1990).

The purpose of this article is to identify themes in the theoretical literature on policy implementation that can then be used to develop a research-based framework for the scholar about how qualitative research can be used to recover policy implementation through the investigation of informal and formal communication lines. This article draws from existing scholarship to bridge the gap between policy studies and qualitative research to explore innovative ways for scholars to expand our understanding of policy implementation. It is not intended to engage in an exhaustive analysis and interpretation of policy implementation as it applies qualitative research. Rather, the intent is to explore some of the theoretical literature as a means of provoking scholars to think about ways in which organizational theory informs qualitative research. An examination of informal lines of communication and their role in policy implementation can yield a more comprehensive understanding of how policies are implemented.

Discerning Policy Mutation

Implementation is the means by which policy is carried into effect. Implementation can refer to a one-time effort at enacting a policy, or a continuous process such as strategic planning. The implementation process may involve many different people and levels of hierarchy, any of which change the nature of policy from decision to implementation. In any event, implementation involves the process of moving from decision to operation (Williams, 1976, p. 3). Understanding efforts to mutate policy during implementation is essential to recognizing how policy may change through implementation, from its original form.

There would be little need to explore policy mutation if individuals behaved in the same predictable sense as chemical reactions. Human reactions would be testable according to proscribed and predictable formulas; however, human beings do not behave, they act (Sergiovanni, 1984). "Actions differ from behavior in that they are born of preconceptions, assumptions, and motives, and these are embedded with meanings" (Sergiovanni, 1984, p. 106). The thoughts, assumptions, and preconceptions are filtered through values, preferences, prejudices, motives, and the like, to produce actions. Prediction is further complicated because actions vary for different individuals even if the initiating factor remains unchanged (Sergiovanni, 1984). For example, two individuals in identical administrative positions may interpret the implementation of a particular policy in different manners due to opposite philosophical perspectives.

Once an individual or policy-making body sets a policy, there is no guarantee that it will be implemented in the same way it was originally intended. The difference between institutions and individuals is central to understanding how policy can change from development to implementation. Mutation is more likely when policy is developed in a climate that regards implementation as merely a technical detail (Pressman, 1984, p. 143). When a governing board directs an institution's officers to implement a new policy, but does not define any operational limitations or delimitations, there is no way to know how implementation will occur or in what manner. Under such conditions it is inevitable that implementation will be influenced by individual perceptions.

Mutation can also occur as policy is processed through the levels of an organization's hierarchy. One way that levels of a hierarchy differ is that some are charged with policy development while others are charged with policy implementation. School district central office administrators develop policy that is then implemented by campus personnel. Policy can be changed or revised by institutional officials from inception to implementation in a manner that more closely meets their conception of what is in their or the institution's best interests (Elster, 1989, p. 157). Individuals can surreptitiously undermine a policy or initiative or at least decline to work actively toward its implementation even when they claim to support it (Duemer, 1998; Pressman, 1984, p. 135). For example, a residence life administrator may hinder the implementation of a college's desegregation policy by creating an unwelcome atmosphere for incoming minority students (Duemer, 1998).

Some administrative positions enjoy more freedom or autonomy than others through division of labor (Sergiovanni, 1984, p. 152; Taylor, 1919; Weber, 1947). Division of labor provides for the development of specialization, separation of responsibilities, and more importantly to this article, the means of communication used by the people in differentiated roles. Autonomy provides individuals with various degrees of freedom to impose their own interpretations on the manner in which policy is implemented (Perrow, 1973). Labor division and specialization encourage individuals to identify and congregate into smaller units that share similar goals. This separation also contributes to the differences in the lines of communication, which are typically exemplified in the differences between formal and informal lines of communication. Persons at higher hierarchical levels (another characteristic of labor division) have greater access to more formal communications lines while those at lower levels can more easily participate in the informal communication channels of the organization.

The Role of the Individual in Policy Implementation

The use of qualitative research methods reflects the idea that institutions are composed of individuals, and those individuals should be the focal point of inquiry. In order for an institution to accomplish anything, it must rely on individuals. Individuals have their own interests and reflect larger societal interests, any of which may conflict with those of the institution. Investigations that focus on individuals seek to understand relationships among those inside the institution as well as relationships with those outside the institution. The use of qualitative methods is consistent with theory that recognizes institutions to be composed of human will and rejects the idea of institutions as a group mind or social reality that is above or beyond human control (Greenfield, 1984, p. 152). Understanding the human element in policy is a central aspect of qualitative research, as the human element is the basic unit of social life (Elster, 1989, p. 13). Such a perspective recognizes institutions as social constructs which serve society by holding it together and ensuring social stability (Elster, 1989, p. 13; Feinberg and Soltis, 1992). Institutions are themselves held together and maintained by individuals who share, to varying degrees, similar interests or goals.

Elster (1989) reminds us that in order to understand policy implementation it is essential to understand the actions and interactions of individuals. A human-centered focus, versus an institution-centered focus, avoids the pitfall of understanding institutions in terms of key leadership positions such as the study of leadership which is limited to a very narrow spectrum of all the individuals in an institution (Greenfield, 1984, p. 160). Such a limited focus encourages scholars to remove the personal element and focus on the generic administrator devoid of personal identity or interests. Leadership and institutional investigations present a delusive image of administrators and do not adequately account for the diversity of individuals and their organizational roles.

Investigations which emphasize the individual element focus attention on individuals' identification with their own interests and breakdowns in communication that increase the likelihood of policy mutation (Perrow, 1973). The efficiency of bureaucratic organizations is compromised by the interpretations individuals make in policy implementation as the result of their own interests (March, 1984, p. 20). The idea that institutions are rational bureaucratic organizations where decisions are regulated by a structure of rules and sanctions is rejected by the recognition of individual influence. Institutions have been compared to facades that are intentionally designed to mislead observers from the reality that within are individuals who behave as they want (Greenfield, 1984, p. 160).

Individual's Relationship to Policy Implementation

Investigations that focus on the role of individuals reject the idea that an institution can embody any value, or that any one individual can embody the values of an institution. Such individual focused investigations reflect a perspective that recognizes the power of individuals to impact policy implementation and establishes a framework where competing values are uncovered and examined to develop an understanding of policy implementation. How do people negotiate or reinterpret the policy so as to accommodate their own interests? What can be used to discover these individualized interpretations of policy? To further understand the human role, we can frame an individual's relationship to policy implementation in terms of Orientation, Degree, Resources, Activity, Autonomy, Societal Values, Institutional Values, Rationale and Power Relationship.

- Orientation: One's position with respect to attitude, judgment, inclination or interest. Was the individual supportive, oppositional, or neutral toward the policy in question? Did the person voice his or her stance on the policy?

- Degree: Scale of intensity or amount. To what degree did the individual support or oppose the policy? If one opposed the policy in question, to what degree did that person attempt to stop, obstruct, or mutate implementation? Did the individual share his or her opposition or support with others in the organization? What means of communication did she or he use to do this? To whom did he or she communicate the stance on the policy?

- Resources: Action, money, influence, information, expertise, or measure that can be brought to bear to influence or use. What resources were available to the individual that could be used to help or hinder implementation? What types of resources did the individual expend on this policy? What resources were specifically used in communicating the policy?

- Activity: Specific deed, action, or function; use of force, influence, or process. What communication actions did the individual take to support or obstruct policy? How much communication activity did the individual expend to support or obstruct policy? With whom did the individual interact during these communication activities?

- Autonomy: Degree of independence; how closely one has to adhere to prescribed guidelines. A high degree of support or opposition will not have had much impact on expense of energy and resources if the individual had little autonomy to exert influence on policy. What level of autonomy did that person have in his or her position? How does the individual's position influence the communication modes available to her or him?

- Societal Values: Ideals or customs for which people have an affective regard. How did societal values influence implementation? To what extend did the individual accept or reject specific societal values that influenced implementation? How did the actions or decisions of the individual change the societal climate?

- Institutional Values: Professional ideals or customs for which members have an affective regard. How did institutional values influence implementation? How are the institutional values communicated to the individual? To what extend did the individual accept or reject specific institutional values that influenced implementation? How did the actions or decisions of the individual change the institutional climate? How did the institutional climate change the actions or decisions of the individual?

- Rationale: Fundamental, underlying reasons to account for something. What explanation does the individual provide for his or her orientation toward the policy? Does the individual have superseding interests, loyalties or values that conflict with the policy?

- Power Relationship: Degree of status relative to individual position. What type of communication, both informal and formal, occurred between same or different power levels?

The preceding questions establish a framework that informs us about individual perspectives toward policy and policy implementation. These criteria establish a relationship to policy implementation in individual terms and recognize that the relationship between the individual and the organization is reciprocal rather than unidirectional. Additionally, these questions can be re-worded to include issues of both informal and formal means of communication. This framework also takes into account societal and institutional contexts through investigating communication lines that influence individuals, and that individuals change institutions through actions, decisions, and participation in both informal and formal means of communication.

Conclusions

The individual emphasis of the preceding framework is consistent with the work of Bess (1988), that recognizes that ongoing and unresolvable differences exist among institutional participants. The framework also accounts for divisions of labor and labor specialization, which encourage individuals to identify and congregate into smaller units that share similar values, attitudes or perspectives. These smaller units, in addition to organizational divisions of labor, contribute to the differences in communication. These in turn not only have an impact in how policies are interpreted but also in how they are implemented. Individual interests and breakdowns in communication increase the likelihood of irrational behavior and conflict (Perrow, 1973, pp. 2-15). Often the irrational actions are more readily recognized with the breakdowns in communication that occur.

The qualitative scholar can investigate informal communication lines to develop an understanding of how policy is developed, implemented, and how it changes in the interim. A people-centered focus encourages us to better understand the role of individuals throughout the institutional hierarchy in implementing policy and the influence they have in determining its final form. Such an approach recognizes that individuals are not machines, and cannot be programmed to consistently perform in a mechanistic and rational manner. The result is a multi-dimensional understanding of how policy is affected by individuals. We displace the locus of responsibility when we think in terms of how institutions implement policy. Such displacement shifts responsibility from individuals to institutions and compels us to assign blame or praise on constructs rather than the individuals who make and implement decisions.

An examination of the roles of the individual and communication in an institution must be understood in a bi-directional rather than unidirectional framework. A unidirectional communication focus limits access to understanding how a policy is implemented, whereas a bi-directional communication framework expands access to learning how an individual's values, attitudes, and perspectives—the human factors—impact policy implementation or mutation. Recognition of the role of formal and informal communication channels in organizations is critical in discerning the process necessary for effective policy implementation. The framework proposed in this article is an initial point for connecting qualitative research and organizational theories regarding communication in policy implementation. It is a framework for exploring how the individual shapes policy and how the institution shapes policy through the individual.

This article recognizes educational institutions to be complex social structures with multiple agendas, rather than rational-bureaucratic structures that exist in a vacuum (Dellar, 1994). As a social process that sometimes involves the use of informal, rather than formal bureaucratic protocol, policy implementation is an interconnected part of the social structure.

Where there are internally strong political undercurrents there will co-exist important informal communication systems (White, 1990). It is in investigating the role of individuals via a qualitative examination of the communication channels that exist within an organization that the scholar can begin to reassemble the factors that influenced the implementation of policy.

References

Andrews, P. & Herschel, R. (1996). *Organizational communication: Empowerment in a technological society.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin.

Bess, J. (1988). *Collegiality and bureaucracy in the modern university: The influence of information and power on decision-making structures.* New York, NY: Teachers College Press.

Blount, P. (1992). Making history alive for secondary students: Infusing people into the narrative. *Social Studies, 83,* 220-223.

Dellar, G. (1994, April). *Schools as open social systems: A study of site specific restructuring.* Paper presented at the American Educational Research Association, New Orleans, LA.

Duemer, L.S. 1999. Integration in "The last capital of the Confederacy": Case study of Black clergy involvement in the integration process. *The Negro Educational Review, Vol. XLIX,* 107-117.

Elster, J. (1989). *Nuts and bolts for the social sciences.* Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press.

Feinberg, W. & Soltis, J. (1992). *School and society.* New York: Teachers College Press.

Greenfield, T. (1984). Leaders and schools: Willfulness and nonnatural order in organizations. In T. J. Sergiovanni & J. E. Corbally (Eds.), *Leadership and organizational culture: New perspectives on administrative theory and practice* (pp. 142-169). Urbana, IL: University of Illinois Press.

Grim, V. (1995). Integrating oral history into the classroom curriculum: A tool for helping students understand the American and African-American experience. *Teaching History: A Journal of Methods, 20,* 3-19.

Manning, D. (1990). *Hill country teacher: Oral histories from the one-room school and beyond.* New York, NY: Macmillan Publishing.

March, J. (1984). How we talk and how we act: Administrative theory and administrative life. In T. J. Sergiovanni & J. E. Corbally (Eds.), *Leadership and organizational culture: New perspectives on administrative theory and practice* (pp. 18-35). Urbana, IL: University of Illinois Press.

March, J. and Olsen, J. (1979). *Ambiguity and choice in organizations.* Bergen, Sweden: Universitetsforlaget.

Perrow, C. (1973). The short and glorious history of organizational theory. *Organizational Dynamics, 2,* 2-15.

Pressman, J. W., A. (1984). *Implementation.*Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

Sergiovanni, T. (1984). Cultural and competing perspectives in administrative theory and practice. In T. J. Sergiovanni & J. E. Corbally (Eds.), *Leadership and organizational culture: New perspectives on administrative theory and practice* (pp. 1-12). Urbana, IL: University of Illinois Press.

Taylor, F. (1919). *Principles of scientific management.* New York: Harper & Row.

Weber, M. (1947). *The theory of social and economic organizations.* Translated by A. M. Henderson and T. Parsons; edited by T. Parsons. New York: Oxford University Press.

White, K. (1990, November). *The implementation of state-mandated program review: A case study of governance and decision making in community colleges.* Paper presented at the Association for the Study of Higher Education, Saint Louis, MO.

Williams, W. E., R. (1976). *Social program implementation.* New York, NY: Academic Press.

About the Authors

Lee S. Duemer, Ph.D.
Assistant Professor
Texas Tech University
College of Education
Division of Educational Psychology and Leadership
Box 41071
Lubbock, TX 79409-1071

Email: lduemer@ttacs.ttu.edu

Lee S. Duemer is Assistant Professor in the Division of Educational Psychology and Leadership, College of Education at Texas Tech University. He received his Ph.D. in Social, Historical, and Philosophical Foundations of Education from The University of Pittsburgh. He teaches history of education, philosophy of education, and qualitative research. His research interests are history of higher education, and archival qualitative inquiry in higher education.

Sylvia E. Mendez-Morse
Email: Sylvia.Mendez.morse@ttu.edu

Sylvia E. Méndez-Morse is an Assistant Professor in the Division of Educational Psychology and Leadership, College of Education at Texas Tech University. She received her Ph.D. in Educational Administration from The University of Texas at Austin. She teaches classes on Communication for School Leaders, School and Community Relations, Organizational Communication, Instructional Supervision, and Gender Issues in Educational Leadership. Dr. Méndez-Morse has conducted research in educational leadership and educational reform, focusing on administrators leading educational change efforts which improve the instructional needs of language minority students. Her research interests are Latina educational leaders, leadership for social justice, and gender issues in educational leadership.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch-Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 536 times since October 3, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 40 **October 3, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Original Ten: A Multisite Case Study of Florida's Millennium High School Reform Model

Carol A. Mullen
University of South Florida

Citation: Mullen, C. A. (2002, October 3). The original ten: A multisite case study of Florida's Millennium High School reform model, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(40). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n40.html.

Abstract
This study should have immediate utility for the United States and beyond its borders. School-to-work approaches to comprehensive reform are increasingly expected of schools while legislative funding for this purpose gets pulled back. This multisite case study launches the first analysis of the New Millennium High School (NMHS) model in Florida. This improvement program relies upon exemplary leadership for preparing students for postsecondary education *and* for a career or work. Using participants' feedback, the researcher conducted a pilot study of one prototype school and then investigated all 10 original NMHS prototypes. These were examined and compared with the benefits of and challenges to the improvement effort in mind. In all, 15 school leaders were interviewed and 530 school personnel were surveyed for this sample. It was revealed that the millennium program is essentially a grassroots endeavor that continues to depend on the state for administrative and financial support. One lesson learned is that school leadership can function from deep within the organizational tissues of a restructured school. Reformers come in many guises, then, some without formal leadership titles and public recognition. Another lesson is that other schools should expect to achieve similar positive effects, but ongoing support from the public and government is needed for such significant developments. The state policy context of this school improvement model is considered along with implications for further change.

Introduction: School Reform Waves

A significant wave in school reform is gathering momentum from school-to-work (STW) initiatives that have been yielding positive results (Blank, 1997, 1999; Cassel, 1998; Lozada, 1999; Maduakolam, 1999; Mathews, 2000). Schools throughout the nation could find the perspectives and assessments provided in this paper useful for addressing this issue. High schools are being expected to function differently in their vision, purpose, and effects. State and national programs have offered incentives for whole-school reform that help ensure the goals of such legislation. Notably, the School-to-Work Opportunities Act of 1994 (Public Law 103-239) required that schools integrate academic and vocational education to aid the development all students. However, the status of federal law outlining expectations for academic-vocational integration is ambiguous at this time (Medrich, Merola, Ramer, & White, 2000). While the laws governing STW legislation lose potency with the withdrawal of the federal government from education (Scott, Stone, & Dinham, 2001), the trend toward integrated curricular reform continues to grow, with parallel movements across the state of Florida, Texas (Note 1), and elsewhere. This paper is concerned with the

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

manifestation of academic-vocational curricular reform at the state and local level.

This article represents the first academic analysis of Florida's showcase school improvement model. The New Millennium High School (NMHS) movement grew out ofstate legislation that endorses STW as the basis of educational reform. The 10 original NMHS schools offer a vision and process of change that needs study (Florida Department of Education, http://www.firn.edu/doe). Such secondary schools that function as career pathways offer integrated learning and relevant schooling. They also foster the evolution of school-community organizations that partner the schools with business and industry (Mullen, in press; Blank, 1997, 1999).

The NMHS program depends for its success on exemplary leadership and teamwork aimed at preparing students for postsecondary education *and* for a career or work. However, the process of major change was not new to any of the participating schools, and decisions on how to approach this change were influenced by various existing key stakeholder groups, not just the building principal. The strategies used for penetrating the bureaucratic infrastructure of these schools enabled us to gain insight into the role of the principal within the millennium context.

Our results primarily derived from the perspectives of the grassroots reformers themselves. These concur with Schuttloffel's (2000) finding: "In the current school reform environment, crediting successful change to the action of a building principal may be as misleading as the assignment of failure solely to the same principal" (p. 3). Our lessons learned also reinforce Hargreaves' (1998) observation about effective principals and their role in shaping teacher leadership: "One of the most important functions that educational leaders perform is developing their staff. ...The ability and desire [of teachers] to exceed expectations springs from discretionary commitment—from teachers being prepared to work above and beyond the official call of duty, entirely of their own volition" (p. 315).

Two points of validation for undertaking this study emerged during the work: One, the school teams did not have the time, as many admitted, to document their developments and problems, and this was viewed as a definite obstacle. Two, the millennium model exemplifies the kind of nationwide reform expected of many secondary schools, and they will find the results of this study useful as they embark on their transition (Florida Senate, 2001).

Macro View of Florida's Millennium Schools

The millennium project at the prototype schools was essentially a grassroots activity guided by the state of Florida. Spearheaded by faculty, personnel, and administrators, this improvement program is supported by principals and other administrative leaders. This model emphasizes interdisciplinary and cross-disciplinary teaching with a focus on work-based learning, team-building, and shared engagement of all critical tasks.

New Millennium High School is a designation granted to a select number of secondary schools that had initiated restructuring plans for a new school-wide curriculum prior to state-level funding. In 1998, policymakers established that a prototype curriculum system building on vocational education was needed to prepare students for work and postsecondary education (Brawer, 1998). The Florida Millennium Project Task Force claims the NMHS school curriculum is "as academically rigorous as the traditional college preparatory pathway" (Brawer, p. 5). The representatives in our study provided a similar description, with an added emphasis on the need for schools to develop "supportive learning communities with cross-curricular threads and tireless commitment."

Educational and vocational researchers argue that school-to-work initiatives, when combined with academic preparation, can promote many gains. Among these are the achievement of postsecondary goals, job readiness and career development, lifelong learning, and economic self-reliance of students (Maduakolam, 1999; Mathews, 2000). A major gain is nationwide and global competitiveness in a response to a trend toward the increased competitiveness of nations (Scott, et al., 2001). The relevance of schooling—regarding the academic performance and work readiness of students—has been a pressing concern for over a century. It is believed that many high schools continue to operate as outdated institutions almost exclusively focused on the college-bound population (Lozada, 1999). A possible solution to this seemingly entrenched problem is for high schools to integrate academic and vocational education in order to become centers of dynamic, relevant learning.

The NMHS schools were considered to be capacity-building institutions when funded. (Note 2) For this reason, respondents did not view the millennium program as a comprehensive reform effort per se but rather as an expression of ongoing change. Being designated as a millennium school was valuable because it provided an opportunity for the schools to make improvements along an already traveled path. However, the capacity-building strengths and contextual supports of these funded schools ranged widely, and so in some instances the changes seemed more significant than in others. Six of the 10 NMHS schools were rural (all of these were small except for one) and four, urban (two small and two large).

Although these were all programmatically accelerated schools, their socioeconomic situations varied considerably: Higher poverty and fewer resources characterized the small rural schools. The number of students at the schools ranged from approximately 1200 to 3000. The racial make-up of the schools also varied, with minority student populations ranging anywhere from 7% to 25%. The minorities were mostly African American with a rising population of Hispanics. In one school only, the minority population was relatively high, about 65%. English Speakers of Other Languages (ESOL) populations ranged widely across the sites from almost negligible to 40%.

These populations were characterized as generally high-poverty and low-literacy, both in English and in the student's native language. While the numbers of students at the schools reflected the demographics of the surrounding counties, this did not always extend to their ethnic representation. Comments to this effect were: "We have fewer black students than blacks in our county but don't know why." The schools, all federally assisted Title I institutions, had a "free and reduced lunch" status. Students from the rural schools were living in circumstances that swung widely from comfortable to homeless: "We have kids living on their own, often with cousins, and with their families but with other families renting the same apartment."

Changing demographics and migratory populations were reported to have posed a significant challenge for all of the schools. The largest urban school in our sample faced a "tremendous demographic shift" reflected in a student population representing 40 countries and over 20 languages: "We have the largest Guatemalan/Mayan population in the U.S. And we've got language facilitators that speak Hmoung, Konjobal, Urdu in addition to Haitian-Creole." Ethnic groups at this school include Muslims, Christians, Jews, Hindus, Azerbaijani, Serbs, and Croats. The migrant Hispanic population was in flux at all of the millennium schools, but at this particular school the Hispanic population has a 40% mobility rate, the highest in the state. Because of its transitory migrant population, one rural county school was actually required to provide a second FTE (Full-Time Equivalency) count to the state.

As these statistics suggest, the NMHS schools all encountered various challenges of student poverty, diversity, and mobility. However, some were better positioned than others for capacity-building. Nonetheless, significant work was carried out across the sites, a development that could inspire onlookers.

Multisite Case Methods

Pilot Study of Prototype School

This New Millennium High School research was launched with a pilot study of one prototype school. This early study provided the groundwork needed for understanding the "millennium" phenomenon at the school level, and for producing tentative results. Through this process, five key areas of leadership were identified and further explored in the multisite case study: improved communications and collaborative support structures; development of a career guidance program as a lighthouse mechanism for change; encouragement of teacher empowerment, investment in research and development, and shared governance; curriculum integration for supporting students' career development; and creating school-community systems of accountability and applied learning.

These areas were turned into open-ended research questions on the interview/survey instrument, accompanied by additional probing questions. For the pilot study that was published, the self-report of the principal was elicited and compared with the school-generated data and the staff's progress reports. The school's changes seemed to bring about improvement in many critical areas, notably its overall profile with regard to racial diversity, student attendance, graduation, and achievement scores.

Overview of Qualitative Multisite Methods

All administrators and staff specialists who were contacted at the 10 NMHS schools agreed to participate. The 100% response rate was unusual for a study dependent on the good graces or interest of persons unknown to the researcher (principal investigator). As a bonus, we were also given access to reformers functioning deep within the organizational tissues of the restructured millennium schools. The typical profile of these individuals was a female staff member or specialist without a leadership title.

The cooperation of the school personnel may have resulted, in each case, from several factors. These include: 1) the researcher's lack of affiliation with the state funding agency and the non-bureaucratic, evaluative quality of this study; 2) the school's awareness of the value of applied/action research in helping informed changes to be made (Jacobs, 1991); 3) the school's desire to gain recognition for its goals and successes; 4) the school's desire to make its criticisms of the millennium program heard by the public and the state; and 5) the school's eagerness to share with other schools and to serve, where appropriate, as a template for change. (A caveat was placed on the role of change agent: Because programs were under development, results were not completely known.)

This follow-up study provided perspective on the millennium effort beyond that underway at one school. Through this expanded investigation, various kinds of leaders emerged, busy behind the scenes. For example, the vital role of the career specialist was revealed, and so the interviewing was adjusted to monitor this individual's contribution. Also, whereas the principal stood out as the catalyst of the pre-millennium and continuing reforms at the pilot school, this was untrue for most of the other schools.

Data collection. Multiple data for each school included not only taped telephone interviews and surveys but also relevant curriculum documents.In all, 15 school leaders were interviewed and 530 school personnel were surveyed, with 6 to 26 surveys completed by key players from each school. The interviewee pool consisted of one school director, six principals, three assistant principals, three career specialists, one instructor, and a technology coordinator. Most of these individuals filled additional roles at their sites that included research coordinator, department head, teacher mentor, and dean of students. The interviews lasted between 20 and 60 minutes each.

Procedures. The same questions were used on the survey instrument as for the interviews. This way, the responses could be compared, especially since different stakeholder groups were being consulted. The scope of this study therefore extended beyond the principal's self-report to that provided by other school leaders. By involving various stakeholders, we were able to cross-reference statements (from the surveys and interviews) to see if the views that emerged revealed any patterns. As the next section will show, similar themes emerged that suggest a shared view was held by the stakeholders across the 10 sites, except where challenges and circumstances varied and idiosyncratic views were expressed.

The principal investigator and research assistant used established data coding methods in order to analyze the data (Miles & Huberman, 1994). Interview transcripts were read independently and analyzed in order to compare results. Key words and ideas were identified and salient pattern themes developed from the transcripts and surveys. Matrices were designed to display the overall results. Our conversations about the emergent themes were taped and analyzed. Support for claims was established through these systematic approaches to interpreting the data; the instrument itself had been validated by the pilot study.

Thematic Description of Results

As previously indicated, the change initiatives undertaken at the NMHS schools were mostly in gear before the state grant was awarded. Despite challenges, all grant recipients were able to enhance existing or planned programs, and to develop some capacity for continued developments.

The thematic description that follows emerged from the questions on the survey (provided in the form of subheads, such as "benefits of the improvement effort") combined with the patterns from the data. The results suggest benefits of and challenges to the improvement effort in these specific areas: vision guiding the school, work-based programs, role of school leadership, teacher involvement in change, collaborative character and team work, career academy reorganization, professional development and staff morale, student achievement, agendas for further change, ways to assist schools, points of pride, and messages for the state and nation.

Stakeholders' voices are represented in this larger depiction of a grassroots movement that was, paradoxically, spawned by state policy reform. Teachers' views have yet to be heard in the debate on educational reform, as their voices have "often been muted or stifled in the debates about schooling" (Mitchell & Weber, 1999, p. 187).

Benefits of the Improvement Effort

The question of benefits elicited reflection from stakeholders on what it means to be a millennium school. Responses converged, highlighting key areas. For example, the value of being acknowledged for doing something worthwhile and contemporary for one's students, communities, and state was repeatedly mentioned. One individual commented, "It's nice being considered one of the top and to be associated with a select group in Florida." Words such as "recognition," "prestigious," "honor," and "strategic" were often used in this context.

Additional responses covered a myriad of benefits. Notably, these referred to the opportunity to *collaborate* and "learn from other people—obviously that's part of what it's all about"; to *mentor* by "taking responsibility for sharing the results of our work with as many schools as possible"; to treat the student population as an *investment* in the future: "Most of our students return to our county so we have a vested interest in doing a good job"; to *stand out* from other schools and "model something different"; and, importantly, to *make significant changes* in practice related to program and community development: "This program has given us the opportunity for re-examining practice, heightening integration, and making better connections across programs and with people internally and externally." Several people provided this important and enduring caveat—"Although being designated as a millennium school meant it was neat to be different, this feeling wore off when the state grew disinterested."

Another benefit was that the schools' popularity increased once perceived as relevant to the times: "Students are flooding our school, visiting us with their parents—once admitted, our career teams hook them up with their selected vocational field." In terms of public relations, the teams across the NMHS sites increased their advertisement of programs, presented to community groups, and involved more people from the community on advisory boards. For example, one school's advisory list increased from 43 business partners to over 650 after it was awarded the millennium grant. A smaller school currently has 45 businesses that participate in its program, after having had no such partnership.

Finally, the benefit of being a millennium school had apparently set in motion a more inclusive approach to learning for all student populations: "Regular high school focuses on students who will go to college where many non-college students fall through the cracks." This benefit was simultaneously perceived as an obstacle. Many critiqued how America has a rigid view of education that favors the college graduate: "If you don't go to college you're simply not successful as a human being. And we're fighting that view, which has to come from the faculty."

Obstacles to the Improvement Effort

Not surprising, problems of various types were associated with this millennium effort, a challenging reform initiative. (Two schools reported not having experienced any significant obstacles.) One issue concerned difficulty with soliciting "buy-in" and contributions from senior staff. Most of the schools had perceived their older faculty as counter-productive to the changes: "We have small groups of teachers who've been here forever and don't want to try something new." It was believed that most senior staff did not understand the relevance of career preparation classes or the movement away from strictly teaching academics. At one such school, a leader offered that everyone has a responsibility for enabling senior staff members to "feel safer in the new environment." On a positive note, a few individuals had experienced leadership from the veteran body of teachers: "Seasoned teachers saw some things that needed changing and shared their ideas with the rest of us."

A second problem raised by half of the schools was that the academy model had to be modified due to less-than-idealistic conditions. Most respondents raised the issue of discontinued millennium funding in this context and questioned whether the academies could be sustained. They foresee that definite changes will need to be made to their academy models. However, the strong conviction about the value of this restructuring model seemed to outweigh even these concerns: "Our academy model needs to be kept alive, even if what we end up with is a shadow of its former self."

A problem of significant proportion centered on financial support: "My biggest plea is that there be monies out there for continuing the good work already undertaken." The reports from this small rural school indicate that it is "just scraping by." A consensus was that vocational programs are very expensive to develop because they "require separate career support and equipment." To complicate matters, the software, tools, and materials used by the schools were apparently not packaged in a "teacher-friendly" way. It proved wearisome to be engaged in "a constant battle to stay abreast of technology and software, and somehow find the money to update equipment and replace old and malfunctioning computers." In contrast with this picture, two large schools claimed financial stability: "We've been very lucky; so far we've had the money to do what we really want, and now we have as many computers as students here." These schools were, needless to say, anomalies.

Speculation about the issue of how state funding is handled for schools undergoing reform led the majority of leaders to critique the motives of the state: "I think the whole NMHS thing has never been completely 'bought' by the Florida legislature, which is why there's no more money for us." One person ventured that "The word 'millennium' connoted some kind of humanism to the fundamentalist people in the legislature who reacted to that." Another believed that with the NMHS model "you're fighting the idea the public and legislature have that you're going to take a pediatrician and turn him into a plumber." Frustration over this issue of withdrawn funds culminated in the fear that "this millennium program will just blow away like everything else in education because we have a history of non-funded mandates."

Other complaints highlighted the overloading of faculty with teaching and planning responsibilities: "Our teachers have to keep up with the reforms while teaching six classes each semester while challenging each other's perspectives by hammering away during planning times." Also, teachers had to continue satisfying the state's curriculum benchmarks so that students would be prepared for the FCAT (Florida Comprehensive Achievement Test). (Note 3) At the same time, the millennium program expected the teachers to "think outside the box, which has been difficult." Toward this end, the teachers have been "forced to not use lesson plans as one strategy for helping them to look at teaching in new ways."

As a result of probing questions, some of the school leaders identified fear as an element of teacher innovation and change: "All of this [expectation for growth] has been a great consternation to the faculty, very scary actually." As Hargreaves's (1998) ground-breaking work on the sociology of emotions suggests, the risk of teachers' work is probably compounded in reform contexts that are imposed and associated with high-stakes testing. In the case of the millennium program, the teachers' emotions would have been shaped more by a feeling of power than powerlessness because of the self-initiated direction of the changes; however, the accountability climate was intense, as was the external bureaucratic pressure.

Notably, managerial issues related to the grants had proven cumbersome and frustrating—new mechanisms had to be established. As one leader shared: "We had to create lots of forms and figure out how to record the information and code it." More bluntly put, "The kind of bean counting that I had with this grant was just outrageous. The DOE [Department of Education] didn't know the structure of what they wanted in the [curriculum] report until 6 months into the grant, and then you had to work retroactively to try to piece together the bean they wanted counting." (Note 4) As another example of a management issue, the marketing of the millennium program proved very trying for some of the schools. One shared, "People have an ingrained image of technical education that it's for kids who can't go to college or for those academically challenged." Apparently the mind-set of the guidance counselors and teachers had to change before anything different could be expected of the parents and the public.

Even the notion of leading change was associated with stress because of what seemed implicitly owed to the public: "It takes a tremendous amount of courage and commitment to be out front as a 'cutting edge' institution while being scrutinized." The public's misguided view of the NMHS initiative as a "been there, done that" step backwards was also considered challenging: "We struggle with using new terms to describe new situations to avoid hearing, 'Oh, that was tried in 1952 and it failed.'" A fresh language (e.g., millennium school and career academy) was hence used to foster new understanding.

Vision Guiding the School

Respondents described vision in a pragmatic way. Vision was equated with the mission of the school and collective efforts toward student improvement. Distinctions were thus not made, for the most part, between "vision" and "mission." These concepts were apparently viewed as one and the same within the world of practice. When asked what vision currently guides their reform work, leaders shared their schools' mission statements: These supported educational learning within a safe environment that is responsive to a continually changing, diverse society.

Connected to our purposes, the schools' vision/mission reflected the goals for improvement within the context of the millennium program. For example, the expansion of currently existing programs was highlighted (e.g., "Faculty are committed to creating curriculum that has been negotiated with business constituents and is problem-based with real-world applications"), as well as the academic readiness and technical preparation of students for work and for college (e.g., "Our student is going to graduate with technical knowledge and relevant skills that will let her get a job while she goes to college and at the same time be prepared for college"). These goals meant that the schools aspired to provide the learner with a *solid knowledge base* ("having the foundation students need to be secure and successful"), a *relevant and progressive education* ("preparing students to be on the 'cutting-edge' so they will have more options available," and *lifelong opportunities* ("having all doors open to our students and finances to get them where they want to go").

The mission/vision of these schools encompassed the demands of the broader community and specifically that learner not likely headed for postsecondary education. A typical comment to this effect was, "We need to give those students options that aren't going to college so they will be vocational completers and be job ready." Indeed, participants hinted at the need for a strong political agenda that redefines the schooling process itself to accommodate a vocationally-oriented focus: "We changed how we educate so that all of our kids, no matter what they plan to do—go on to college, the military, or work, are suited for that purpose." This technical pathway is viewed as integral to, not separate from, a rigorous academic curriculum for all: "We're committed to a Tech-Prep pathway or comprehensive secondary education program of study that models academic achievement and rigorous real-world curriculum."

Work-Based Programs

The millennium schools used the state funding to implement new programs and strengthen existing ones. The focus on the academic-vocational connection, involving curricular development across departments, spawned teaming: "The grant allowed us to integrate academics with technical curriculum and to have teachers working side-by-side along with their students." Other benefits included making improvements in career academies already in place (e.g., "We had the monies to expand the capacity of our engineering and manufacturing academy"), and expanding enrichment opportunities provided to students (e.g., "We offered shadowing and internship experiences through the academies"). With funding available, personnel (e.g., career specialists) were hired in areas of need, faculty were trained in the context of the millennium goals, and expensive equipment was purchased.

The school teams studied relevant information pointing to areas of work in which employees were needed or would be before creating career academies and mustering appropriate expertise. Programs were developed across academies or departments in major occupational areas (e.g., business technology, engineering technology, health sciences, hospitality/tourism, performing arts, criminal justice, and air force). All programs included pertinent business and industry certifications.

Role of School Leadership

As indicated earlier, the catalysts within the schools that sparked the millennium program were typically persons other than the designated school leader. Principals shared, and with apparent pride, how "the initiative for the new millennium grant and model was grassroots, from the faculty up." Another's story of leadership relayed how "a couple of people, my assistant principal and career specialist, asked, 'How about if we apply for the millennium grant, since we're doing all this stuff pretty much anyway? I said, 'What do you need?' They replied, 'Time to be locked up in a room for a few days.' 'Go for it,' I said."

Change agents, defined here as millennium professionals committed to ongoing reform within the context of the school's collective goals, were hard at work behind the scenes. These individuals, mostly women holding fairly modest positions within the school's hierarchy, could otherwise go unnoticed. The person or group that wrote the proposal for the millennium grant at each school became the engine for driving the work aimed at both furthering and sustaining its positive effects. One message?—reformers come in many guises, some without leadership titles, hence unassuming and unsuspected.

The millennium principals were usually liaisons that interfaced with the district school office to provide administrative support and to use power where necessary. These school leaders were not micro-managers. One typical response was, "Our principal assumed an administrative role regarding district rules, regulations, and procedures, but did not get involved in spearheading the work or in the day-to-day workings of the program." Principals were also active to varying degrees during the implementation of the program as enablers. As one typical principal statement was, "I'd been a real leader in changing some of the programs when I came here but excellent people spearheaded and wrote the grant." The school's survey data concurred with this explanation of the different leadership roles assumed by the principal and the other leaders.

In exceptional cases, principals whose roles had gone beyond sponsorship to proactive leadership seemed to find it necessary. All three had essentially responded to challenging or unusual circumstances. In one instance, the principal had set the stage for vision-planning with the faculty, although the staff had, even in this case, discovered the grant opportunity and acted upon it. Context is crucial, and at this high school traditional structures that separated faculty were so entrenched that the principal "decided to be that person who pushes to get the teachers motivated so they can see the 'big picture.'" In another instance, a principal who was newly hired had "brought the millennium vision with him and introduced it to the faculty." Yet a third leader, the founder of a new school, envisioned using the new millennium program to design the institution. In order to accomplish this, this principal worked alone with a guidance counselor. She shared how he preferred to "hire those who could be molded to the philosophical orientation of the millennium school, unlike those who had taught for years and were not open to changing."

Alternatively, the norm that was established for the millennium sites involved leadership "from the trenches" where "teachers were very active in changing and improving our school." The staff was prepared for their leadership roles and aspired to higher professional development standards. Non-faculty leaders described how they had "offered in-service after in-service for teachers and also paid stipends."

Teacher Involvement in Change

With the millennium grant in hand, a staff team representing the curricular spectrum typically headed each school's program. This team was typically composed of an administrative council made up of department heads working specifically with teachers, educating them on the needs of industry and business. But not all of the teachers at the schools assumed ownership for the work or were invested in the importance of the changes: "The teachers did not all understand the concept of the new millennium and what it could do for our school; in fact, a few felt put upon to do extra work." Similarly, but from a career specialist's perspective: "Many teachers are leery of change so I encouraged them to see how the initiatives would benefit the students in the long run." The expectation for teachers to change may have been experienced by some as pressure to conform, as this statement suggests: "We [the career specialist and grant coordinator] recruited and interviewed the academic teachers to make sure they went along with the philosophy of the millennium high school—our vocational teachers were already invested."

The climate in which the millennium program was introduced seemed to vary somewhat from one school to the next. However, few schools revealed having to prod teachers to participate and most stressed that participation was enthusiastic. Thus, the pervasive climate across the sites appears to have been positive. As one principal reported: "I have a very participatory type of administration and everyone is on the leadership team here." Several specialists at another site shared how it was their "job to help guide the teachers who were already encouraged, wanting to participate to prepare their kids for careers." Similarly, at a different school "all staff who were active brought something to the table, either technical expertise or enthusiasm." In some cases staff showed a willingness to commit once the funding had been secured: "Once we got the grant and learned how to spend the money, the department heads and the vocational teachers became much more involved in staff development and inservicing."

Collaborative Character and Team Work

The collaborative work of the teachers and staff included both formal and informal elements, with an emphasis on the latter. Most schools, excepting the small rural ones, functioned "totally as teams, with everyone part of some team." Faculty and staff formed active technology teams, career teams, curriculum integration teams, community advisory teams, and more. An example of curriculum integration teaming was the pairing of academic teachers with vocational teachers. Administrators were teamed with particular academics. All work related to the millennium program was carried out in teams.

Teaming facilitated curriculum integration—departments working effectively intra-departmentally and inter-departmentally. Respondents explained that the individual disciplines became cross-curricular in design through such efforts as small engines teachers and math teachers team teaching, and English teachers creating curricula with vocational teachers. English teachers also partnered with local businesses on curricula aimed at, for example, effective job correspondence and interviewing skills. In the smallest rural school, the entire faculty team planned during shared breaks.

Career Academy Reorganization

The *career academy model* was defined as a "small school within a larger school whereby students and teachers develop identification with each other, which is essential." One practitioner's view of academies referred to "the layout of what we call 'teaching-learning spaces' for permitting us more individualized student attention." Career academies feature the arrangement of each vocational area (e.g., health education) in a designated building/space.

Some act as magnets for the school. The overall effort involves collaboration across different program areas and early concentration on identifying the career interests of students. The career academy structure reorganizes school programs to promote relevant and rigorous curriculum using three major elements: small learning communities, a college preparatory curriculum with a career theme, and partnerships with the community. The success of career academies in improving student performance could help curtail Florida's 40% high school dropout rate.

Across the sites this consensus emerged: Regardless of what system of organization was being used, the career academy model was, for each, a "work-in-progress." Also, the smaller schools had no choice but to develop their own variations on this program. Their arrangements resembled a departmental version of the academy model whereby students, enrolled in a program such as health education, took the required courses and received industry certification; teachers worked across the curriculum to provide integration. In contrast, the larger schools have found the full academy model to be essential for survival: "We're just too large with 3000 students, so we're creating smaller learning communities just to make educational learning manageable—modernizing in the process is a plus." One such school that has managed to create academies has yet to incorporate academics: "We've got academies with courses like carpentry without English and math integrated into them, as that's still on the drawing board."

Finally, the academy model was valued for the opportunity it gave students to make curricular connections and apply essential tenets: "Our kids are seeing the interdependence of all subject areas that combine academics with a career and real-world focus." Whether schools used the "pure" or modified academy framework, it was agreed that this system helped students who had not fared well in basic, conventional programs. On this note, respondents shared: "Our educators reinforce essential course concepts through curricular integration and extension into the community"; and "The academies facilitate the diversity of ways students learn and teachers teach, other than 'chalk and talk'."

Professional Development and Staff Morale

Professional development may have contributed to increased staff morale for the schools, as this powerful statement suggests: "Our school-community partnerships have definitely caused us to rethink, rewrite, open our minds, and change our old paradigms of learning." Isolation experienced by the teachers appears to have been ameliorated through cross-curricular team planning that was nestled within a local advisory council structure. These school-community councils provided realistic assessment and ongoing support: "People representing local businesses meet with us across all program areas on a monthly basis, and discuss concerns that the teachers have in the classroom and with the new curriculum." In addition to improving relationships, this cooperative learning and advising experience has given "the community a 'buy-in' now that they know what goes on at our school."

Another feature of teacher development was the extensive inservice training sponsored by the schools. Principals who were unable to describe in any detail the activities undertaken inadvertently reinforced the role of teacher leadership. Estimates of the number of participating faculty and non-faculty personnel ranged from over 50% to 100%. At least one school's budgetary investment in professional development approximated $100,000 annually. Teachers across the sites were paid a stipend for training in various areas: technology integration, cross-curricular development, the senior capstone project, and standardized test scores. Staff attended many state and national conferences, such as High Schools that Work and National Educational Technology. Teachers also found it useful to visit other prototype locations to learn more about the on-site implementation of well-developed academies.

These various modes of work apparently proved motivating. They were, for example, thought to increase teaching effectiveness through such means as access to technology. New inclusiveness in decision making also appears to have contributed to the morale and empowerment of the staff across the schools, despite frustrations (reported earlier). Administrators shared, "Teachers now have choices, such as in the areas in which they want to team and how, and we don't tell them what to do—they figure it out." Importantly, faculty were heard to concur: "This millennium opportunity has been a big boost for us," and "There's empowerment for us in the ways that the teams work and how we want them to work."

In summary, respondents stated that teacher morale had increased via these three avenues: increased professional development opportunities, intensified relations with the community, and improved methods for enhancing student learning. This last is exemplified in the following: "Many teachers now have computers—the money has had direct impact on making life better for their students."

Student Achievement

When queried about evidence for claims that the millennium program had been responsible for increased gains in student achievement, no direct correlation was provided. However, factors identified as having made a significant difference for one school applied to the others. New and improved conditions, such as smaller class sizes and learning communities as well as applied work-based learning, were believed to have contributed to higher test scores. Typical comments were: "We came up on SAT's [Sanford Achievement Test, Ninth Edition/SAT-9)] last year [2000] 14% over the year before. The fact that we almost doubled the number of students taking them and still went up was a clear indication that the millennium program yielded major results for us." Another similarly echoed: "Given our large ESOL population, the fact that we came up at all in our scores is amazing." Someone else announced, "Our standardized test scores in the last 2 years have gone up and are among the highest scores in the county."

Through the pilot study that was conducted for this broader investigation, the school's test scores were carefully tracked in the context of the millennium program. In all areas of testing and overall success (graduation rate, college readiness rate, employment statistics) the school had shown a noticeable increase; scores on standardized tests for 2000–2001 had even risen above the state and national scores (Mullen, in press). However, as another millennium school pointed out, "It's hard to say how much of our improvement is based on the changes we've made [predictor variables] or on other things, such as the different groups of kids that come through every year [intervening variables]." Because all of the schools dealt with predictor variables (the millennium program and planned changes) and intervening variables (forces not anticipated or controlled, such as changing demographics), no direct correlation can be made. Although a corresponding link between the millennium reform and student learning cannot be assumed from these changes, the trend in this direction certainly seems promising.

Indicators of student success include the *teacher-student relationship* and its personal quality: "This program has really brought the whole school into a one-to-one relationship with each student; this process changes attitudes because you begin to see each other on a human level." Apparently students and teachers alike appreciated the new opportunity for closeness that the academies provided. Supporting this picture, the guidance department, functioning as a career team, was uniformly perceived as having become an invaluable support to teachers, students, and parents.

Advisory boards, in their partnership with the schools, were positively assessed. They were believed to have supported student achievement in at least four ways: 1) providing input on instructional development, 2) sponsoring on-site internships, 3) assessing student progress, and 4) providing industry and local certification for work-based programs. As a major effect of this support, students were generally kept on track by the career teams whose work was synergistically enabled through the advisory boards.

Also, the establishment of career centers had assisted student achievement across the sites. The centers considered state-of-the art flourished: "We've got a career center with 21 new computers hooked up to the Internet—it's used a lot." Students were expected to use technology in their presentations and connect their learning to their career goals. For some schools, though, the logistics of using insufficient and outdated software was evident: "Imagine trying to prepare kids to enter the business world when you have a business lab that runs on Windows 3.1—we had to build the connections outside our doors."

Finally, deeper and more lasting effects underscored changes in the *value of learning* through practical application and real-life experience. The curriculum seemed to shift from being a state-imposed albatross to a source of internal engagement: "The millennium model made the curriculum come alive for the kids who could finally see the relevance of what they're learning to the real world."

Agendas for Further Change

Major agendas for further improvement emphasized areas needing attention and support. For example, all millennium representatives aspire to enhance their relationships with the business/industry community. They aim to increase opportunities for industry certification and alignment of the curriculum with the real world. Specifics along these lines included "adding more business partners," "increasing our exposure in the community by significantly enhancing our work-based learning environment," and "eliciting more buy-in from our school-community for distance learning and career initiatives." A few mentioned the need to improve the senior capstone project by working more closely with the community.

A school-based area targeted for further change was the somewhat murky notion of cross-curricular integration. School leaders called for clarification from the state regarding the expected dynamics of this kind of work. Specifically, they emphasized needing "more academic and technical development and integration to enhance the relevance of learning"; "an increased overlap of our vocational areas with academics," and "a deepening of the meaning of 'integrated curriculum.'"

Interestingly, several respondents identified the need for greater ownership over the practice of leadership at the school level: "Create an atmosphere that is called leadership—it's important to recognize that you can be a custodian and provide leadership for those people you work with." As an example of taking ownership, many articulated plans for obtaining funding to continue the work accomplished: "Our main focus is on hunting down more grants to make sure we have money for a guidance counselor and career specialist"; and, in summary, "Funding is our top concern—to enhance and continue programs."

Ways to Assist the Schools

More guidance from the state was requested for carrying out the new millennium work. All agreed that this meant a focus was needed on "stronger DOE [Department of Education] support, less equivocation, and a concrete plan that doesn't vacillate according to political administration." Others called for assistance with the millennium goal of connecting with the real world of business and industry. The state was strongly advised to increase its effectiveness vis-à-vis the millennium program by developing "a better reporting system," "a streamlined bureaucracy," and "a clearer idea of expectations." Someone summed up these critical sentiments: "You've got a system here in Florida of encumbrances."

Participants thought that the Department of Education probably needed support from the state: "When the DOE does these programs Florida needs to acknowledge them." A strong message sent to the state recommended commitment to initiatives beyond the short term: "If you want teachers to stand behind innovation, then it has to be known that these are programs everyone is going to stand behind—they shouldn't just disappear." Scott and colleagues (2001) link this concern to a larger pattern of erratic school funding that contributes to teacher discontent and even erosion of the education profession.

The respondents asked for more time to work toward the expectations for outstanding performance. Areas specified to this effect were professional development, instructional preparation, curriculum integration structures, and shared workloads. The need for training in integrative instructional delivery strategies was underscored. Teachers also desire time to "visit other schools to find solutions to similar problems." In fact, some argued that "a comprehensive plan for professional development" could only continue with monetary support. Smaller classes were also supported for enhancing student learning.

Points of Pride

School accomplishments were generally expressed as points of pride. Student success received praise in such areas as the senior capstone project, the mock interview process, and especially accountability assumed for one's education: "Our students now feel they own their future and are responsible for it."

Program highlights were also mentioned as noteworthy. These include the infusion of career development from grade 9 to 12, the use of business/industry certifications, the high quality of vocational programs, the establishment of Bright Future Scholarships and others, opportunities for distance learning, articulation of credits with community colleges, responsiveness of business partners to sponsoring internships, active student-run school facilities (e.g., restaurants and banks), bustling career/technology laboratories and centers, popular health careers programs, increased standardized test scores, and the employment success of graduates. These features all evidently resulted from the integration of "real life experiences in the curriculum" combined with the increased motivation of students to learn.

Even the millennium vision/misson itself constituted a source of pride: "We provide a learning environment with a practical yet visionary focus on integrating technology and education."

Messages for the State and Nation

Most notably, the schools called for improved efforts from the state in the areas of communication, recognition, support, and especially funding. In the absence of continued funding, schools are forced into creative solutions such as downsizing and reorganizing their academies.

This optimistic message was sent to high schools interested in adopting the career academy approach to student learning: "If we could do it, any school can." Other schools were advised to designate individuals as career specialists and program implementers, without teaching responsibilities. One individual encouraged that change can proceed more modestly: "Just work with what you have—we did not overhaul the whole school." However, the millennium schools generally warned that the effort is very demanding: "It's tough trying to be all things to all people, something comprehensive models expect."

A consensus emerged that the millennium model only makes good sense because it prepares students for the next level of their lives toward the "ultimate goals of being self-supportive and better prepared as citizens in the world." These programs were reported to be successful learning communities that provide a safe place for learning. Enthusiasm was clearly voiced: "The millennium school is a great place to send your kids to school."

The schools want the public to hear about the millennium concept and to learn firsthand what it can look like in practice. Even the most "challenged" school had this to say: "We may only be a small rural impoverished county with zero growth, but we've been able to do great things at our school—come visit us and see for yourself."

Reflections

This article responds to the call of Lieberman, Saxl, and Miles (2000) to describe how schools actually create structures for improvement: "There are few precedents, few models, and no guidelines" (p. 348). With this goal in mind, this study of Florida's site-based improvement model builds upon stakeholders' models of practice. Our results combined with the literature suggest that schools operating as NMHS prototypes can significantly and holistically improve (Mullen, in press; Brawer, 1998). Research indicates that students excel when schools offer a dual curriculum focused on postsecondary education and the career or workforce (e.g., Berryman & Bailey, 1992; Blank, 1997, 1999).

As has been described, the new millennium model attempts to make headway with internal and external development as well as accountability to constituents. A premium is being placed on educational institutions that can act as a catalyst for the nation's schools in developing a comprehensive, integrated system that closes the pervasive gap between academics and work. Generally, schools can probably benefit from exposure to such prototypes that show how leadership structures and program development can be redirected to focus on relevance and rigor.

Schools can also improve by decentralizing and hence increasing their capacity for site-based management through school-community control (Mullen, in press; Leithwood, 2001). The NMHS movement, while dependent upon local, grassroots involvement for its success, is not to be viewed as separate in its mission or operations from the state: The state's role in endorsing the millennium vision as well as related reforms (e.g., High Schools That Work) was paramount. Local and state leadership can serve to enhance and reinforce one another. Fullan's (1999) change model idealistically demonstrates in the context of school reform policy that top-down (state-to-school) and bottom-up (school-to-state) leadership can provide the necessary momentum for change toward coherence and cohesion.

Applying Fullan's model to this study makes one wonder wherein the balance of power lies between schools and the state. For those millennium schools that struggle as impoverished rural sites, their very real dependence on the state for financial support will determine their outcomes and successes over time. The reality for the NMHS prototypes as a whole is that their financial dependence upon the state is combined with the need for endorsement and approved guidelines for reform. Reform cannot occur in a vacuum without accountability to the state and public.

These funded schools could be viewed as a "legislated" or oxymoronic grassroots movement that is, in many ways, similar to other public institutions. Take the accountability of test preparation and scores, for example. The continuing responsibility for high performance on standardized tests for these over-loaded schools has heightened the tension between the decentralizing effort of the school-communities and the centralizing effort of the state. As has been increasingly shown, high-stakes testing weakens the position of schools and communities to control their own learning process (Caputo-Pearl, 2001; Waite, Boone, & McGhee, 2001). To what extent, then, even the millennium model can enable a grassroots base of power to endure remains to be seen.

Schools that are centralized or aligned with governmental mandates probably overly state the leadership role of the building principal. But the authority and even activism of teachers in concert with other stakeholders can shift this paradigm and even re-make it (Glickman, 1998). To varying degrees, the original millennium schools represent shared governance models, even in those exceptional cases where principals "kick-started" the initiatives and where not all teachers participated. The professional capacity of the staff—recognized by Sergiovanni (2000) as a critical ingredient in any leadership endeavor or school innovation program—appears to have increased through the millennium initiative.

Not to be overlooked, criticisms of the NMHS model from those who had experienced its daily ramifications were varied and at times stark. Notably, one undeniable issue concerned conformity—having to mold to the philosophy of the New Millennium High School. Those cast as non-cooperative may have been resistant, not simply disinterested—a recognized but untapped dimension of this research. As Goodlad (1984) and Mitchell and Weber (1999) have pointed out, teachers can subvert or deflect change when policies of curricula are viewed as imposed and even harmful, or not beneficial to student learning.

Policy Implications for Continued Success

The Florida Senate Bill (2001) would have promoted the cause of vocational-technical education at the high school level, but it failed to become legislation in 2001. We speculate that the policy, which would have legislated whole-school reform for all high schools in Florida, was probably considered overly ambitious and risky. The state legislature will need to provide dollars to fully implement any such policy. Schools that are "kick-started" in the direction of reform tend to be abandoned, as in the case of the millennium schools.

The question of sustainability for transforming schools is a national issue (Mullen & Graves, 2000). The literature forecasts that STW initiatives may erode or even disappear without federal funds (Hettinger, 1998). The investment of both capital and people is critical. It is expensive to fund the goals of millennium schools. Some of them have been forced to improvise to such an extent that their reforms may become tarnished. The irony is that schools expecting to build self-sustaining systems need continuing support as they work toward this goal because of the protracted nature of effort involved. Despite the successes of any school, improvements must be perpetuated and refined if they are to have impact over the long haul (Mullen & Graves, 2000).

The gap between the good intentions of policy and the reality of implementation at the school level is illustrated in another case study. This shows how a school's reliance on resources could lead to an "inevitable social construction of social failure" (Schuttloffel, 2000, p. 10). The assumption that schools that have been successfully initiated into change through temporary funding can somehow sustain changes on their own is probably short-sighted in most cases.

Although it must be taken into account that reformed schools can be quite resilient, the small rural millennium prototypes in particular will probably experience great loss and compromise. As Schuttloffel (2000) aptly sums up, school reform legislation must consider the situation of distressed schools if comprehensive reform is to develop along the lines envisioned—otherwise the nation could end up being littered with a series of quasi-modified sites at best. Support is needed for continuous adaptation within our schools; even automobile industries like Honda of America are ahead of schools in these respects (Weiss & Cambone, 2000). Sustained staff planning, shared decision-making, and professional development will require a system of supports beyond those available even within the millennium sites.

Possible recommendations from another study of site-based school reform (Weiss & Cambone, 2000) are relevant here: Ongoing stipends could be paid for teachers' extra work hours, continuing professional development, and time spent planning the (integrated) curriculum; also, school districts and legislators will have a key role to play in supporting the (millennium) reform program over time. Teachers in the NMHS schools currently see that support has faded, perhaps when it is most needed. Although they can write grants to continue the work, there are many dimensions beyond the financial—structural, informational, and developmental—that need support in order to allow visions to take root.

Finally, this improvement model has implications for change on a broader scale. High schools can modernize and adolescents can thrive where a dual purpose of schooling exists. The people we heard from seem to want the opportunity to both lead and serve in this respect. And they appear to have gained this opportunity through the millennium model, at least in part. In today's world it might be that site-based reforms within the public secondary school system will need to be paradoxically "married" to the state beyond their infancy.

Notes

1. High Schools That Work, Texas Education Agency, http://tea.state.tx.us.

2. These "lighthouse" schools, as we refer to them, had been at the forefront of noteworthy Florida initiatives such as Tech Prep, High Schools That Work, and Blueprint for Career Preparation when they were funded. The NMHS schools were viewed as committed to developing their capacity to manage and sustain change (Brawer, 1998). Funding for the schools ranged from $100,000 to $200,000 the first year, with a second disbursement of $50,000. The NMHS sites were charged with becoming prototype systems with a relevant, work-based curriculum that integrated career guidance and sponsored strong business partnerships. The millennium theme was created from one of Florida's goals for reform and accountability of a high-quality school system (http://www.firn.edu/doe).

3. The FCAT is based on the Sunshine State Standards.

4. One respondent referred to a report that was developed by the millennium schools for the state during the first year of funding. The schools involved in this study shared their new curriculum guides (described holistically herein) but no such reports were provided.

Acknowledgements

This research was supported by a Research and Creative Scholarship Grant sponsored by the University of South Florida, a source that is independent of Florida's NMHS grant sponsorship. The Institutional Review Board at the Principal Investigator's university approved this study. The author thanks the NMHS participants for their generous sharing of insights and time. She especially extends her gratitude to Carol Burg, a talented doctoral student at USF who was the paid research assistant on this project; she facilitated the school contacts and collected the interview data.

References

Berryman, S., & Bailey, T. (1992). *The double helix of education and the economy*. New York: Institute on Education and the Economy, Teachers College, Columbia University.

Blank, W. E. (1997). High school could look like this. In W. E. Blank & S. Harwell (Eds.), *Promising practices for connecting schools with the real world* (pp. 153-160). Tampa, FL: University of South Florida.

Blank, W. E. (1999). Future perspectives in vocational education. In A. J. Pautler, Jr. (Ed.), *Workforce education: Issues for the new century* (pp. 281-289). Ann Arbor, MI: Prakken.

Brawer, M. P. (1998). *Findings and recommendations of the Millennium Project Task Force*. Tallahassee, FL: Florida Department of Education.

Caputo-Pearl, A. (2001). Challenging high-stakes standardized testing: Working to build an anti-racist, progressive social movement in public education. *Taboo: The Journal of Culture and Education, 5*(1), 87-121.

Cassel, R. N. (1998). High school success and school accountability begin with tentative job-career plans for each student. *Education, 119*(2), 319-321. [Online]. Available: http://www.bess.fcla.edu.

Florida Senate Bill (Senator Horne). (2001). SB2004. [On-line]. Available: http://www.stw.ed.gov.

Fullan, M. (1999). *Change forces: The sequel.* London, England: Falmer.

Glickman, C. (1998). Educational leadership for democratic purpose: What do we mean? *International Journal of Leadership in Education, 1*(1), 47-53.

Goodlad, J. (1984). *A place called school.* New York: McGraw-Hill.

Hargreaves, A. (1998). The emotional politics of teaching and teacher development: With implications for educational leadership. *International Journal of Leadership in Education: Theory & Practice, 1*(4), 315-336.

Hettinger, J. (1998). The buck stops soon (funding after the expiration of federal School-to-Work Opportunities Act), *Techniques, 22*(1), 1-5. [Online]. Available: http://www.bess.fcla.edu

Jacobs, H. H. (1991). Planning for curriculum integration. *Educational Leadership, 49*(2), 27-28.

Leithwood, K. (2001). School leadership in the context of accountability policies. *International Journal of Leadership in Education, 4*(3), 217-235.

Lieberman, A., Saxl, E. R., & Miles, M. B. (2000). Teacher leadership: Ideology and practice. In Jossey-Bass (Ed.), Educational leadership for the twenty-first century. *The Jossey-Bass Reader on Educational Leadership* (pp. 348-365). San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Lozada, M. (1999). Career learning to the nines. *Techniques, 74*(7), 30-31. Available: http://bess.fcla.edu.

Maduakolam, I. (1999). Career development theories and their implications for high school career guidance and counseling. *High School Journal, 83*(2), 28-40. [Online]. Available: http://www.bess.fcla.edu

Mathews. J. (2000, February 3). Career academies doing the job, study finds: At-risk students staying in school, earning diplomas. *Washington Post*, B03.

Medrich, E., Merola, L., Ramer, C., & White, R. (2000). *School to work progress measures: A report to the national school-to-work office* (July 1, 1997–June 30, 1998). Berkeley, CA: MPR Associates and Washington, DC: Academy for Educational Development.

Miles, M.B., & Huberman, A.M. (1994). *Qualitative data analysis.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Mitchell, C., & Weber, S. (1999). *Reinventing ourselves as teachers: Beyond nostalgia.* London: Falmer.

Mullen, C. A. (with Sullivan, E. C.). (in press). The New Millennium High School, tomorrow's school today? *International Journal of Leadership in Education.*

Mullen, C. A. (2001, April). A case study of Florida's New Millennium High Schools: A reform model of exemplary leadership. Research and Creative Scholarship Grant. Research Council and Division of Sponsored Research, University of South Florida.

Mullen, C. A., & Graves, T. H. (2000). A case study of democratic accountability and school improvement. *Journal of School Leadership, 10*(6), 478-504.

Public Law 103-239, 108 Stat 568. [On-line]. Available: http://www.stw.ed.gov.

Schuttloffel, M. J. (2000). The social construction of school failure: Leadership's limitations. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(45). Available http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n45.html.

Scott, C., Stone, B., & Dinham, S. (2001). "I love teaching but....": International patterns of teacher discontent. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 9*(28). Available http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v9n28.html.

Sergiovanni, T. J. (2000). Leadership as stewardship: "Who's serving who?" In Jossey-Bass (Ed.), *The Jossey-Bass reader on educational leadership* (pp. 269-286). San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Waite, D., Boone, M., & McGhee, M. (2001). A critical sociocultural view of accountability. *Journal of School*

Leadership, 11(3), 182-203.

Weiss, C. H., & Cambone, J. (2000). Principals, shared decision making, and school reform. In Jossey-Bass (Ed.), Educational leadership for the twenty-first century. *The Jossey-Bass Reader on Educational Leadership* (pp. 366-389). San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

About the Author

Carol A. Mullen, Ph.D.
Assistant Professor
University of South Florida
Department of Educational Leadership & Policy Studies
4202 East Fowler Avenue, EDU 162
Tampa, FL 33620-5650

Office Phone: (813) 974-0040
Office Fax: (813) 974-3366

E-mail: cmullen@tempest.coedu.usf.edu

Carol A. Mullen, Ph.D., is faculty in the Department of Educational Leadership & Policy Studies, University of South Florida, Tampa, FL 33620-5650. She studies exemplary forms of leadership within challenging school environments. Dr. Mullen has published many refereed journal articles and, as guest editor, more than 10 special issues of academic journals; she has also published four books. *Breaking the Circle of One* (Peter Lang, 2000, 2nd edition) received the "Exemplary Research in Teacher Education Award" from AERA (Division K) in 1998.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

William McInerney
Purdue University

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Este artículo ha sido consultado 584 veces desde el 4 de octubre 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 41 **octubre 4, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly electronic journal
Editor: Gene V Glass, College of Education
Arizona State University

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**.
Permission is hereby granted to copy any article
if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Globalización, gobierno y transferencia de políticas públicas. El caso de la educación superior en México

Pedro Flores Crespo
Universidad de York

Salvador Ruiz de Chávez
Centro Nacional de Evaluación para la Educación Superior (Ceneval)
México

Resumen
La globalización impacta significativamente sobre las formas de gobierno las cuales, a su vez, crean una nueva institucionalidad que sirve de base para la transferencia de políticas públicas. En este artículo se utiliza el Marco de la Transferencia de Políticas para analizar el caso de la educación superior en México, y se sostiene que históricamente el sistema universitario mexicano ha usado de manera recurrente la experiencia externa para la elaboración de sus propias estrategias en materia educativa. Asimismo, se destaca que: (1) el análisis general sobre la adopción o copia de políticas educativas en México se ha centrado básicamente en el papel que desempeñan algunos organismos internacionales lo que genera una visión limitada de la transferencia de políticas; (2) es difícil identificar qué objetos se están realmente transfiriendo de estos organismos a la agenda educativa nacional y, por lo tanto, (3) validar la existencia de una transferencia de políticas educativas es un proceso complicado y abierto a cuestionamientos de tipo metodológico. Por lo tanto, se sugiere la realización de estudios futuros con el propósito de comprender mejor la adopción o copia de políticas educativas en México.

Abstract
Globalization and governance pave the way for the ocurrence of policy transfer processes. This article shows that higher education policy in Mexico has been historically influenced by foreign educational models. By using the Policy Transfer Framework, this article also makes three claims: (1) the academic debate has been generally focused on the role of specific international organizations, so a limited perspective about the policy transfer approach emerges, (2) the process of identifying what objects are being transferred to Mexican educational agenda is blurred, and thus, (3) as a consequence of methodological weaknesses, it is difficult to validate whether or not policy transfer processes are taking place in this Latin American country. Therefore, further research needs to be done in order to broaden the understanding of the policy transfer processes in Mexico.

Introducción

286

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

La copia o adopción de políticas de educación superior de un contexto a otro ha sido un tema de recurrente polémica y debat que para algunos académicos la reforma universitaria mexicana de la década pasada respondía a "los imperativos externos" (1998:19), el gobierno se abocaba a modernizar la educación de acuerdo con la nueva realidad global. La modernización educ decía, era "inevitable y necesaria" (PME, 1989:iii). Esta divergencia muestra una amplia diversidad de puntos de vista que h por una parte, el surgimiento de la globalización, la reducción de las funciones del Estado y la poderosa influencia de organis internacionales con la reformulación de la agenda educativa en países como México. Sin embargo, a pesar del análisis crítico realizado diversos académicos (Marín, 1998; Coraggio, 1998; Latapí Sarre, 1998; 2000a, 2000b; Alcántara, 2000; Rodríguez Alcántara, 2001; González Casanova, 2001), aún existe una visión limitada de la transferencia de políticas educativas en Mé propósito de este artículo es ampliar la comprensión de estos procesos de adopción de acciones encaminadas a reformar la ed superior. En la primera parte se estudia la globalización como un fenómeno que presenta ciertas características que promuev interacción entre actores e instituciones y que, a su vez, facilita el ambiente para que se den transferencias de política de un c otro. Este fenómeno mundial también ha transformado significativamente el papel del Estado-nación como unidad predomin forma de gobierno. Por esta razón, la segunda parte analiza la recomposición del Estado según varios autores y se subraya el surgimiento de una nueva institucionalidad global con actores que interactúan en un ambiente de creciente complejidad. En l parte, se explica el enfoque de la transferencia de políticas, y su relación con la globalización y con los distintos elementos q componen. A pesar de la utilidad que este esquema analítico provee, su perspectiva teórica ignora en cierto grado la realidad países pobres, por lo que habría que extender esta visión con mayores estudios. Para ello, se propone una clasificación de los organismos internacionales con base en sus características particulares, medios de influencia o presión y los destinatarios de acciones.

En la cuarta y última parte se presenta el caso de las políticas educativas a nivel superior en México, y se hace un repaso hist correspondiente política educativa, lo que muestra que el sistema universitario mexicano ha estado influido y, por lo tanto, h adoptado elementos de sistemas académicos extranjeros. Sigue a este análisis, el estudio de la supuesta transferencia de polít educativa en este país, haciéndose tres observaciones: 1. El análisis general se ha centrado primordialmente en el papel y en l de presión que utilizan los organismos internacionales para influir en la agenda educativa nacional; 2. Es difícil identificar lo tangibles e intangibles que realmente se están transfiriendo a la agenda educativa mexicana; y 3. Validar la existencia de un transferencia de política educativa en México es un ejercicio complicado y está abierto a diversos cuestionamientos. Al com algunos documentos de política educativa a nivel superior de México con los informes de dos organismos internacionales (el Internacional para el Desarrollo de la Educación, CIDE y la Organización para la Cooperación para el Desarrollo Económico se sostiene que, varios años antes, las autoridades mexicanas ya habían planteado acciones muy similares a las que el CIDE sugirieron en su momento para resolver los problemas de la educación universitaria en México.

Al no haber, por un lado, una clara evidencia de que México copia la política educativa de algunos organismos internacional determinado periodo y, por otro, saber que existen coincidencias entre programas nacionales e informes internacionales, surg la pregunta, ¿cómo se producen estas convergencias? Si se asegura que son las macroestructuras (globalización, sistemas eco etc.) las que imponen estos cambios y los hacedores de política aprenden de ellos y los copian, entonces se asume que existe ejercicio consciente y voluntario para copiar o emular una política. Si es así, ¿qué papel desempeñan, entonces, los organism internacionales? Estas instituciones, junto con sus variados mecanismos de presión e influencia, son una parte clave (pero no para copiar o emular determinadas políticas dentro de un ambiente de creciente complejidad; por ello, es necesario ampliar l comprensión de la transferencia de políticas educativas con estudios futuros.

I. Lo nuevo del fenómeno globalizador. Un acercamiento al escenario de la complejidad

Varios autores coinciden en señalar que la globalización no es un fenómeno nuevo, aunque el proceso de interacción mundia tiene algunas variantes características de la época. (Note 1) Por ejemplo, el Programa de Desarrollo de la Naciones Unidas (1999) sostiene que la globalización de este tiempo recuerda a la de los siglos XVI y XIX, sólo que ahora existen "nuevos me ligados globalmente; "nuevas herramientas" como internet y los teléfonos celulares. El PDNU también observa que existen " actores" como la Organización Mundial de Comercio (OMC) que tienen autoridad sobre los gobiernos nacionales; las transn con un poder económico mayor al de muchos estados, las redes globales de organizaciones no gubernamentales y otros grup trascienden las fronteras. Además, ahora hay "nuevas reglas" como los acuerdos multilaterales de comercio, servicios y prop intelectual que están avalados por fuertes mecanismos de coacción. Todo esto, según el PDNU, forma un complejo de mayor restricciones para los gobiernos que cuentan con un reducido margen de maniobra para el desarrollo de políticas nacionales.

Por su parte, *The Economist* argumenta que la integración económica que se vive actualmente tiene sus antecedentes en siglo por lo que "la muy difundida idea de la globalización de estos días es un regreso a tendencias pasadas" (1999:5). Según *The* cincuenta años antes de la primera guerra mundial existieron flujos de mercancías, capital y personas que cruzaban la fronter distintos países. Sin embargo, este proceso se interrumpió abruptamente para dar paso al proteccionismo y a las restricciones movimiento del capital. Indagando sobre cuál será el futuro de la globalización, *The Economist* se pregunta si este proceso p revertido al igual que otras tendencias. La conclusión a la que llega el semanario inglés es que será muy difícil que esto ocur por ejemplo, los tratados de libre comercio actuales se elaboran sobre bases institucionales más firmes que en el pasado. Mie otro tiempo, el libre comercio se formalizaba mediante tratados bilaterales; ahora se hace a través instituciones multilaterales OMC (*The Economist* 1999).

Como puede observarse, tanto el PDNU como *The Economist* coinciden en señalar que la globalización no es un fenómeno n que parece característico de esta época es que ahora existe una nueva institucionalidad que sustenta este proceso. Según el P intereses económicos ahora se mueven a través de un amplio espectro de diversos actores que toman acuerdos y que pueden influencia sobre los gobiernos nacionales. Este escenario no deja de ser complejo, por ende, es inevitable pensar en la nueva reorganización de los sistemas de gobierno en estos tiempos. La globalización, sostiene Cerny, "desafía profundamente las e estructuras socioculturales y políticas" (1999:190). Por esta razón, interesa analizar cómo ha cambiado la forma de gobernar, específicamente, cómo se ha transformado la función del Estado-nación dentro de la globalización.

II. Gobierno y globalización. Pasos hacia una nueva institucionalidad

En el contexto globalizador actual, el Estado - como unidad predominante de forma de gobierno – y sus funciones han sido a bajo diferentes perspectivas.

Por una parte, están aquellos académicos que ven al Estado-nación como el "actor por excelencia" (Marín, 1998) mientras qu encuadran el papel del Estado dentro de la perspectiva de la dependencia. Por ejemplo, para Torres y Puiggrós, "el estado qu promueve la modernización de la economía y de la política sigue siendo un estado capitalista de desarrollo dependiente" (19 esta perspectiva, Inés Castro agrega que, bajo el "neoliberalismo", el estado "ya no es visualizado como el instrumento idóne superar las diferencias sociales" (1997:195). José Luis Coraggio relaciona al Estado, con la función de poderosos organismo financieros como el Banco Mundial (BM), asegura que este organismo se convirtió en el "Caballo de Troya" del ajuste estru la redefinición del papel del mercado y del Estado en el campo de las políticas sociales y agrega: "En las prácticas de esos or es evidente un claro interés estratégico asociado al paradigma neoliberal que comparten: restituir al mercado el lugar que ten estas décadas de estatismo." (Coraggio, 1998:50-51)

Por su parte, González Casanova afirma que el poder del sector privado actuó como fuerza para desmantelar o debilitar al se público de los países comunistas, de los estados benefactores socialdemócratas y de los estados populistas" (2001:22). Algun como Castro, Coraggio y González Casanova coinciden en que existe una reducción del papel de los estados-nación dentro d escenario mundial; sin embargo, cada uno menciona causas diferentes que podrían explicar el "ahuecamiento" (Note 2) estat Mientras Castro apunta que el "neoliberalismo" es el responsable de la reconfiguración del estado, Coraggio subraya el "inte estratégico" de los organismos financieros en los actuales cambio estatales y, González Casanova defiende la tesis de que ex "empresariato corporativo de las potencias hegemónicas" para apuntalar la política "macrocultural y macroeconómica de reestructuración nacional-global" (2001:24).

Así, la modernización, la dependencia, el "neoliberalismo", el ilimitado poder de los organismos internacionales y demás fue parecen ser elementos que algunos académicos usan para explicar la reconfiguración del Estado dentro de la globalización. L de vista de estos académicos difieren, en cierto grado de los de otros estudiosos, por ejemplo, politólogos como Rhodes (199 aseveran que desde hace quince años han surgido términos para reformar el sector público, tales como *governance (Note 3)* c sustituye al término *government* y explica las características del *governance*, diciendo que dentro de este "sistema gubernam existe una interdependencia de organizaciones y que el *governance* es más amplio que el gobierno e incluye actores no estata Asimismo, hace hincapié en que las fronteras entre el sector público, el sector privado y el voluntario son menos visibles por cambiado las fronteras del Estado mismo (Rhodes, 1997:53). Otra característica que menciona Rhodes es la continua interac los miembros de las redes de política pública, (Note 4) causada por la necesidad de intercambiar recursos y negociar interese y que debe basarse en la confianza y en la regulación que comparten los participantes de las redes. La última característica es de autonomía con respecto al Estado o sea que las redes de política no tienen responsabilidad con respecto al Estado, pues és autoorganizativas; aunque el Estado puede controlarlas de manera "imperfecta" e "indirecta" (Rhodes, 1997:53). Es importa que, para Rhodes, gobernar se asemeja a un juego que tiende a ser "entre iguales", es decir, con actores con intereses similar sus características varíen. Asimismo, se advierte que en el *governance* puede haber interdependencia e intercambio, pero tan reglas. Pueden existir intereses comunes al igual que confianza y, aún más importante, puede haber autonomía de estas redes respecto al Estado, aunque también hay control.

Llama la atención que desde la perspectiva de Rhodes no se otorgue un peso preponderante a los organismos internacionales parte de las redes de política. Además, llama la atención que en su libro *Understanding Governance*, Rhodes (1997) no utili término "neoliberal" para referirse a la privatización o a la competencia. Estas políticas, subraya, son "distintivas" del Partid Conservador Británico.

En otro tenor y, tratando de visualizar el fenómeno de la globalización en una dimensión más amplia, con respecto al *govern* Cerny piensa que la globalización impacta sobre el *governance* "modificando las estructuras en donde se desarrollan sus pro mecanismos" (1999: 188).

Este autor sostiene también que se modifican condiciones o parámetros que afectan la posible combinación de la jerarquía, el y las redes y esto puede ser, según Cerny, dentro de las estructuras socioculturales, de la producción económica y del consun como en los procesos políticos e institucionales (1999). Cerny provee una visión holística de la forma en que la globalizació transformar los sistemas de poder, el cual "inevitablemente" se hará más difuso y permeará una estructura "compleja y prism fuerzas socioeconómicas y niveles de governance (1999:190). Dentro de esta visión integral de fuerzas exógenas y poder, añ "El mundo está ahora más inmiscuido en un proceso de globalización compleja y lo más urgente, dentro de una agenda de investigación tanto en relaciones internacionales como en ciencia política, no sólo en el corto sino también en el largo plazo identificar las numerosas dimensiones de este proceso complejo y evaluar las estructuras de las intersecciones e interaccione ellas." (Cerny 1999:209).

Según Cerny, el sistema estatal han sido visto como formas de gobierno en el nivel macrosocial; no obstante, su coexistencia formas de gobierno a nivel microsocial, mesosocial, transnacional e internacional, y es la globalización la que promueve el s y cristalización de nuevas formas de gobierno (*governance*). Esta visión parece diferir de aquella que postula al Estado-nació "actor por excelencia" (Marín, 1998).

Otro autor importante que habla de la recomposición de los estados-nación y sus funciones es Anthony Giddens, quien sostie globalización, en lo que él mismo ha llamado la tercera vía, "conlleva una necesidad de más gobierno y no menos" y agrega "Aunque el gobierno ya no puede ser simplemente nacional. Tiene que haber un gobierno local y regional fuerte, pero hay qu también formas de gobierno transnacional (en El País, 25/07/99) (Note 5) .

Como puede observarse, los centros de poder e influencia política se han cambiado a consecuencia de la globalización y segu bajo este escenario la toma de decisiones será más compleja de lo que sucedía cuando el Estado era el "actor por excelencia" las palabras de Marín). En congruencia con este punto, Mundy y Murphy (2001) observan que aparte del extremo poder de lo organismos financieros, están apareciendo nuevos actores internacionales no gubernamentales, tales como las Redes Defens Transnacionales (*Transnational Advocacy Networks, TANs*) o los Movimientos Sociales Transnacionales (*Transnational Soc Movements, TSMs*) que tienen repercusiones sobre el desarrollo del sistema político mundial y que representan una "nueva cl activismo no gubernamental" (Mundy y Murphy 2001:88). Según estos autores, actualmente, estas redes están al margen del estatal, toda vez que ya no dependen de los recursos proveídos por los estados-nación. Es importante tomar en cuenta que la independencia que estas redes pudiesen tener se deriva de una transformación en las funciones del Estado. Esta reducción po cierto punto, crear espacios de mayor libertad para la actuación de algunas fuerzas contestatarias.

Hasta aquí, se ha analizado que el papel que desempeña el Estado en el diseño e implementación de políticas sociales se ha r considerablemente y que una nueva institucionalización global está generando un intricado ambiente de intereses y actores q relaciones de intercambio, conflicto, "resistencia" y "acomodo" (Note 6) cada vez más complejas. Esta complejidad parece interpretarse desde dos perspectivas. Mientras algunos autores como González Casanova hablan de "debilitamiento y desmantelamiento" del sector público; Rhodes dice que hubo una "reforma" de este tipo de servicios; cuando Cerny subraya Estado interactúa en diversos niveles de gobierno, Marín considera al Estado-nación como "actor por excelencia". En tanto C Casanova piensa que se inició una "reforma neoliberal y privatizadora de la educación superior en México", Rhodes dice que privatización y la competencia son acciones conservadoras. (Note 7)

Bajo estas dos perspectivas, no sería ilógico esperar que la interpretación de algún proceso de adopción de políticas públicas institución o de un país extranjero a otro sea diversa. Ambas formas de estudiar la realidad podrían ser capturadas dentro de esquema analítico que ofrezca explicaciones más sólidas acerca de la adopción, copia o influencia externa que pudieran ejerc instituciones o países sobre la política pública de otras naciones. Por ello, el enfoque de la transferencia de políticas podría se alternativa en este sentido; por lo que, a continuación, se explicarán algunos de sus elementos sustantivos.

III. El enfoque de la transferencia de políticas

A. Relación entre globalización y transferencia de políticas

En párrafos previos se anotó que la globalización ha modificado el papel del gobierno y que una institucionalidad a escala m emergiendo; por lo que también puede pensarse que la transferencia de políticas (TP) se convierta, como señala Common, en "manifestación cada vez más visible" (2001:5). De hecho, Evans (1999) opina que hay tres razones por las cuales ha habido creciente interés en el estudio de la transferencia de políticas públicas. Primero, a consecuencia de los procesos de globalizac externos al Estado-nación (integración política y comunicación global) así como a los internos (el "ahuecamiento" que sufre a través de, por ejemplo, privatizaciones), se han creado nuevas "estructuras de oportunidad" para la transferencia de política segunda razón es porque es mucho más probable que la transferencia de políticas ocurra en una era en donde exista el *govern* agrega que ante la incertidumbre que pudieran tener los hacedores de política y ante el apremio de tiempo, la TP puede dar u solución rápida a los problemas de política pública. Evans acota que la tercera razón para promover los procesos de TP es qu habido una relación muy cercana entre las administraciones de George W. Bush y del primer ministro británico Tony Blair, y ejemplos de ello en materia de educación, de justicia y de reformas financieras (1999).

A pesar de ser una perspectiva británica, esta visión de Evans conduce a pensar que la TP podría ser utilizada bajo el esquem cooperación internacional que ha sido un discurso recurrente dentro de la globalización y a considerar la utilidad de la TP pu premura e incertidumbre, este esquema podría usarse como una alternativa para diseñar o cambiar una política pública. Con ahorrarían recursos materiales y monetarios, y además, como apuntan Heidenheimer *et al* (1976), se comprenderían mejor lo problemas al estudiarlos de manera compartida y comparada. Claro, estas ventajas no invalidan el hecho de realizar adaptaci acríticas de un modelo exterior a una realidad específica.

En resumen, la globalización y la nueva institucionalidad mundial facilitan el terreno para que surjan procesos de transferenc política, por eso es importante saber por qué y cómo se dan estas iniciativas, quiénes las promueven, qué es lo que se transfie través de qué medios y cómo puede verificarse que hay una copia o adopción de política pública de un contexto específico a esto ponderando tanto la utilidad como las desventajas de estos procesos.

B. Definición de la transferencia de política pública

Dolowitz y Marsh aluden que: "La transferencia de políticas, la emulación y lección aprendida se refieren a un proceso en el conocimiento acerca de políticas, sistemas administrativos e instituciones, etc., en determinado momento y/o lugar, es utiliza desarrollo de políticas, sistemas administrativos e instituciones en otro momento y/o lugar (1996:344).

Evans complementa la definición de Dolowitz y Marsh al aseverar que "La transferencia de política es un concepto genérico significa un proceso en el cual el conocimiento acerca de las instituciones, políticas o sistemas de suministro en un sector o n gobierno (governance) es usado en el desarrollo de instituciones, políticas o sistemas de entrega en otro sector o nivel de gobierno." (1999:30)

Es importante notar el carácter "genérico" del concepto de transferencia de política que menciona Evans, ya que éste puede a "afirmaciones muy distintas acerca de la naturaleza de la elaboración de políticas" (Evans y Davies, 1999:204). "Lección aprendida" (Rose, 1991), "difusión de política" (Majone, 1991) o "importación de política (Note 8) " (Brown, 1999) podrían algunas de estas afirmaciones que se refieren a un proceso de aprendizaje en el cual los hacedores de política pública observa el mundo las respuestas de sus contrapartes a problemas similares" (Mokhtar, 2001:22) y, entonces, diseñan sus propias polít

C. Segmentación y niveles de transferencia de políticas públicas

Se ha observado que sobre las transferencias de política pública diversos académicos como Bennet (1991) Wolman, (1992), l Evans (1997) estudian la emulación de políticas, programas gubernamentales e instrumentos y esquemas de administración, exclusivamente en los países desarrollados. Sin embargo, para entender de manera más integral la TP, es necesario hacer una segmentación entre países en desarrollo y los de mayor avance económico, ya que las estructuras estatales, los actores y la institucionalidad difieren significativamente entre países pobres y ricos. Esto no significa que la TP se dé solamente de una n otra, ya que como apuntan Evans y Davies, existen cinco niveles de "territorialidad política" (transnacional, internacional, na regional y local) y dentro de este marco espacial, por tanto, existen 25 trayectorias teóricas que pueden seguir las transferencias" (Evans y Davies, 1999: 212) (véase el cuadro 1).

Cuadro 1. Trayectorias de la transferencia de políticas

Internacional →	Internacional	Nacional →	Internacional
Internacional →	Transnacional	Nacional →	Transnacional
Internacional →	Nacional	Nacional →	Nacional
Internacional →	Regional	Nacional →	Regional
Internacional →	Local	Nacional →	Local
	Transnacional →	Transnacional	
	Transnacional →	Internacional	
	Transnacional →	Nacional	
	Transnacional →	Regional	
	Transnacional →	Local	
Regional →	Internacional	Local →	Internacional
Regional →	Transnacional	Local →	Transnacional
Regional →	Nacional	Local →	Nacional
Regional →	Regional	Local →	Regional
Regional →	Local	Local →	Local

Fuente: Evans y Davies (1999:213).

A pesar de que Evans y Davies (1999) esquematizan las trayectorias que podrían seguir las transferencias, también señalan c sensatez que "no es probable" una transferencia, por ejemplo, entre estados federales en Alemania o entre regiones británicas gobierno regional no tiene categoría oficial. Es decir, en muchos casos no existen condiciones para que alguna de estas traye puede darse. Por ejemplo, en un país cuyos estados estén divididos en municipios, una experiencia desarrollada en alguna de localidades no podrá ser emulada por otra nación cuya división política sea por regiones autónomas o por condados. Por lo ta trayectoria "local-internacional" está lejos de ocurrir y, sobre todo, lograr el impacto esperado.

A pesar de la improbabilidad de algunas trayectorias mencionadas por Evans y Davies, no puede negarse que su idea sobre la diferentes trayectorias amplía la comprensión de los procesos de transferencia de políticas.

D. Tipos de transferencia de políticas

Describir los tipos de transferencias de política sirve, en parte, para conocer los actores y los objetos que se supone se transfi Dolowitz y Marsh (1996) identifican tres tipos generales de TP. El primero se refiere a un proceso voluntario en el cual exist decisión de los gobiernos para emular estrategias gubernamentales de otros contextos. Este tipo de transferencia se origina, s (1991), por dos causas principales: *i)* la insatisfacción en el desempeño de ciertas políticas y/o sus resultados, y *ii)* la incertid acerca del futuro. Dentro de esta última causa, pueden encontrarse también dos niveles de incertidumbre. Aquella relacionad nivel macro—como podría ser una crisis financiera—y la micro, que toma en cuenta asuntos de ámbito local o regional—cor ser las elecciones competidas—. Hablar de insatisfacción o incertidumbre plantea el cuestionamiento, ¿cómo puede saberse c una transferencia de políticas de tipo voluntario como consecuencia de alguna de estas dos razones o, quizá, por la combinac ambas? Bennet (1991) señala que hay poca o nula atención a la validez metodológica para conocer cuáles son las motivacion de los hacedores de política para adoptar o emular alguna política de algún contexto externo. Quizá un mecanismo de indaga las entrevistas con funcionarios o la revisión documental, para saber las causas que motivaron la TP. Este hecho muestra la d de validar los procesos de transferencia de políticas.

El segundo tipo de TP se caracteriza por implicar una forma coercitiva que se basa en la unilateralidad del emisor para dictar recomendaciones al receptor. Según Dolowitz y Marsh (1996), la imposición directa de TP de un país a otro es "rara"; sin en estos autores identifican a los organismos supranacionales como el Banco Mundial (BM) y el Fondo Monetario Internaciona como instituciones clave en la transferencia coercitiva de políticas. Estos autores subrayan que el medio de coerción son los que se otorgan a los países pobres, los cuales tienen que seguir ciertas políticas económicas si estas naciones quieren hacer u recursos prestados. Las empresas transnacionales (TNCs, por sus siglas en inglés) también pueden operar dentro de la transfe coercitiva, ya que pueden forzar a los gobiernos hacia la transferencia de políticas porque poseen un "as bajo la manga". La de llevarse sus negocios a otra parte presiona a los gobiernos a adoptar políticas para atraer a este tipo de industrias, según D Marsh (1996:348).

El tercer tipo es la transferencia coercitiva indirecta en la que, teóricamente, no intervienen determinados agentes para motiv cambio de política pública. Dolowitz y Marsh delimitan cuatro factores estructurales dentro de este tipo de TP: *i)* Las extern *ii)* los cambios tecnológicos; *iii)* la interdependencia económica, y *iv)* el desempeño actual de alguna nación. Estos factores s resumir en lo que Mokhtar (2001) llama "el poder estructural de la economía global", que presiona a un país a adoptar polític similares a otros regímenes con los cuales puede compartir un mercado común. La competencia, dice esta autora, "provoca u tendencia para la transferencia de política" (2001:33). Un ejemplo de este ambiente podría ser la formación de mercados con como el Tratado de Libre Comercio (TLC) para Norteamerica, en donde México es el país en mayor desventaja económica y por lo tanto, su gobierno podría adoptar algunas políticas copiando lo que hacen sus contrapartes comerciales (Estados Unid Canadá). "El miedo de quedarse atrás en cuestiones públicas puede motivar a la acción", dice Bennett (1991:43).

E. Agentes de la transferencia de políticas y su clasificación

Los actores son una parte crucial para la emulación de acciones gubernamentales, ya que, como argumentan Davies y Evans relaciones entre éstos pueden facilitar o precipitar los procesos de transferencia. Por su parte, Dolowits y Marsh identifican, literatura relativa a la TP, seis actores clave: *i)* autoridades elegidas, *ii)* partidos políticos, *iii)* burócratas y servidores público grupos de presión, *v)* emprendedores de política y expertos, y *vi)* instituciones supranacionales. En el caso de las institucione supranacionales, Dolowitz y March incluyen también a las organizaciones intergubernamentales y a las agencias internacion como la Comunidad Europea y la Organización para la Cooperación y el Desarrollo Económico (OECD)--; sin embargo, est no hacen una clasificación de estos agentes de la TP de acuerdo con sus fines, orígenes, intereses y medios de influencia. En 2, se presenta una clasificación de los organismos internacionales que pueden funcionar como agentes de la transferencia de

Cuadro 2. Clasificación de los organismos internacionales

Organizaciones	*Características*	*Medios de influencia*	*Países desti*
Intergubemamentales (ONU, UNESCO, OECD)	Trascienden las fronteras. Creadas por acuerdos multilaterales. Asociación voluntaria.	Recomendaciones. Intercambio de información Esquemas de cooperación.	En desarrollo y desarrollados
Internacionales no gubemamentales (Cruz Roja, Amnistía Internacional)	No existen fines de lucro. Ayuda humanitaria. Autonomía de los estados.	Reportes. Actividades alrededor del mundo.	En desarrollo y desarrollados
Supranacionales (FMI, BM y Comunidad Económica Europea)	Existen y operan sobre los Estados. Se abocan a temas específicos.	Préstamos. Prescripción de políticas.	En desarrollo, desar y en transición.
Transnacionales (IBM, GM, etc.)	Alta movilidad regional Presencia mundial	Inversión externa Creación de fuentes de empleo	En desarrollo particularmente.

Los seis agentes que identifican Dolowitz y March también pueden clasificarse en tres grupos generales, de acuerdo con su f primordial. En el primer grupo, estarían los individuos o instituciones que desempeñan un papel oficial. Aquí se incluirían a servidores y funcionarios públicos, así como a los representantes electos. En el segundo grupo, cabrían los actores que ofrec en políticas públicas y que poseen conocimiento especializado sobre temas específicos como educación, salud y política mon etcétera. En esta categoría también se podría contar a los llamados *think tanks*. Por último, en el tercer grupo, estarían los gru presión, partidos políticos, sindicatos, redes defensoras transnacionales (*Transnational Advocacy Networks, TANs*) y los mov sociales transnacionales (*Transnational Social Movements, TSMs*) que han surgido recientemente, según observan Mundy y (2001).

F. Objetos de transferencia

¿Cuáles son en realidad los elementos que se transfieren de un lugar a otro? ¿Acaso sólo las políticas públicas? Indudableme Existen varios elementos que se movilizan de un contexto a otro y las políticas sólo son parte de un conglomerado. Dolowitz delimita cinco objetos en la TP: políticas públicas, instituciones, ideologías, actitudes y lecciones erróneas. Como puede obs existen elementos en la TP que son intangibles y difícilmente comprobables, tales como ideas y actitudes. Sin embargo, algu autores como Roberts y Waltman han mostrado que al adoptar una retórica ideológica, el ex presidente de los Estado Unidos Reagan y la ex primer ministro, Margaret Tatcher justificaron y diseminaron sus programas políticos basados en la "nueva derecha" (citados en Dolowitz y March, 1996).

Antes de analizar otro elemento de la TP, es necesario decir que la educación puede ser tanto un objeto de transferencia com para diseminar, entre otros, ideas o ideologías. Es decir, se podrían transferir desde modelos o políticas educativas de un luga así como también se podría usar el conocimiento y a sus portadores como medio para diseminar ideas, creencias y valores. P ejemplo, un alto funcionario del Ministerio de Educación de Canadá pensaba que tener una economía avanzada dependía de "transfertilización de ideas", por ello era fundamental para ese país que los canadienses se prepararan en el exterior y que pe otros países llevaran su talento a ese país (note de Claudia Herrera en *La Jornada*, 28.10.99). Este punto no debe confundirse hecho de que la educación reproduce cierta ideología pues entonces, como dice Paulo Freire, no habría porqué apelar en la p educativa a la capacidad crítica del individuo (1996). Lo que es interesante es observar que en los procesos de TP tiene un ca ambivalente y esto es un campo fértil para realizar análisis en el futuro.

G. Grados de transferencia

Dolowitz y Marsh (1996) enumeran cuatro diferentes grados de transferencia de políticas que varían de acuerdo con los cam adecuaciones que se hagan a "las lecciones aprendidas". El primer grado es copiar una política pública y éste es el grado más que existe, ya que no se realiza ningún cambio sustantivo a la política importada. El segundo grado es la emulación en la que no copia una política específica, sino que la usa como base para el diseño de su propia política. Para Rose (1991), la emulaci aceptación en primera instancia de algún esfuerzo gubernamental del exterior que requiera cierto grado de adaptación al nue contexto. El tercer grado es la hibridación, que implica una combinación de elementos de las políticas de varios casos para u adaptación al contexto receptor. Y el último grado es la inspiración, que surge de la observación de problemas particulares p el desarrollo de algún programa o política pública. Este grado de transferencia es, según Rose (1991), sólo una forma de espe posible resultado en un contexto diferente aunque no representa, lógicamente, una transferencia.

Tomando en cuenta estos diferentes grados de transferencia, sería interesante saber hasta qué punto alguno de ellos ha result más efectivo que otro. Desafortunadamente, la evidencia empírica hasta el momento no es suficiente para contestar esta preg

H. Elementos que facilitan y limitan las transferencias

Dolowitz (1997) especifica seis categorías generales que pueden facilitar o restringir los procesos de TP. La primera es la co de la política pública: cuanto más compleja sea la política o el programa, tanto más difícil será transferirla. Por lo tanto, exist relación entre la complejidad del programa o política y su nivel de transferencia. El segundo aspecto tiene que ver con el asp adaptación de la política o programa a transferir, es decir, la interacción entre una política adoptada y una política existente o con anterioridad. La tercera categoría es la de limitantes de las estructuras institucionales. Dolowitz establece que si las estru institucionales difieren radicalmente, las posibilidades de que exista una transferencia son muy limitadas. En este rubro, tam menciona un punto de suma importancia, que es el sistema legal de ambos contextos: el emisor y el receptor. Es de esperarse diferente tipo de normativa, los procesos de transferencia tardarán en ocurrir o definitivamente no se llevarán a cabo.

La cuarta categoría incluye varias subcategorías, como ideología política, semejanza cultural, capacidad tecnológica y recurs económicos que podrían existir entre el emisor y el receptor. La quinta categoría es el lenguaje que, según Dolowitz, ayuda a acceso a la documentación requerida en el diseño de políticas, así como el análisis personal de las mismas. La sexta categorí ver con las relaciones anteriores que existen entre los sistemas políticos. Dolowitz ejemplifica este punto resaltando las relac antagónicas que pudieran existir entre algunas unidades dentro de los gobiernos, y dice que las relaciones "armoniosas", den fuera de las fronteras ayudarán a establecer las líneas de comunicación necesarias para una efectiva transferencia de políticas

Por último, es necesario destacar que autores como Dolowitz (1997) y Evans (1999) mencionan la afinidad entre los gobiern estadounidenses y británicos. Estas semejanzas son un ejemplo de que ambas naciones comparten una ideología política simi cultura común: la anglosajona. Además, tienen una capacidad tecnológica comparable y cuantiosos recursos económicos; en países se habla inglés y sus relaciones diplomáticas han sido caracterizadas históricamente por un ambiente de armonía y co

Validación de la transferencia de políticas

Una de las debilidades que el esquema de la transferencia de políticas posee es su dificultad para ser validado. Algunos autor (Dolowitz y Marsh, 1996) ex ponen varias estrategias en este sentido, tales como la revisión de reportes, programas guberna visitas, entrevistas, etc., con el propósito de indagar si realmente se transfiere un programa o política de un lugar a otro. Por s Evans y Davies (1999) proponen una metodología basada en cinco bloques de preguntas para validar la existencia de los cas transferencia de políticas. A saber:

- ¿Cuál es el sujeto de análisis? Es importante, dicen Evans y Davies, ser claros acerca del fenómeno que se estudia, y trabajo empírico "primario" existe una gama de posibilidades (1999:236).
- ¿Quién o qué es identificado como agente o agentes de la transferencia? ¿quién la desea? ¿qué se quiere obtener con

¿cómo la están llevando a cabo? ¿en beneficio de quién? Y ¿por qué? Con referencia a estas preguntas los autores pi la transferencia debe ser un proceso conciente, ya sea que se lleve a cabo voluntariamente o esté sujeto a coerción (E Davies, 1999: 237).

- ¿Hay pruebas de no transferencia? Para contestar esta pregunta, Evans y Davies sugieren realizar una comparación d la política en cuestión con entornos nacionales y originales, si se desea determinar el grado real de transferencia en u particular (*ibídem*).
- ¿Cuáles son las pruebas presentadas para apoyar la afirmación? ¿Qué tan convincentes son? Estas preguntas se deriv Evans y Davies coinciden con Dolowits y Marsh (1996) en el sentido de que las entrevistas no demuestran de maner concluyente que la información proveniente de un sistema extranjero influyó en cuestiones nacionales y agregan: "[S argumenta que se ha copiado un programa, se espera que se presenten pruebas "físicas" más concretas que apoyen es declaración. Sólo se puede decir que un programa ha sido copiado por otro si se han comparado ambos. La cuestión programa se ha realizado podría ser entonces sometida al análisis de la implementación para determinar qué tan lejos llegado la transferencia (Evans y Davies 1999:237-8)"
- ¿Qué conclusiones se pueden sacar de lo expresado antes acerca de la naturaleza y el grado de la transferencia que se producido? ¿Son ideas o programas implementados los que han o no han sido transferidos? Si se encuentra que se ha producido la transferencia, entonces se podría determinar el grado de esta copia, emulación, hibridación, síntesis o ir (Evans y Davies, 1999: 23).

Las preguntas planteadas por Evans y Davies demuestran lo complejo que es validar un proceso de transferencia de políticas. puede observarse en la pregunta cuatro, estos autores proponen una escala que muestre si la transferencia ha ocurrido o no, y primero habrá que saber si la transferencia se ha hecho a nivel declarativo. Esto implica comparar los documentos "externos" pudieran prescribir una transferencia de políticas con documentos y programas oficiales. En segundo lugar, habrá que investi política o programa supuestamente transferido fueron puestos en práctica para saber "qué tan lejos ha llegado la transferencia y Davies, 1999:238). Otro punto que sería interesante incluir, y que no mencionan Evans y Davies, es la evaluación de los ef haber transferido una política o un programa de un lugar a otro. Todos estos aspectos, sin duda, representan nuevos retos par investigadores y hacedores de políticas públicas.

Con el propósito de contribuir al estudio de la transferencia de políticas, en la siguiente parte se analiza el caso de las política educativas en México, específicamente a nivel superior. En fechas recientes, el sistema universitario ha sido objeto de intens Mientras que, para algunos, la reforma universitaria de la década noventa respondía a "los imperativos externos" (Marín, 19 gobierno mexicano se abocaba a modernizar la educación de acuerdo con la nueva realidad global. La modernización educati "inevitable y necesaria", apuntaba el Programa de Modernización Educativa 1989-1994 (PME, 1989:iii). Este debate incluye vista que han ligado el surgimiento de la globalización con la reformulación de una nueva agenda educativa en México. Asin ha observado la poderosa influencia de organismos internacionales, específicamente del Banco Mundial, en la formulación d y programas educativos. Esto ha sido campo fértil para el examen crítico de algunos académicos que observan las contradicc sus recomendaciones y la carencia de "precisión teórica, metodológica o científica" de las ideas del BM (Coraggio, 1998:50) embargo, el análisis desarrollado hasta el momento ha carecido de un esquema analítico que amplíe el entendimiento y la co de la transferencia de política educativa. Por lo tanto, en seguida se hará un repaso histórico y se revisarán los argumentos ac sobre la supuesta transferencia de política educativa superior en México.

IV. Análisis histórico y debate sobre la transferencia de política educativa en México

Aquí se ha sostenido que existe un renovado ambiente globalizador dentro del cual ha surgido una institucionalidad más com cual ha modificado las formas de gobierno. El Estado se ha transformado por una serie de factores externos que, a la vez, inv nuevos actores en el diseño e implantación de políticas públicas. México dada su importante situación geográfica y económi del continente americano, no ha permanecido al margen de la globalización. Por ello, existe una gran probabilidad de sus hac política utilicen el esquema de la transferencia de políticas para el diseño y reformulación de acciones de carácter público. E de la educación, copiar o emular una política o un programa del exterior toma mayor relevancia pues este sector ha sido una política social de los gobiernos posrevolucionarios (OECD, 1994). Por lo tanto, la idea de que pudiese existir injerencia exte definir la agenda educativa nacional podría abrir la puerta a severas críticas y a un intenso debate.

Con el propósito de conocer si la política educativa mexicana a nivel superior ha recibido una influencia externa mayor en es tiempos que en el pasado, cuando quizá no se conocía la palabra globalización, a continuación se hace un breve repaso histó revisan los argumentos académicos sobre la supuesta transferencia de política educativa en México.

A. ¿Desde cuándo México ha adoptado política educativa extranjera?

Cada etapa histórica en el desarrollo de México ha transformado y modificado las políticas educativas con el propósito de qu tengan mayor relevancia en términos sociales, económicos o políticos. Tales transformaciones han provocado que se adapten educativos que directa o indirectamente han sido diseñados con base en experiencias de otros sistemas académicos. Por ejem que recordar que a mediados del siglo XVI, cuando nació la Real y Pontificia Universidad de México ésta adoptó el sistema organizacional y de gobierno de la Universidad de Salamanca en España. Más tarde y como apunta Carlos Tünnermmann (1 reforma de la universidad colonial se basó en el modelo napoleónico. Este autor subraya algunas de las consecuencias de est "elección" y escribe: "En vez de buscar la renovación de los estudios a través de la brecha abierta por los sabios americanos, constituía una respuesta original y hubiese conducido al arraigo de la investigación científica entre nosotros, la República, tr pugnas entre liberales y conservadores por el dominio de la universidad que tuvieron lugar inmediatamente después de la Independencia, no encontró mejor cosa que hacer con la universidad colonial que sustituirla por un esquema importado, el d universidad francesa, ideado por Napoleón, tan a tono con el momento que se vivía de asombro ante todo lo que de Francia p

(1996:20)

Es interesante que Tünnermmann indique dos causas que impidieron el desarrollo de un proyecto universitario que tuviera, s una "afirmación nacional". La primera es la pugna entre grupos de poder específicos (liberales y conservadores), y la segund "asombro" de los americanos por lo francés.

Hacia finales del siglo XIX, la dictadura de Porfirio Díaz promovió en México otra filosofía importada de Francia: el positivi desarrollado por August Comte. Esta filosofía, manifiestan Pallán *et al.* (1995) se impuso en la enseñanza de las profesiones resultado de que la elite gobernante de ese tiempo estaba familiarizada con las ideas de Comte. En esos días, una de las figur notables en materia educativa fue Justo Sierra, quien fungió como secretario de Instrucción Pública y Bellas Artes. Este hom idea de fundar la Universidad Nacional en 1910 la cual "tendría la potencia suficiente para coordinar las líneas directrices de nacional" (citado en Paz, 1994:159). Este carácter nacionalista de Justo Sierra parece confundirse cuando al crear la Universi Nacional, este prominente hombre tenía en mente un modelo de universidad que cristalizaba en la Universidad de Berkeley e Estados Unidos (Gil, 2000). Según Manuel Gil esta institución estadounidense contaba con profesores de tiempo completo q en su mayoría, el grado de doctor, mientras que la naciente universidad mexicana carecía de ellos, por lo que Sierra confirió doctores a "numerosos académicos" que no eran "siquiera profesores de tiempo completo" (Note 9) para construir una unive "valiera la pena" (Gil, 2000:25). Como puede notarse, hubo puntos incompatibles entre lo que Justo Sierra imaginó (una uni nacional), lo que conocía previamente (el sistema académico de Berkeley) y lo que tuvo a la mano para concretizar su idea (mexicanos sin grados). Éste es un claro ejemplo de la dificultad de poner en práctica una noble idea y, de lo útil que resulta u experiencia extranjera en el diseño de políticas públicas.

Dando un salto cronológico y ya situados en el periodo posrevolucionario, Pallán *et al.* (1995) notan que durante esa época s promovieron actividades y carreras humanísticas para contrarrestar el positivismo diseminado en el sector educativo del porf embargo, ese tiempo tampoco fue la excepción para adoptar o emular modelos universitarios foráneos. La Reforma de Córdc 1918, como dice Tünnermmann, se propagó a lo largo y lo ancho de América Latina y fue el primer cuestionamiento serio d universidad latinoamericana tradicional. Para Tünnermmann fue un "movimiento original", sin precedentes en el mundo, y q "la mano de la transformación nacionalista y liberadora" que esta región necesitaba (1996:33) (Note 10) .

Hasta aquí se ha observado que por diversas circunstancias, pugnas entre grupos gobernantes, moda, ideologías, experiencias tendencias, la educación superior en México recibió la influencia de modelos extranjeros. El escenario que surge a partir de l económica de finales de los años setenta y principios de los ochenta —crisis provocada tanto por incorrectos manejos de polí económica a nivel nacional como por problemas en el plano internacional-- puede ser un fenómeno que alteró de manera sus que ya se venía practicando en términos de transferencia de políticas. Roberto Rodríguez hace notar que:"Sobre la base de la la deuda externa que se verificó en los primeros años de la década, aconteció un paulatino realineamiento de los países de la capitalista a los dictados de política económica y financiera metropolitanos. Este proceso se concretó mediante el condiciona créditos estipulado por agencias tales como el Fondo Monetario Internacional y el Banco Mundial – a través de los Program Ajuste Estructural – y tuvo como consecuencia la implantación de proyectos restrictivos de la inversión pública y el gasto so (1998:77 itálicas del autor)

Deuda externa-alineamiento-condicionamiento-organismos internacionales parece una fórmula que hay que tomar en cuenta estudiar, en estos tiempos, quién influye sobre la educación superior en México y, sobre todo, a través de qué medios. Estos deben tomar en cuenta también la nueva institucionalidad global en donde convergen y divergen diversos actores que crean complejas de intercambio, conflicto, resistencia y acomodo.

En resumen, el sistema de educación superior en México ha recibido históricamente influencia externa, aunque es claro que procesos han ocurrido de acuerdo con variables endógenas como el papel de las elites políticas y económicas nacionales, y v tipo exógeno tal como la crisis económica de principios de los ochenta, que modificó el escenario para la participación, por e los organismos financieros internacionales.

Bajo este intrincado contexto, es difícil pensar que en México ha existido un modelo de reforma educativa propio y, ante la r actual, que se desarrollará un sistema educativo puramente mexicano cuando hay que enfrentar, como dice Marín, "las nueva realidades del entorno social mexicano y sus relaciones con los demás países" (1998:13).

B. Debate sobre la transferencia de política educativa en México

Aunque los procesos de transferencia de políticas públicas poseen, como se vio, diversas formas e involucran diversos actore debate, en términos generales, se ha centrado en observar el papel que desempeñan los organismos internacionales (Note 11) agencias de financiamiento --especialmente, el Banco Mundial (BM) y el Fondo Monetario Internacional (FMI)--. Esta secci identificar, mediante un análisis documental, qué actores externos influyen en el diseño de políticas educativas; a través de q mecanismos influyen; qué puntos unen a los diversos organismos internacionales y cuáles son los impedimentos para transfe política. Asimismo, se analizan los objetos que se podrían transferir así como la forma en que se puede validar un proceso de transferencia de políticas.

1. Agentes de la transferencia

Para Álvaro Marín (1998), la globalización es una variable dependiente de las "potencias capitalistas" de Europa Occidental Norteamérica, por lo tanto, este fenómeno es promovido mediante "agencias internacionales" como el Banco Mundial y el F

Monetario Internacional los cuales comenzaron a "diseñar políticas educativas más explícitas, en congruencia con las necesi supuestas o reales" de las empresas transnacionales (1998:25). Este autor califica los servicios que prestan las organizacione internacionales como "peligrosas injerencias en la política nacional" (1998: 19) y agrega que existen: "... intromisiones norteamericanas en muchas regiones y países del mundo con el pretexto de modernizar la economía y actualizar los sistemas educativos para que respondan a los imperativos externos..." (1998: 19).

Marín interpreta los recientes cambios en materia educativa como una consecuencias de dominación económica de las poten hegemónicas como la estadounidense. Congruente con esta visión, Marín también resalta la participación de la elites gobern dentro de estos procesos de "intromisiones". En México, añade este autor, "las autoridades educativas del sexenio anterior [1 y principios del actual [1994-2000] sintieron la necesidad de impulsar una reforma a nivel superior que enfrentara la nueva r económica del país y del mundo" (1998:13). Asimismo, puntualiza que "Las reformas educativas en México se facilitaron p excesiva dependencia de las instituciones universitarias de un presupuesto único manejado por el gobierno federal, así como simpatía de los funcionarios e intelectuales formados en el exterior, quienes crearon un entorno amigable a la recepción de e propuestas." (Marín, 1998:28). Según Marín, "Se ha hecho creer a los dirigentes de los países subordinados que es obligació respectivos Estados nacionales, formar ciudadanos como agentes económicos congruentes con la nueva organización social a nivel mundial, bajo el liderazgo de los Estados Unidos como potencia hegemónica (1998:20, cursivas nuestras).

Con base en las opiniones de Marín, valdría la pena preguntarse si sólo por sentir "simpatía" las autoridades mexicanas empr transformaciones educativas a finales de los años noventa. ¿Quién puede "hacer creer" a los dirigentes de algún país que es "obligación" formar individuos para la nueva realidad mundial? ¿No tendrán los gobernantes nacionales su propia racionalid puede o no estar acorde con los cambios a escala global? Los puntos de vista de Marín ignoran la forma en que realmente los de política actúan y no hay oportunidad, bajo sus supuestos, de analizar los mecanismos de negociación que pudiesen existir elites nacionales y las internacionales (Note 12) .

Armando Alcántara analiza la forma de operar de las elites dentro de las tendencias mundiales de la educación superior y dic pesar de que los organismos internacionales son potencias hegemónicas que influyen en la política educativa, es necesario to cuenta que la reestructuración de los sistema de educación superior son una "transición llena de adaptaciones, rechazos parci conflictos" (2000:4). Además subraya que "conviene tener presente la existencia de esta mediaciones para evitar simplismos maniqueos para explicar la influencia de los organismos internacionales y reducir la persistencia de las teorías conspiracionis análisis comparado de la educación superior (2000:14).

El argumento de Alcántara es útil para estudiar la forma en que los funcionarios de los organismos internacionales interactúa funcionarios de los países pobres dentro de un intrincado sistema de relaciones e interacciones. Transferir, imponer, disemin por una parte, y adoptar, copiar o emular; por otra, es un proceso entre dos o más agentes, el cual puede darse de una manera compleja que la que Marín observa. (Note 13)

Por su parte, Pablo Latapí también reconoce que la influencia de organismos como el Banco Mundial en materia educativa se otros, por una interacción entre expertos externos y nacionales, pero que las políticas que el Banco propone "se negocian con en función de sus características y los gobiernos más fuertes pueden oponerse a algunos de sus elementos; por otra parte, en implementación intervendrán las mediaciones y los actores nacionales que alterarán los resultados (Latapí, 1998:43)

Es necesario resaltar que este experto en educación, otorga un lugar a la negociación entre funcionarios extranjeros y nacion intercambio de ideas y opiniones entre estos actores es una parte poco documentada en el debate académico ya que la influen Banco no se ejerce de manera abierta sino que se lleva a cabo "en discretas negociaciones con los gobiernos" (Latapí, 1998:4 forma de interactuar e influir del personal de los organismos internacionales con las elites locales --las cuales no sólo incluye funcionarios sino investigadores, intelectuales, políticos, líderes sociales, rectores, en el caso de la educación universitaria, y actores-- es un área que necesita mayor análisis para ampliar la comprensión de la transferencia de políticas en México.

2. Medios de influencia: Coerción y convencimiento

Tanto las mediaciones de las que habla Alcántara como las negociaciones privadas entre elites que observa Latapí conducen más ampliamente sobre el papel que desempeñan los organismos internacionales y sobre sus medios de influencia y de persu este sentido, varios autores coinciden en señalar que el Banco Mundial presiona a través de las condiciones de sus créditos p adopten estrategias de desarrollo educativo (Latapí, 1998). Tünnermmann piensa que en los países latinoamericanos las recomendaciones del Banco Mundial pueden influir la voluntad política de los gobiernos con el propósito de no "arriesgar el los préstamos" (citado en Didriksson y Yarzábal, 1997:345). A su vez, Coraggio (1998) dice que el Banco Mundial "Tiene g que no se deriva de la claridad, la oportunidad, la precisión teórica, metodológica o científica de sus ideas, sino del poder ec que ejerce, en conjunto con el Fondo Monetario Internacional, como palanca para imponer o sugerir con gran dureza las polí los gobiernos de América Latina." (1998:50)

Según Coraggio, existen medios de coerción para presionar a los gobiernos nacionales para que adopten ciertas acciones, las cuentan con una base fundamentada y que otra función del poderoso organismos financiero tiende también a legitimar polític diseñadas con anterioridad, pero ¿quién o quiénes son los autores de las políticas que el BM legitima? Este autor parece resp esta pregunta cuando escribe que [...] la teoría que está por detrás de las investigaciones elegidas por el BM para defender su no es una teoría de la educación. Es una teoría de la economía de la educación y, como teoría económica está situada dentro paradigma neoclásico que, durante este siglo, estuvo luchando por sobrevivir cuando muchas de sus falacias habían sido exp otras teorías." (1998:52)

Para Coraggio, promover las bondades del sistema económico "neoclásico" podría explicar la función de los organismos internacionales como medios de legitimación. Entonces el BM tiene dos funciones: influir en las agendas educativas naciona legitimar las políticas diseñadas previamente. Latapí también destaca la función legitimadora de otro organismo internaciona Organización para la Cooperación y el Desarrollo Económico (OCDE) que es "especialmente perceptivo de los cambios del está tentado también a convertirse en "instancia doctrinal" (2000b:59).

En su característico tono crítico, el experto en educación narra en su escrito lo sucedido en un seminario de la OCDE que sir marco para presentar el documento titulado Knowledge Management in the Learning Society: "El estudio de la OCDE y el s no son inocuas discusiones académicas; forman parte de un proceso político de legitimación doctrinal, en este caso planetari tendiente a imponer una determinada visión de la educación (2000:60).

Coraggio y Latapí coinciden en dos puntos muy importantes para el análisis de la transferencia de políticas. El primero es la legitimadora del BM y de la OCDE, mientras que el segundo tiene que ver con la idea de que existe un actor más allá de las institucionales que parece estar influyendo al sector educativo. Sobre este último punto, Latapí agrega que "la OCDE se ha s Banco Mundial, al Fondo Monetario Internacional y a otros organismos internacionales en el propósito de conformar los sist educativos y orientar la revolución informática de acuerdo con los intereses de las economías dominantes." (2000:60)

Para Latapí el "actor" que está allende los organismos internaciones son las "economías dominantes", esto tiene cierta congr lo que dice Coraggio en el sentido de que es el sistema económico neoclásico quien está "detrás" de los organismos internaci establecer esta relación entre un espacio macroeconómico y un ambiente microinstitucional, Latapí y Coraggio conducen a p análisis el tercer tipo de transferencia de políticas: el coercitivo indirecto. Según algunos autores, este tipo de transferencia o consecuencia de factores estructurales tales como las externalidades, los cambios tecnológicos, la interdependencia económi desempeño actual de alguna nación frente a otra (Dolowitz y Marsh, 1996), y no existe, teóricamente, algún agente determin motivar alguna transferencia. Sin embargo, en la visión de Latapí y Coraggio, los organismos internacionales son parte clave promover, legitimar o apoyar esos cambios estructurales y, muchas veces, lo hacen mediante formas coercitivas; así que vale decir que un tipo de transferencia coercitiva indirecta puede convertirse en coercitiva directa o, quizá, ambas existan dentro contexto de los países en desarrollo.

Otro punto que merece mayor atención es que, aunque el BM y la OCDE son organismos internacionales que puedan legitim políticas educativas a nivel "planetario" (usando el término de Latapí); sus orígenes, fines y medios difieren en cierta medida ejemplo, para John Lowe (Note 14) la OCDE sirve sólo a cierto grupo de países, mientras que el Banco lo hace a todo el mu 1988). Además, la OCDE surgió en 1961 con el propósito de promover el bienestar económico de sus países miembros que, mayoría, son naciones relativamente ricas, mientras que el Banco Mundial nació en 1945 y su función principal es ofrecer pr para incentivar el desarrollo económico, así como ofrecer asistencia técnica (Lowe, 1988).

Para entender las formas de influencia de los organismos internacionales dentro de la globalización, en general, y dentro de l perspectiva de la transferencia de políticas, en particular, es necesario conocer sus antecedentes y su estructura. La clasificac organizaciones internacionales presentada en el cuadro 2 podría ser un primer paso en este sentido.

3. Institucionalidad de los organismos internacionales. Convergencias y reacomodos

Varios autores subrayan la convergencia que existe entre las políticas educativas de diversas organizaciones multilaterales c Organización de Naciones Unidas para la Educación, la Ciencia y la Cultura (UNESCO) o la OCDE y de los organismos fin internacionales como el Banco Mundial o el Banco Interamericano de Desarrollo (véase Alcántara, 2000; Rodríguez y Alcán 2001). Según Alcántara, "al observar los desafíos de la globalización" y los temas críticos del sistema de educación superior, decir que "existe una coincidencia en muchas de las recomendaciones que tales organismos plantean para reestructurar la ed superior en una dirección que parece estar a tono con las crecientes necesidades del mercado y del Estado." (2000:15)

Pero, ¿cómo se podrían explicar estas coincidencias? Según Lowe (1988), entre las organizaciones internacionales no existe formal para armonizar los programas sino que existen algunos contactos que funcionan de manera informal. Este intercambi interpersonal podrían explicar estas convergencias. Además, dice Lowe, en la práctica, las actividades de los organismos internacionales no se duplican y casi nunca son "conflictivas" ya que, por un lado, la UNESCO y el Banco, están más preocu lo que sucede en los países menos desarrollados, mientras que, por el otro, la OCDE se ocupa de lo que hacen los países con avance económico (Lowe, 1988:24).

Asimismo, Rodríguez y Alcántara destacan que la posición asumida por los bancos multilaterales en tiempos recientes denot flexibilidad y mayor sensibilidad hacia las dimensiones políticas y sociales de cambio en materia educativa (2001). Como ej ello Alcántara apunta que en los recientes documentos publicados por el Banco Mundial sobre educación superior "se deman participación más consistente del Estado, aunque se insiste en la importancia de que otros sectores de la sociedad también lo hagan" (2000:11). Es decir, que instancias tanto públicas como privadas o civiles pueden participar en el diseño, gestión e im de políticas sociales. Esto coincide con otros documentos del Banco como su reporte anual, *World Development Report 199* el que presenta un Marco Integral de Desarrollo (CDF, por sus siglas en inglés) y lo propone como un medio para reducir la con "mayor efectividad", con cuatro puntos que llaman la atención, dado que se observa flexibilidad en la visión de este pod organismo financiero:

a). Los gobiernos necesitan "construir alianzas con el sector privado, las organizaciones no gubernamentales (ONG), las agencias de asistencia y las organizaciones de la sociedad civil para definir las necesidades de desarrollo e implementar programas" (1999:21).

b). Debe ser el país y no las agencias de asistencia, el que tenga sus estrategias de desarrollo.

c). El Marco Integral de Desarrollo cuenta con una visión de largo plazo y colectiva de las necesidades y soluciones, que deben formularse para lograr así un "apoyo nacional sustentable" (1999:21).

d). "Las preocupaciones estructurales y sociales deberán ser tratadas de igual forma y al mismo tiempo que las preocupaciones financieras y macroeconómicas" (1999:21).

Con su referencia a construir "alianzas con el sector privado, las ONG, las agencias de asistencia y las organizaciones de la s civil", el Banco confirma la existencia de esa nueva institucionalidad que se mencionó al principio de este artículo. Además, sus líderes empiezan a reconocer a los agentes locales y nacionales y ahora buscan que sus propuestas logren un "apoyo naci sustentable". Sin embargo, habrá que indagar también si esta nueva forma de actuar que del poderoso organismo financiero e congruente con sus principios enunciados en sus reportes y programas.

4. Factores que restringen la transferencia de políticas en México

Como recordamos, Dolowitz y Marsh (1996) proponen seis factores que podrían facilitar o restringir el proceso de la transfe políticas (véase III-H). Estos factores son la complejidad de la política, su aspecto adaptativo, las estructuras institucionales implementación, la ideología política, la cultura y el lenguaje entre el emisor y el receptor de las políticas y las relaciones ant En seguida, se señalan algunos factores que limitan la influencia de los organismos internacionales sobre la agenda educativ México.

El Observatorio Ciudadano de la Educación (Note 15) (OCE, 2001) responde a la nueva institucionalidad ya mencionada al las prescripciones que el Banco realizó en materia educativa. En su comunicado titulado, *Las recomendaciones educativas d Mundial para México*, el OCE advierte que el BM "ignora olímpicamente (sic) los estudios realizados por los investigadores mexicanos del país y las propuestas formuladas por el magisterio y otros organismos de la sociedad civil" (2001:Web-Site), además, el análisis del organismo financiero sobre algunos puntos específicos carecen de una adecuada contextualización y n ponderan los factores políticos como es el caso del poderoso Sindicato Nacional de Trabajadores de la Educación (SNTE) en aplicación de las políticas recomendadas. Por esto, el Observatorio concluye que el análisis del Banco fue "superficial" (OC 2001:Web-Site).

La falta de visión para diseñar e implementar políticas es congruente con la crítica que hace Latapí Sarre (Note 16) (1998) so endeble base pedagógica en las que se sostienen las recomendaciones del Banco Mundial. En su escrito, *Cómo educar sin pe* el experto mexicano en educación señala que el modelo del Banco "nos regresa a la concepción tradicional (transmisiva del aprendizaje), y apoya la ilusión de reformar la educación sin atravesar por sus complejidades" (1998:45). Este autor también la falta de evidencia empírica de las prescripciones del Banco y de una "evaluación seria" sobre éstas, cuestionan la viabilida políticas (Latapí, 2000a).

Por lo tanto, la descontextualización de las políticas sugeridas por el Banco, la omisión de factores políticos, el reduccionism análisis sociales y la escasa base pedagógica y empírica son algunos factores que podrían impedir, hasta cierto grado, la trans de políticas del Banco hacia la realidad mexicana. El problema aquí es cuándo existen mecanismos de coerción para transfer independientemente de la calidad de la política que se quiera adoptar. Si se demuestra la debilidad en el diseño de políticas o programas, ¿quién o cómo se podría impedir que se realice la transferencia? Alcántara sugiere que las instituciones universit grupos de la sociedad civil, "exijan" a los negociadores de los acuerdos con los organismos internacionales que informen pu verazmente de los avances, es decir, que haya transparencia en estos procesos (2000:15).

En caso de que se llevasen a cabo transferencias de políticas que son altamente cuestionables, los hacedores de política nacio serían responsable directos de las consecuencias tanto políticas como económicas que ocurrieran y que podrían deslegitimar de cualquier gobierno. Así que discutir los asuntos públicos con grupos de expertos y con la sociedad civil, como sugiere Al podría reducir los efectos regresivos que pudiera ocasionar una transferencia de política. Es probable, desde nuestro punto de con la intención de reducir estas consecuencias pudiese haber una mayor convergencia entre la racionalidad de los políticos tomadores de decisión y la de los investigadores educativos.

5. Objetos de transferencia y complejidad para validar transferencias

Es complicado identificar los objetos que se transfieren los organismos internacionales hacia la agenda educativa mexicana. parte, Marín (1998) menciona que son "reformas educativas" las que el gobierno de México ha adoptado como parte de la nu realidad global. Para Coraggio, lo que el Banco busca "imponer" o "sugerir con gran dureza" son políticas públicas (1998:50 es más específico que Marín y Coraggio, y observa que el Banco pretende transferir a los países pobres algunas políticas de financiamiento a la educación (Latapí, 2000a). Sin embargo, este autor también piensa que la OCDE, mediante sus estudios seminarios, puede diseminar ideas "tendientes a imponer una determinada visión de la educación" (2000b). Por su parte, Alc más puntual cuando menciona "los temas críticos" que los organismos multilaterales han analizado en el caso de la educació Estos temas son el crecimiento de los sistemas, la pertinencia, la calidad, el financiamiento, el gobierno y la eficacia, entre ot (2000:15). Este autor apunta que los organismos plantean "recomendaciones" para reestructurar la educación superior y, "c c no olvidar que el proceso de convertir las recomendaciones en políticas concretas pasa necesariamente por procesos mediaci los que entran en juego diversos actores a través de resistencias, conflictos, negociaciones (públicas y privadas), etcétera." (A 2000:15)

Es decir, se puede copiar una política externa e incluirla en un programa o documento oficial, pero para mostrar esta transfer primero se tienen que comparar estos documentos y, una vez que se "presenten pruebas físicas concretas, como sugieren Eva Davies, habrá que analizar si esa política se ha implementado o no para "determinar qué tan lejos ha llegado la transferencia" Davies, 1999:237-8). En este sentido, Alcántara piensa que "en ocasiones las recomendaciones requieren de largos periodos establecimiento" (2000:15). Así que notar coincidencias, al comparar documentos oficiales con reportes extranjeros, sólo es para validar que existe un proceso de transferencia de políticas. Mostrar una evidencia más sólida del punto al que ha llegado adopción podría tomar tiempo si se espera que las políticas o programas, supuestamente transferidos, sean implementados.

En el caso de la educación superior en México, es difícil precisar qué objetos (tangibles e intangibles) se están transfiriendo. Lógicamente, es también complejo demostrar que alguna política educativa se está copiando o adoptando de algún organism internacional. Latapí Sarre --quien ha fungido como asesor de varios secretarios de Educación en México-- asegura que habr "examinar si las propuestas del BM se están reflejando en la política educativa de México, y discutir, en cada caso, si ello es conveniente o no" (1998:46). Esto abre interrogantes sobre la existencia real de procesos de transferencia de política del BM México.

Sin embargo, Pablo González Casanova da por hecho que existe una transferencia de políticas educativas de los organismos internacionales hacia México pues encuentra "extrañas coincidencias" entre algunos documentos realizados por el Consejo Internacional para el Desarrollo de la Educación (Note 17) (CIDE, 1991) y un libro publicado por "altos funcionarios" de la de Educación Pública (González Casanova, 2001:40). En el documento del CIDE, se hacían varias sugerencias que, según G Casanova, "se convirtieron en la base de creencias, la argumentación y la política educativa que domina en el México neoliberal" (2001:40), y también nota semejanzas entre esta "base de creencias" y el documento de la OCDE titulado *Exame Políticas Nacionales de Educación Superior* OCDE (1997). (Note 18) Sin embargo, llama la atención que en su "análisis documentado" (como él mismo lo llama), González Casanova no cita algún programa oficial antes de la publicación del info CIDE. Por eso valdría la pena preguntar si realmente el documento del CIDE fue "la base de creencias" para diseñar e imple políticas educativas a nivel superior en México. Para responder a este cuestionamiento, primero se seleccionaron cinco docu tres de ellos elaborados por autoridades mexicanas y dos por organismos internacionales, todos ellos publicados en diferente saber: El Programa Integral para el Desarrollo de la Educación Superior (PROIDES, 1986)

En seguida se compararon algunos elementos de diagnóstico y acciones específicas que estos documentos incluían. Los resul esta sencilla labor se muestran en los cuadros 3 y 4. (Note 19)

En el cuadro 3, se presentan los cinco programas seleccionados en orden cronológico y en las columnas siguientes algunos el de diagnóstico incluidos en estos informes. El símbolo **X** significa que ese programa refiere en su texto, la expansión masiva planeación y coordinación, y la deserción de alumnos en las universidades mexicanas. Siguiendo este orden, puede observar tanto los tres programas gubernamentales como los dos informes de los organismos internacionales coinciden en señalar que principal del detrimento de la educación superior fue su anárquico crecimiento, y excepto la OCDE asegura que la expansión desordenada del sistema de educación superior en México imposibilitó una planeación adecuada.

Cuadro 3. Algunos elementos de diagnóstico en la educación superior en México

	Problemas derivados de la expansión masiva en las universidades	Falta de planeación y coordinación en el sector	de
PROIDES 1986	X	X	
PME 1989	X	X	
CIDE 1991	X	X	
PDE 1995	X	X	
OCDE 1997	X		

Fuente: Elaborado por el primer autor, con base en los programas de referencia.

Otro elemento en común que mencionan los dos organismos internacionales (CIDE, 1991 y OCDE, 1997), así como el PROI desarrollado en 1986, y el PDE de 1995 es la deserción escolar la cual, según, los organismos internacionales es una consecu las desventajas económicas de los jóvenes mexicanos. El cuadro 3 también expone que, antes de la publicación del documen CIDE, las autoridades mexicanas ya habían identificado algunos de los principales problemas del sistema de la educación su lo tanto, los documentos del CIDE y de la OCDE no aportaron elementos que los hacedores de política mexicanos no conoci previamente. Estos resultados motivan a profundizar en el análisis y comparar algunos objetivos y estrategias de la educació

En el cuadro 4, se exhiben algunas políticas que las autoridades mexicanas habían planteado para reformar la educación supe
Como puede observarse, la evaluación de estudiantes, profesores y procesos educativos, la aplicación de exámenes de selecc
ingresar a la educación superior, la diversificación de fuentes de financiamiento, y la vinculación con el sector productivo fu
estrategias planteadas por el gobierno mexicano antes de que los dos organismos internacionales seleccionados (el CIDE y la
desarrollaran sus informes.

Cuadro 4. Algunas políticas de educación superior en México

	Evaluación de estudiantes, profesores y procesos educativos	Exámenes de selección para el ingreso a la educación superior	Diversificación de las fuentes de financiamiento en las universidades	Vinculación d con el apa productivo d
PROIDES, 1986	X	X	X	X
PME, 1989	X	X	X	X
CIDE, 1991	X	X	X	X
PDE, 1995	X	X	X	X
OCDE, 1997	X	X	X	X

Fuente: Elaborado por el primer autor, con base en los programas de referencia.

En su informe la OCDE otorga un reconocimiento a la política educativa mexicana y señala que, a pesar de que México puec
beneficiarse de la experiencia del resto de los países que forman esta organización, también "puede enseñar mucho en términ
soluciones desarrolladas por él mismo" (1997:223). Es decir, este país puede no sólo podría adoptar políticas o programas de
extranjero sino también transferirlos. A pesar de esto, habría que ir más allá del discurso y analizar qué trayectoria podrían se
procesos en el caso de los países en desarrollo. El esquema de trayectorias propuesto por Evans y Davies podría ser de utilid
sentido (véase el cuadro 1).

Asimismo, destaca que algunos de los programas revisados se citan y se critican entre ellos mismos. Por ejemplo, el PME re
se tomaron las recomendaciones del PROIDES para "plantear" las líneas esenciales para la modernización de la educación su
mexicana. Mientras que el CIDE se aventura a decir que si las estrategias del PROIDES "se hubieran implantado con rapide
constituido un paso para iniciar la mejora de la calidad" (CIDE, 1991:40). De la misma manera, el informe del CIDE critica
debido a que lo encuentra "'excesivamente" vago, ya que no señala a quién le corresponde hacer qué. Como se observa, esta
crítica del informe del CIDE resalta diversos aspectos sobre la implementación de políticas públicas, por lo que cabría tambi
posibilidad de que este tipo de estudios motiven a los diversos actores locales a poner en práctica sus políticas educativas.

Al contrastar algunas acciones contenidas en los programas e informes aquí seleccionados, parece excesivo opinar que las su
contenidas en el informe del CIDE fueron "el punto de referencia ineludible" para el diseño de políticas en educación superic
(González Casanova, 2001: 37). Las coincidencias entre el material bibliográfico desarrollado por las autoridades mexicanas
la publicación de los informes del CIDE y la OCDE sustentan esta aseveración; sin embargo, hay vetas de análisis que se abr
dirección, como: ¿Hasta qué grado ha llegado la transferencia de política educativa a nivel superior en México? Si se toman
el esquema de TP descrito anteriormente y los argumentos del debate académico, podría decirse que la transferencia de políti
educativa que ha ocurrido en México ha sido sólo de tipo coercitivo y que se ha producido por medio de algunos organismos
internacionales. No obstante, también en el presente trabajo se ha afirmado que existen negociaciones privadas y públicas en
gobiernos receptores y alguna organización que desea "imponer" una política pública. Además, la influencia que llegaran a t
organismos internacionales sobre las agendas nacionales sería de acuerdo con la naturaleza, funciones, orígenes y estructura
organismos, es decir, si algunos utilizan mecanismos de coerción para "imponer" una política, otros legitiman y, quizá, tamb
presionan, por otros medios para que se adopten políticas, programas o instituciones. En todo este proceso la interacción entr
también juegan un papel destacado.

Asimismo, como se anotó en párrafos anteriores, existe una reformulación del papel de los organismos internacionales, comc
Mundial, que tiende a tener mayor flexibilidad y sensibilidad en los cambios que desea dirigir (Rodríguez y Alcántara, 2001)
habrá que investigar si los renovados propósitos de este organismo pueden tener un efecto en la política educativa de los país
desarrollo o si forman parte de un movimiento estratégico para redimirse de las críticas que ha recibido por su forma de oper.
20)

A través del debate académico surgido en México, es difícil identificar qué objeto u objetos se están transfiriendo. Por un lad
de reformas universitarias y, por otro, de ideas y políticas concretas. Esto dificulta la validación de los procesos de transferen
política educativa, ya que tampoco se han desarrollado herramientas metodológicas para demostrar estos procesos. Asegurar
gobierno mexicano ha copiado del CIDE programas o políticas en su totalidad es impreciso ya que, en este caso, existen coin
entre los programas de educación superior mexicanos, que fueron elaborados antes que el informe del Consejo. Además la O

(1997) reconoció que México puede enseñar mucho en términos de política educativa, por lo que cabría la posibilidad de que
también realizara transferencias hacia otros contextos.

Conclusiones

La globalización motiva y facilita la adopción de políticas, programas, ideas o instituciones de un contexto a otro. La política
educación superior en México se ha adaptado a las circunstancias de su cambiante entorno e históricamente ha recibido la in
modelos educativos extranjeros, aunque cada etapa ha tenido variables internas o externas que han determinado significativa
procesos de transferencia de política. A lo largo de la historia, se han generado profundos cambios en las funciones del gobie
tampoco se puede soslayar el surgimiento de una institucionalidad global cada vez más compleja, con altos grados de interac
comunicación entre múltiples actores, lo que produce un ambiente idóneo para que se adopten políticas desarrolladas en otro
ambientes.

Al relacionar las principales líneas de debate sobre la adopción de políticas educativas a nivel superior en México con el esq
transferencia de políticas, se observa que este análisis se ha centrado primordialmente en el papel que desempeñan los organi
internacionales en la transferencia de políticas y en los medios de presión que utilizan para influir la agenda educativa nacion
embargo, aún quedan por investigar diversos aspectos para tener una noción más precisa de la transferencia de políticas educ
como de la amplia gama de agentes que podrían influir de manera muy diversa en el diseño de las mismas. Estudiar a los div
agentes de las transferencias, así como conocer sus fines, objetivos e intereses, ayudaría a definir qué tipo de transferencia (v
coercitiva) ocurriría. Además, podría explicarse la forma en que se combinarían los mecanismos de influencia o presión de c
en este proceso. También, es necesario tener en cuenta que las transferencias de políticas podrían utilizarse como una herram
para diseñar acciones encaminadas a la solución de problemas, en este caso, educativos, y de esta manera, eventualmente, ah
tiempo y recursos. (Note 21)

Si se toma en cuenta que las transferencias deben ser un proceso consciente, independientemente de su tipo, como sugieren
Davies (1999); entonces, se asume que puede haber negociaciones, resistencias y, hasta conflictos, entre la parte emisora y la
de políticas públicas, por lo que es necesario investigar la forma en que los posibles agentes de la transferencia interactúan e
ambiente institucional cada vez más complejo.

A partir del análisis elaborado, se concluye que es difícil identificar los objetos tangibles e intangibles que realmente se han
a la agenda educativa mexicana. Al carecer de este conocimiento previo, es lógico que validar la existencia de la adopción d
política educativa en México sea un ejercicio complicado y abierto a múltiples cuestionamientos.

Los argumentos que sugieren que México copia política educativa a nivel superior de algunas organizaciones carecen de sus
las autoridades mexicanas ya habían planteado, con varios años de anterioridad, acciones muy similares a las que el CIDE y
hicieran en su momento para resolver los problemas de la educación universitaria en México.

Al no haber, por un lado, una clara evidencia de que México copia política educativa de algunos organismos internacionales
determinado periodo y, por otro, existen coincidencias entre programas nacionales e informes internacionales, surgen, entonc
algunos cuestionamientos: ¿por qué existen estas similitudes?, y ¿cómo se producen? Si la respuesta fuera que son las macro
(globalización, sistemas económicos, etc.) las que dictan estos cambios y los hacedores de política los que aprenden de éstos
asumirse que sería posible que se hubiese dado un ejercicio consciente y voluntario para copiar o emular una política. Sin em
entonces, ¿qué papel desempeñan los organismos internacionales? Los múltiples mecanismos de presión e influencia de esta
organizaciones son otra parte muy importante, aunque no exclusiva, para copiar o emular determinada política pública dentr
ambiente de creciente complejidad, por eso necesario el análisis sistemático que ayude a mejorar y a ampliar el conocimient
transferencias de política públicas en México.

Agradecimientos

A los dos revisores anónimos que leyeron y emitieron útiles comentarios a la primera versión de este artículo. A Mayavel Sa
su excelente corrección de estilo.

Referencias

Alcántara, A. (2000). *Tendencias mundiales en la educación superior: el papel de los organismos multilaterales.* Ponencia p
en el Centro de Investigaciones Interdisciplinarias en Ciencias y Humanidades. http//:www.unam.mx/ceiich/educacion/alcan

Allende, C. *et al.* (1998). *La educación superior en México y en los países en vías de desarrollo desde la óptica de los organ
internacionales*. Colección documentos. (México: ANUIES).

Bennett, C. (1991) "How states utilize foreign evidence". *Journal of Public Policy*, 1, 31-45.

Brown, P. (1999). "Globalisation and the political economy of high skills". *Journal of Education and Work*, vol. 12(3), pp. 2

Castro, I. (1997). "El pragmatismo neoliberal y las desigualdades educativas en América Latina". *Revista Mexicana de Soci*

(3), 189-205.

Cerny, P. (1999). "Globalization, governance and complexity" en Prakash, A. y Hart, J. A. (coords.) *Globalization and Gove* Londres; Nueva York: Routledge.

CIDE, Consejo Internacional para el Desarrollo de la Educación. (1991). *Estrategias para Mejorar la Calidad de la Educaci Superior en México*. Philip, H. Coombs (coord.). México: SEP/FCE.

Common, R. (2001). *Public Management and Policy Transfer in Southeast Asia*. Inglaterra: Ashgate.

Coraggio, J. L. (1998). "Investigación educativa y decisión política. El caso del Banco Mundial en América Latina". *Perfiles Educativos*, vol. XX, nums. 79-80, pp. 43-57.

Davies, J. y Evans, M. (1997). *Unpacking Policy Transfer Analysis: The case of Local Agenda 21*. Documento de trabajo (1 Departmento de Política, Universidad de York, Inglaterra.

Dolowitz, D. y Marsh, D. (1996). "Who learns what from whom: A review of the policy transfer literature". *Political Studies* 357.

Dolowitz, D. (1997). "Where's the State? The Political Process of Globalisation". ponencia presentada en el foro Globalisati Critical Perspectives Conference, University of Birmingham, 14-16 de marzo.

El Banco Mundial (1999). *World Development Report 1999/2000: Entering the 21st. Century*. Wasihington: El Banco Mund

Evans, M. (1998). "Análisis de redes de políticas públicas: una perspectiva británica". *Gestión y política pública*, vol. VII (2 266.

___ (1999). "Policy transfer networks and collaborative government: The case of social security fraud". *Public Policy and Administration*, vol. 14 (2), pp. 30-48.

Evans M. y Davies, J. (1999). "Interpretación de la transferencia de políticas: una perspectiva multidisciplinaria y de niveles múltiples". *Gestión y política pública*, vol. VIII (2), pp. 201-246.

Flores-Crespo, P. (1998). Analysis of Higher Education Policy under the Policy Transfer Framework. A Theoretical and Em Contribution regarding Developing Countries: The Mexico´s Case. (tesis de maestría) sin publicar. Departamento de Política Universidad de York, Inglaterra.

____ (2001). *Impresiones de un seminario del Banco Mundial sobre educación superior. Red de Investigadores de la Educa Superior (RISEU)* http://www.suc.unam.mx/riseu/publicaciones/

Freire, P. (1996). *Política y Educación*. México: Siglo XXI.

Gil, M. (2000). "Un siglo buscando doctores". *Revista de la Educación Superior*, vol. XXIX (1), no. 113, pp. 23-42.

González Casanova, P. (2001) *La universidad necesaria en el siglo XXI*. México: ERA.

Heidenheimer, A.; Heclo, H.; y Teich, C. (1976). *Comparative Public Policy. The Political of Social Policy in America, Eur Japan*. Nueva York: St. Martin Press.

Jones, P. (1992). *The World Bank Financing of Educación. Lending, Learning and Development*. Londres: Routledge.

Ianni, O. (1999). *Teoría de la globalización*(4a. edición). México: UNAM, Siglo XXI.

Latapí, P. (1997). "El informe Delors". *Tiempo Educativo Mexicano* IV. México: UAA-UNAM.

___ (1998) "Cómo educar sin pedagogía". *Tiempo Educativo Mexicano* V. México: UAA.

____ (2000a). "Nueva travesura del Banco Mundial. *Tiempo Educativo Mexicano* VI. México:UAA.

_____ (2000b) "La OCDE y el futuro de la educación". *Proceso*, 1 de octubre, no. 1248.

Lowe, J. (1988). "Inter-governmental organizations in education" en Stephens, M. D. (coord.) *International Organizations i* *Education*. Londres; Nueva York: Routledge.

Majone, G. (1991). "Cross-national sources of regulatory policymaking in Europe and the United States". *Journal of Public* 11(2), pp. 208-224.

Marín, A. (1998). "La globalización y su impacto en la reforma universitaria mexicana". En *La universidad mexicana en el u* *siglo XXI, visiones y proyecciones*. México: ANUIES.

Mokhtar, K. S. (2001). *Policy transfer in critical perspective: the case of the privatisation of Malaysia Airlines*. Thesis de do sin publicar. Departamento de Política, University of York, Inglaterra.

Mundy, K. Y Murphy, L. (2001). "Transnational advocacy, global civil society. Emerging evidence from the field of educati *Comparative Education Review*, vol. 45 (1), pp. 85-126.

OCDE, Organización para la Cooperación y el Desarrollo Económico, (1997). *Review of National Policies for Education: M* París: OCDE.

OCE (Observatorio Ciudadano de la Educación, 2001) "Las recomendaciones educativas del banco mundial" en *La Jornada*. sitio en internet:http://www.jornada.unam.mx/2001/jul01/010703/048n1soc.html

Pallán, C. *et a.l* (1995). *La educación superior en México*. México: ANUIES.

Paz, O. (1994) [1950]. *El laberinto de la soledad*. México: FCE.

PDE (1995). *Programa de Desarrollo Educativo 1995-2000*, México: Poder Ejecutivo Federal.

PDNU (1999). *Human Development Report 1999*. Oxford; Nueva York: OUP.

PME (1990). *Programa para la Modernización Educativa 1989-1994*, México: Poder Ejecutivo Federal.

PND (1988). *Plan Nacional de Desarrollo 1988-1994*. México: Poder Ejecutivo Federal

PROIDES (1986). *Programa Integral de Desarrollo para la Educación Superior*. México, ANUIES.

Puiggrós, A. (1999). "Educacion y sociedad en América Latina de fin de siglo: del liberalismo al neoliberalismo pedagógico' *Interdisciplinarios de America Latina*, Universidad de Tel Aviv, vol. 10 (1), pp. 5-24.

Rhodes, R. A. W. (1997). *Understanding Governance. Policy Networks, Governance, Reflexivity and Accountability*. Gran B Open University Press.

Rodríguez, R. (1998) "La universidad latinoamericana contemporánea. Las encrucijadas de una transición" en Rodríguez, R. *La integración latinoamericana y las universidades*. México: UDUAL.

Rodríguez, R. y Alcántara, A. (2001). "Multilateral agencies and higher education reform in Latin America". *Journal of Edu* *Policy* (en prensa).

Rose, R. (1991). "What is Lesson-Drawing?". *Journal of Public Policy*, (11), 1, 3-30.

Stephens, M. P. (1988). *International organizations in education*. Londres; Nueva York: Routledge.

The Economist (1999). "Globalization: Popular myths and economic facts" in *Economics*. Gran Bretaña: St Edmundsbury P

Tünnermmann, C. (1996). *Situación y perspectivas de la educación superior en América Latina*. México: ANUIES.

____ (1997). *La reforma universitaria de Córdoba*. Collección: Temas de hoy en la educación superior, no. 24. México: AN

Villa L. y Flores-Crespo, P. (2002). "Las universidades tecnológicas mexicanas en el espejo de las institutos universitarios d tecnología franceses". *Revista Mexicana de Investigación Educativa*, VII, 14, enero-abril, pp. 17-49.

Wolman, H. (1992). "Understanding Cross National Policy Transfers": The Case of Britain and the US. *Governance: An Int*

Journal of Policy and Administration, (5), 1, 27-45.

Notas

1. Para un estudio más amplio sobre la globalización, véase Lanni (1999).

2. Este término es una traducción del término "hollowing state" usado por R.A.W Rhodes (1997).

3. Hasta el momento no conocemos una traducción en español del término "governance" que sea conocida de manera genera que en este trabajo usamos "sistema gubernamental" como sinónimo de "*governance*".

4. Para un análisis internacional de las redes de políticas públicas, véase Evans (1998).

5. Entrevista de Andrés Ortega en el diario español *El País*, 25 de julio de 1999.

6. Los términos "resistencia" y "acomodo" pertenecen a Cerny (1999).

7. En este sentido, la confusión es mayor cuando González Casanova habla de que la nueva reforma universitaria sigue "estri una "lógica modernizadora que es, a la vez, neoliberal y neoconservadora" (2001:107). Coraggio (1998) también usa indistin tres términos: "paradigma neoliberal" "paradigna neoclásico" y "propuesta" o "decisión ideológica neoconservadora". Castr apunta que existe una corriente de pensamiento llamada "neoliberalismo, o paradójicamente, neoconservadurismo" (1997:18

8. Phillip Brown (1999) usa el término de "importación de política" para analizar temas educativos como la formación de hal dentro de las corrientes económicas actuales.

9. Garciadiego, citado en Gil (2000:24).

10. Sobre la Reforma Universitaria de Córdoba, véase Tünnermmann 1997.

11. Para un análisis descriptivo de las organizaciones internacionales sobre el ámbito educativo, véase Stephens (1988).

12. Para el caso latinoamericano, Puiggrós parece coincidir con la visión de Marín cuando dice que los presidentes de países sudamericanos como, Pinochet, Menem, Fujimori, Sanguinetti y luego Cardoso recibieron "las orientaciones político-educati paquete programático del Banco Mundial sin realizar adaptaciones a la realidad de su país y sin condicionar ningún aspecto reforma exigida" (Puiggrós, 1999:7).

13. Flores-Crespo (2001) describe una forma en que algunos especialistas de la educación superior del Banco Mundial intera las comunidades de académicos y funcionarios de diversas naciones.

14. John Lowe (1988) hace un interesante estudio de la estructura y las funciones de cuatro organizaciones internacionales (Europeo, la OCDE, la UNESCO y el Banco Mundial) en el campo de la educación. Otro no menos importante análisis sobre organismos internacionales y educación superior es el de Allende *et al*, (1998, México: ANUIES).

15. El OCE es una asociación civil formada por investigadores, maestros, líderes de opinión, legisladores, estudiantes, etcéte propósito de examinar el diseño e implementación de la política educativa en México así como de fomentar la crítica indepe la participación de las autoridades en la discusión de los problemas educativos. El Observatorio publica quincenalmente sus comunicados en el periódico *La Jornada*. Para mayor información véase www.observatorio.org

16. Latapí también ha comentado de manera crítica otros tantos documentos de organismos internacionales. Por ejemplo, vé informe Delors" (1997), "La reseña de la OCDE sobre educación superior" (1997) o "PDNU: el cambio es posible" (2000a).

17. El CIDE fue fundado en 1970 como una institución independiente, sin fines de lucro y con le objetivo de realizar estudio política comparada. También habría que recordar que el informe del Consejo fue coordinado por Phillip Coombs quien fungi asesor "externo" de un ex secretario de educación en México durante el sexenio 1988-1994.

18. González Casanova también cita documentos elaborados por algunos economistas ligados al Banco Mundial que guardar correspondencia con la propuesta del ex rector de la UNAM, Francisco Barnés de aumentar las cuotas de colegiaturas a los e y sus familias. Esta propuesta se puso en marcha en 1999 lo que produjó un paro estudiantil de casi diez meses en una de las grandes universidades latinoamericanas.

19. Estos resultados forman parte de la tesis de maestría elaborada por el primer autor (véase Flores-Crespo, 1998).

20. Para un análisis a fondo sobre el papel del Banco Mundial dentro del ámbito de la educación, véase Jones (1992).

21. Un caso de una transferencia voluntaria en México fue la creación de las universidades tecnológicas (UT) en 1991 que e
modelo educativo de los institutos tecnológicos universitarios (IUT) franceses creados a mediados de los años sesenta. Para
comparación del desempeño de ambas modalidades educativas, véase Villa Lever y Flores-Crespo (2002).

Acerca del Autores

Pedro Flores Crespo
Universidad de York

Estudiante de doctorado en la Universidad de York en Inglaterra
(Conacyt 115728)
Email: pfl14@york.ac.uk

Salvador Ruiz de Chávez
Centro Nacional de Evaluación para la Educación Superior (Ceneval), México
Email: contaduria@ceneval.edu.mx

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is http://epaa.asu.edu

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-0211. (602-965-9644). The Book Review Editor is Walter E. Shepherd: shepherd@asu.edu . The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
aacosta@cucea.udg.mx

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)

Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
Arizona State University

Dennis Sayers
Ann Leavenworth Center
for Accelerated Learning

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Andrew Coulson
a_coulson@msn.com

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Richard M. Jaeger
University of North Carolina--Greensboro

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Western Interstate Commission for Higher Education

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois--UC

Robert T. Stout
Arizona State University

---

archives | abstracts | editors | board | submit | comment | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 989 times since October 14, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 42 **October 14, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**.
Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Legislating Equity:
The Distribution of Emergency Permit Teachers in California

Laura Goe
University of California, Berkeley

Citation: Goe, L. (2002, October 14). Legislating equity: The distribution of emergency permit teachers in California, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(42). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n42/.

Abstract
There is a significant negative relationship between the percentage of teachers on emergency permits and student achievement at the school level in California schools, after controlling for other student and school characteristics. Generally, the more emergency permit teachers there are in a school, the lower the school's achievement. This phenomenon is examined in the context of other contributors to student achievement such as socio-economic status and school size. The effects of teacher distribution and school selection as contributing factors are considered. In addition, policy and legislative initiatives related to emergency permit teachers that have been recently debated in California will be discussed. Finally, a set of initiatives is proposed that attempt to decrease the need for emergency permit teachers and ensure that those that must be hired due to shortage conditions have the support they need to become credentialed teachers.

Introduction

Class size reduction, teacher retirement and attrition, and a burgeoning school-age population have all played roles in recent severe shortages of qualified K-12 teachers throughout California (EdSource, 2001). One of the consequences of shortages of qualified personnel is that large numbers of teachers have been hired on emergency permits. In the 2000-01, 34% of all first year teachers in California were emergency permit (EP) teachers, and 10% of *all* California teachers held emergency permits (Note 1). As will be documented in this paper, EP teachers tend to be concentrated in schools with low standardized test scores, high percentages of minority students and English learners, and high percentages of students with free or reduced-price lunch status.

Because of the correlation between high percentages of EP teachers in schools and low student test scores on standardized assessments such as the SAT-9, California legislators proposed several pieces of legislation in 2001 designed to limit the number of EP teachers in schools and districts. The proposed bills varied from an outright cap on the percentage of EP teachers in a district to complex formulas for determining the "teacher quality" in a given school and district accompanied by a plan to improve the quality of the teaching force. All of the proposals were designed to decrease the number of EP teachers employed by districts, and/or redistribute EP teachers where they are concentrated in low-performing schools.

In this paper, I will 1) examine the current distribution of emergency permit (EP) teachers; 2) discuss the association between EP teachers and low test scores; 3) consider current legislative solutions to the EP teacher "problem" in California; 4) discuss how the policy system can influence teacher distribution; 5) discuss the preparation available to teachers who are currently entering teaching on emergency permits

Teacher Credentials and Quality

Emergency permit teachers. California has been hard-pressed in recent years to find enough fully credentialed teachers to fill its classrooms. Shortages of qualified teachers are not spread across all schools and districts equally, and some schools and districts suffer more severely from hiring difficulties than others. Urban districts in particular have had difficulty recruiting sufficient numbers of qualified teachers. The problem of recruiting teachers to work in urban schools is not confined to California, and urban areas in many states have faced similar shortages (Fideler, Foster, & Schwartz, 2000). Urban schools frequently hire EP teachers to fill their staffing needs after exhausting other teacher hiring mechanisms (Note 2).

Teacher quality. Since legislation passed in 1990 making it possible for teachers to begin K-12 teaching careers without full credentials, there has been ongoing concern about the quality of EP teachers. Studies in California have suggested that the students most in need of qualified, highly trained teachers are least likely to get them (Center for the Future of Teaching and Learning, 2001; Public Policy Institute of California, 2000; Shields et al., 2001). The students generally considered most in need of highly qualified teachers are those attending schools where student standardized test scores are low and where there are large percentages of low-income students and/or minority students and English learners.

Teacher quality and student achievement. As shown in Figure 1 below the percentage of EP Teachers increases monotonically as student achievement (using school API scores (Note 3)) decreases. Thus, the top-performing schools in the state (Decile 10), have about 5% EP teachers on average, though many schools in this decile have *no* EP teachers. Conversely, schools in the lowest performing schools in the state (Decile 1) have an average of about 23% EP teachers, though there are some schools with more than half the faculty teaching on emergency permits. It should be emphasized that the high correlation between having many EP teachers and having low test scores demonstrates an *association*, but does not necessarily suggest a *causal* relationship.

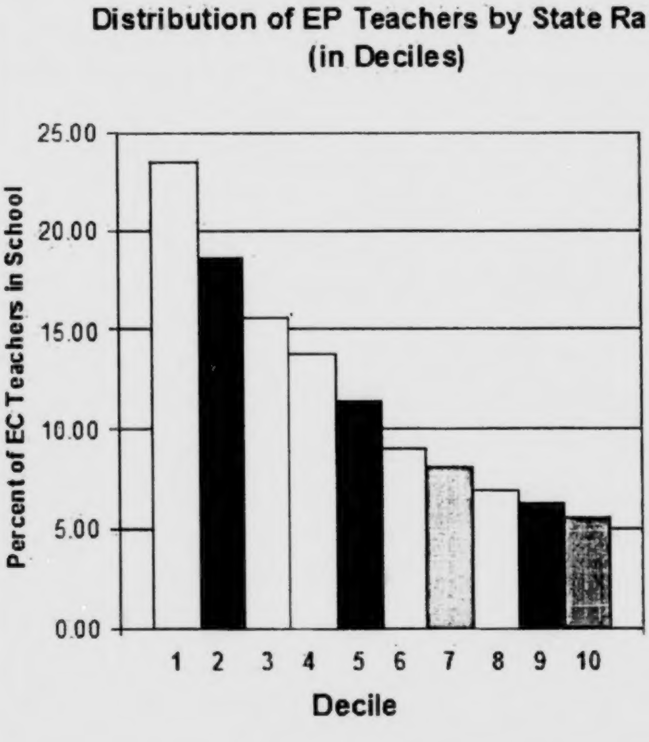


Figure 1. Relationship of CAP Performance Index and Percentage of EP Teachers

Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)
Note: Decile 1 is *lowest*-performing, Decile 10 is *highest*-performing

Figure 1 demonstrates the relationship between percentages of EP teachers and decile rankings on California's

Academic Performance Index. Data for EP teachers and state rankings are based on school year 1999-2000.

Research has shown that teaching has an important and substantial impact on student achievement. A study using Texas data matching student gain scores to teachers demonstrated that individual teachers have a much stronger influence on student achievement than previously suspected (Hanushek, 1998). But does teacher credentialing matter? Many studies suggest that uncredentialed teachers are less effective in the classroom than teachers with credentials as measured by student achievement. (Darling-Hammond, 1994; Darling-Hammond, 2000; Fetler, 1999; Fuller, 2000; Goldhaber & Brewer, 2000; Hawk, Coble, & Swanson, 1985). While it is difficult to prove a *causal* connection between EP teachers and poor student achievement, (Note 4) there is strong and substantial evidence of a correlation between these variables, even after other potential sources of influence, such as socioeconomic status of students and other school resources, are taken into account.

Some researchers contend that there is insufficient empirical evidence to claim that having teacher certification results in better teaching and higher student achievement (Ballou & Podgursky, 1999; Goldhaber & Brewer, 1996, 2000, 2001; Hanushek, 1994). The lack of consensus among education researchers is an indication of how difficult it is for observational research to establish connections between particular teacher qualities and qualifications (such as credentials) and particular student outcomes (such as test scores).

Even if it is possible to connect student achievement with particular teachers, it is more difficult to establish which particular practices, strategies, skills, knowledge, communication ability, etc. contributed to the students' achievement, whether good or bad. Further, the school conditions and context in which teachers work may have a substantial impact on their ability to teach effectively. And since many EP teachers work in schools where facilities are inadequate, teaching resources are scarce, and teaching conditions are difficult, it is hard to determine what percentage of a students' test scores are related to teacher credentialing and what percentage are related to extraneous factors in the classroom or school.

Researchers who are concerned about the quality of EP teachers realize that more research needs to be done in this area. The question to be considered in looking closely at EP teachers' impact on student achievement is "*How* does certification matter?" As Darling-Hammond has pointed out, it is crucial to determine what certification actually means in terms of different qualities and performance among teachers (Darling-Hammond, Berry, & Thoreson, 2001).

Some states (Tennessee, for example) have developed or are developing student-level record-keeping systems that should allow researchers to better examine the effects of teachers on students (Anderson, 1998). Texas has also made matched student and teacher data available to interested researchers. With such data, student achievement information can then be further examined with reference to the certification of the teachers. Unfortunately, California is years away from implementing a student-level tracking system that will allow individual student achievement to be tracked by teacher and school. Thus, further exploration of the association between credentials and student achievement is still a long way off for California.

Teacher qualifications

States vary widely in the qualifications they demand of teachers. California relies heavily on a single test, the CBEST (California Basic Education Skills Test) as the initial gateway into teaching,. Credentialed teachers must also pass subject matter tests or complete a subject matter approved program, a test of reading knowledge, and complete other teacher education requirements, but these requirements do not pertain to the nearly 40,000 teachers on emergency permits or waivers. California places less importance on graduation from an approved preparation program or having a teacher credential than almost any other state, ranking second-to-last in the nation (just ahead of Florida) in the percentage of districts demanding these qualifications (46.4%) (National Center for Education Statistics, 2002). California is moving towards performance evaluation and induction as requirements for teacher credentialing, but little evidence exists about how induction benefits new teachers, including those without preservice preparation, or how performance evaluation helps ensure better teaching.

There are many factors that contribute to student achievement that cannot be measured by whether or not teachers have clear credentials. Consider that there are many schools in California that are "underperforming" (Note 5) even though they do not have high percentages of EP teachers. An analysis of API scores and percentages of EP teachers in schools reveals that 15% of California schools that were "underperforming" in 1999-00 had below the median number of EP teachers. There were more than 200 schools that scored in the lowest two deciles of the API (considered seriously underperforming) yet had fewer than 8% EP teachers. And there were 60 schools in the lowest two deciles with 1% or fewer EP teachers. These findings illustrate the importance of considering teacher characteristics and qualifications *besides* teaching credentials that may contribute to student achievement.

Teacher education and experience

California's EP teachers have generally completed a BA or BS degree and passed the CBEST (California Basic Education Skills Test), but have not completed teacher preparation coursework or passed the required content-area tests for teachers in California. While some EP teachers are transfers from out-of-state who teach on an emergency permit while completing California requirements, most EP teachers are novices who have had no teacher training and who have never taught in a K-12 public school. Many are recruited from teacher education programs before they have finished their coursework, a practice which was rampant in California after class size reductions in the 1996-97 school year and growth in the student population in California resulted in some districts desperately scrambling for teachers.

EP teachers not only lack specific teacher preparation coursework, they are also less likely to hold higher degrees such as masters' degrees (Note 6). The evidence about whether teachers' overall education levels are correlated with student test scores is mixed. For example, while some studies on teachers' education levels have shown that having a master's degree has little effect student achievement (Ferguson & Ladd, 1996; Monk, 1994; Wenglinsky, 2002), other studies have found small effects of teachers' education levels on student achievement (Ferguson, 1991; Public Policy Institute of California, 2000).Teaching experience also has been found to have variable effects on student achievement. Some studies find little effect (Monk, 1994; Wenglinsky, 2002), while others suggest that experience has a small overall effect on student achievement (Ferguson & Ladd, 1996; Sutton & Soderstrom, 1999). Other researchers have found that lack of teaching experience appears to have a negative impact in the first few years of teaching (Betts, Rueben, & Danenberg, 2000), but that there is not a clear linear relationship between teaching experience and student achievement (Hanushek, 1998). Thus, while teaching experience and higher levels of education are valuable to schools and classrooms for many reasons (Note 7), the evidence about how these characteristics impact student performance is inconsistent.

Subject-specific training may also be important to student test scores. Several studies have found that having subject-specific training has a significant impact on secondary math and science achievement (Fuller, 2000; Goldhaber & Brewer, 1996; Monk, 1994; Wenglinsky, 2002). Thus, ensuring that the teachers hired have an appropriate major or minor for the subject they are teaching may be at least as important to student test scores as previous teaching experience or advanced degrees. This is an important consideration in designing a plan for increasing student achievement through higher quality teaching.

Pedagogical coursework has also been found to be associated with higher student achievement. Wenglinsky used multilevel structural equation modeling on NAEP data and found that some teacher inputs are positively correlated with student achievement (Wenglinsky, 2002). He found that particular professional development topics (higher-order thinking skills and methods of teaching diverse learners) were positively related to student achievement, as were specific classroom practices (hands-on learning and employing higher-order thinking skills). This study could be construed as evidence that at least some pedagogical training matters, though it is not clear whether teacher preparation programs or professional development are better delivery systems for this training (Wenglinsky's measure included both college coursework and in-service training). Similarly, Monk found that pedagogical training in subject matter methods was positively correlated with student achievement in math and science, sometimes even more strongly than subject matter knowledge (Monk, 1994).

Ethnicity of California's EP teachers

As shown in Table 1, EP teachers in California are considerably more likely to be from a minority group than are fully credentialed teachers. They are more than twice as likely to be Hispanic or Latino (26.1% vs. 10.7%), more than twice as likely to be African American (10.5% vs. 4.8%), and more likely to be Asian (4.4% vs. 3.9%), Pacific Islander (.3% vs. .2%), and Filipino (1.4% vs. .9%). EP teachers are slightly less likely to be American Indian (.6% vs. .7%), and considerably less likely to be white (55% vs. 77.9%).

Table 1

Characteristics of California EP vs. Credentialed Teachers

	EP Teachers	Credentialed Teachers
% Doctorate	.9	1.7
% Master's + 30 or more hours	4.7	20.1
% Master's degree	7.9	17.5
% Bachelor's + 30 or more hours	27.2	46.0
% Bachelor's degree only	58.4	13.7
% Less than Bachelor's degree	.7	.6
Years of service in district	2.46	11.72
Years of teaching	3.25	14.70
% Male	34.6	28.1
% Female	65.3	71.7

% American Indian/Alaska Native	.6	.7
% Asian	4.4	3.9
% Pacific Islander	.3	.2
% Filipino	1.4	.9
% Hispanic or Latino	26.1	10.7
% African American, Not Hispanic	10.5	4.8
% White, Not Hispanic	55.0	77.9
% Multiple Race or No Response	1.6	.9
% Authorized to teach English	8.1	13.2
% Authorized to teach Life Sciences	4.7	4.8
% Authorized to teach Mathematics	6.9	6.2
% Authorized to teach Physical Science	3.7	3.3
% Authorized to teach Special Education	15.7	12.8
% Authorized Reading Specialist	.5	2.2
% Authorized Bilingual Teaching	4.3	10.1

Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

The ethnic composition of California's schools is becoming increasingly more minority and less white. Thus, the greater number of minority teachers entering the profession through alternative pathways than through traditional programs may be beneficial to California in terms of moving towards a teaching force that is more representative of the students being taught. This is an important consideration in planning ways to decrease the numbers of emergency permits while increasing diversity among the teaching force. Further, it is interesting to note that, unlike white teachers, African-American and Hispanic teachers are less likely to transfer *away* from schools with high percentages of minority students and more likely to transfer *into* schools with even higher percentages of students of the same ethnic backgrounds as themselves, regardless of the students' poverty or achievement (Note 8) (Hanushek, Kain, & Rivkin, 2001). It could be argued that recruiting more minority teachers into the teaching force could result in the creation of more stable teaching staffs at schools with high percentages of African-American or Hispanic students.

Teacher Distribution

Grade levels taught by EP teachers. EP teachers are most likely to be hired by a middle school or junior high. One reason for this is that teachers are most likely to transfer away from, rather than into a middle school (Chester, Offenberg, & Xu, 2001). These vacancies are then disproportionately filled with either new, recently credentialed teachers, or with teachers holding emergency permits. Second to middle schools, EP teachers are most likely to work in high schools.

The distribution of teachers nationally.

Data from the National Center for Education Statistics provides some insight into patterns of hiring by school characteristics (NCES, 1996). The data shows that newly hired teachers in urban schools are more likely to be beginning teachers, and newly hired teachers in urban fringe/large towns (i.e., the suburbs), are more likely to be transfers. Even more striking is the breakdown of hiring patterns by student socioeconomic status. The data shows that newly hired teachers in high poverty central city schools are far more likely to be beginning teachers than transfers. In addition, newly hired teachers at schools with 20% or more minority students are considerably more likely to be beginning teachers than transfers (Table 2).

Table 2

National Distribution of Newly Hired Teachers (NCES Data)

School and Student Characteristics	Beginning Teachers	Transfers
Hired in Central City	43.2%	27.7%

Hired in Urban Fringe/Large Town	39.6%	34.2%
Hired in Central City school with 41-100% free/reduced price lunch students	45.8%	25.6%
Hired in Urban Fringe/Large Town with 0-5% free/reduced price lunch students	36.2%	42.3%
Hired in Urban Fringe/Large Town with 41-100% free/reduced price lunch students	52.2%	25.7%
Hired in Rural/Small Town with 41-100% free/reduced price lunch students	56.0	28.5%
Hired in schools with less than 20% minority students	42.8%	35.7%
Hired in schools with 20% or more minority students	46.2%	29.0%

Source: NCES (1996) Sources of Supply of Newly Hired Teachers

This national data can be construed as confirmation of what district level researchers are finding about teacher transfers, i.e., that they are transferring *away* from high-poverty, high-minority schools into schools with lower levels of poverty and fewer minority students (Chester et al., 2001). Research done at the state level in New York reveals a similar trend, with teachers moving away from schools with mostly high poverty, low-achieving students and into schools with fewer minorities, less poverty, and better achievement (Lankford, Loeb, & Wyckoff, 2001). Some of this effect appears to be due to the fact working conditions and salaries are frequently also lower in these schools. In California, recent analyses suggest that these factors matter even more than student characteristics in predicting high levels of teacher turnover (Loeb, Darling-Hammond, & Luczak, 2002).

The distribution of EP teachers across the state of California

The statewide average of EP teachers per school was 11.5% (Note 9) in 1999-2000. But in urban schools, the average percentage of EP teachers climbed to 14.6% for the same time period, compared to less than 7% in small towns and rural areas. Further details are shown in Table 3. This provides clear evidence that more EP teachers are finding employment in urban school districts, which are likely to be lower in student achievement and socio-economic status and higher in the percentage of minority students and English language learners. Table 4 divides the percentage of EP teachers at schools into two halves at the median. This table confirms that schools with higher percentages of EP teachers are also likely to have nearly twice the percentages of African American and Hispanic students, and half the percentage of white students. Similarly, much higher percentages of EP teachers are found in schools with low income students. And in schools with higher percentages of EP teachers, there are nearly twice as many English language learners.

Table 3

Distribution of California EP Teachers by Population

Population Status	Mean Percentage of EP Teachers	N (schools)
Large City (pop > 250K)	14.61	1427
Mid-Size City (pop < 250K)	9.01	973
Urban Fringe of Large City	11.81	3210
Urban Fringe of Mid-Size City	9.47	425
Large Town (pop > 25K)	10.18	33
Small Town (pop < 25K but >2500)	6.25	179
Rural (pop < 2500)	6.94	217

Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

Table 4

California Student Characteristics by EP Teachers

Emergency permit teachers above and below median	2000 API Score	% African American	% Hispanic	% White	% Low SES	% English Language Learners
0-8% EP teachers (below median)	721.07	5.90	26.26	53.61	37.13	15.48

9-85% EP teachers (above median)	607.09	10.73	50.22	26.37	58.94	30.24
Total	**664.24**	**8.31**	**38.21**	**40.03**	**48.00**	**22.84**

Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

EP teachers are more likely to find placements in schools that are low-performing, which are more likely to be found in urban areas. Table 5 shows a crosstabulation of 2000 API scores divided into deciles and the population status for the schools. The table demonstrates that in large cities, schools are far more likely to appear in the lowest deciles of the API than in the highest. In the urban fringe (i.e., suburbs) of large cities, more schools are found in the high end of the API distribution.

Table 5

California API Scores in Deciles by Population**

API Scores by Deciles	Large City (pop > 250K)	Mid-Size City (pop < 250K)	Urban Fringe of Large City (Suburbs)	Urban Fringe of Mid-Size City
1st Decile: 346-493	314 (146.3)*	71 (99.9)*	215 (329.2)*	44 (43.6)*
2nd Decile: 494-542	202 (139.0)*	107 (94.9)*	251 (312.9)*	45 (41.4)*
3rd Decile: 543-589	158 (143)*	115 (97.6)*	290 (321.8)*	41 (42.6)*
4th Decile: 590-628	132 (143.0)*	124 (97.6)*	299 (321.8)*	54 (42.6)*
5th Decile: 629-665	106 (143.9)*	123 (98.2)*	317 (323.8)*	46 (42.9)*
6th Decile: 666-703	104 (141.0)*	100 (96.3)*	332 (317.3)*	45 (42.0)*
7th Decile: 704-741	99 (144.3)*	94 (98.5)*	341 (324.8)*	46 (43.0)*
8th Decile: 742-785	96 (141.5)*	92 (96.6)*	335 (318.3)*	55 (42.1)*
9th Decile: 786-836	115 (144.6)*	68 (98.7)*	395 (325.3)*	37 (43.1)*
10th Decile: 837-969	101 (140.4)*	80 (95.8)*	436 (315.8)*	12 (41.8)*

*First number is *observed* value; number in parentheses is *expected* value.
**Large and small towns and rural areas excluded due to relatively small counts.
Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

The percentage of EP teachers is correlated with student, teacher, and school characteristics as well, as shown in Table 6. The Pearson correlation between the percentage of EP teachers in a school and the percentage of students on free or reduced price lunch is .439, and the correlation between the percentage of EP teachers in a school and the percentage of Hispanic students is .493. Both correlations are significant at the .01 level (one-tailed). These correlations suggest that Hispanic students and low-income students are more likely to be taught by EP teachers than students from other ethnic groups and students from higher-income families.

Table 6

California EP Teachers Correlated with Selected Student, Teacher, and School Characteristics

	% EP Teachers

% African-American students	.243**
% Asian students	-.094**
% Hispanic students	.493**
% Students on free/reduced price lunch	.439**
% Parents not high school graduates	.378**
% Parents that attended graduate school	-.281**
% 1^{st} year teachers	.401**
School Size	.148**

**Correlation is significant at the .01 level (1-tailed)
Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

The distribution of EP teachers within districts

Besides the substantial variation in the distribution of EP teachers across the state, variation is also found within districts. A district may have vast differences in percentages of EP teachers found in particular schools. For example, the distribution of EP teachers in Visalia Unified School District's elementary schools ranges from zero to 20%, with a mean of 6.56% (Note 10).

In many cases, the percentages of EP teachers are high throughout the entire district. For instance, Buena Vista Elementary District, Columbine Elementary District, Ravenswood City Elementary District, and Compton Unified School District—all districts serving predominantly minority students—had 1999-2000 averages of 50% or more EP teachers for the district. That year, Compton Unified had the dubious honor of having the highest percentage of EP teachers in California, with an average of 56.29% EP teachers district-wide, and a high of 85% EP teachers in one school! However, as Table 7 shows, there are a far greater number of districts with *fewer* than 10% EP teachers than districts with *more* than 10% EP teachers. New Haven Unified School District, well known for its emphasis on teacher quality and aggressive recruitment of the best teachers (Note 11) had the distinction in 1999-2000 of having the smallest percentage of EP teachers in the state. However, other districts, such as San Diego Unified, have recently changed their hiring policies to eliminate or curtail the numbers of EP teachers hired. San Diego Unified will no longer hire teachers on emergency permits.

Table 7

Distribution of EP Teachers by District in California

Number of Districts	% EP Teachers
4	50% or more
18	30-40%
71	20-30%
188	10-20%
387	Fewer than 10%

Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

Redesignation of EP teachers as Pre-Interns.

It is interesting to note that a change in credentialing designations which recently occurred in California has led to the *appearance* of a decrease in EP teachers. The change is the addition of a new category called "pre-intern," which is the next step up from emergency permit on the credentialing ladder. In order to qualify for this designation, teachers must have met the EP requirements and they must have enrolled in a teacher preparation program. By encouraging or forcing EP teachers to immediately enroll in teacher preparation programs, districts can seem to have fewer EP teachers, while in fact they still have about the same number of underqualified teachers.

Variables Correlating with Student Achievement

Multiple regression results.

To examine variables that impact student achievement, a multiple regression was performed using the 1999-2000 API data (Note 12). Data for 6,387 California schools was used for the regression. The dependent variable used was the school-wide API score. The coefficients are shown in Table 8. The regression demonstrated that factors that are significantly *negatively* correlated with API scores (in order of standardized coefficient beta size) include the percentage of students qualified for free/reduced price lunch, the percentage of Hispanic students, the percentage of parents without a high school diploma, school size, the percentage of African-American students, the percentage of emergency permit teachers, and the percentage of first-year teachers. The factors that were significantly *positively* correlated with API scores were the percentage of parents who had attended graduate school and the percentage of Asian students. A production function for this regression yields:

$$Z_{Predicted\ API\ score} = -.349\ Z_{\%\ Free\ lunch} - .198\ Z_{\%\ Hispanic\ students}$$

$$-.173\ Z_{\%\ Parents\ with\ no\ HS\ diploma} - .155\ Z_{School\ size} - .055\ Z_{\%\ Emergency\ permit\ teachers}$$

$$-.031\ Z_{\%\ 1st\ year\ teachers} + .199\ Z_{\%\ parents\ completed\ grad\ school} + .076\ Z_{\%\ Asian\ students}$$

The R of .905 and the adjusted R^2 of .819 suggests that most of the variation in test scores *at the school level* is explained by this set of variables (Note 13). With an N of 6,389 and nearly all eligible California schools included in the regression (Note 14), these results are significant and interesting (though not particularly surprising) demonstrating that most of the variation among schools is accounted for by factors that are beyond the immediate control of schools, districts, or the state, including student ethnicity (Note 15), student poverty, and parent education (Note 16). In fact, there are only three variables in this model that could conceivably be impacted by state or district actions: the percentage of EP teachers and first-year teachers at school sites, and school size. While policy changes could affect all of these factors, none are easily changed by simple mandate. .

The EP teacher coefficient in the regression is significant but small relative to the other coefficients (see Table 8. However, it is clear from the regression that the percentage of EP teachers in a school does have an association with API scores above and beyond factors such as the socio-economic status of the student body and school size. Furthermore, although inexperience and EP status are highly correlated, both exert independent effects on student achievement. School size is an additional factor that has been found in other research to influence student achievement, along with teacher characteristics.

Table 8

Regression Coefficients

	Unstandardized Coefficients		**Standardized Coefficients**	***t***	***Sig***	**Correlations**	
	B	***Std Error***	***Beta***			***Partial***	***Part***
(Constant)	809.527	2.371		341.423	.000		
% African American Students	-1.382	.067	-.135	-20.480	.000	-.248	-.109
% Asian Students	.828	.063	.076	13.177	.000	.163	.070
% Hispanic Students	-.908	.051	-.198	-17.892	.000	-.219	-.095
% Free Lunch	-1.469	.048	-.349	-30.879	.000	-.361	-.164
% Parents Not H.S. Grads	-1.181	.064	-.173	-18.423	.000	-.225	-.098
% Parents Attended Grad School	2.006	.072	.199	27.890	.000	.330	.149
% Emergency Permit Teachers	-.618	.076	-.055	-8.143	.000	-.101	-.043
% 1st Year Teachers	-.588	.112	-.031	-5.242	.000	-.065	-.028
School Size	-.127	.005	-.155	-27.463	.000	-.325	-.146

N = 6,387 (schools)
$R = .905$, Adjusted $R^2 = .819$
Constant (Dependent Variable): Academic Performance Index Score for School
Data Source: California Department of Education (see Appendix A)

Policy, Politics, and California Teacher Preparation

It is rather puzzling that California has such an incoherent, conflicting, and poorly coordinated set of policies for the recruitment, preparation, development, and retention of teachers. Cynics who might believe that most state policies are incoherent have only to look closely at the efforts of other states to discover that policies do exist for teacher recruitment, preparation, and development that are focused and consistent. One example is Connecticut, where there has for years been a concerted effort focused on improving teacher quality, rather than a single "silver bullet" strategy (Wilson, Darling-Hammond, & Berry, 2001). Connecticut also built on initial policies rather than switching to new strategies. This continuity of efforts and the participation of experienced educators in the formation and evaluation of policy at all levels helped the state policy maintain coherence over time. Many believe that Connecticut's improvement in student achievement is a direct result of the improvement in teacher quality that resulted from the state's policy.

It is relatively easy to find examples of California state policies that have served to hurt teacher quality in the state, and which have probably impacted student learning as a result. Perhaps the most glaring example is the institution of class size reduction (CSR) in the state of California, an event that occurred precipitously and with little thought to collateral consequences. Without careful consideration about where teachers would be found to fill the additional classrooms created by CSR, the legislation was passed and classes in grades K-3 were limited to 20 students. There is little doubt that CSR might be beneficial, at least in early grades, in terms of student learning and teacher and parent satisfaction (Mosteller, 1995). However, the impact of CSR on California's students is less clear, and a recent report has indicated that there is no clear causal connection between improved achievement and CSR (CSR Research Consortium, 2002). However, RAND researchers have suggested that smaller class size is one of the most important factors in differences between math scores on the most recent NAEP assessment (Note 17) (Grissmer, Flanagan, Kawat, & Williamson, 2000). The Public Policy Institute of California noted the negative effects of CSR on teacher characteristics, stating that "CSR led to a dramatic increase in the percentages of inexperienced and uncertified teachers" (p. 1) (Public Policy Institute of California, 2002).

As policy analysts have pointed out, the effects of improvements (in this case, improvements resulting from CSR) must be considered in context and in terms of their interaction effects, not in isolation (Hatch, 2000). CSR, a program that was intended to be beneficial to students and teachers, opened the door to increasing numbers of emergency permit teachers by making jobs readily available. With districts clamoring to hire teachers with or without a credential, CSR served as a disincentive for students in teacher preparation program to continue their efforts at obtaining a teaching credential through traditional pathways. Teacher training institutions were raided by desperate districts looking to fill teaching slots that had been created virtually overnight. In response to the changed teacher training landscape, teacher training institutes were forced to immediately expand their course offerings to nights and weekends and change course requirements and expectations to accommodate teachers who had already become teachers of record for their own classrooms.

The most unfortunate consequence was that the very children that stood to benefit most from CSR were the ones most hurt by the precipitous nature of the policy implementation, for two reasons. The first is that the suddenly increased demand for teachers in schools with middle-class students, high test scores, and fewer challenges meant that many teachers who had been in more challenging schools were able to take advantage of an opportunity to transfer into these "better" teaching placements. A RAND study on California schools found that districts and schools with large proportions of Black and Hispanic students had higher initial vacancy rates for teachers (Carroll, Reichardt, & Guarino, 2000). They also found that teachers tended to transfer away from these schools, and that districts with large proportions of Black and Hispanic were not as successful as other districts in recruiting credentialed teachers. Thus, the openings that were available for the legions of emergency permit teachers needed to fill classrooms were openings in the schools with higher proportions of Black and Hispanic students, which also tend to be schools with higher poverty rates and lower student achievement. While the students in these schools gained the benefit of smaller class sizes, evidence shows that they became even more likely to be taught by underqualified teachers (CSR Research Consortium, 1999).

In terms of preparing emergency permit teachers, there are numerous instances in official California state policy where regulations make it difficult to assist EP teachers to be more effective. For example, the state-funded Beginning Teacher Support and Assessment (BTSA) program discourages districts from funding the induction of emergency permit teachers. BTSA's website introduction states that BTSA "provides opportunities for *fully-prepared* first and second year teachers to expand and deepen their teaching knowledge and skill" (italics added) (Beginning Teacher Support & Assessment, 2000). However, the idea that "fully-prepared" teachers should be given priority in terms of funding and slots in the program seems like a contradiction in terms. The first of BTSA's stated purposes is to "Provide an effective transition into the teaching career for first- and second-year teachers in California" (under "BTSA - Basics"). The second purpose is to "Improve the educational performance of students through improved training, information, and assistance for new teachers." If these are the primary purposes of BTSA, it seems that emergency permit teachers need the support of BTSA at least as much as teachers who are already much farther along in their training. Further, once EP teachers have completed two or three years of teaching while attending school at night and on weekends, they will be understandably reluctant to participate in BTSA, a program designed for "first- and second-year teachers." However, it is also clear that reshaping BTSA to include EP teachers would result in a program that would be less useful to traditionally-prepared first- and second-year teachers.

Another example of ways in which policy conflicts are making it difficult for EP teachers to receive the training and support they need is that pre-interns and EP teachers can legitimately teach in a classroom as the teacher of record, but they are *not* permitted to student teach until they have passed their subject matter requirements. Thus, an EP teacher or pre-intern is not allowed to student teach under the supervision and guidance of an experienced teacher, but they are allowed to teach a class by themselves, without support!

Additionally, California has provided scholarships for teachers to support them as they complete their teacher preparation program and obtain their credentials. But the funding available for these scholarships is adequate only to support a few hundred teachers each year. Consider that there were about 10,000 new EP teachers hired in California last year, many (perhaps most) of whom chose an alternative credentialing route because they did not have sufficient funds for traditional teacher preparation. The funding provided for helping teachers complete their preparation programs is clearly inadequate, even though reducing the numbers of EP teachers is a priority for the state, judging by the legislation addressing the issue, as will be discussed in more detail in the next section.

Legislative Solutions to the Emergency Permit Problem

As noted previously, most of the variables negatively correlated with API scores are beyond the direct control of policymakers. The legislature cannot easily solve child poverty, which explains most of the variance in test scores at the school level. They can, however, try to impact teacher quality and thus indirectly help student achievement. Some legislation has sought to mandate reductions in emergency permits without responding systemically to the underlying problems that have produced the shortage of qualified teachers and the maldistribution of underqualified teachers (Note 18).

In the 2001-02 Regular Session of the California Legislature, several bills were introduced in an attempt to impact the distribution and/or preparation of EP teachers, to increase the overall number of qualified teachers, or to increase the percentages of credentialed teachers in low performing schools. Table 9 summarizes these bills and their status (Note 19). Some of the bills that seek to eliminate or reduce the percentages of EP teachers in schools are problematic. Without state support and incentives, the goal of eliminating EP teachers would be difficult or impossible for many districts, particularly in the four California districts where 50% or more of all teachers are teaching on emergency permits (Note 20).

Table 9

2001 California Legislative Proposals Related to EP Teachers

Bill and Author	Status	Summary
AB 833 (Steinberg)	Vetoed by Davis 10/5/01	Establishes the Public School Teacher Qualification Equity Program which provides for a teacher qualification index (TQI)*. The bill would require that school districts calculate a TQI for each school and make efforts to increase the TQI for each school until it obtains a specified rating. The original version of the bill called for specific interventions if the districts did not meet its TQI goals within a certain length of time, but this part was taken out of the final submission of the bill. *TQI is based on the number of underqualified teachers within the district and within each school. Fewer underqualified teachers result in higher TQI scores.
AB 721 (Steinberg)	Under submission	Establishes the Teachers for Low-Performing Schools Renewable Grant Program designed to encourage postsecondary institutions with teacher preparation programs to "recruit, prepare, and support new teachers to work and be successful in low-performing schools." The bill is premised on the belief that low-performing schools suffer particularly from a shortage of credentialed teachers.
SB 57 (Scott)	Approved by Davis 9/8/01	Clears the way for quicker credentialing of private school teachers who decide to teach in public schools and for district interns to complete their credentialing program early if they pass certain assessments.
SB 743 (Murray)	Vetoed by Davis 10/13/01	Provides funds and mandate for the California Commission on Teacher Credentialing to address the issue of emergency permit teacher distribution and make specific recommendations to districts with large numbers of EP teachers in low-performing schools in low-income communities, including recommendations for recruitment and retention policies.

SB 837 (Scott)	Approved by Davis 10/5/01	Requires school districts to meet specific requirements in a diligent search for certificated teachers. Documentation will be required from districts hiring teachers on emergency permits to demonstrate that they made a diligent search for credentialed teachers prior to offering positions to non-credentialed teachers.
SB 508 (Vasconcellos)	Suspended by Assembly 9/12/01	Extensive set of recommendations to assist "California Unrealized Learners," i.e., schools in the lowest two deciles of the API. Provides for additional funding as well as improved recruitment and retention strategies in the form of extra salary and bonuses, professional development, extended school year, outreach and assessment consultants, benefits to highly qualified teachers who teach in these schools, loan assumptions for new credentialed teachers, limits on the number of underqualified teachers at the schools, smaller class size, etc.
SB 321 (Alarcon)	Unfinished business 10/15/01	Authorizes Los Angeles Unified School District to create a pilot program for offering a 30-day training session to all emergency permit teachers who are assigned to schools have 20% or more teachers on emergency permits. The training would take place before the teachers began teaching.
SB 319 (Alarcon)	Set for hearing 1/16/02	Amends the Teaching as a Priority Block Grant that awards grants to schools districts to attract credentialed teachers for low-performing schools. The amendment would require that the school district meet its API performance goal and that the district agrees to increase credentialed teachers in all schools to 90% or more in order to be eligible for grants.

AB 833

The authors of AB 833 proposed a Teacher Qualification Index (TQI) that is comprised of two separate school scores. A school would receive a "quantity rating" of "10" at the high end of the spectrum if it had fewer than 5% underqualified teachers, and a "1" at the low end of the spectrum if it had 45% or more underqualified teachers. A school would receive a "distribution rating" of "10" at the high end if its percentage of underqualified teachers was less than or equal to the average percentage of such teachers for the entire district, and garner a "1" if its percentage of underqualified teachers was greater than 80 percent more than the average for the district. A special adjustment would be made for schools with low percentages of underqualified teachers, since it would be possible for a school with only 4% underqualified teachers to get the lowest distribution rating in a district where the average was 1%. An average of the two ratings provides the single number designated TQI. In order to raise a particular school's TQI, the number of underqualified teachers would have to be reduced at the school to improve the quantity rating, and would have to be reduced in comparison to the district average in order to improve the district average. Thus, the district is provided with an incentive to redistribute both credentialed and EP teachers within the district more evenly.

This bill encourages districts to equalize placements of EP teachers among schools, a legislative act that might carry some weight at the bargaining table. Teacher unions might agree to stricter transfer rules in order to prevent the continual turnover in low-performing schools that would result in the schools being constantly out of compliance.

However, as the bill evolved, it lost its enforcement section. Districts that were out of compliance would have had to submit to an evaluation of the problem and development of a Teacher Quality Improvement Plan (TQIP). Subsequent to this examination, the Fiscal Crisis and Management Assistance Team might also conduct their own investigation and recommend changes in the district in an attempt to achieve compliance. According to earlier drafts of the bill, some of the actions the State Board of Education might then mandate were

- class size reduction in certain schools and grades;
- pay incentives for teachers willing to work at certain schools;
- housing subsidies for teachers willing to teach at selected schools;
- increased funding for materials, books and technology at certain schools;
- facility improvements; and
- focused staff development for beginning teachers.

While these measures alone might not have resolved the teacher distribution problem, they might have alleviated some of the reasons for high teacher turnover, thus providing hope for maintaining a stable staff as the new teachers gain experience and the EP teachers achieve their clear credentials. However, after the language regarding the TQI was deleted, the bill passed but was vetoed by Governor Davis.

SB 508

This is a comprehensive proposal that attempts to work on some of the systemic problems underlying poor student performance in the state (as defined by the two lowest deciles of the API). The belief that is demonstrated throughout this bill is that good teaching matters. The bill focuses simultaneously on a number of important aspects of improving the quality and distribution of the teacher workforce in districts with low-performing schools, including:

- improving recruitment and retention,
- providing increased salaries and bonuses for highly qualified teachers,
- offering professional development for teachers in low-performing schools,
- extending school years in low-performing schools with extra days being used for professional development and for developing working relationships with parents,
- offering extra benefits for highly qualified teachers willing to work in low-performing schools,
- providing outreach consultants to help schools develop working relationships with parents and community members,
- providing assessment consultants so that schools can better understand where their students are failing and thus develop measures to directly address the areas of greatest need,
- providing loan assumption opportunities for new credentialed teachers (not EP teachers) willing to teach in low-performing schools,
- setting limits on the numbers of underqualified teachers at low-performing schools,
- reducing class size in low-performing schools.

These measures are intended to act in concert to assist low-performing schools in improving their achievement (as measured by the API). The combined effects of these measures might in fact go a long way towards helping these schools, but they will be costly. Besides the bonuses, incentives, and loan reductions payable directly to teachers, there would be substantial costs for reducing class size, hiring consultants, and extending the school year. The current economic crisis in California (and in the nation) will make such expensive measures less likely to meet with approval. Whatever the fate of the bill might have been before September 11th, the fact that the bill was suspended by the Assembly on September 12th suggests that it was seen as too sweeping and too expensive to gain acceptance in the current economic climate. The bill remains in suspension, lacking appropriations.

Two pieces of legislation that were approved by Governor Davis require little in the way of additional expenditures, but their impact on the hiring and distribution of EP teachers will probably be slight. *SB 57* makes it easier and faster for private school teachers to get their credentials to become public school teachers in California. The bill also allows district interns to take certain assessments (performance and written) that will allow them to gain their credentials earlier, though exactly what these assessments are and who will judge acceptable completion of the required assessments is not clarified. *SB 837* mandates that districts meet specific requirements in a diligent search for certificated teachers. Documentation of the districts' efforts in this search will be required from districts who hire EP teachers in order to demonstrate that they made a concerted effort but were unable to find and hire qualified teachers.

An Alternative Proposal for Reducing the Number of EP Teachers in California

Another approach would be to focus efforts on improved retention rather than focusing most of the efforts on the teacher labor market, through the following mechanisms.

I. Help EP teachers quickly obtain their clear credentials

Many EP teachers in California work for years to get their clear credential. While districts may be willing to help these teachers, most districts are not providing the sort of guidance and assistance that EP teachers need in order to surmount the obstacles. EP teachers interviewed for a report sponsored by the Bay Area Consortium for Urban Education (BACUE) expressed a longing for more assistance through the district, the county office and the universities where many of them were taking the courses they need for their credential (Goe, Castro, & Curry, 2001). One way to help these teachers would be for the state to provide funds to districts with high percentages of EP teachers to develop pilot programs to assist these teachers in more quickly getting their credentials. Districts that create very successful programs (as judged by how quickly and effectively they were able to prepare *high-quality* teachers and move them from EP to clear credential status (Note 21)) could then share their models with similar districts.

Many EP teachers are valuable to schools for a variety of reasons. In a state with a very diverse student population, hiring and keeping minority teachers is a priority, and EP teachers are more likely to be minorities than traditionally certified teachers. In addition, many EP teachers are willing to teach in urban schools and schools with high percentages of minority students, and retaining teachers in those schools is crucial. EP teachers in California are more likely to be male than the currently certified teachers, and are teaching in subjects where there is a great need (such as math, physical science, and special education) in higher percentages than are regularly certified teachers (Note 22). Thus, the state could benefit from finding ways to assist and train these teachers while moving them efficiently through the system to obtain their clear credentials.

One possibility is to create a second branch of California's Beginning Teacher Support and Assessment system (BTSA) specifically for EP teachers. Many EP teachers already participate in BTSA, though they are discouraged from doing so because BTSA was designed for teachers who had completed a traditional teacher preparation program. The advantage to creating a second branch of BTSA for EP teachers would be to create improved regulation of teacher training for EP teachers, while extending to them the support and mentorship new teachers receive through BTSA. Under the existing system, EP teachers have no provisions for training, support, and assessment other than what is provided by school districts (Note 23) and by colleges where teachers are taking courses in order to earn their clear credential. This results in substantial variability in the types of support and training that these EP teachers are receiving. Providing a regulated, uniform set of standards for the training of EP teachers could be of great benefit to the EP teachers as they work towards their clear credentials.

II. Create incentives for experienced, credentialed teachers to teach in low-performing schools

Some states, including Connecticut, have legislated that supplementary grants be given to poorer school districts to enable them to hire and retain high quality teachers (Wilson et al., 2001). Salary increases or one-time bonuses could be offered as incentives to attract experienced, qualified teachers into low-performing schools with high turnover and high percentages of EP teachers, though the effectiveness of such incentives remains to be seen. In California, the Teaching as a Priority (TAP) grant program serves a similar purpose, providing allocations to schools with an API rank of 1-3 with $44.00 per student and schools with an API of 4-5 with $29.00 per student.

However, districts must apply for the grants on a competitive basis, and the funding is limited. In addition, there are few regulations on how the district may use the funds, other than the requirement that the funds must be used for "retention and recruitment of credentialed teachers to work in low-performing schools" (California Department of Education, 2001). Thus, districts, working either independently or in consortiums, may use the funds for signing bonuses, housing subsides, vested annuities, and improving working conditions. Obviously, the ways in which districts will use funds will vary considerably, and it remains to be seen how successful these funds will be in attracting credentialed teachers to underperforming schools. It is possible that different uses for the funds are differentially successful in attracting teachers. Geographic differences may also contribute to the success of various uses of the funds, with housing subsidies undoubtedly appealing to teachers in areas with soaring housing costs, such as San Francisco.

It might be most productive to create financial incentive packages for experienced, credentialed teachers that include 1) a contract requiring a certain number of years of service in the low-performing school, and 2) an agreement to mentor an EP or novice teacher. This requirement would help stabilize teacher turnover in low-performing schools by building a base of teachers who are committed to staying with the school and by providing assistance to EP or novice teachers who might then be more successful in their first years of teaching and more willing to stay at the school. An added bonus of requiring mentoring is that mentoring a new teacher within the BTSA program as a support provider has been found to be very beneficial to the mentoring teacher (Wing et al., 2002). Thus, both the beginning teacher and the more experienced teacher are likely to benefit from the relationship.

Another approach which could be tried is paying teachers at underperforming schools a salary based on a longer work day. The justification is that the teachers at these schools have a more challenging workload and thus spend more hours on the job. The difficulty is that all teachers at such schools are assumed to work longer hours, including the EP teachers. Thus, it may be difficult to justify differential pay for only the credentialed teachers.

III. Emphasize new teacher retention

The state might provide low-performing schools with substantial targeted funds that would be used solely to provide bonuses to teachers designated by the schools as "keepers," i.e., teachers that the principal (perhaps with the help of an advisory committee of teachers and parents) felt had the potential to become excellent teachers *at that school*. This would allow the principal to go beyond simply asking particular teachers to stay for the good of the school by offering the teachers an incentive to stay for their own good as well. The bonus would thus provide the "keepers" with clear affirmation that they were considered valuable to the school, and might provide enough of an incentive to prevent their transferring to other less challenging schools. In addition, new teachers are lower on the salary scale and thus might see even relatively small bonuses as substantial incentives, meaning that this could be a cost-effective strategy. Those new teachers who did not receive the bonuses would feel free to move on to other schools. It should be clarified that the "non-keepers" would not necessarily be "bad" teachers. Rather, such teachers might be poor matches for the particular schools they were in, and a transfer would give them an opportunity to find schools that were better suited to their particular talents and needs.

Most bargaining agreements allow transfers after only one year of teaching. Keeping the best new teachers in their initial placements could greatly benefit low-performing schools by providing a stable faculty of teachers beyond the first year. Such a faculty may increase in experience, knowledge, and cohesiveness each year, all of which may benefit students. As an added bonus for these schools, school reform efforts that are hampered by continual turnover of staff will have an improved chance of success. In addition, each year after the first year, teachers would earn an additional bonus if they chose to remain, up through the first five years.

IV. Provide adequate resources, training, and facilities for low-performing schools

The items listed in AB 833 as the "sanctions" for districts that are unable to achieve compliance under the TQI plan should be provided to underperforming schools *as a matter of course*, not as a reward or a punishment. It is clear from the regression shown in this article that most of the variance in student test scores at the school level appears to be associated with variables that are beyond the control of the state, district, or school. Districts with high percentages of minority and low-income students may have little flexibility in teacher hiring, and may not be able to avoid hiring EP teachers. Rewarding or punishing districts based on their test scores or their hiring practices flies in the face of these realities. If the state provides better support, more resources, improved training, and adequate facilities at low-performing schools, teacher attrition should decrease, and thereby lower the demand for additional teachers. As demand falls, it will be possible to become more selective in hiring practices so that fewer EP teachers will be needed. With less demand for EP teachers, more teachers will seek credentials through traditional teacher preparation programs. The requirements for entering teaching under an emergency permit could also be augmented at that point to discourage all but the most serious applicants from taking an emergency route to their credentials.

In addition, schools with high percentages of minority students and/or poor students should receive additional resources from the states for targeted professional development aimed at better equipping teachers to understand and work with the challenges that their students may face. Many teacher preparation programs inadequately prepare teachers for these challenges, resulting in teachers leaving the profession because they are unable to cope with the demands. Teaching in high-poverty schools can be rewarding, and with appropriate training and support, teachers can discover the rewards and overcome many of the frustrations. One approach to preparing teachers for working in low-performing schools is to assign some teachers (Note 24) to these schools for student teaching, *under the guidance of a strong, effective teacher*. While inexperienced teachers may be reluctant to take on the challenges of a low-performing school, a student teaching experience with a strong supervising teacher might give them an opportunity to see for themselves that good teaching and learning is possible even in low-performing schools, and to develop strategies that would increase their confidence that they, too, could be successful in such a setting.

V. Provide more state funding for teacher preparation scholarships

Since many EP teachers choose to complete their teacher credentials while they are teaching because of financial burdens, offering greater incentives for them to complete traditional programs may discourage this trend. However, the incentives should be focused on recruiting more *minority* teachers to traditional teacher preparation programs, since California's teaching force is very short of minority teachers, particularly given the high percentage of minority students in California's schools. And since minority teachers are more likely to take an alternative route into teaching than to take the traditional route, it is important to consider providing additional incentives to recruit high-quality minority candidates into traditional teacher preparation programs.

VI. Place EP teachers in high-performing schools with reduced loads

There may be useful reasons to keep teachers currently on emergency permits as part of the teaching force for many reasons. However, their current pathway into full credential status usually starts in an underperforming school, an unfortunate starting place for both the EP teachers and the students, whose poor test scores may indicate greater academic needs. In these underperforming schools, they are usually relegated to the grades and classes that the teachers with more seniority do not want. They are typically assigned full class schedules, with no release time for observing other teachers, meeting with mentor teachers (if they even have one), etc. They are usually placed in schools that are particularly challenging in terms of high percentages of low-SES students or English language learners. And they are usually placed in schools where greater-than-average percentages of the teachers are also teaching on emergency permits, are new teachers, or both. Thus, the schools' capacity to help these beginning teachers is limited by their inability to provide on-site mentoring and support.

Most bargaining agreements do nothing to prevent this placement of EP teachers at the most challenging low-performing schools, but in at least one case (Los Angeles) there have been efforts to ensure that at least the EP teachers are not all concentrated in high numbers at particular schools, and that teaching experience is more spread out among schools. Such efforts were likely the result of long negotiations, but they are at least a possibility for other districts. Legislation that mandated a lighter load for EP teachers (60-70% of the regular teaching load) accompanied by intensive training programs (under the umbrella of district induction programs) designed specifically for EP teachers could go far to ensure that these teachers are quickly brought up to speed and that they develop the talents and knowledge that put them on the road to becoming excellent, credentialed teachers.

Putting EP teachers on reduced loads throughout the state is certainly an expensive proposition. One factor in making the spending of additional resources more cost effective would be to adopt a graduated schedule for EP teachers, so that their greatest reduction in teaching load would occur their first year in the classroom, and teaching loads would increase each year after that. Progress towards their credential would be closely monitored and remediation supplied as needed.

However, given the expense of such a plan, it is essential that regulatory mechanisms are built into the system that so that the reduced load and additional support provided by EP teachers does not become an incentive for teachers to bypass traditional teacher training programs. Emergency permits were intended to serve districts in *emergency situations*, and this method of beginning teaching was never intended to be institutionalized as a legitimate alternative to traditional teacher preparation. If California were to subsidize the preparation of large numbers of EP teachers with reduced loads and additional help, safeguards should be developed to avoid institutionalizing this as a credentialing mechanism. One safeguard would be that districts would have to demonstrate that they made every possible effort to recruit and hire credentialed teachers.

Further, it is essential that specific demands on teachers to progress towards their credential be set and adhered to;

otherwise, it might be tempting for teachers to enter the profession on an emergency permit to take advantage of the comparatively lighter load. By demanding demonstrated progress on a set schedule, it would be clear to teachers that the advantages of a lighter load were far outweighed by the progress requirements.

In addition, in the interest of recruiting more minority teachers and bilingual teachers, the plan could be offered only to teachers meeting certain district-level needs. For example, in a district with a very high percentage of Spanish-speaking students, priority could be given to bilingual Spanish/English emergency permit teachers.

Further, in the interest of cost-effectiveness in a cash-strapped state, it is important that state subsidies for assisting EP teachers be used for teachers that are genuinely interested in a career in teaching, as opposed to those who are just "trying out" the profession to see how it suits them. Teachers who wanted to take advantage of EP status and support should demonstrate, perhaps through a contractual agreement with the state or a particular district, that they are serious about teaching as a profession, committing to a minimum of three years of classroom teaching in exchange for state and district support. This would exclude short-term teachers such as those placed on two-year assignments through Teach for America in hard-to-staff schools (Note 25).

VII. Focus class-size reduction funds on underperforming schools

When California policymakers decided to approve over a billion dollars a year for class-size reduction, they restricted the funds to grades K-3, but made no requirements in terms of school performance for the funds. Thus, high-performing schools with upper- and middle-class students were entitled to the same small classes as schools with high-poverty students or mostly English language learners, students who ostensibly need extra teacher attention much more. Most studies of class-size reduction find greater benefits for minority students and for high-poverty students than for students with high socioeconomic status. While CSR is a popular reform, its cost-effectiveness in terms of student benefits for middle- and upper-income students has not been demonstrated. However, teachers are decidedly in favor of smaller classes.

By limiting CSR to K-3, California has effectively concentrated many of its best multiple-subject teachers in these grades, since teachers with more seniority often have a greater choice in what grade they will be teaching. Teachers in grades four and five do not receive the CSR benefits, so there is a sharp division between what both teachers and students experience at the classroom level in the early grades as contrasted with grades four and five. My proposal would encourage teachers who desire smaller classes to remain in (or transfer into) underperforming schools by prioritizing CSR funding for schools in the bottom deciles of the state's Academic Performance Index.

The way CSR is currently structured, even schools that already had fewer than 20 students qualified for the CSR funds, so districts that already had small class sizes (suggesting that they had an ample supply of teachers as well), qualified for and received the additional funding for making no change whatsoever in class size! From a cost-effectiveness standpoint, such a policy is seriously flawed. Further, districts have always been able to choose to implement CSR in only certain schools, and even in certain classrooms, as long as they follow the state's requirement of implementing CSR first in grade one, then in grade two, and then in either kindergarten or grade three (Note 26). But since the state provides no incentives whatsoever to implement CSR only in certain grades or in certain classrooms; districts tend to implement it across the board if they can find enough teachers (credentialed or otherwise) to staff the classrooms.

I propose that California adopt new legislation that would phase out CSR in high-performing schools with stable teaching forces and phase in CSR at grades four and five in low-performing schools. While there are no guarantees that this would improve student achievement at these schools, it might reduce teacher turnover at underperforming schools by reducing teacher workloads and increasing teacher satisfaction. Likewise, it would be an incentive for teachers to choose to teach in (or transfer into) underperforming schools if they wanted to teach smaller classes, or to remain in these schools rather than transferring to higher-performing schools, thus stabilizing the teaching force and reducing the need to hire new or emergency permit teachers. Optimally, a balance would be achieved during the phase-in that would reduce the statewide need for additional teachers to support CSR, which triggered the influx of EP teachers in the past few years. New teachers will continue to be needed in large numbers in California due to the growing number of teachers nearing retirement age and the burgeoning school-age population (at least in some areas of California). It is hoped that a combination of traditional teacher preparation programs and selective, subsidized, well-supported emergency permit programs could supply sufficient numbers of new teachers to meet the demands.

Coherency and Coordination of Policies

The policy solutions suggested in the previous section focus on using various forms of incentives (support, mentoring, release time, monetary awards, targeted class-size reduction, and training opportunities) to:

- increase retention in the profession and in underperforming schools;
- increase teacher commitment to underperforming schools;
- increase enrollment in traditional teacher preparation programs, particularly among minority and bilingual teachers;
- provide additional supports to EP teachers and move them systematically towards full credential status.

This set of solutions attempts to build upon structures that are already working successfully in California, phase out programs or policies that are ineffective, and focus resources where they are most likely to benefit students. As a coordinated effort, such policies would have to be implemented carefully and systematically, with constant reference to both collateral effects of the policy and to the context for implementation (i.e., ensuring capacity before stressors are added to existing systems).

Conclusion

California's accountability system has created an interesting opportunity to better understand what matters most in school achievement. Researchers and policy makers, as well as the general public, can now clearly connect student achievement (at the school level) with a number of other variables, including the percentages of underqualified teachers. Seeing these connections, like the stair-step pattern of test scores and teacher credentials in Figure 1 presented above, can be shocking. However, it is important that policy makers and legislators do not rush to judgment and condemn all EP teachers as the cause of poor student achievement. Rather, both the EP teachers and the students are victims of poverty and state policy. Poverty cannot be so easily addressed, but state policy can be. State and district policies have made it necessary, possible, and even desirable for teachers with limited funds to begin teaching before they are fully credentialed and then to transfer to "better" schools when they get seniority. State policy has also allowed conditions in some California schools to deteriorate to such an extent that both teachers and students are depressed and frustrated by their teaching and learning conditions, as evidenced by the recent class action suit against the state of California filed by students in underperforming, underresourced schools (Sahagun & Helfand, 2000).

There can be no question that all students should have a well-qualified and highly trained teacher, and California should work towards that goal at a reasonable pace, using incentives to encourage redistribution of experienced, credentialed teachers into low performing schools and to encourage more teachers to complete their full credential before taking full responsibility for the education of California's children. In particular, minority teachers should be aggressively recruited into teaching through traditional teacher preparation programs where they can be better supported and provided with added incentives to encourage them to make teaching a career. Finally, researchers into the connection between teacher quality and student achievement should focus on clarifying the skills, qualities, and characteristics that a full credential represents, and should ensure that teacher preparation programs, credentialing mechanisms, and induction programs focus on building those skills, qualities, and characteristics.

Notes

1. Shields et al. shows 14% of CA teachers on emergency permits or waivers (Shields et al., 2001). The difference in these figures is likely due to data sets used and how teacher credentials are designated.

2. It is widely believed that some California districts have "dysfunctional" hiring processes which result in missed opportunities to hire qualified teachers. Interest is growing among education reform organizations and those who sponsor reform efforts in California to consider "deep" human resources reform as a mechanism for improving district-level teacher recruitment and retention.

3. Academic Performance Index scores are single scores given to California schools based on the SAT-9 scores for students in grades 2-11. The Index will eventually include other measures, such as scores on the state standards tests, but these measures are still being tested for reliability and validity. The Index is composed of weighted SAT-9 scores so that students moving from lower quintiles of the SAT-9 into higher quintiles earn more points for the school than do schools moving from middle quintiles into higher quintiles. For further information on the API, see the California Department of Education website: http://api.cde.ca.gov/.

4. Since true experimental designs are rarely possible in education, evidence is generally developed through triangulation of studies using a range of correlation methods and quasi-experimental designs.

5. "Underperforming" for API purposes means that the schools received a score of 5 or below in the API, i.e., that they are performing in the bottom half of the API statewide.

6. 35% of California teachers had a master's degree (data year 1999-2000).

7. Experienced teachers can serve as mentors and support providers to less experienced teachers. They are also more likely to feel competent to serve on school site committees and assist in leading professional development sessions. And they are important for school continuity in reform efforts.

8. However, the results of this study controlled for teacher preparation status. It could thus be argued that the transfer patterns would be different for teachers depending on their credential and preparation status.

9. Using 1999-2000 school year data. The 2000-01 data shows a slight decrease in the number of EP teachers to about 10%, though there has been an equivalent increase in the numbers of pre-interns.

10. 1999-2000 data.

11. For a description of New Haven's strategies, see Snyder, J. (2000). New Haven, California's Teaching Quality System: What States Can Learn from One District's Success. *The State Education Standard, 1*(1), 7-11.

12. Additional details about the regression can be found in ***Appendix B***.

13. It is important to note that because the data are aggregated at the school level rather than the individual level, there is undoubtedly more unexplained variation within schools than is captured by this between school analysis.

14. Schools that were missing API scores or missing data for one of the other variables were omitted from the regression.

15. Since student ethnicity is highly correlated with socio-economic status in California, it is likely that ethnicity serves as a proxy for SES in the regression.

16. Parent education probably serves as a proxy for socio-economic status in the regression.

17. The other factors named by the authors are higher rates of pre-kindergarten attendance and "more of the resources necessary to teach."

18. Many underlying problems have been listed in the literature on teacher recruitment and retention, including: lack of incentives to attract new teachers, salaries that are not competitive with other jobs teachers might qualify for, the requirement of additional education beyond a baccalaureate degree, school conditions that teachers find frustrating, de-professionalization of teaching, and recently, high-stakes testing and the resulting emphasis on test preparation.

19. Status as of December, 2001. Full text versions of the bills and their histories are publicly available at http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/bilinfo.html.

20. In 2000-01, Compton Unified had 56% EP teachers, and three elementary districts had 50% or more EP teachers: Ravenswood City, 55.11; Columbine and Buena Vista, 50% each.

21. It is important that the effectiveness of a program designed to move teachers quickly towards a clear credential is judged not only by its speed but by the quality of the resulting teachers. Effectively prepared teachers should be as competent as teachers prepared in traditional teacher training programs.

22. However, it must be noted that EP teachers may not be credentialed in the field in which they are currently teaching. In other words, they may be teaching math because they were the only teacher available, not because they have a degree and training in teaching math.

23. Some districts have redirected PAR (Peer Assistance and Review) funding to provide support to some new teachers, thus ensuring that every teacher receives the support they need, regardless of their credential status. PAR was originally formed to provide assistance and mentoring to struggling teachers who had been in the teaching force for a while, under the assumption that new teachers would receive ample support from BTSA. But the burgeoning population of EP teachers caused many districts to prioritize the funding for new teachers.

24. It would be important to ascertain initially whether the student teacher had an open mind about teaching in a low-performing school, so as not to waste the opportunity of working with a strong teacher on a student teacher with a confirmed disinterest in such schools.

25. This is not meant to penalize TFA teachers, but only to ensure that resources are spent in a cost effective manner, i.e., where there is a likelihood that they will contribute most to the development of a pool of qualified, permanent teachers for California. It is also assumed that TFA teachers have other means of support and mentoring through the TFA organization.

26. For further information on CSR and the rules governing its implementing, see the CSR page on the CDE website: www.cde.ca.gov/classsize/sy0102/question.htm

References

Anderson, M. (1998, November 29). Value-added puts Tennessee on the map. *The Commercial Appeal*, pp. A18-20.

Ballou, D., & Podgursky, M. (1999). Reforming Teacher Preparation and Licensing: What is the Evidence? *Teachers*

College Record.

Beginning Teacher Support & Assessment. (2000). *About BTSA*, [web site]. California Department of Education. Available: http://www.btsa.ca.gov [2000, August 3, 2000].

Betts, J. R., Rueben, K. S., & Danenberg, A. (2000). *Equal Resources, Equal Outcomes? The Distribution of School Resources and Student Achievement in California*. San Francisco: Public Policy Institute of California.

California Department of Education. (2001). Request for Applications: Teaching as a Priority (TAP) Grant Program. Sacramento, CA: California Department of Education.

Carroll, S., Reichardt, R., & Guarino, C. (2000). *The Distribution of Teachers Among California's School Districts and Schools* (MR-1298-0-JIF): RAND.

Center for the Future of Teaching and Learning. (2001). *The status of the teaching profession 2000: An update to the Teaching and California's Future Task Force*: Center for the Future of Teaching and Learning.

Chester, M. D., Offenberg, R., & Xu, M. D. (2001). *Urban teacher transfer: A four-year cohort study of the school district of Philadelphia faculty.* Paper presented at the American Educational Research Association, Seattle, Washington.

CSR Research Consortium. (1999). *Class Size Reduction in California 1996-98: Early Findings Signal Promise and Concerns* (report): CSR Research Consortium.

CSR Research Consortium. (2002). *Class Size Reduction in California: Summary of Findings from 1999-00 and 2000-01.*

Darling-Hammond, L. (1994). Who will speak for the children? How "Teach for America" hurts urban schools and students. *Phi Delta Kappan*, 21-34.

Darling-Hammond, L. (2000). Teacher Quality and Student Achievement: A Review of State Policy Evidence. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(1). Available http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n1/.

Darling-Hammond, L., Berry, B., & Thoreson, A. (2001). Does teacher certification matter? Evaluating the evidence. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 23*(1), 20.

EdSource. (2001). *Update on California's teacher workforce issues* (Report): EdSource.

Ferguson, R. F. (1991). Paying for Public Education: New Evidence on How and Why Money Matters. *Harvard Journal on Legislation, 28*(457), 465-498.

Ferguson, R. F., & Ladd, H. (1996). How and why money matters: an analysis of Alabama schools. In H. Ladd (Ed.), *Holding Schools Accountable. Performance Based Reform in Education*. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institute.

Fetler, M. (1999). High School Staff Characteristics and Mathematics Test Results. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 7*(9).

Fideler, E. F., Foster, E. D., & Schwartz, S. (2000). *The urban teacher challenge: Teacher demand and supply in the Great City Schools.*: Recruiting New Teachers, Inc., Council of the Great City Schools, and Council of the Great City Colleges of Education.

Fuller, E. (2000, April, 2000). *Do Properly Certified Teachers Matter? Properly Certified Algebra Teachers and Alegebra I Achivement in Texas.* Paper presented at the Annual meeting of Educational Research Association, New Orleans, LA.

Goe, L., Castro, S., & Curry, S. (2001). *Factors Affecting Emergency Credential Teachers' Completion of Full Certification in a Bay Area School District.* Berkeley: Bay Area Consortium for Urban Education.

Goldhaber, D. D., & Brewer, D. J. (1996, July 1996). *Evaluating the effect of teacher degree level on educational performance.* Paper presented at the NCES State Data Conference.

Goldhaber, D. D., & Brewer, D. J. (2000). Does teacher certification matter? High school teacher certification status and student achievement. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 22*(2), 129-145.

Goldhaber, D. D., & Brewer, D. J. (2001). Evaluating the evidence on teacher certification: A rejoinder. *Educational Evaluation and Policy Analysis, 23*(1), 7.

Grissmer, D., Flanagan, A., Kawat, J., & Williamson, S. (2000). *Improving Student Achievement: What State NAEP Test Scores Tell Us*. Santa Monica: RAND.

Hanushek, E. A. (1994). *Making Schools Work: Improving Performance and Controlling Costs* (1st ed.). Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.

Hanushek, E. A. (1998). *Teachers, Schools, and Academic Achievement* (Working Paper). Cambridge, MA: National Bureau of Economic Research.

Hanushek, E. A., Kain, J. F., & Rivkin, S. G. (2001). *Why Public Schools Lose Teachers* (NBER Working Paper 8599). Cambridge, MA: National Bureau of Economic Research.

Hatch, T. (2000). *What happens when improvement programs collide*. Working Paper, Carnegie Foundation.

Hawk, P., Coble, C. R., & Swanson, M. (1985). Certification: It Does Matter. *Journal of Teacher Education, 36*(3), 13-15.

Lankford, H., Loeb, S., & Wyckoff, J. (2001). *Teacher Sorting and the Plight of Urban Schools: A Descriptive Analysis*.

Loeb, S., Darling-Hammond, L., & Luczak, J. (2002). *Teacher turnover: The role of working conditions and salaries in recruiting and retaining teachers*. San Francisco: Stanford University.

Monk, D. H. (1994). Subject Area Preparation of Secondary Mathematics and Science Teachers and Student Achievement. *Economics of Education Review, 13*(2), 125-145.

Mosteller, F. (1995). The Tennessee Study of Class Size in the Early School Grades. *The Future of Children, 5*(2), 113-127.

National Center for Education Statistics. (2002). Table 1.04--Percentage of public school districts that required various teacher qualifications when considering teacher applicants, by state: 1999-2000, *Schools and Staffing Survey, 1999-2000*: U.S. Department of Education.

NCES. (1996). *Sources of Supply of Newly Hired Teachers*, [Internet]. National Center for Education Statistics. Available: http://nces.ed.gov/pubs/ce/c9656d)1.html [2000, June 27, 2000].

Public Policy Institute of California. (2000). *School Resources and Student Achievement in California* (Research Brief). San Francisco: Public Policy Institute of California.

Public Policy Institute of California. (2002). *Relationships between class size reduction, new teachers, and student achievement* (Research Brief): Public Policy Institute of California.

Sahagun, L., & Helfand, D. (2000, May 18, 2000). ACLU Sues State Over Conditions in Poor Schools. *Los Angeles Times*.

Shields, P. M., Humphrey, D. C., Wechsler, M. E., Riehl, L. M., Tiffany-Morales, J., Woodworth, K., Young, V. M., & Price, T. (2001). *Teaching and California's Future: The Status of the Teaching Profession 2001*. Santa Cruz: The Center for the Future of Teaching and Learning.

Sutton, A., & Soderstrom, I. (1999). Predicting elementary and secondary school achievement with school-related and demographic factors. *The Journal of Educational Research, 92*(6), 330-338.

Wenglinsky, H. (2002). How Schools Matter: The Link Between Teacher Classroom Practices and Student Academic Performance. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(12). Available http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n12.html.

Wilson, S. M., Darling-Hammond, L., & Berry, B. (2001). *Connecticut's Story: A Model of Teaching Policy* (Policy Brief): Center for the Study of Teaching and Policy.

Wing, J., Paek, P., Thompson, M., Goe, L., Urrieta, L., Pegram, J., Jinks, T., & Storms, B. (2002). *2000-2001 Evaluation of CFASST: Report on the 2001 Box Review* (Evaluation Report): Educational Testing Service.

Acknowledgement

Many thanks to three thoughtful anonymous reviewers, and to colleagues who critiqued drafts of this manuscript: Linda Darling-Hammond, Norton Grubb, Paul Holland, Bob Jorgensen, Luis Urrieta, Jr., Sam Lucas, and Kendyll Stansbury.

About the Author

Laura Goe
Research Associate
Policy, Organizations, Measurement, and Evaluation
Graduate School of Education
University of California, Berkeley
3659 Tolman Hall
Berkeley, CA 94720

Email: goelaura@uclink4.berkeley.edu

Laura Goe is a Research Associate in Policy, Organizations, Measurement, and Evaluation at the Graduate School of Education at the University of California, Berkeley. Currently finishing her Ph.D., she holds a BA in Language and Learning Theory in Social Context from the University of California, San Diego, and an MS in Educational Policy and Leadership from the University of Memphis. A former special education teacher and English teacher, she began teaching on an emergency permit and was subsequently credentialed in two states. She is the Research Coordinator for the Bay Area Consortium for Urban Education (BACUE) and a Research Associate for Policy Analysis for California Education (PACE). Her dissertation is a mixed-methods longitudinal evaluation of the effects of California's Immediate Intervention/Underperforming Schools Program (II/USP) on middle schools. Other research interests include equity, school finance, assessment policy, accountability, teacher supply and distribution, and teacher recruitment, preparation, and retention.

Appendix A

Data Used in this Study

Data sources. Title I reporting requirements as well as the recent push for school, district, and state accountability for student achievement has resulted in many states offering public access to the data used in making judgments about schools. California is no exception. Starting in 2000, the California Department of Education (CDE) began posting data files containing school-level variables and Academic Performance Index scores on its website. These files are available for downloading by the public. Other databases with school-level information are also available.

For this study, variables were analyzed from a number of different data sets. All data files are available at the CDE website, www.cde.ca.gov/demographics (teacher and school variables data files) or at http://api.cde.ca.gov/datafiles.html (API data files). Some of the files are updated by the CDE regularly during the year or as new information becomes available. Thus, the files downloaded at one point in time may have undergone changes. The sources for the files used for this study are as follows:

- Teacher credentials and experience (tchcrd99). Contains a breakdown by school of teacher experience and credentials, aggregated at the school level into total numbers and/or percentages.
- Profile of certificated staff, by school (prcert99). Contains school-level aggregated variables on gender, race, degrees held, age, and years of service in education.
- List of California public school districts and schools (pubschls). Contains information on schools such as grade span, charter status, and categories of populous areas such as urban and rural.
- Teachers (full-time equivalent) by subject area and school (teasch99). Contains numbers of teachers in secondary subject areas, special education, etc.
- API (api2Kbdbf). Contains API scores for 1999 and 2000, along with breakdowns of scores by student race and other designations such as socio-economically disadvantaged and English language learners. Also contains parent education variables and percentages of teachers with full or emergency credentials. More recent API scores for 2000-01 school year are also used, but less extensively because this article was nearly finished when they were made available. The file is api01g.dbf.
- PAIF (paif.97_98, paif.98_99, paif.99_00, paif.00_01). Staff characteristics by record identification and CDS code from the CBEDS Professional Assignment Information Form (PAIF). Contains information on all California teachers, identified with a unique record identification code that changes each year. Provides teacher-level information on gender, credential status, ethnicity, education level, years of service, and subject authorized to teach.

Data Analysis. All files were downloaded as zipped dbf files to a personal computer. After unzipping, files were opened in SPSS statistical analysis software. Besides downloading files directly from the internet, a number of variables were also created using other sources of information or using the compute function in SPSS. Figure 1 was created from statistics generated in SPSS and copied into Excel XP software.

Appendix B

Multiple Regression

Number of schools. The entire population of 6,389 elementary, middle, and high schools with valid API scores (dependent variable) and valid data for independent variables for the 1999-2000 school year were included in the regression. Fewer than 1,000 schools were missing relevant data and were excluded from the regression.

Dependent variable. The dependent variable is the school-level API Score (Academic Performance Index), which is the score received by participating schools for the SAT-9 test taken in spring 2000. For further information about the API, see the California Department of Education (CDE) website: http://www.cde.ca.gov/psaa/api/yeartwo/base/apiinfogb.pdf. The SAT-9 test is given to students in grades 2-11. The CDE then weights the scores for various subjects (greatest weight is given to reading and math), and weights the scores according to which of five performance bands students are in. Subgroup scores for significant subgroups (based on ethnicity, English language ability, and socioeconomic status) are calculated separately and are available in the data set. For further information about the calculation of API scores, see the CDE website http://www.cde.ca.gov/psaa/api/yeartwo/base/apicalc.xls.

Independent variables. There are a limited number of variables to choose from in the publicly accessible API data base, including student race, parent education levels, free lunch eligibility, English proficiency, student enrollment in grades tested, and teacher credentialing status. All variables were used directly as reported in the data file downloaded from the CDE *except* for the school size variable. The school size variable was computed from the enrollment in grades 2-11 reported by the CDE divided by the number of grades in the school. The decision to compute this number and use it as the school size was made because California schools vary widely in grade configuration, with some schools having only one or two grades and others having six or more. The computed school size thus gives a more comparable estimate of school size across schools with different grade configurations.

The model. The model was selected after numerous combinations of independent variables were examined. To avoid collinearity, some variables were omitted. Other variables were omitted because they did not add substantial information to the model. The final model is relatively parsimonious while including the variable of interest (teacher credentialing) as well as variables that demonstrated a strong relationship with the dependent variable. All variables are significant at the .00 level.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch-Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

This article has been retrieved 842 times since October 16, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 43 **October 16, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Attracting Principals to the Superintendency: Conditions that Make a Difference to Principals

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Edwina Pendarvis
Marshall University

Thomas Gibbs
Morgan Junior High School
McConnnelsville, Ohio

Citation: Howley, A., Pendarvis, E. & Gibbs, T. (2002, October 16). Attracting principals to the superintendency: Conditions that make a difference to principals, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(43). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n43.html

Abstract

Responding to a perceived shortage of school superintendents in Ohio as well as elsewhere in the nation, this study examined the conditions of the job that make it attractive or unattractive as a career move for principals. The researchers surveyed a random sample of Ohio principals, receiving usable responses from 508 of these administrators. Analysis of the data revealed that principals perceived the ability to make a difference and the extrinsic motivators (e.g., salary and benefits) associated with the superintendency as conditions salient to the decision to pursue such a job. Furthermore, they viewed the difficulties associated with the superintendency as extremely important. Among these difficulties, the most troubling were: (1) increased burden of responsibility for local, state, and federal mandates; (2) need to be accountable for outcomes that are beyond an educator's control; (3) low levels of board support, and (4) excessive pressure to perform. The researchers also explored the personal and contextual characteristics that predisposed principals to see certain conditions of the superintendency as particularly attractive or particularly troublesome. Only two such characteristics, however, proved to be predictive: (1) principals with fewer years of teaching experience were more likely than their more experienced counterparts to rate the difficulty of the job as important to the decision to pursue a position as superintendent, and (2) principals who held cosmopolitan commitments were more likely than those who did not hold such commitments to view the salary and benefits associated with the superintendency as important. Findings from the study provided some guidance to those policy makers who are looking for ways to make the superintendency more attractive as a career move for principals. In particular, the study suggested that policy makers should work to design incentives that address school leaders' interest in making a difference at the district level. At the same time, they should focus on efforts to reduce the burdens that external mandates contribute

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

to the already burdensome job of school superintendent.

Introduction

If popular press coverage is any indication, there seems to be mounting concern about an administrator shortage. Anecdotal reports suggest that fewer applicants are now applying for administrative positions than have done so in the past (e.g., Cooper, Fusarelli, & Carella, 2000; Pugmire, 1999; Steinberg, 2000). Professional organizations have focused in particular on the low numbers of applicants for principalships (NAESP/NASSP, 1998). So far, however, there has been little systematic research to clarify the situation by showing how conditions associated with school administration, especially the superintendency, relate to educators' decisions about whether or not to pursue such positions.

Regardless of the extent or severity of the shortage, boards of education have an on-going interest in knowing that there will be an ample pool of applicants to fill vacancies (see e.g., McAdams, 1998). And if critical shortages do indeed materialize, the concerns of boards will intensify. State policymakers also have an interest because they have some control over pipeline issues, such as licensure requirements (see e.g., Ashbaugh & Kasten, 1992; Fenwick & Pierce, 2001). Moreover, policymakers bear some responsibility for the conditions that superintendents face on the job. For example, in many states, accountability legislation introduces pressure for performance that superintendents may find extremely difficult to address (see e.g., Graves, 1995).

Despite the efforts of some districts to look for talented leaders from outside of the ranks of the educator workforce (e.g., Mathews, 1999), the traditional career path for educational administrators involves the move from teaching to the principalship to the superintendency (Glass, 1992). For this reason, the question "what conditions tend to attract and what conditions tend to deter principals from considering the superintendency?" seems germane to those concerned with the recruitment of capable district leaders. Moreover, among principals, different subgroups might find the various conditions associated with the superintendency to be more or less salient to their decision to pursue or not to pursue a position as superintendent.

This study addresses four research questions directly related to these concerns:

- What conditions associated with the superintendency do principals see as attractive?
- What conditions associated with the superintendency do principals see as objectionable?
- What characteristics of principals predispose them to see certain features of the superintendency as attractive and certain other features as objectionable?
- What characteristics of the context in which principals work predispose them to see certain features of the superintendency as attractive and certain other features as objectionable?

Review of Related Literature

This study fits in with and expands research efforts that have explored the working conditions that characterize school leadership positions. In general, this line of inquiry has demonstrated that many educators are reluctant to pursue leadership positions because of the demands of the job, the increased pressure to show "results," and the inadequate remuneration (e.g., Cooley & Shen, 2000; Gewertz, 2000; Houston, 1998).

Recent findings such as these seem to confirm rather than to contradict findings from earlier studies of the superintendency. Raymond Callahan (1962), for example, provided considerable evidence suggesting that, even in the early 1900's, superintendents (especially those in large cities) were pressured to demonstrate accountability both in terms of financial management and in terms of educational outcomes. Although there have been challenges to Callahan's claim that superintendents were extremely vulnerable as a result of these pressures for "scientific management" of schools (see e.g., Button, 1991; Eaton, 1990; Thomas & Moran, 1992), most educational historians acknowledge that such pressures did exist (see e.g., Cuban, 1976).

Contemporary case studies (e.g., Johnson, 1996) also demonstrate the complexity of the role that superintendents undertake when they try to balance educational, managerial, and political leadership in ways that promote school improvement. According to some researchers (e.g., Glass, Bjork, & Brunner, 2000), the complexities confronting superintendents have increased in recent decades, compounding the pressures traditionally associated with the role. Several conditions account for the added pressure. First, state-level requirements -- for instance, for school and district accountability -- have intensified. Because, in many communities, local citizens do not concur with the state education agency's interpretation of educational quality, such mandates often sandwich superintendents between the interests of their constituencies and the interests of the state (see e.g., Chalker, 1999). Another source of pressure results from the increasing power of teachers' unions (Haley & McDonald, 1988). Interactions with these groups can become particularly troublesome when union interests do not fit in well with the school reform efforts desired by district leaders (see e.g., Ballou, 1999; Lieberman, 1984; but cf. Koppich, 1991). Finally, changing demographics make the job of school administrators more complex, as various community groups compete to define the mission of schools in ways that match their values and expectations (see e.g., Houston, 1998; Portin, 1997).

Superintendents' jobs are also made more difficult when these school leaders are unable to garner adequate resources to implement the sorts of district improvements expected of them (Houston, 1998). According to Houston (2001), the expectations for reform and the resources allocated to districts are out of alignment. In fact, Glass and associates (2000) found that superintendents identify lack of financial resources as the one factor that most seriously limits their effectiveness. Moreover, in districts with limited resources, superintendents' low salaries may provide these administrators with another source of job-related stress (Yvarra & Gomez, 1995).

In spite of the difficulties of district leadership, research clearly shows that most superintendents are satisfied with their jobs. In a survey of superintendents from several different states, Cooper and associates (2000) found that most of these school administrators reported that their jobs were challenging, rewarding, and satisfying. In addition, these superintendents overwhelmingly regarded themselves as effective, with 96% of those surveyed agreeing that their work made a significant difference in children's lives. Similar findings were reported by Ramirez and Guzman in their study of rural superintendents in Colorado. Hill and Ragland (1995), moreover, found that long work hours did not seem to detract from superintendents' job satisfaction. It appears that the ability to make a difference and to exercise leadership may offer sufficient satisfaction to superintendents to enable these school leaders to persist in their work despite its obvious challenges (Wesson & Grady, 1993; 1994).

Methods

We surveyed a random sample of 826 of the 3644 principals in the state of Ohio (i.e., a sample draw with a 95% confidence level and 3 confidence interval) using an instrument that included 19 variables related to conditions of the superintendency. Each respondent was asked to rate on a 4-point Likert scale the extent to which a specific condition would affect his or her decision to pursue a position as superintendent. The variables were organized into three scales reflecting the types of concerns that, based on previous research, seemed to be salient. Confirmatory factor analysis demonstrated that these three scales – the "making a difference scale," the "hard job scale," and the "extrinsic motivator" scale – were, in fact, discrete and explanatory.

The instrument also included questions eliciting demographic information about respondents (i.e., age, gender, years as a teacher, years as an administrator, highest degree obtained, experience as a coach). In addition a scale including six items measured the localist and cosmopolitan commitments of the principals. Localists were those who believed it was most important to remain in their current districts, to live close to where they were born and raised, and to stay in the same communities for most of their lives. Cosmopolitans were those who believed it was most important to make a name for themselves in the field of education, travel to broaden their horizons, and leave home in order to seek career opportunities. This construct was deemed important because of the pioneering but somewhat neglected work of Carlson (1972), suggesting that place-bound (i.e., localist) and career-bound (i.e., cosmopolitan) superintendents harbor different reasons for pursuing leadership positions and follow different career trajectories.

In addition to data collected via the instrument, we imputed contextual data from two other sources: the Ohio Department of Education's *Educational Management Information System* (EMIS) and the National Center for Education Statistics' *Common Core of Data*. By using these publicly accessible resources, we were able to add to our data set accurate information about the community contexts in which our responding principals worked. The variables most salient to our analyses included locale (rural, non-rural), Appalachian/non-Appalachian, school SES (measured as percent eligible for free or reduced lunch), school size, and total per pupil expenditure.

Descriptive statistics were computed for each variable; then data were analyzed to determine (1) the extent to which the three sets of conditions – making a difference, hard job, and extrinsic motivation – were salient to principals in their decision-making regarding pursuit of a superintendency, (2) the characteristics of principals that predicted the extent of their concern about each of the three sets of conditions, and (3) the features of school context that predicted the extent of principals' concerns about each of the three sets of conditions.

Findings

We received responses from 508 principals – a response rate of approximately 62%. Of the respondents, 36% were female and 64% male. Their average age was 47.3 years. The average years of experience as a teacher was 12.8, and the average years of experience as a principal was 10.2. In addition, 58.6 % of respondents had worked as coaches. Furthermore, among these principals, 51.8% tended to be more cosmopolitan than localist, while 48.2% tended to be more localist than cosmopolitan. With regard to highest degree earned, .6% held the Bachelor's, 88.2% held the Master's, 3.2% held the specialist degree, and 8% held the doctorate.

Among the principals, moreover, 24.1% worked in rural schools and 12.8 % worked in schools within Appalachian counties (as identified by the Appalachian Regional Commission). Schools' sizes, SES, and levels of funding, of course, varied considerably across the sample.

Preliminary descriptive analyses showed the individual variables that were most salient to principals' decision to pursue the job of superintendent. These variables were classified intuitively as "appealing conditions" and "unappealing conditions;" and the strength of each was revealed in its mean rating by the principals. Table 1 presents descriptive statistics for each "appealing" and each "unappealing" condition. As these data indicate, principals found the following four conditions most appealing: the chance to have a greater impact, the anticipated satisfaction associated with "making a difference," the opportunity to implement creative personal ideas, and the anticipated satisfaction associated with the ability to provide support to school and district staff. They found the following four conditions least appealing: increased burden of responsibility for local, state, and federal mandates; the need to be accountable for outcomes that are beyond an educator's control; low levels of board support; and excessive pressure to perform.

Table 1
Principals Ratings on a 4-point Likert Scale of Appealing and Unappealing Conditions of the Superintendency

Appealing Conditions	**M**	**SD**	**N**
chance to have a greater impact	3.17	.80	466
anticipated satisfaction associated with "making a difference"	3.11	.84	467
opportunity to implement creative personal ideas	3.06	.77	463
anticipated satisfaction associated with the ability to provide support to school and district staff	3.05	.75	462
high levels of board support	2.93	.97	454
improved annual salary	2.78	.85	466
improved benefit package	2.77	.88	468
greater control over work schedule	2.72	.83	464
increased opportunities for professional growth	2.70	.86	467
higher status	2.42	.84	465
Unappealing Conditions			
increased burden of responsibility for local, state, and federal mandates	3.08	.93	467
need to be accountable for outcomes that are beyond an educator's control	2.94	.93	465
low levels of board support	2.90	1.03	457
excessive pressure to perform	2.90	.96	465
stress associated with anticipated conflict with teachers' unions	2.75	.97	463
increased work load	2.64	.95	464
lack of clarity about job expectations	2.45	.87	466
need for greater amounts of technical knowledge	2.32	.8	466
superintendency is overly dominated by males	1.78	.90	464

As indicated in the discussion of research methods above, we made the assumption, based on our reading of the related literature, that several of the variables identifying appealing and unappealing conditions would combine to form discrete and meaningful scales. We tested our assumptions about the items that would be associated by performing a confirmatory factor analysis in which we used varimax rotation to accentuate strong associations. This analysis showed that the significant factors comprised of associated items explained 50.53% of the variance on the instrument and corresponded to three themes that were clearly evident in previous literature. These themes related to (1) the satisfaction associated with "making a difference," (2) the distress associated with the difficulty of the job (the"hard job" factor), and (3) the satisfaction associated with extrinsic rewards such as salary and benefits (the "extrinsic motivators" factor). Appendix A presents the items that load on each of the significant factors and their factor loadings. We identified factors as reliable using Stevens (1996) criteria. In order to examine the extent to which the three sets of concerns represented by the three reliable factors were salient to the principals, we computed and compared scale means using paired-sample t-tests. We found that principals rated "making a difference" as most salient (mean = 3.02), "hard job" as second most salient (mean = 2.82), and "extrinsic motivators" as least salient (mean = 2.66). Differences between pairs of means were all highly significant ($p < .0001$).

We then constructed multiple regression equations to identify significant predictors of level of concern for each of the three sets of conditions. In each equation we included the scale measuring a set of conditions (i.e., "making a difference," "hard job," or "extrinsic motivators") as the dependent variable and the characteristics of principals or of their schools as independent variables. In the equations that considered the influence of the characteristics of principals we excluded "highest degree obtained" from among the independent variables because, with over 88% of respondents holding the Master's as the highest degree, there was very little variance. We also excluded the independent variable "age" because of its moderate bivariate correlation with "years of experience as a principal" ($r = .52$). In the equations that considered the principals' school contexts, we omitted the dummy variable, "Appalachian/non-Appalachian" because of its bivariate correlation ($r = .32$) with the variable, rural/non-rural.

With regard to the effect of principals' characteristics on the extent to which they saw "making a difference" as salient, the overall equation was non-significant and explained a minute fraction of the variance. (See Table 2.) It appears that the characteristics of principals we measured had little bearing on the extent to which they saw the possibility of making a difference as important to their decision to pursue or not to pursue the position of superintendent.

Table 2
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of Principal Characteristic Variables Predicting Concern for "Making a Difference" (N = 410)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	β
Gender	.108	.081	.081
Years as teacher	.003	.005	.036
Years as principal	-.003	.005	-.033
Experience as a coach	.011	.075	.009
Localism	-.023	.032	-.036
Cosmopolitanism	.088	.031	.141
Adjusted $R^2 = .01$, $p = .119$			

Results were similar for the "hard job" scale, where the overall equation was significant ($p = .048$) but explained very little of the variance on the scale (adjusted R square = .017). (See Table 3.) Only one variable, years as a teacher, had a significant effect. Principals with less teaching experience were more likely than their more seasoned counterparts to rate the difficulty of the job as salient to the decision to pursue a position as superintendent.

Table 3
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of Principal Characteristic Variables Predicting Concern for "Hard Job" (N = 396)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	β
Gender	-.138	.085	-.100
Years as teacher	-.011	.006	-.109*
Years as principal	-.001	.005	-.014
Experience as a coach	-.039	.079	-.029
Localism	.066	.034	.097
Cosmopolitanism	.021	.033	.033
Adjusted $R^2 = .017$, $p = .048$, *$p < .05$			

With regard to the "extrinsic motivator" scale, the overall equation was significant but also explained relatively little (3.7%) of the variance on the scale. (See Table 4.) One predictor, cosmopolitanism, exerted a significant influence. A principal was more likely to view the salary and benefits associated with the superintendency as important if he or she held cosmopolitan commitments.

Table 4
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of Principal Characteristic Variables Predicting Concern for "Extrinsic Motivator" (N = 415)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	*β*
Gender	.137	.080	.101
Years as teacher	-.001	.005	-.012
Years as principal	-.002	.005	-.016
Experience as a coach	.076	.075	.058
Localism	-.013	.032	-.020
Cosmopolitanism	.129	.032	.200*
Adjusted R^2 = .037 , p = .002, p < .05			

The influence of school context features on the strength of principals' concern for the three major conditions of the superintendency (i.e., "making a difference," "hard job," and "extrinsic motivators") was even less pronounced than the influence of principal characteristics. None of the equations predicting the strength of principals' concern for these conditions was significant. Summary statistics for these regression models are provided in Tables 5, 6, and 7.

Table 5
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of School Context Variables Predicting Concern for "Making a Difference" (N = 382)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	*β*
Locale	.065	.081	.044
Total per pupil expenditure	.000	.000	.072
School SES	-.000	.001	-.019
School size	-.000	.000	-.022
Adjusted R^2 = -.04, p = .675			

Table 6
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of School Context Variables Predicting Concern for "Hard Job" (N = 364)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	*β*
Locale	-.072	.086	-.046
Total per pupil expenditure	.000	.000	.060
School SES	.000	.001	-.117
School size	.000	.000	-.085
Adjusted R^2 = .007, p = .164			

Table 7
Summary of Multiple Regression Analysis of School Context Variables Predicting Concern for "Extrinsic Motivator" (N = 384)

Variable	*B*	*SE(B)*	*β*
Locale	.127	.080	.086
Total per pupil expenditure	.000	.000	.081
School SES	.000	.001	-.031

School size	.000	.000	-.001
Adjusted $R^2 = .001, p = .361$			

Discussion

Overall, the analyses showed that principals rated the ability to make a difference as a superintendent as the most compelling reason guiding their thinking about whether or not to pursue such a position. Their concern about making a difference was reflected in their high ratings on questionnaire items related to the superintendents' role in providing support to school and district staff, the ability of superintendents to implement creative personal ideas, and the general impact that district leaders can have. Based on this study, it seems, principals' perspectives correspond closely to those of practicing superintendents with respect to the features of district leadership that are perceived to be most compelling (e.g., Cooper et al., 2000; Houston, 2001; Wesson & Grady, 1994).

This finding has important ramifications for policy and practice. Regarding professional preparation, those who design university and workshop programs for aspiring superintendents might find it useful to focus on the competencies that enable school leaders to promote district-level improvement. Giving administrators tools that can help them make a difference builds on these educators' intrinsic motives for pursuing leadership roles (cf., Lortie, 1975). Furthermore, local boards would be well served by creating conditions that support superintendents' efforts to foster meaningful district-level change. Increasing a superintendent's term of contract, for example, might give him or her sufficient chance to have a noticeable impact on the district's performance (cf. Yee & Cuban, 1996).

Our analyses also revealed that principals were concerned about the challenges of the superintendency. Among the variables included on the "hard job" scale, they rated the following as most salient: "superintendent's increased burden of responsibility for local, state, and federal mandates" and "the need to be accountable for outcomes that are beyond an educator's control." These responses suggest that the current focus on accountability may be adding to the stresses already associated with the superintendency (see e.g., Cooley & Shen, 2000). Policies that promote accountability mechanisms responsive to local rather than state concerns may temper such added stress (e.g., Mathews, 1996).

Principals with fewer years as teachers were more concerned than others about the difficulty of the superintendency, and this finding suggests particular cautions regarding districts' recruitment of *principals*. Specifically, districts may want to avoid hiring as principals applicants who have limited experience as teachers. This suggestion, of course, also corresponds to recommendations concerning the background necessary for *instructional leadership* (Miller, 1987), and it fits in with certain research findings about predictors of effective school administration (Ballou & Podgursky, 1995). Our study, however, provides tentative support for the practice of hiring experienced teachers as principals on the grounds that these individuals will be more likely than their less experienced counterparts to pursue a full career in administration, eventually assuming the chief executive role. In times of administrator shortages, of course, districts with few other options will be likely to offer principalships to relatively inexperienced educators. This practice may enable such districts to fill school vacancies but may limit their long-term efficacy in cultivating leadership at the district level.

Our study also showed that extrinsic motivators such as salary, benefits, control over work schedule, and status were also important considerations when principals thought about the possibility of applying for positions as superintendents. In fact, principals who were committed to cosmopolitan values seemed especially attuned to these conditions. This finding is not surprising considering that these individuals place priority on accomplishment of career goals. For these career-bound administrators, work in small, lower-paying districts may often serve as stepping-stones to larger, more prestigious roles (see e.g., Carlson, 1972). Moreover, this finding has important practical consequences since, at least in Ohio, more than half of all principals harbor stronger cosmopolitan than localist commitments.

These results suggest that local boards and state policy makers should work to find ways to create incentive packages that are attractive to aspiring superintendents. According to several commentators, such compensation packages need to address salary, portable retirement plans, annuities, insurance, tuition reimbursement, expense account allowances, and support for moving expenses (see e.g., Educational Research Services, 1990; Heller, 1991; Shannon, 1987).

One other finding from this study, namely the uniformity of principals' concerns across demographic differences, seems pertinent. As our regression equations revealed, just a few personal characteristics and *no school context characteristics* exerted a significant influence on the strength of principals' concern for the three sets of conditions associated with the work of superintendents. This finding suggests that principals' views of the conditions of administrative work may be shaped by forces other than those attached to conventional social categories. Principals' views, it seems, are formed in an ideological space that transcends social location.

This conclusion leads to speculation about the ways professional socialization may function to define not only the character of school administrators' work but also their interpretations of its scope and meaning. And such speculations provide a hopeful path back to the profession itself as a place to look for continued, perhaps revitalized, support for the superintendency. This analysis does not go so far as to espouse a laissez-faire response to the problem of superintendent shortages (i.e., "if you advertise it, they will come"), but it does suggest that the profession itself, without much mediation from local and state policy makers, may be able to reinvest the role of superintendent with sufficient authority and efficacy to once again make its attainment the aspiration of those educators with the greatest talent for leadership.

References

Ashbaugh, C.R., & Kasten, K.L. (1992*). The licensure of school administrators: Policy and practice.* Washington, DC: American Association of Colleges of Teacher Education. (ERIC Reproduction Service No. ED 347 163)

Ballou, D. (1999). *The New York City teachers' union contract: Shackling principals' leadership* (Civic Report Number 6). New York: The Manhattan Institute, Center for Civic Innovation.

Ballou, D., & Podgursky, M. (1995). What makes a good principal? How teachers assess the performance of principals. *Economics of Education Review, 14*(3), 243-252.

Brunner, C.C. (1999). Taking risks: A requirement of the new superintendency. *Journal of School Leadership, 9,* 290-310.

Button, W.H. (1991). Vulnerability: A concept reconsidered. *Educational Administration Quarterly, 27*(3), 378-391.

Callahan, R.E. (1962). *Education and the cult of efficiency: A study of the social forces that have shaped the administration of public schools.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Carlson, R.O. (1972). *School superintendents: Careers and performance.* Columbus, OH: Merrill.

Chalker, D.M. (Ed.). (1999). *Leadership for rural schools: Lessons for all educators.* Lancaster, PA: Technomic.

Cooley, V.E., & Shen, J. (2000). Factors influencing applying for urban principalship. *Education and Urban Society, 32*(4), 443-454.

Cooper, B.S., Fusarelli, L.D., & Carella, V.A. (2000). *Career crisis in the superintendency? The results of a national survey.* Arlington, VA: American Association of School Administrators. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 143 167)

Cuban, L. (1976). *Urban school chiefs under fire.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Eaton, W.E. (1990). *Shaping the superintendency: An examination of Callahan and the cult of efficiency.* New York: Teachers College Press.

Educational Research Services. (1990). *Fringe benefits for superintendents in public schools, 1989-90. Part 1 of national survey of fringe benefits in public schools.* Arlington, VA: Author.

Fenwick, L.T., & Pierce, M.C. (2001). The principal shortage: Crisis or opportunity. *Principal Magazine.* Retrieved October 8, 2001 from http://www.naesp.org/comm/p0301a.htm.

Gewertz, C. (2000, July 12). Reader's Digest grants will focus on school leadership. *Education Week, 19(42), 15.*

Glass, T.E. (1992). *The 1992 study of the American school superintendency: America's education leaders in a time of reform.* Arlington, VA: American Association of School Administrators.

Glass, T.E., Bjork, L., & Brunner, C.C. (2000). *The study of the American school superintendency, 2000: A millenium.* Arlington, VA: American Association of School Administrators. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 440 475)

Graves, B. (1995). Putting pay on the line. *School Administrator, 52*(2), 8-14, 16.

Haley, P.W., & McDonald, R.D. (Eds.). (1988). *An administrative shortage real or perceived? A view from the inside.* Albany, NY: University of Albany, State University of New York. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 321 396)

Heller, R.W. (1991). Negotiating for retirement. *American School Board Journal, 178*(8), 18-22.

Hill, M.S., & Ragland, J.C. (1995). *Women as educational leaders: Opening windows, pushing ceilings.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Corwin Press.

Houston, P.D. (1998, June 3). The ABCs of administrative shortages. *Education Week, 17*(38). Retrieved October 8, 2001 from http://www.edweek.org/ew/1998/38houst.h17.

Houston, P.D. (2001). Superintendents for the 21st century: It's not just a job, it's a calling. *Phi Delta Kappan, 82*(6), 429-433.

Johnson, S.M. (1996). *Leading to change: The challenge of the new superintendency.* San Francisco, CA: Jossey-Bass.

Koppich, J.E. (1991, April). *The changing role of teacher union leaders.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, Chicago, IL. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 338 595)

Lieberman, M. (1984). Educational reform and teacher bargaining. *Government Union Review, 5*(1), 54-75.

Lortie, D. (1975). *Schoolteacher: A sociological study.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Mathews, D. (1996). *Is there a public for public schools?* Dayton, OH: Kettering Foundation.

Mathews, J. (1999). On-the-job learning of nontraditional superintendents. *School Administrator, 56*(2), 28-30, 32-33.

McAdams, R.P. (1998). Who'll run the schools? *American School Board Journal, 185*(8), 37-39.

Miller, E. (1987). *A new balance: Reshaping the principalship. A special report to the profession.* Trenton, NJ: New Jersey Principals and Supervisors Association. (ERIC Document Reproductive Service No. ED 290 200)

National Association of Elementary School Principals and National Association of Secondary School Principals. (1998). *Isthere a shortage of qualified candidates for openings in the principalship? An exploratory study.* Arlington, VA: Educational Research Service.

Portin, B.S. (1997, November). *Complexity and capacity: A survey of principal role change in Washington state.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the University Council for Educational Administration, Orlando, FL. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 414 624)

Pugmire, T. (1999, April 10). *The principal shortage.* St. Paul, MN: Minnesota Public Radio. Retrieved October 8, 2001 from http://news.mpr.org/features/199908/30_pugmiret_safety/principal.shtml.

Ramirez, A., & Guzman, N. (1999, October). *The rural school district superintendency: A Colorado perspective.* Paper presented at the annual conference of the National Rural Education Association, Colorado Springs, CO. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED 437 235)

Shannon, T.A. (1987). Follow this map into the new world of superintendent compensation. *American School Board Journal, 174*(3), 35-37, 44.

Steinberg, J. (2000, September 3). Nation's schools struggling to find enough principals. *New York Times, p. A1.*

Stevens, J. (1996). *Applied multivariate statistics for the social sciences* (3rd ed.). Mahwah, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.

Thomas, W.B., & Moran, K. J.(1992). Reconsidering the power of the superintendent in the progressive period. *American Educational Research Journal, 29*(1), 22-50.

Wesson, L.H., & Grady, M.L. (1993, March). *A comparative analysis of women superintendents in rural and urban settings.* Paper presented at the National Conference on Creating the Quality School, Oklahoma City, OK. (ERIC Reproduction Service No. ED 359 008)

Wesson, L.H., & Grady. M.L. (1994, April). *The leadership challenge: A national study of women superintendents.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, New Orleans, LA. (ERIC

Document Reproduction Service No. ED 375 527)

Yee, G., & Cuban, L. (1996). When is tenure long enough? A historical analysis of superintendent turnover and tenure in urban school districts. *Educational Administration Quarterly, 32*, 615-641.

Yvarra, P., & Gomez, R. (1995). *School superintendency and the effects on family life*. (Eric Document Reproduction Service No. ED 392 162)

Acknowledgment

This research was made possible with funds provided by Ohio University's College of Education, the Coalition of Rural and Appalachian Schools, and the Ohio Appalachian Initiative. The authors also wish to acknowledge the following organizations for their support of the project: Ohio School Boards Association, Buckeye Association of School Administrations, Ohio Association of Elementary School Administrators, Ohio Association of Secondary School Administrators, and the Ohio Department of Education.

About the Authors

Aimee Howley is chair of the Educational Studies Department at Ohio University, where she also coordinates and teaches in the Educational Administration program. Her recent research focuses on the effects of educational policies and practices on schools (especially rural schools) and communities. Email: howley@oak.cats.ohiou.edu

Edwina Pendarvis is a professor in the School of Education at Marshall University in Huntington, West Virginia. Her chief research interests are gifted education and education in rural communities.

Thomas Gibbs is an assistant principal at Morgan Junior High School in McConnnelsville, Ohio and is currently working towards a doctoral degree in Educational Administration at Ohio University. He has recently served as the coordinator of the Southeastern Ohio Regional Principals Academy and as a research team member for the Coalition of Rural and Appalachian Schools.

Appendix A

Variable Loadings > .40 on the Three Significant Factors (Principal Components Analysis with Varimax Rotation; N = 417)

Factor and Variables	Factor Loadings	% Variance Explained
Making a Difference		20.7
Chance to have greater impact	.83	
Making a difference	.77	
Opportunity to implement ideas	.76	
Provide support to staff	.74	
Opportunities for growth	.60	
Hard Job		17.28
Responsibility for mandates	.80	
Accountability for outcomes	.76	
Increased work load	.70	
Conflict with unions	.70	
Low board support	.69	
Excessive pressure	.65	
Unclear job expectations	.56	
High board support	.55	

Extrinsic Motivators		12.55
Improved salary	.83	
Improved benefits	.79	
Control over work schedule	.65	
Higher status	.55	

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

William McInerney
Purdue University

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

Maria Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 762 times since October 18, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 44 **October 18, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Assessment of a Socio-constructivist Model for Teacher Training: A Case Study

Luiz Antonio Joia
Brazilian School of Public and Business Administration
Rio de Janeiro

Citation: Joia, L. A. (2002, October 18). Assessment of a socio-constructivist model for teacher training: A case study, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(44). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n44/.

Abstract
This article assesses a socio-constructivist model for training K-12 teachers in Brazil, in the use of Informatics in education. The method applied combines both face-to-face exchanges and a WEB-based distance approach made possible by Internet technology. The characteristics of such training and its main objectives are analyzed according to the collected data presented. A descriptive single case study research methodology is applied. The main conclusions reached by this research—based on the use of a systemic framework—are presented, mainly those addressing the importance of care and coherence for knowledge creation in a socio-constructivist training model developed with the help of the Internet. Comparisons between this model and the traditional one are also presented.

Introduction

In 1997, the Brazilian Ministry of Education and Culture (MEC) defined and launched a national public policy for the use of Informatics in Brazilian K-12 public schools, by means of a broad-based Program involving all 27 Brazilian States, known as PROINFO. While the Federal Government is in charge of investing in equipment and teacher training, the Brazilian states have autonomy to implement their Projects of Informatics in Education, as they think fit.

PROINFO, The National Program of Informatics in Education, aims to initiate the public educational system into the process of using state-of-art technology in the classroom, as well as to train human resources to develop their work adequately. In order to accomplish this target, PROINFO along with the acquisition and deployment of the necessary equipment, has stressed the need for training the teachers, using partnerships with universities, as training agents. Hence, together with state and municipal governments, NTEs (*Núcleos de Tecnologia Educacional*) were created to work as hubs of teacher training. NTEs are decentralized structures to promote the dissemination of Informatics within the pedagogical practice in public schools in each state. In these hubs, there are multipliers (teacher trainers) with qualifications (more than 360 course hours) in Informatics in Education given by a university involved in the program.

The greatest hurdle to the introduction of Informatics into the educational system has been the development of qualified human resources to keep abreast of the rapid transformations inherent to this area, along with the ever-present need to improve the quality of public education.

Taking part in this project, Rio Grande do Sul State, the southernmost Brazilian State, near the border with Argentina and Uruguay, has created 12 NTEs across the state in which 57 multipliers (teacher trainers) are already working. In Rio Grande do Sul, the State Commission in charge of implementing PROINFO across the state invited the Federal University of Rio Grande do Sul – UFRGS (www.ufrgs.br) to be its partner in this endeavor. Thus, the university developed the first training program for 57 multipliers, based on a face-to-face approach. Due to the success of this course, the State asked UFRGS to stage a second course in order to train more multipliers.

Research has been undertaken by the LEC (Cognitive Studies Laboratory) of UFRGS (www.psico.ufrgs.br/lec/) in the ongoing use of instructional technology and its role in the development of innovative educational practices. Consequently, new training methodology was developed by LEC to train the multipliers, combining face-to-face tuition with Web-based Instruction in order to be used for distance training.

This second training program started in July 1999 and ended in October 1999, involving 29 teachers from Rio do Grande do Sul State, who are expected to work as multipliers in the NTEs across the state.

Impetus for Telematics-Based Training

The impetus for a new training model for teacher training was based on the outcome of research developed by UFRGS in the realm of Informatics in Education. This has already been translated into theoretical models leading to new methodologies to orient changes in classroom practice (Projeto Educadi— http://educadi.psico.ufrgs.br/cursos/index.html), combined with the university's experience in the application of these models during the first specialization course on Informatics in Education given to the NTE multipliers of the PROINFO Program. Hence, it was concluded that it would be possible to develop and implement a second course, based on both a face-to-face approach and Internet-based distance training, the theoretical background of which was based on the development of interdisciplinary projects using Telematics.

The great challenge is to make the teachers of the public system aware of the need for incorporating new information technology in their daily practice in the classroom. The use of the technology demanded by the course facilitates the creation of learning and practice communities (Wenger & Snyder, 2000) involving both students and experts, as well as the exploration of the computer environment by both students and teachers, leading to enhanced socio-cognitive development and a shared, collective pooling of knowledge.

It was expected from the positive results of the first course, that this second course would permit the elimination of learning verticality and that each teacher and student of the course, would develop his/her own learning using a shared construction model, leading to the accomplishment of autonomous knowledge. Hence, the course was geared to stress the development of projects by small groups, addressing three aspects (www.psico.ufrgs.br/mec-nte2/):

1. the student, seeking new technological resources in order to create knowledge leading to problem-solving related to all knowledge areas addressed in the course;

2. the teacher interacting with other teachers and with students within computerized environments in the public educational system, trying to grasp the established socio-cognitive relationships, as well as the participative, albeit autonomous knowledge-creation process;

3. the tutor in charge of training new human resources in his/her place, attempting to understand the interdependency relationships and, at the same time, the autonomous networks created by his/her peers, as the verticality of the system is eliminated and actual cooperative and truthful relationships based on reciprocity are developed.

Operational Training Targets

The training under scrutiny here had the following operational targets: (www.psico.ufrgs.br/mec-nte2/)

- To train the teacher trainers involved in PROINFO, through a course on Informatics in Education lasting more than 360 hours (a *lato-sensu* graduate course, in Brazil), in order to qualify them to be multipliers at the NTEs throughout Rio do Grande do Sul State;
- To develop this 440-hour course in such a way that 320 hours of it are based on a face-to-face approach in Porto Alegre (Rio Grande do Sul State Capital), the remaining 120 hours to be dedicated to a distance training model, through the Internet;
- To take advantage of the 120 hours allocated to Distance Training, implementing the proposal presented in the Rio Grande do Sul State Project on Informatics in Education, in the schools assisted by each NTE, the teachers of which are attending the course.

Course Description

Course Methodology. The methodology of the course is divided into three main themes: face-to-face; mediated interaction and distance based instruction, as explained below:

- face-to-face: at this stage there are thematic workshops and seminars to plan and develop the interdisciplinary and diversified projects.
- mediated interaction: at this stage the simultaneous use of Internet services is intensified, namely: electronic mail, discussion lists, forums, real-time communication (IRC, Chat, MOOs, CuSeeMe etc.) and, concurrently a database for storing products like reports addressing the progress of each participant, texts, and on-going assessment portfolios is created, all of which are generated by the students during the course. Hence, the student activity records and data collection of their production are stored. This material is published in a site located in the Internet server of the course, along with the teachers and students' home pages.
- distance-based instruction: at this final stage an interdisciplinary project is developed by groups of students, who are already on-site at their NTEs, by giving training to other teachers and receiving orientation through the Internet regarding their dissertation

Course Structure. The course is divided into two stages, as presented below:

- *First Stage – Face-to-Face (320 hours)*

The first stage is compounded of two modules (*Module 1 and 2*) over eight weeks, consisting of 40 hours per week. A section known as *Autonomous Production Time – APT*, (8 hours per week incorporated in the 40-hour week) is programmed into this stage.

- *Autonomous Production Time – TPA* (64 hours/activity)

This time is to be used by the students in activities such as individual or collective studies, interviews with experts whose expertise is addressed in the project being developed, experiments with teachers and pupils in the classrooms, tracking of schools which are using ICT to develop pedagogical projects, finding solutions to challenges in the Informatics arena, information-searching on the Internet, data and information exchange through the Internet, instrumental software training, to name but a few.

All the communications, discussions and reflections, as well as daily and final reports, are made available in a common area for the entire group under training, so as to permit interaction and exchange among the participants.

- *Module 1* (132 hours/activity)

Structured into thematic workshops to be developed according to the group interests and the problems encountered by them. Each group (of 3 members) takes part in the thematic workshops, which are developed on a project basis approach.

The first project (40 hours/activity) focuses on problem-solving in order to establish relationships between the different subjects of the curriculum. In this project the teachers are considered pupils addressing the basic level curriculum, formulating and solving problems, elaborating reports and evaluating their experiences.

The second project (80 hours/activity) addresses the understanding and analysis of the socio-cognitive and emotional relationships between teachers and students, and evaluates their ongoing knowledge acquisition in ICT-based learning environments.

The third project lasts 12 hours on a face-to-face basis with 120 hours of distance learning. The face-to-face stage focuses on the elaboration of the teacher-training project for use of ICT in the classroom. This project is developed by each one of the NTEs involved. The second stage is developed on a distance-learning basis, focusing on implementation of the project.

- *Module 2* (124 hours/activity)

Consists of three Basic Seminars: "New Information and Communication Technologies for Learning Environments"; "Theoretical Basis for Learning in Computerized Environments"; and "Methodologies of Educational Interaction and Intervention in Computerized Learning Environments".

- *Second Stage – Distance-Based (120 hours)*

This stage is held in the students' original NTEs. Each NTE (group of 6 students) develops an integrated project, lasting one and a half-months, being both theoretical and practical, based on their experiences with the students on the course and on their experience with the students of the schools belonging to each NTE. Geared towards motivating the students of the Basic Level to build relevant knowledge in computerized environments, the teachers involved in this experience are supported in the cooperative construction of relevant knowledge in order to assist the students in the computerized environment. They are also assisted in the construction of sharing methodology for interaction and intervention. They are encouraged to use the available ICT as enablers in this process. In this stage, the mentors of the course assist the students of the course on a distance-basis approach, via the Internet.

Research Design

Assessment generally has at least one of the following three purposes: to improve, to inform, and/or to verify. The aims of this assessment are to provide information that can be used to determine whether or not intended outcomes are being achieved and how the project can be improved. In addition, the assessment process was structured to inform decision-makers about relevant issues that affect the project. (Rogers & Sando, 1996)

In this assessment process, it is important to distinguish between "formative" and "summative" assessment. Formative assessment is the collection of data and feedback of results on an ongoing basis. Formative assessment is designed to provide information for the purpose of improving the project or process being assessed. (Rogers & Sando, 1996). Summative assessment is designed to produce information that can be used to make decisions about the overall success of the project or process. Hence, this is a summative assessment.

Methodology

The research methodology used in this article was the single case studyone. Case study is particularly suitable to answering "how" and "why"questions and are well suited to generating and building theory in an area where little data or theory exists (Yin, 1994). It also enables the researcher to use "controlled opportunism" to respond flexibly to new discoveries made while collecting new data (Eisenhardt, 1994). Yin's tactics (construct validity; internal validity; external validity; and reliability) were carefully considered in this research.

In particular, construct validity was dealt with in the study through the use of multiple sources of evidence, the establishment of a chain of evidence, and having the members of the group reviewing the draft case study report. Internal validity issue is not necessary for descriptive case studies (Yin, 1994) and external validity in the findings is taken into account, mainly by applying replication logic. Finally, the reliability of the results was taken for granted by using a case study protocol and developing a case study database.

To conduct this research, some actions were undertaken and a theoretical framework was used. Several steps were conducted, in order to develop a working methodology to be applied in this research task. These steps are listed below:

- The project is presented in detail as conceived by its creators.
- The *modus-operandi* of the Program, i.e., its structure, is presented, so as to make clear how the outcomes are intended to be accomplished.
- Data to be analyzed are collected from different sources. In this case the following data were collected:
    - Data and Information about training, available on an Internet site at the following URL: (www.psico.ufrgs.br/mec-nte2);
    - The rationale of the project taken from academic papers developed to depict the program itself (Nevado *et al.*, 1999);
    - Student portfolios and projects deployed on the Internet also made available – although in a reserved area – through permission granted by the training coordinators;
- Analysis of the outcomes of the project obtained from the application and consolidation of questionnaires and interviews with both the students and teachers involved;
- Classroom observations and video-recordings, to analyze whether the teachers trained in a constructivist environment are applying this approach to train their students – the other teachers of the public education system;
- Comparison between the forecast and actual accomplished objectives so as to evaluate the program;
- Analysis of the cost-effectiveness of the Program;
- Conclusions and analysis of the strengths and weaknesses of the training program.

Theoretical Framework

The questionnaire and direct observation of the training, mainly the WEB-Based Instruction stage were drawn primarily from the paper: "Effective Dimensions of Interactive Learning on the World Wide Web", Reeves & Reeves (1997). This model has applications in research, implementation and assessment of Web-based Instruction Programs such as this project.

The proposed model includes ten dimensions of interactive learning on the World Wide Web: (1) pedagogical philosophy, (2) learning theory, (3) goal orientation, (4) task orientation, (5) source of motivation, (6) teacher role, (7) metacognitive support, (8) collaborative learning, (9) cultural sensitivity, and (10) structural flexibility.

Each of the ten dimensions in this model is presented as a two-ended continuum with contrasting values at either end. Needless to say, the world is rarely dichotomous and there is more complexity involved in learning than any of these dimensions represent. However, the individual dimensions themselves are not as important as the interplay among the ten dimensions that represent the instructional designs of various WBI sites.

1. Pedagogical Philosophy (Instructivist <=> Constructivist)

The debate between instructivist and constructivist approaches to teaching and learning continues through education and training (Kafai & Resnick, 1996). Instructivists stress the importance of objectives that exit apart from the learner. Little emphasis is placed on learners per se, who are viewed as passive recipients of instructions or treated as empty vessels to be filled with learning. By contrast, constructivists emphasize the primacy of the learner's intentions, experience and cognitive strategies. According to constructivists, learners construct different cognitive structures based upon their previous knowledge and what they experience in different learning environments. It is paramount for constructivists that learning environments be as rich and diverse as possible. Instead of an empty vessel, the learner is regarded as an individual replete with pre-existing motivations, experiences, aptitudes and knowledge. Tasks to be accomplished and problems to be solved must have personal relevance to the learner. The constructivists believe that what we know is constructed – both individually and socially – based on prior experience.

2. Learning Theory (Behavioral <=> Cognitive)

According to behaviorists, the critical factor in learning is observable behavior, and instruction involves shaping desirable behaviors through the arrangement of stimuli, responses, feedback, and reinforcement. A stimulus is provided (e.g. a short presentation of content), then a response is elicited, often via a question. Feedback is given as to the accuracy of the response, and positive reinforcement is given for accurate responses. Inaccurate responses result in a repetition of the original stimulus, and the cycle begins again. Cognitive psychologists place more emphasis on internal mental states than on behavior. A cognitive taxonomy of internal learning states includes simple propositions, schema, rules, skills, mental models and so forth. They claim that a variety of strategies – including memorization, direct instruction, deduction, drill and practice, and induction, are required in any learning environment, depending upon the type of knowledge to be created by the learner.

3. Goal Orientation (Sharp <=> Broad)

The goals for education and training can range from sharply focused ones to general higher-order ones. Hence, the goal orientation of WBI systems varies in degree of focus from sharp to broad (Cole, 1992).

4. Task Orientation (Academic <=> Authentic)

The context of learning is enormously important to adults (Merriam, 1993). An academic design would depend heavily on having the learners carry out traditional academic exercises. By contrast, an authentic design would engage the adults in practical activities such as preparing job applications, thereby situating practice and feedback within realistic scenarios. If knowledge, skills, and attitudes are learned in a practical context, they will be used in that and similar contexts.

5. Source of Motivation (Extrinsic <=> Intrinsic)

Motivation is a primary factor in any theory or model of learning (Amabile, 1997). Every new educational technology promises to be intrinsically motivating. This dimension ranges from extrinsic (i.e., outside the learning environment) to intrinsic (i.e., integral to the learning environment). Intrinsically, motivation instruction is elusive regardless of the delivery systems.

6. Teacher Role (Didactic <=> Facilitative)

The teacher role continuum ranges from didactic to facilitative. In the former role, the teacher presents information and asks learners to memorize information and recall it later in tests. The latter role assigns cognitive responsibility to the learners, as they should be responsible for recognizing and judging patterns of information, organizing data, constructing alternative perspectives, and presenting new knowledge in meaningful ways, wherein the teachers are mentors and tutors of this process.

7. Metacognitive Support (Unsupported <=> Integrated)

Metacognition refers to a learner's awareness of objectives, ability to plan and evaluate learning strategies, and capacity to monitor progress and adjust learning behavior to accommodate needs (Flavell, 1979). The metacognitive support dimension is unsupported at one end of the continuum and integrated at the other. Recapitulation of the students' strategies at any point in the problem-solving process, as well as construction of Web-based portfolios are examples of how support for reflection and metacognition might be provided in WBI.

8. Collaborative Learning Strategies (Unsupported <=> Integral)

The Collaborative Learning dimension ranges from a complete lack of support for collaboration to the inclusion of collaborative learning as an integral feature. Cooperative and collaborative learning refers to instructional methods in which learners work together in pairs or small groups to accomplish shared goals.

9. Cultural Sensitivity (Insensitive <=> Respectful)

All instructional systems have cultural implications. In an insensitive approach the training is developed regardless of the culture and diversity of the learners it is intended to address. On the other hand, a respectful approach should be based on the diversity in the populations where the system will be used so that the overall learning environment is enhanced. It is unlikely that WBI Training can be designed to adapt to every cultural norm, but sites should be designed to be as culturally sensitive as possible.

10. Structural Flexibility (Fixed <=> Open)

"Fixed" systems, still dominant in education, are usually limited to specific places, e.g., a classroom or laboratory, at specific times, e.g., 50 minutes class period. Independent of time and/or location constraints, the learner can use "Open" systems. The World Wide Web provides opportunities for more asynchronous (open) learning, although some Web-based learning tools are temporally fixed (synchronous), such as chats, video-conferences, MOOs and MUDs.

The research aims to have Table 1 completed by the learners so as to evaluate the program's outcomes.

Table 1
WBI Assessment Parameters

		0	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	
PHILOSOPHY	Instructivist												Constructivist
LEARNING THEORY	Behavioral												Cognitive
GOAL ORIENTATION	Sharply Focused												General
TASK ORIENTATION	Academic												Authentic
MOTIVATION	Extrinsic												Intrinsic
TEACHER ROLE	Didactic												Facilitative
METACOGNITIVE SUPPORT	Unsupported												Integrated
COLLABORATION	Unsupported												Integral
CULTURAL SENSITIVITY	Insensitive												Respectful
FLEXIBILITY	Fixed												Open

Data Survey and Analysis

Theoretical Model of Training applied by the LEC

The LEC (Cognitive Studies Laboratory) has published several papers addressing a socio- constructivist approach to train teachers using Information and Communication Technologies as enablers. According to LEC (Nevado *et al.*, 1999) the answer to the question: "If new practices are recommended to the teachers under training, why do the trainers themselves not apply this approach in their own classes?" lies at the foundation of a theoretical frame of reference upon which this practice is based.

So, to design a new pedagogical model for computerized environments it is necessary to create a theoretical framework which leads the teachers to understand more fully the affective and socio-cognitive processes that are developed when students are interacting with Information and Communication Technologies. This theoretical approach is even more necessary considering that the digital media increases the interactive processes among the players involved (teachers, students, experts, community). This model can assist in developing interactive models for teacher training.

According to Costa et al. (1997), the central idea of the theory, the basis of the model, is presented below in Figure 1.

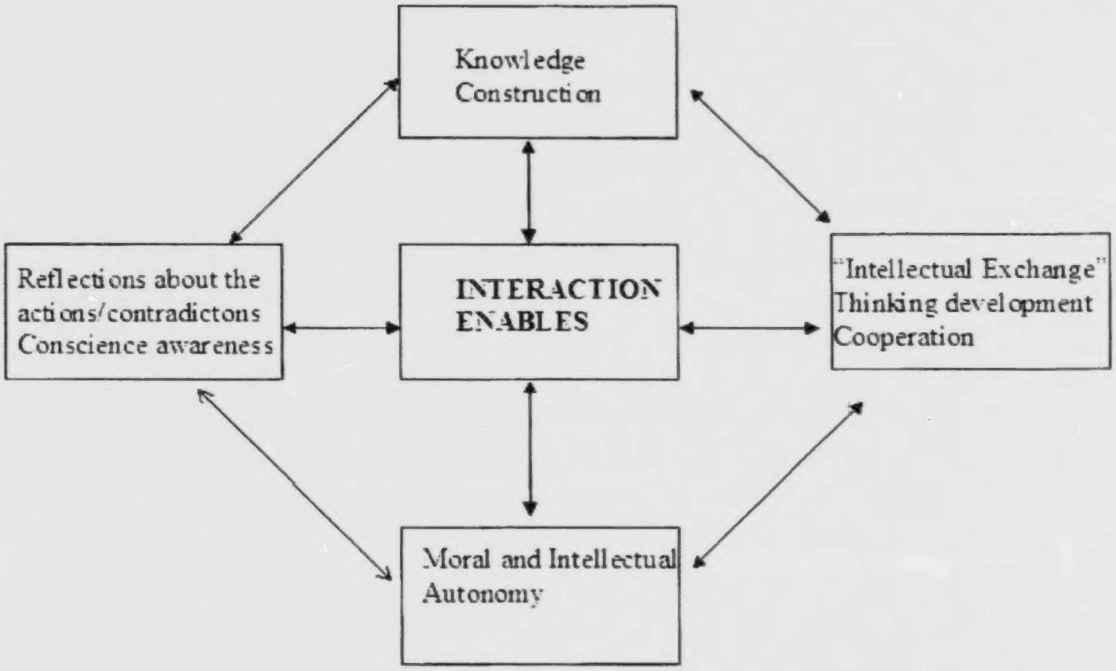

Knowledge Construction
Reflections about the actions/contradictons Conscience awareness
INTERACTION ENABLES
"Intellectual Exchange" Thinking development Cooperation
Moral and Intellectual Autonomy

Figure 1. Theoretical Framework for Teacher Training

Teacher Training Course Design

As already stated, the design of the course is based on two different but complementary moments: (1) face-to-face and (2) distance-basis, having as its rationale an interactive and problem-solving methodology and leading to a central axis relying on the development of interdisciplinary projects using telematic tools as enablers.

The following Figure 2 presents, in brief, the basic structure of the course, showing how the theoretical and methodological studies and the technology used are articulated around the Projects in practice.

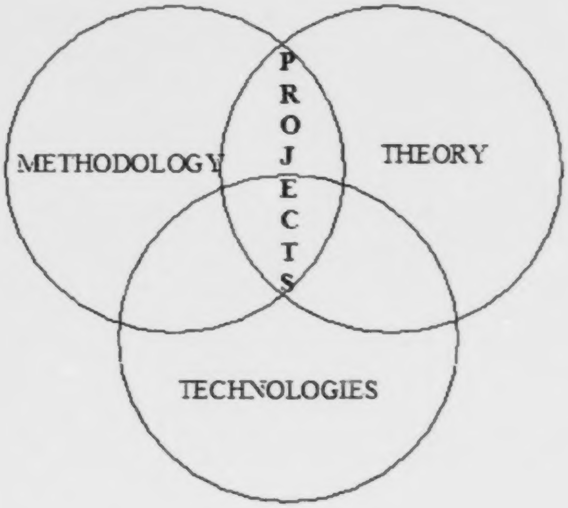

METHODOLOGY
PROJECTS
THEORY
TECHNOLOGIES

Figure 2. Basic Structure of the Training

As can be seen, the training is heavily constructivist-based and student-centered, aiming to develop interdisciplinary skills in the trainees (multipliers), so that they can use this expertise in their classrooms to train other teachers. Hence, the main target of this paper is to know whether the training - albeit developed according to this constructivist paradigm - was successful in developing a new classroom practice, which was observed when the trainees were back to their NTEs to continue the training of their peers.

Web-Based Structure of the Training

The LEC (Cognitive Studies Laboratory) of the Federal University of Rio Grande do Sul did not use any kind of off-the-shelf software package in order to develop the course. As real constructivists, they preferred not be restricted to a hermetic, instructionist and behavioristic system, but rather to build their own Web-environment during the training.

Since the beginning of the training, technology-mediated activities were developed via Internet services such as e-mail, discussion lists, newsgroups, real time communication (IRC, MOOs, CuSeeMe etc.) and spaces to store the practical and theoretical records of the groups, as well as contributions from the group.

A virtual environment was created in www.psico.ufrgs.br/mec-nte2, aiming to permit exchanges among the students and between them and other communities. The site has a public area and a protected zone reserved only for the participants of the course.

In the public space, all the navigators have the following resources at their disposal:

- Support and Interactive resources, such as information about the course, a library offering articles and research papers, links to interesting sites, IRC, FAQs, a Guest Book and News about the Project;
- Learning Projects of the Groups of Multipliers that offer partial considerations resulting from the analytical work addressing the developed processes and data obtained to date;
- Individual portfolios that encompass student home pages, student diaries (relating their reflections about the student-teacher processes developed both in individual and collective moments); their theoretical output and a space to store collaborative and cooperative contributions.

In the reserved area, one can find:

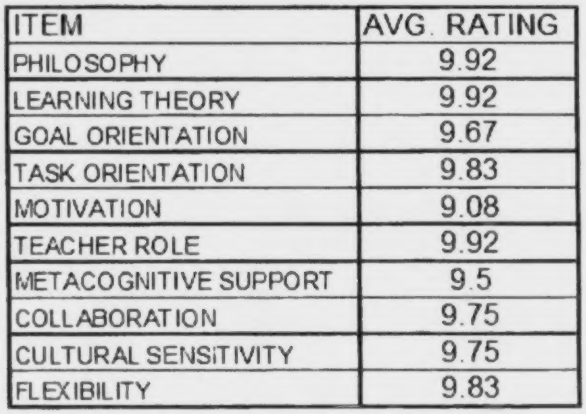
- Group portfolios that keep texts and articles generated by discussions developed in a collective way, texts under production by the group, enabled by the theoretical skill that has been developed through the discussions undertaken in the listserv of the site;
- Orientation for the dissertations to be developed by the NTEs' groups. In this space, methodological suggestions of the tutors, reports about the implementation of the NTEs in each region and records of the exchanges between tutors and students are made available;
- The Cyber Café—a meeting point to foment informal exchanges, jokes, invitations etc.

On the course site, the students can upload their information through forms previously developed as templates. This information is immediately converted to HTML code and stored on the site. In this manner, their reflections, experiences, reports, critics, data to be used in shared projects and so forth can be easily deployed in the Web.

Questionnaires

Two types of questionnaires were used on the multipliers. The first, a quantitative questionnaire, followed the Theoretical Framework presented in the Research Design. The second, a qualitative one, is presented in the Annex. All of them were sent by Internet to the teachers and collected when the researchers were in Rio Grande do Sul State observing the multipliers training other teachers. All the 29 trained teachers fulfilled the quantitative questionnaire. The consolidated results led to the following table and exhibit:

Table 2
Teacher Assessment



ITEM	AVG. RATING
PHILOSOPHY	9.92
LEARNING THEORY	9.92
GOAL ORIENTATION	9.67
TASK ORIENTATION	9.83
MOTIVATION	9.08
TEACHER ROLE	9.92
METACOGNITIVE SUPPORT	9.5
COLLABORATION	9.75
CULTURAL SENSITIVITY	9.75
FLEXIBILITY	9.83

Figure 3. Teacher Assessment

As can be seen, the socio-constructivist approach was largely understood and accepted by the teachers. The grades are very high though a small observation needs to be made concerning the motivation issue. The "source of motivation" ranges from extrinsic (i.e., outside the learning environment) to intrinsic (i.e., integral to the learning environment). Intrinsic motivation of instruction is elusive regardless of the delivery system, but some proponents seem convinced that WBI systems motivate learners automatically, simply because of the integration of music, voice, graphics, text, animation, video, and a user-friendly interface. Multimedia studies indicate that learners soon tire of these media elements (Reeves, 1993), as the results above show, and it should be obvious that motivational aspects must be consciously designed into WBI as rigorously as any other pedagogical dimension.

During our visit to Rio Grande do Sul, the questionnaire presented in the Annex was also applied to the 29 teachers and the following results were obtained:

Before the course:

Most of the teachers defined their pedagogical posture as "traditional", here understood as instructivist and teacher-centered, which they said was the way they were trained to be. Some of them tried to change their posture without success, as stated below:

- "Before the course, I define my posture as both traditional (developed by practice) and innovative/constructivist (developed just in discourse). As with most of my peers my teacher-centered approach is the result of my academic training in college. This posture could be classified as a content-based one, taking the social reality for granted"
- "Although I have tried to develop new pedagogical praxis, my posture was traditional, teacher-centered and heavily based on knowledge transmission. I did not believe social constructivism could be applied successfully".

After the course:

Most of the teachers are conscious of the need to change their pedagogical practice, however they are realistic enough to say that they have not yet changed. As they said:

- "I cannot say I have changed my pedagogical posture. Though I can say that I have reflected about my posture and am comfortable saying 'I don't know', 'I may be wrong', statements which I would hardly have dared say a short while ago".
- "After the course, I believe I have not made a radical transformation, as it will take time to put this into practice. But I do feel myself in a process of transformation as I realize that some of my postures must be changed, and I am frequently aware of the need to create constructivist situations for the students. Unfortunately, most of them are rarely implemented".

Course Strengths and Weaknesses

According to our survey the most cited Strengths and Weaknesses of the course were as follows. **Strengths:** The trainers' sincerity and humility; the respect shown to the students and their opinions; their knowledge and their absolute coherence between practice and speech. **Weaknesses:** The course duration which was very intensive as well as some classes given by "technical experts" who did not follow the constructivist approach of the course.

Classroom Observation and Interviews

During the visit to Rio Grande do Sul State, we had a chance to interview the multipliers and also to observe their practice in training other teachers. Speeches of the trained teachers conveyed to us the conclusion that they are truly aware of the need to change their pedagogical practice, and they see how to do that. They spoke very sincerely and the emotional component seemed to be very important for their forthcoming transformations. They explained that they suffered very much during the course, as they expected technical Cartesian training and became frustrated, as they wanted more technical skill development practice. Some teachers had already attended informatics courses on their own, and could not understand why these issues were not being addressed in the course. According to one of the teachers, they needed to be totally deconstructed to relearn from scratch. When asked about how they were deconstructed they pointed out two factors as the main enablers:

- Lack of Guidelines

  Although they waited for pre-established frameworks full of landmarks, the trainers spurred them to find their own way in the course. This generated a considerable degree of frustration as they began to compete among themselves and sometimes they felt they were falling behind. These frustrations were greater among the women participants eliciting a profoundly emotional response. Some of them confessed that they almost quit the course in despair.

- The Error Treatment

  Another way they were deconstructed was having to deal with a new perspective of error. The trainers said most of time they did not know the right answers to the teachers' questions. This procedure confused them, and led the group to being obliged to live with "answers" such as: "I don't know", "Try yourself" and so forth.

We visited a training session in Gravataí, a town approximately one hour from Porto Alegre, the capital of Rio Grande do Sul State. There, some of the trained teachers were in the process of training some other teachers to use Informatics in their schools. Our observations showed that the teachers actually try to create a constructivist environment, conveying the students to look for the solutions themselves, in a workgroup and learning community created with the other students. At the moment of the visit the students were just beginning to create their own home pages on the Internet. They looked forward to having straight solutions and specific answers to their questions. The teachers were reluctant to give them the solutions, as they were more interested in getting the students to learn how to find their own solutions. This posture embarrassed some of the students, mainly the more Cartesian-oriented ones. Actually, it is a real battle, as the teachers have the impulse to present the solutions, rather than letting the students think for themselves. The teachers must be aware at all times of their former ways.

It became apparent that the gender influence must be taken into account. According to the multipliers, the men's reactions are very different from the women, as they control their emotions. This is an issue LEC wants to research deeper, so as to understand how it works. However what we could again see clearly is the effect of the emotional component in a socio-constructivist approach, even on the Web. This is an effect that cannot be disregarded and is better explained in the conclusions below.

Conclusions

It is important, before addressing any manner of conclusions, to present the assessment frame developed by LEC for its own course.

LEC's Course Assessment. The qualitative assessment of the course, according to LEC's approach, was based on the following elements addressing the students:

- Regular construction and publishing of the individual and collective production on the course website;
- Creation and publication of multimedia documents;
- Contribution in the shared spaces on the site;
- Publishing, follow-up and discussion of the projects developed;
- Personal use of the website resources, both in a synchronous and asynchronous way.

A system (AccessWatch) was used to record interaction among the students and between students and teachers. Subsequently, the quality of the interaction was analyzed.

All assessment was based on the process of knowledge creation, established by analysis of student portfolios, project evolution, student reflections and student self-analysis developed throughout the course.

We can conclude that according to LEC's assessment factors, the training program was a success. The trained teachers are aware of the need to change their pedagogical practices, and they now know how to do that and are willing to deploy what they have learnt in their schools, as soon as possible.

Theory vs. Practice

The practical training given by the multipliers (trained teachers) to the other teachers in a cascade process complies with the way they were trained, i.e., they try to apply the socio-constructivist approach in the training, using Information Technology as a tool and enabler to give a new awareness to the teachers about how to spur the students to create their own knowledge.

At one point one of the multipliers – almost as a throwback to her old mental model – tried to help a student by giving her the correct way of solving a problem. This should be considered normal, as the multipliers themselves are still undergoing their own transformation process which takes time.

Care and empathy are used all the time, just in the same way as they were used in the multipliers' training. They understand the de-construction process the students are experiencing as they have been through the same process themselves.

Coherence is the key-word for the success of the training, and the students see this as the multipliers' discourse and practice lead the course to the same central objectives, namely to use the technology to create a new *modus-operandi* in the classroom, thereby enabling the students to create and socialize their knowledge.

Naturally, coherence is not the only issue in the transformation of pedagogical practice, as shown below, but it is paramount for the success of the training itself.

The use of the framework developed by Pettigrew & Whipp (1991) depicted below in Figure 4 can help us to better understand the role of coherence in the success of the training and, by extension, of teacher practice. This model can show us one of the possible ways to achieve a successful strategic change in the educational realm.

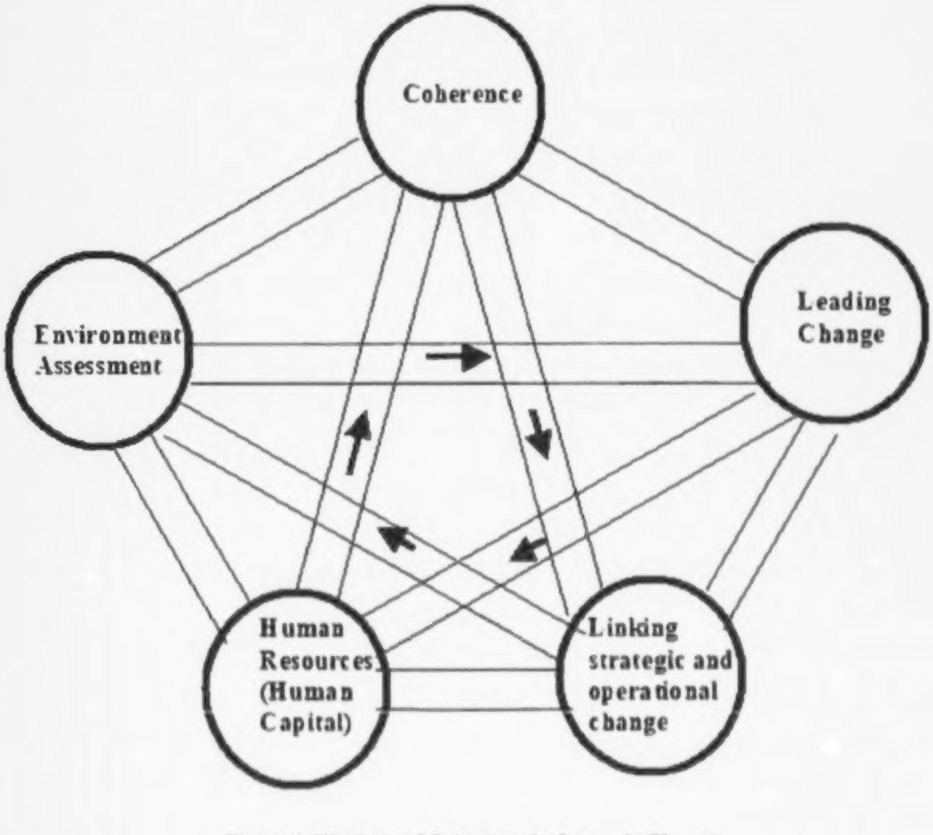

Coherence
Environment Assessment
Leading Change
Human Resources (Human Capital)
Linking strategic and operational change

Figure 4. The Role of Coherence in Strategic Change

Barriers to be overcome

The greatest mistake one can make is to conclude that training itself is enough to change pedagogical practice in schools. According to the following Figure 5, developed by Morton (1996) and adapted by the researcher for the educational realm, several issues in the educational environment are interrelated, thus a deep and actual change affect all of them.

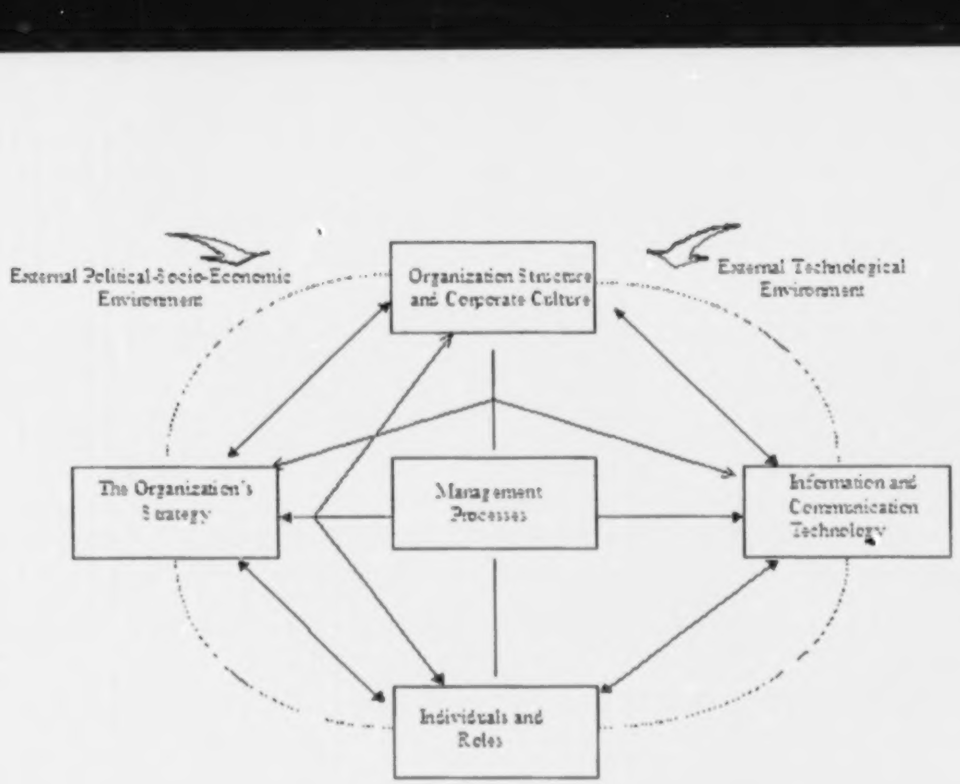

External Political-Socio-Economic Environment
Organization Structure and Corporate Culture
External Technological Environment
The Organization's Strategy
Management Processes
Information and Communication Technology
Individuals and Roles

Figure 5. Systemic Framework

The diagram recognizes that organizations (in this case schools) can usefully be thought of a set of forces existing in a state of dynamic equilibrium. On the one hand there are its strategy (the mission it wishes to accomplish), and all the tasks that make up that mission. There are also its organization structure and, more importantly, the corporate culture that makes that structure become alive and vibrant. There are also people and the roles they are being asked to play. The fourth major set of forces are the information technologies. Holding all these four forces together are the management processes: the planning, the budgeting, and the control systems as well as the informal processes that represent the way the organization does its business. All these set of forces exist in an external environment which consists of the social, political, economic, and technical forces.

Analyzing the use of ICT in the schools after teacher training in a WBI constructivist environment, we can conclude that:

- Organization's Strategy – if the school principal is trained in the use of ICT to develop a new pedagogical practice, it will become easier for the school to adopt a new *praxis*. However, it is important to say that the schools' strategy must conform to the educational strategy developed by the state government as a whole;
- Organization Structure and Corporate Culture – regarding school's structure, this is perhaps the most difficult issue to be changed as the public authorities, themselves, have designed the school's organizational structure. As Chandler (1962) said: "Structure follows Strategy", so they are intimately linked. Hence, a radical change in the organizational design of the schools is essential in order to reach a new level of pedagogical practice, which is more open, constructivist and child-centered, otherwise new developed strategies will fail. Regarding corporate culture, the training gives the teachers new values, concepts and visions about education and the role ICT can play in the classroom. By consequence, it can lead to a (r)evolution in school practice, so as to break with the old *schemata* (mental models) and define a new vision and mission for the school.
- Information and Communication Technology – ICT can dramatically change the pedagogical procedures and processes applied by the schools, by reengineering and innovating old and outdated processes;
- Individuals and Roles - teachers trained in ICT can socialize the benefits of the new educational approach by explaining and demonstrating the use of ICT to their peers in the school, thus becoming catalysts in the transformation process. So, this is an issue the training can deal with successfully;
- Management Processes – as the management processes depend heavily on each school principal's way of guiding them, once again it is perceived the importance of having the headmasters trained in how to use ICT in a constructivist way;

Now, we may depict the framework already presented in Exhibit 6, highlighting the "dark" nodes of the model as the ones which a socio-constructivist approach associated to the use of ICT are unable to change or influence in a deeper way. So, by consequence, these items need to be addressed through the use of other strategies rather than via teacher training. Figure 6 below depicts this idea and presents a holistic view of all the issues that must be changed.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

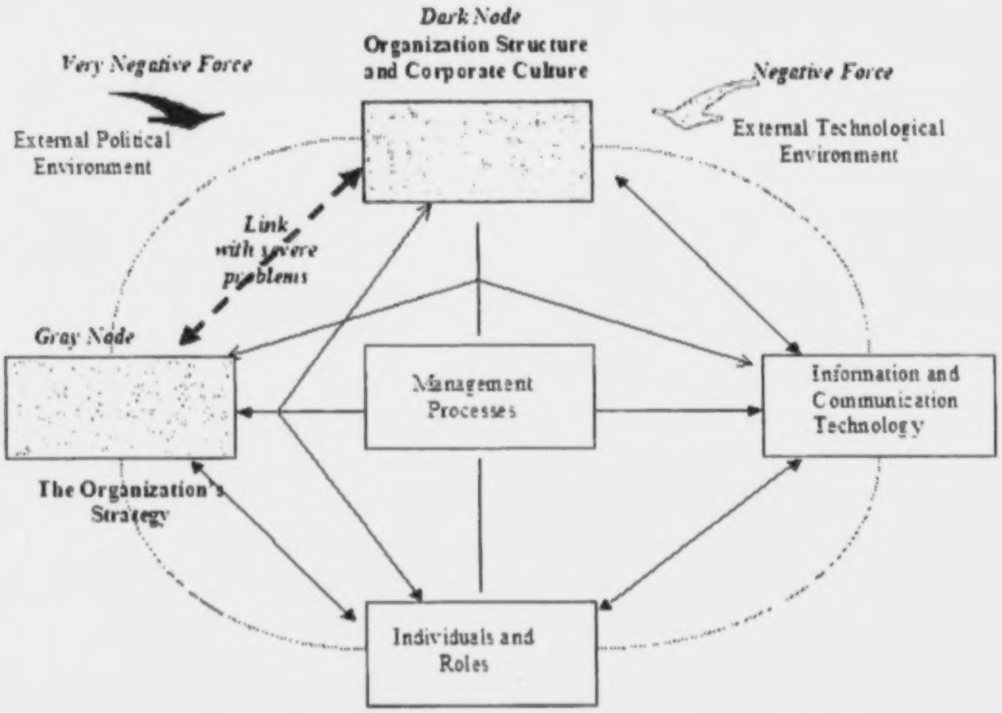

Dark Node
Organization Structure and Corporate Culture
Very Negative Force
External Political Environment
Negative Force
External Technological Environment
Link with severe problems
Gray Node
Management Processes
Information and Communication Technology
The Organization's Strategy
Individuals and Roles

Figure 6. The "Dark" Nodes of the Systemic Framework

Regarding the "Environmental Scan" (Hax & Majluf, 1991) associated to the training, it can be concluded after several interviews with the persons in charge of the training that political discontinuity—quite common in Brazil—can jeopardize this educational endeavor. Besides, as technological innovations outdated very rapidly the hardware and software acquired by the Government, a constant influx of investments would be necessary. Unfortunately, severe financial constraints can accelerate the obsolescence process of the hardware and software purchased, as well as the obsolescence process of the skills developed by the teachers during the training (Argote *et al.*, 1998).

Regarding the "Internal Scrutiny" (Hax & Majluf, 1991) associated to the training, it can be concluded that Strategy and Structure associated with the schools' practice, hardly will be changed by the socio-constructivist training, as they are imposed in a top-down basis. These "dark nodes" will influence all the others dimensions of the model, mainly the Management Process. According to the teachers interviewed, a more participative approach is needed so as to allow the schools to influence for a better organizational structure and strategy.

The Influence of Care in the Training Process

We can thus see that care is fundamental in knowledge creation, as explained by von Krogh (1998). According to Maturana & Varela (1987), cognition is a creative act of conjuring up a microcosm. Because knowledge resides in our bodies and is closely tied to our senses and previous experience, we will naturally create a world in ways which are unique to ourselves.

In this study, care engenders trust in the learning process and also gives rise to active empathy, making it possible to assess and understand what the other person needs. Empathy is the attempt to put yourself in another's shoes, understanding his/her particular situation, interests, skill level, history of success and failures, and future opportunities and problems. By means of active empathy, you proactively seek to understand the other person. Through active questioning and acute observation, you seek out instances where your efforts are needed. You practice dialogue rather than advocating only your own point of view. Care accomplishes precisely the sharing of positive and negative emotions through active empathy. In this study, for example, the relationship between the student and the teacher in learning the use of Informatics in the classroom is made easier when the teacher explains that he/she has had some of the same personal frustrations in learning a specific issue, and that speed in grasping the difficulty of this issue is not a gauge of the intellectual capacity of the student, but one of the inherent characteristics of a long learning process.

Hence, it can be concluded that the approach developed in this specific training for knowledge creation was based on von Krogh, (1998):

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Characteristics of Care in the Case Study Model

PROCESS	LEVEL	CHARACTERISTICS
BESTOWING	INDIVIDUAL	Knowledge created in a supportive environment ("maximum leverage") Strong intent to share knowledge on the future Feedback from others Integration of individuals into the team
INDWELLING	SOCIAL	"Equals" creating knowledge Questioning and changing the basis for legimate knowledge Sharing to help the team grow Attempts to "look with" not "look at" other team members

As there is care in training, there is mutual trust, active empathy, access to help among team members, lenient judgments towards participants in the team, and courage. In such a situation the student will *bestow* knowledge on others as well as receive active help from others (others bestowing knowledge on him/her). The environment is supportive, and the goal of the learning process shifts from obtaining "maximum grip" to reaching "maximum leverage" on others' knowledge. There is a mutual intent to help others to optimize their task performance, and, therefore, to share knowledge. The individual can experiment more freely in order to develop unconventional task solutions, and is emboldened in the pursuit of knowledge creation.

The individual is integrated into the team. Other students and teachers take an active interest in the learning process, and the individual is encouraged to make knowledge explicit while learning. When care runs high, colleagues show interest and support, and the individual member can spontaneously articulate his/her knowledge using unconventional language, metaphors, and analogies. Expressing personal difficulties in knowledge creation will be met with lenience from other team members and active feedback will be provided.

The process of mutual bestowing provides fertile ground for a distinct process of creating social knowledge in a team: *Indwelling*. Indwelling is of particular importance to the sharing of tacit knowledge and concept creation. Polanyi & Prosch (1975) suggested that dwelling in a concept can be understood as a dramatic shift of perspectives, changing the concept from "looking at" to "looking with". In broader terms, indwelling is about commitment to an idea, to an experience, to a concept, or to a fellow human being. In developing shared tacit knowledge, the challenge for the teachers in knowledge creation is to dwell in the experiences, perspectives and concepts of other participants, or in other words, to change from self-commitment to commitment to others. In changing such deeper-level commitments, participants literally make changes in their perceptions. When care runs high, team members extend help to each other in finding new means of conveying and sharing personal beliefs. Trust and lenience make it easier to articulate emotional aspects of an experience, as was realized during this research.

Again, it is important to stress that the emotional component, here translated as care, was a vital force for the success of this socio-constructivist WBI training. Socio-constructivist training demands by its very nature high involvement of the teachers, both in the face-to-face stage and the distance-basis one. As the training aims to lead the students to reprogramming their minds by challenging their "temporary certainties", some physical as well as emotional support is necessary. The students are conveyed to an "un-learn" and "re-learn" process, and sometimes they offload their mental models without having acquired a new *schemata*. At this moment care is absolutely necessary (von Krogh, 1998) as they are emotionally deconstructed.

Traditional vs. Socio-Constructivist Web-Based Training

As a summary of our conclusions the following Table 4 is presented comparing some issues addressed in traditional teacher training and in a socio-constructivist program:

Table 4
Traditional vs. Socio-Constructivist Approach

	TRADITIONAL TRAINING	ANALYZED MODEL
	Knowledge Transmission	Knowledge Creation
General Characteristics	Hierarchical	Team-based
	Directive	Relational
	Fixed Roles	Flexible roles
Objectives	Defined by the Teacher	Negotiated among the players
	Fixed	Flexible and changeable
Contents	Mono-disciplinary	Interdisciplinary
	Based on texts, books etc.	Based on Internet, the peers etc.
Methodology	Based on reproduction	Interactive and problem-based
	Cartesian and Taylorist	Integrated
Evaluation	Based on command-control	Metacognitive-based

Final Recommendations

As final recommendations that can improve the training analyzed above, we should highlight the following issues to be implemented:

- Mentoring Programs

  Mentoring programs must motivate the trained teachers to share their knowledge with junior teachers and newcomers in the schools. Management can achieve this by defining two sets of responsibilities for each individual, namely to develop proportionally his/her ability to acquire expertise, in line with the responsibility to make his/her help accessible to those who need it as his/her expertise grows.

- Headmaster Training

  As stated above, the role of the headmaster in the creation of a "new school" is paramount, not just to motivate the teachers, but also to be fully involved in the other realms that hinder a true, radical transformation in the pedagogical practice, as presented in Figure 6. Hence, their participation and involvement in the training process is highly important for training targets to be fully accomplished.

- Social Events

  It is important to reunite the trained teachers in social events, where in a face-to-face basis they can share the experiences, improvements and obstacles they are facing. These moments are as important as opening and maintaining a newsgroup on the Internet the participants of which are already trained in this socio-constructivist approach.

All in all, this was a very innovative teacher training initiative which fully complied with the trainers' paradigms and pedagogical philosophies, seeking coherence at all times. Undoubtedly, as stated before, this alone will not change the outdated former teaching and learning *praxis*, but it is an updated and powerful enabler for instilling the necessary changes in the other remaining areas addressed in the whole educational process.

References

Amabile, T. (1997) "Motivating Creativity in Organizations" *California Management Review*, Vol. 40, No. 1, Fall, pp. 39-58

Argote L. , Beckman S. L. & Epple D. (1998). "The Persistence and Transfer of Learning in Industrial Settings", In: *The Strategic Management of Intellectual Capital*, Klein D. (ed.), Butterworth-Heinemann.

Chandler, A. D. (1962) *Strategy and Structure: Chapters in the History of the Industrial Enterprise*, Cambridge, MA, MIT Press

Cole, P. (1992) "Constructivism Revisited: A Search for Common Ground", *Educational Technology*, 32 (2), pp. 27-34

Costa, I.T., Fagundes, L.C. & Nevado, R.A. (1997) "Projeto TecLec – Educação a Distância e a Formação Continuada de Professores em Sistemas de Comunidades de Aprendizagem", *Anais do VIII Simpósio Brasileiro de Informática na Educação (SBIE97)*, São José dos Campos, Instituto Tecnológico da Aeronáutica

Flavell, J.H. (1979) "Metacognition and Cognitive Monitoring: A New Area of Psychological Inquiry", *American Psychologist*, 34, pp. 906-911

Hax, N. & Majluf N. (1991). *The Strategy Concept and Process: A Pragmatic Approach*, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., USA.

Kafai, Y. & Resnick, M. (Eds.) (1996) *Constructivism in Practice: Designing, Thinking and Learning in a Digital World.* Mahwah, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates

Lynch, R. (1997) *Corporate Strategy*, Financial Times, Pitman Publishing, pp. 778-779

Maturana, H.. & Varela, F.J. (1987) *The Tree of Knowledge*, New Science Library, Boston, MA

Morton. S. (1996) "How Information Technologies can Transform Organizations," in Rob Kling, Editor, *Computerization and Controversy* (San Diego: Academic Press) pp. 148-160

Merriam S.B. (Ed.) (1993) *An Update on Adult Learning Theory.* San Francisco: Jossey-Bass

Nevado, R.A, Magdalena, B.C. & Costa, I.B.T. (1999) "Formação de Professores Multiplicadores: nte2@projetos.cooperativos.ufrgs.br ". *Revista Informática na Educação: teoria e prática.* vol. 1, N.3 Curso de Pós-Graduação em Informática na Educação. October.

Nonaka, I. & Takeuchi, H. (1995). *The Knowledge-Creating Company: How Japanese Companies Create the Dynamics of Innovation*, Oxford University Press, New York.

Pascale, R.T. & Athos, A.G. (1982) *The Art of Japanese Management*, Simon & Schuster, New York, NY

Peters, T.J. & Waterman, R.H. (1982) *In Search of Excellence*, Harper & Row, New York, NY

Pettigrew, A. & Whipp, R. (1991) *Managing Change for Competitive Success*, Blackwell Publishers, Oxford, pp. 104.

Polanyi, M. & Prosch, H. (1975) *Meaning*, University of Chicago Press, Chicago, IL

Reeves, T. (1993) Research Support for Interactive Multimedia: Existing Foundations and Future Directions. In: C. Latchem, J. Williamson & L.Henderson-Lancett (Eds.), *Interactive Multimedia: Practice and Promise* (pp. 79-96). London: Kogan Page

Reeves, T. & Reeves, M. (1997) "Effective Dimensions of Interactive Learning on the World Wide Web", In: *Web-Based Instruction*, Khan B. (ed.), pp. 59-66

Rogers G.M. & Sando J.K. (1996) *Stepping Ahead: An Assessment Plan Development Guide*, Rose-Hulman Institute of Technology, pp.1

von Krogh. G. (1998) "Care in Knowledge Creation", *California Management Review*, Vol. 40, No. 3, Spring, pp. 133-153

Wenger E.C. & Snyder W.M. (2000) "Communities of Practice: The Organizational Frontier", *Harvard Business Review*, January-February, pp. 139-145

About the Author

Luiz Antonio Joia
Brazilian School of Public and Business Administration
Rio de Janeiro

Associate Professor – Brazilian School of Public and Business Administration – Getulio Vargas Foundation, EBAPE/FGV, Rio de Janeiro, Brazil & Adjunct Professor – Rio de Janeiro State University, Uerj.

Email: **luizjoia@fgv.br**

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

Maria Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 474 times since October 19, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 45 **October 19, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Corrective Action and School Choice in NYC: An Analysis of District Funding Applications

Doug Hamman
Texas Tech University

E. Allen Schenck
RMC Research Corporation
Portsmouth, NH

Citation: Hamman, D. & Schenck, E. A. (2002, October 19). Corrective action and school choice in NYC: An analysis of district funding applications, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(45). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n45.html.

Abstract

Districts play a critical role in reforming schools. In January 2000, NYC community school districts applied for Title I, IASA, funding to carry out corrective actions against historically low-performing schools. Our purpose was to examine (a) how districts planned to take corrective action to address problems that cause low performance; and (b) the extent to which school choice could be implemented in those districts which were applying for corrective action funding. Districts most commonly identified teacher turnover, poor-quality instruction, and student needs as causes of low performance. In response, districts proposed providing professional development related to instructional strategies, but often ignored other important issues. Moreover, most districts described plans to take corrective actions that would decrease schools' decision-making authority, but then failed to identify steps to increase the districts' own capacity to execute greater responsibility once control had been taken from the schools. Districts overall seemed unable to implement school choice plans in an effective manner.

As part of the FY 2000 funding for the Elementary and Secondary Schools Act of 1965 (ESEA), Congress appropriated $134 million for local educational agencies to bolster their capability for carrying out school improvement and corrective action responsibilities under section 1116 (c) of Title I, IASA, and to provide students enrolled in low-performing schools the opportunity to transfer within the district to another school not identified as low-performing. This appropriation was aimed at strengthening accountability for student performance results, and was seen as "a key reform strategy capable of delivering a high-quality education for all students" (U. S. Department of Education, 2000, p. 2). Given the recent passage of the reauthorization of the ESEA in late 2001, including its provisions for districts to take corrective actions against low-performing schools, it seems appropriate to examine the manner in which some districts in New York City (NYC) have proposed to leverage change in historically low-performing schools.

Districts Play an Important Role

One clear intention of the 2000 appropriation was to have districts play an important role in turning around their low-performing schools. Districts were obligated to help low-performing schools develop and implement school improvement plans, and to provide additional professional development and technical assistance. Districts were also authorized to take one or more corrective actions which could include withholding funds from identified schools, decreasing decision-making authority of school leaders in identified schools, or reconstituting school staff (see Appendix A for the complete list of corrective actions). An important provision of this appropriation was that, when necessary, district leaders could use improvement funding to build up their own capability for turning around low-performing schools.

In addition to improvement and corrective action responsibilities, districts accepting these funds in FY 2000 were also required to implement school choice plans. School choice was intended to offer students in a chronically low-performing school the opportunity to attend a better school the following year. If districts were unable to offer school choice to every student desiring this option, provisions had to be made to transfer as many students as possible, and to allocate existing opportunities on an equitable basis. School choice was viewed as a means to provide students with better educational opportunities and to increase involvement of parents in children's education (U. S. Department of Education, 2000).

Strategies for Turning Around Low-Performing Schools

Corrective action and school choice are both federal strategies intended to turn around low-performing schools. Corrective action provides districts with the authority to intervene directly in schools. With this legislation, districts were under special obligation to take corrective action against schools that failed to make adequate yearly progress toward student achievement goals in English Language Arts (ELA) and Mathematics for two out of three years after being identified for improvement. Section 1116 (c) of Title I, IASA, gives districts a pivotal role in helping turn around low-performing schools. To do so, however, districts must have personnel with the knowledge and skill to help schools adopt and implement effective strategies for improvement.

Likewise, school choice is an accountability strategy intended to bring market forces to bear on low-performing schools. The public notification of poor performance, and the dissatisfaction accompanying parents' transfer of their children to higher performing schools creates public demand for better education. Like corrective action, districts must have a level of capacity for this strategy to be effective. In this case, districts must have space in schools that are making adequate progress in order to allow the exercise of the choice option.

District leadership for building school capacity and improving student learning. The path to improving chronically low-performing schools represents virtually uncharted territory for many school leaders. District leaders appear to lack the expertise and resources to respond to school-level calls for assistance, according to a recent report on district school improvement efforts (U. S. Department of Education, 2001). Given this, schools against which districts are planning corrective actions may be in a particularly troubling situation where they have been unable to improve over an extended period of time, and their district is ill-equipped to help halt their decline or provide the necessary external support to assist and guide improvement.

It is unclear exactly how districts will carry out corrective actions against schools, or the effect such actions are likely to have on student performance. Only a limited amount of empirical evidence exists to guide district-led reforms. What seems clearer, though, is that if districts have not been able to assist schools in need of improvement, there is little chance they will be able to turn around low-performing schools by taking corrective actions *unless* some action is taken to boost the capacity for reform at the district level.

One strategy districts might use to help low-performing schools is to use professional development funding in ways that directly affect teaching and learning. Youngs (2001) suggests that districts can use professional development to enhance the capacity of schools to improve student achievement. A school's capacity is enhanced when professional development includes features that improve teacher knowledge and skill, builds professional community within a school, and fosters coherence of instructional programs while providing some autonomy. These features provide knowledge and support for improvement, and ultimately make it more likely that teachers will change their instructional practice in ways that will improve students' academic achievement. Applying Youngs' criteria for effective professional development provides a guide with which districts can judge professional development, and provides a means to tie professional development directly to student learning.

A related strategy that may hold some promise for helping low-performing schools is for superintendents to become instructional leaders. Petersen (1999) described the actions of eight California superintendents who are credited with turning around many low-performing schools in their district. These superintendents all embraced the role of instructional leader at the district level, and reorganized district priorities and structure to focus on teaching and curriculum in schools. Petersen described superintendents who articulated a vision of good teaching for their districts, held principals accountable for carrying this vision into the classrooms of their schools, and evaluated principals on their ability to act as instructional leaders.

These district-level strategies are consistent with what Elmore (2000) described as distributed leadership. According to Elmore, school leaders can improve low-performing schools by tightly coupling policy, administration, and teaching with standards for student learning and performance. This tighter coupling allows leadership for student learning to be distributed across the multiple levels and roles in districts, schools, and classrooms.

According to Elmore (2000), the task of improving student learning needs to be shared, or distributed, among every person in education organizations, and individuals must contribute their expertise and be accountable in a manner appropriate to their level. For example, superintendents are accountable for system organization, allocation strategies focused on instruction, and principal evaluation. Principals are accountable for school improvement strategies, professional development, and teacher evaluation. The specific role for superintendents, supported by policy, would be to arrange conditions and assure training and support for principals that would allow them to be instructional leaders in their school. With this support, principals, in turn, would arrange conditions, and provide training that would allow teachers to provide high-quality instruction; and teachers would provide conditions and training to support student learning.

District leaders focused on the core technology of education (instruction and curriculum) and a tighter collaboration between superintendent and principals are two themes that appear to be gaining support in the most current literature on school leadership (e.g., Hatch, 2001; institute for Educational Leadership, 2001; Spillane, Halverson, & Diamond, 2001). These strategies seem to be a promising area in which districts might build their own capacity for turning around low-performing schools.

Parents' role in improving low-performing schools. School choice is a reform strategy that, over the years, has taken many forms (e.g., charter schools, magnet schools, vouchers for private schools, inter-district school choice, and intra-district school choice). In all its manifestations, the strategy is intended to directly involve parents in holding schools accountable for improving. By providing parents with a choice about the schools their child attends, advocates believe competition and market forces will force low-performing schools to improve. To date, however, there is little conclusive evidence to support or deny this claim (e.g., Goldhaber, 1999; Myers, et al., 2000).

Almost 10 years ago, New York City parents were given the option to transfer their children to any other school in any other district within the City (i.e., inter-district transfer option). Parents could exercise choice provided space was available in the receiving school and transportation could be arranged. Relatively few students, however, actually had the opportunity to attend schools outside of their home districts due to high demand for schools with good reputations, and because of the daunting procedures for obtaining permission to transfer to another district (Teske, et al., 2000). Teske et al. believed that because students were rarely able to exercise the choice option, inter-district choice in New York City has had a very limited effect on low-performing schools.

In another New York City choice experiment, vouchers to attend private schools were given to a random sample of 1,300 children of low-income families. Meyers et al (2000) reported that parents believed the environments for their children's education had improved (i.e., less racial conflict, less fighting, more homework). In the two-year report of progress, however, there appeared to be few differences in performance on standardized tests between voucher and control students.

On the positive side, Teske et al's (2000) analysis of two New York City districts' intra-district choice plan provides compelling evidence that school choice within a district may provide parents and students with meaningful education alternatives, and also help improve low-performing schools (Teske, et al., 2000). Teske et al traced the reading and math achievement of students in two New York City districts (Districts 4 and District 2) that adopted school choice plans decades earlier than required by federal law. The authors demonstrate that the introduction and increase in the percentage of available schools for choice was positively related to gains in student performance in the district.

School choice, as a strategy for improving low-performing schools, continues to receive popular and critical support (e.g., Hart & Teeter, 2001). The effectiveness of school choice options seems to hinge, however, on the extent to which parents and students can actually exercise choice. In cities or districts where only a few schools have been identified for improvement or where enrollment is below 100% capacity, school choice may be a powerful reform strategy. In districts where few choice options exist, the school choice strategy may be ineffective.

Purpose of the Analysis

The purpose of this analysis was to describe the actions proposed by NYC districts to improve schools against which corrective actions must be taken, and to describe the extent to which districts would be able to honor school choice requests. This information may be helpful in evaluating current strategies for turning around low-performing schools, and in helping to direct other districts' action in the future as more and more schools are identified for corrective action.

Methods and Procedure

This report is a descriptive analysis of written applications submitted by New York City Community School Districts to the New York State Education Department (NYSED) in January, 2000. Districts were applying for a portion of $12.8 million that was set aside for districts in New York State. In New York City, these funds were designated to support district efforts to improve low-performing schools and to take corrective action.

Twenty-five districts in New York City applied to NYSED for funding to carryout corrective actions against 122 schools (Elementary = 64; Middle = 54; K-8 = 4) that failed to make adequate yearly progress toward student performance goals on the NY state assessment in English Language Arts (ELA) (52%), Math (9%), or both ELA and Math (39%). To apply for funding, districts attached an amendment to their yearly District Comprehensive Education Plan. The content of the amendment included a list of schools against which corrective actions were to be taken; an analysis of the needs and priorities in the schools and the district; a description of the district level intervention for assisting identified schools and for building district capacity for assisting schools; and a detailed description of the districts school choice plan (see Appendix B for questions on the applications).

Categories for analyzing district applications were developed directly from district responses, and from constructs in current leadership literature. These categories were used to summarize districts' analysis of schools' needs, and their proposed actions for improving achievement in English language arts (ELA) and Mathematics. We also examined how districts operationalized the corrective actions they proposed to take, and examined the school choice plan in terms of the likely number of students who could exercise their school-choice options.

Results

The results from our analysis will be presented in sections that correspond to the sequential order of questions found in the district application (see Appendix B): school needs identified by the district, proposed district action, and proposed corrective action. Finally, results from an analysis of districts' school choice plan will be presented.

Needs that Districts Identified

For descriptive purposes, we grouped districts' identification of school need into five broad categories, and then identified specific needs within each category (see Table 1). The school need most commonly identified by districts was the need for *teacher stability* in low-performing schools. The need for teacher stability refers to a high rate of teachers transferring in and out of the low-performing schools. Eighteen out of twenty-five districts (72%) identified this as a need that impedes progress toward improving student performance. The second most frequently identified areas were *student need* (68%) and *improved instructional* strategies (68%). Student need represents challenges to the instructional organization of schools presented by students who, for example, have special learning needs, are English language learners, or who frequently transfer between schools, etc. The district-identified need to improve instructional strategies was primarily described as a need fro teachers to provide differentiated instruction that would accommodate student differences. This need, as described by the districts, typically did not address more stable student factors, such as poverty or mobility. Curriculum alignment (64%), parent involvement (60%), qualified and certified teachers (56%) and principal leadership (56%) all were identified as school needs by a majority of districts. Although these needs do undoubtedly create barriers to school improvement, districts rarely identified other needs that also may have a negative impact on students' achievement.

Table 1

School Needs Identified by the Districts		
School needs	**Number of districts identifying the need**	**Percentage of districts identifying the need**
School-level needs		
Student needs	17	68%
Parent involvement	15	60%
Leadership needs		
Principal leadership	14	56%
District leadership	10	40%
Instructional needs		
Instructional strategies	17	68%
Curriculum alignment	16	64%
Training needs		

Access to professional development	11	44%
Personnel needs		
Teacher stability	18	72%
Qualified teachers	14	56%
Principal stability	10	40%

For example, fewer than half of the districts identified principal stability (40%) as a need in schools requiring corrective action. Moreover, as few as one-quarter of districts identified needs related to high-quality professional development (24%). Even fewer districts said there was a need for teachers to be able to collaborate with one another (8%); increased teacher leadership (4%); improved social services for students (4%); or the need to develop a reliable, qualified pool of substitute teachers (4%). Many of these needs correspond to factors that help create a positive, supportive school climate, an that contribute to a school culture focused on teaching and learning. It is unclear from the analysis of these applications whether these needs did not exist in the designated schools, or whether the majority of application authors were simply not aware of these needs.

Proposed District Action in Response to the Needs Schools

Districts' responses to the most common school needs were also grouped into five overarching categories and then specific examples identified in each category (see Table 2). Overall, the grouping of these proposed actions revealed an interesting pattern of responses from the districts that seemed to ignore many of the most significant problems they had previously identified (e.g., teacher stability), and also any opportunities for increasing the capacity of district personnel.

District improvement action. One purpose to which corrective action funding could be put was to build the capacity of local districts to take action that would help turn around low-performing schools. Districts most often proposed two types of district-level improvement actions (see Table 2).

Table 2

Actions and Tally of Districts Proposing Responses to School Needs		
Proposed action	**Number of districts proposing**	**Percentage of districts proposing**
District improvement action		
Resource decisions	18	72%
Monitoring	9	36%
Instructional strategies	7	28%
Use of data	5	20%
Curriculum alignment	4	16%
Team leadership	4	16%
Instructional improvement actions		
Implement/revise academic program	15	60%
Implement/revise instructional time	10	40%
Teacher improvement actions		
Instructional strategies	21	84%
Curriculum alignment	13	52%

Principal improvement		
Instructional strategies	6	24%
Team leadership	6	24%
School organizational improvement		
Enhancing parent/community involvement	15	60%
Assist with school planning	12	48%

First, districts proposed taking the important step of reallocating resources (72%). Typically, reallocation of resources meant reassigning existing staff-development personnel, or hiring consultants to do training. In some districts, resource allocation meant hiring specific individuals for the district to address specific needs, such as data analysis, principal training, or teacher professional development. One district, for example, proposed to improve teacher recruitment by hiring a former principal to act as a liaison between the district and area universities with teacher-training programs. Second, districts proposed increasing the amount of time and frequency of district monitoring in corrective action schools (36%). Monitoring was described, for example, as having the superintendent stop into schools more often or district-level staff attending staff meetings in the schools.

Some districts did propose actions that would increase the capability of district personnel to respond to the needs of low-performing schools, but these plans were present in less than a third of the applications. For example, a few districts proposed obtaining professional development for staff developers and curriculum directors in instructional strategies (28%), and the use of data (20%). Fewer proposed training district personnel in curriculum alignment (16%) team leadership (16%), instructional planning (0%) or assessment alternatives (0%). These actions, in particular, seem to be critical for district personnel if they are to lead school efforts to improve student achievement.

Instructional programs/practices improvement. Districts commonly proposed two actions aimed at improving the instructional programs in schools (see Table 2). Districts most often proposed implementing new academic programs (e.g., Reading Recovery, Saturday Math Academy) and revising existing programs (60%). Fewer districts proposed revising curriculum in ELA and Math (24%), or implementing a test-taking curriculum (28%). Forty percent of the districts proposed reallocating the amount of time spent on particular areas of instruction (e.g., 90 min literacy blocks). None of the districts proposed providing common time for teachers to plan or revise instruction as a strategy for improving instruction.

Teacher improvement. Districts' teacher-improvement actions were centered on providing professional development in several important areas (see Table 2). The two most commonly proposed actions were providing professional development for use of specific instructional strategies (e.g., balanced literacy instruction, constructivist math instruction) (84%), and alignment of curriculum to state standards (52%). Relatively few districts proposed to provide professional development aimed at helping teachers use assessment data (28%), or to boost team leadership (12%). Mentoring (12%) and school/district supports for obtaining certification (8%) are two strategies often used to improve teacher quality and stability in a school, but these two approaches were proposed by only a few districts. This is especially striking given the number of districts identifying teacher stability as a need in low-performing schools.

Principal improvement. Taking actions intended to improve principal leadership appeared in about one-quarter of all the district applications (see Table 2). Those districts that did include it most frequently recommended training principals in instructional strategies (24%) and team leadership (24%). Training principals to use data to inform decisions (16%) and to align curriculum (16%) was mentioned less frequently. These results are somewhat surprising given the heavy emphasis on improving teachers' instructional practice, and it may indicate that districts are overlooking important strategies for turning around their low-performing schools.

Student need-based improvement. As few as 24% of districts proposed implementing or revising some type of program to respond to student needs. The actions districts proposed included establishing/strengthening ties to community-based organizations in order to provide after-school recreational opportunities for students; providing teachers with professional development aimed at reducing suspensions; and requiring the district director of student support services to meet with school guidance counselors. Although district responsiveness to student need appears modest, they were often addressed with additional academic programs, such as extended day, and linking remediation services to the regular education program (see Table 2). Still, the modest number of districts planning to address student-need issues is striking given that so many districts (68%) identified specific student characteristics as barriers to improving student performance. This figure may indicate that district leaders felt they were unable to respond directly to these needs.

School organization improvement. Finally, districts' plans for improving low-performing schools tended to focus primarily on teacher and instructional improvement (see Table 2). At the school-level, however, districts did propose taking some steps to improve parent and community involvement in schools (60%), and several districts recommended helping schools prepare improvement plans (48%). Districts did not frequently propose larger structural changes, such as reorganizing grade configurations (0%), changing from an age-based to an ability-based grouping (28%), or creating smaller class-sizes (16%).

Proposed Corrective Actions to be Taken Against Low-Performing Schools

The Improving America's Schools Act (1994) suggests eight corrective actions that may be taken by districts against schools that have failed to make adequate yearly progress for two out of three years following their initial identification for improvement. In the current applications, districts on average proposed taking slightly less than 2 actions against low-performing schools (*M* = 1.76, *SD* = 1.27). Four districts (16%) did not specify any corrective action to be taken. This may indicate that districts leaders knew of a variety of possible improvement strategies, but were unclear how these strategies "mapped onto" the corrective action options. This limited response may also indicate that district leaders did not perceive "corrective action" to be distinct from previous school improvement strategies.

District descriptions of their corrective actions. The corrective action that districts most frequently proposed was to decrease the decision-making authority of the school leaders (see Table 3). Districts operationally defined "decreased decision-making authority" in a variety of ways, but most tended to revolve around districts requiring the adoption of instructional schedules (e.g., literacy block), the adoption of a academic programs (e.g., Saturday Math) and curriculum, or mandating teacher participation in professional development activities chosen by the district. Districts also decreased decision-making authority by specifying how budgets would be structured, and by increasing oversight of a principal's decisions related to literacy and math instruction, or oversight of comprehensive improvement planning. It seemed unclear, however, whether these corrective actions represented a unique approach to improving low-performing schools.

Table 3

Corrective Actions Proposed in District Applications

Proposed corrective action	**Number of districts proposing action**	**Percentage of districts proposing action**
Decreasing decision-making authority	18	72
Authorizing student transfer	6	24
Reconstituting school staff	5	20
Creating interagency agreements	5	20
Withholding funds	4	16
Revoking schoolwide program authority	2	8
Making alternative governance arrangements	2	8
Implementing opportunity-to-learn standards and strategies	1	4

To a lesser extent, districts also proposed authorizing students to transfer out of low-performing schools, reconstituting school staff, and creating interagency agreements. The number of districts intending to allow students to transfer as a corrective action (24%) is approximately equal to the number of districts that created transfer policies in response to this funding opportunity (see next section on School Choice). This may indicate that these districts were beginning to implement School Choice in response to the current legislation.

The action of reconstituting staff typically included monitoring personnel in low-performing schools, and hiring new principals and teachers—as one district application stated—"if possible and necessary." Under the reconstitution action, districts proposed making changes to personnel roles (i.e., changing an administrative position to a teaching position), and proposed hiring new staff (e.g., an assistant principal with expertise in literacy, a new librarian). Creating interagency agreements was not typically about creating new agreements, but rather about reviewing, improving, or strengthening existing collaborations.

The four districts that proposed withholding funds (16%) tended to operationalize their actions in terms very similar to those used to described decreased decision-making (e.g., withholding funds to meet district professional development goals; taking over the budget-making process if schools were found to be fiscally irresponsible). The one district that proposed implementing opportunity-to-learn standards or strategies did not describe what proposed strategies corresponded to this corrective action, or other ways they intended to carry out the action against the school.

Overall, corrective actions proposed by districts did not seem to address the pressing issues in the schools. That is, corrective actions were primarily concerned with decision-making around professional development, program selection, and budgets despite the fact that districts most frequently expressed the need for greater stability in the teaching staff – a need that directly impacts the effectiveness of professional development, and indirectly affects the quality of instruction. Similarly, professional development undoubtedly would be concerned with specific content areas, but it is noteworthy that only one district (4%) identified "opportunity-to-learn standards" as an action to be taken against a school – an action that explicitly addresses student achievement.

School Choice Plans

The final portion of the state application required districts to describe how they would implement a school choice plan for students in low-performing schools. Fifteen districts (60%) stated that they already had pre-existing choice plans that would satisfy the requirement specified in the law. Five districts (20%) articulated plans that were in response to the legislation guidelines, and five districts (20%) reported that there was no plan for school choice, or that conditions existed which made it impossible to create and implement a school choice plan. Conditions that prevented districts from implementing a choice plan included potential receiving schools that were already overcrowded, and a lack of schools within the district that were not already identified as in need of improvement.

Sixteen districts (64%) said they could implement a school choice plan. Within those districts, there are an average of 4.88 ($SD = 2.43$) schools into which students could transfer. No district, however, specified exactly how many students could transfer into each school under the school choice plan. Nine districts (36%) reported that they could not transfer any students. Five districts (20%) had the capability to allow students to choose to attend one receiver school – hardly enough to accommodate all students who might wish to exercise school choice in even one low-performing school. Ten districts (40%) seemed to have the capability of allowing students to choose to attend between two and ten schools, but again the number of choice students each school could accommodate was not specified. Only one district, which had a small number of low-performing schools, appeared to have the capacity to allow all students in a low-performing school to exercise a choice option.

Discussion

The special appropriation of $134 million in FY 2000 was intended to strengthen school and district accountability for student performance results. One hundred percent of the funding was directed to local education agencies for the purpose of school improvement, including taking corrective action against historically low-performing schools and implementing intra-district school choice programs. An important provision of this appropriation was that these funds could be used to enhance the capacity of local education agencies to carry out its obligations to improve low-performing schools (USED, 2000).

This analysis is particularly timely given the current reauthorization of ESEA. The reauthorized bill continues to require districts to take corrective action, and to provide for intra-district choice once a school has been identified for improvement, but it also places even greater responsibility on districts for improving the lowest performing schools. The greater expectations for effective district action are seen in at least two ways. First, the reauthorized bill reduces the amount of time that elapses between a district identifying a school for improvement and taking corrective action. Second, one year after a district has taken corrective action, the school must make its adequate yearly progress goal, or be subject to an alternative governance agreement (e.g., reopening as a charter school, replacing school staff, contract with a private management company). Both of these represent changes that require district leaders to intervene sooner and to act with greater effectiveness than ever before. This descriptive analysis of NYC districts' proposed corrective actions offers some indication of the challenges and pitfalls school leaders will likely face as they attempt to improve their schools.

School Need and District Response

The needs most often identified by districts were the lack of teacher stability or staffing difficulties in the low-performing schools, teachers' use of ineffective instructional strategies, and student need (e.g., poverty, mobility, limited literacy experiences, limited English proficiency, and special education). In response to school needs, districts most often proposed more professional development for teachers in instruction and curriculum, and proposed to reallocate existing district resources to provide professional development and monitor schools. Although these strategies may be effective, several other important improvement strategies were ignored by a large proportion of districts, including improving principal leadership and improving district capacity to assist low-performing schools.

In addition, there appears to be a significant misalignment among school needs, district actions, and effective reform strategies. For example, instructional leadership of principals may be an essential component of improving low-performing schools (e.g., Berends, et al., 2001; Petersen, 1999; Institute for Educational Leadership, 2001; Elmore, 2000), yet principal improvements were proposed in only one-quarter of the districts' applications.

It is also disconcerting that districts perceive the causes of low-performance (e.g., poor instructional strategies) and the strategies for addressing it (e.g., professional development for teachers) to lay squarely within the control of teachers, while at the same time, teacher leadership and time for teachers to collaborate is not perceived to be a need in many districts. It is ironic that districts expect teachers to improve their instructional practice, receive training and adopt new practices, but then provide no new instructional leadership at the district and building level, or time for teacher collaboration. Given the high rate of teacher turnover reported by the districts and by the entire city (Brumberg, 2000), it seems doubtful that expenditures for more teacher professional development and for consultants will have the desired effect on instruction or stem the flow of personnel.

More important from a district perspective, the corrective actions that were proposed also seemed to ignore some important consequences that would follow such actions. The corrective action districts most often proposed taking against low-performing schools was to decrease the decision-making authority of the school leader. Decreasing decision-making at the school level may be an appropriate response given the poor performance of many of the schools. Yet districts do not seem to be aware of the need to improve their own capability. The applications indicated that districts were proposing to take over greater decision-making related to the implementation of instructional programs, adoption of curriculum, teachers' professional development, and to increase oversight of principals. These actions, although potentially effective, seem to be less likely to succeed due to the fact that districts were taking on greater responsibility for school-level orchestration while at the same time not addressing the capacity-needs of district personnel.

If districts are to have a chance at turning around the corrective action schools, it is important for district-level personnel to be well-trained in the important areas of instruction, instructional leadership, assessment and use of data, parent involvement, and communication. Apparently, district leaders felt confident in their ability to shoulder these responsibilities. A recent report on the district-role in school improvement, however, suggests otherwise (U. S. Education Department, 2001).

School Choice Plans

The effectiveness of the school choice strategy for improving low-performing schools rests upon the ability of parents and students to exercise their option to escape low-performing schools. Based upon the summary of district applications, it seems this strategy is likely to be ineffective in many of the applying districts. Eighty percent of the districts applying for the grant had or were implementing an intra-district choice plan. Unfortunately, factors such as overcrowding and too many low-performing schools left far fewer districts actually able to implement the choice plan. Of those implementing, only one district reported having the capability to allow large numbers of students to choose another, better-performing school. As was the case with inter-district choice in New York City and Milwaukee, this strategy seems unlikely to bring competition to bear on low-performing schools because very few parents and students could actually exercise choice (Teske, et al., 2000).

Conclusion

Overall, the patterns identified by this analysis suggest that districts are on the right track for improving low-performing schools by focusing on instructional quality. This analysis also suggests that this improvement strategy is likely to be ineffective in many districts where superintendents do not arrange conditions to focus on the core technology of schools (e.g., distributing learning leadership, principal training, teacher time to learn new strategies).

This analysis also suggests that intra-district transfer choice has little chance to improve schools in districts with a high incidence of low-performing schools. The requirement to exclude low-performing schools from choice options could be lifted to increase the likelihood that competitive forces be brought to bear on schools as was the case in District 4 and District 2. It is unclear, though, what effect this move would have on improving schools absent any other efforts that focus on instruction and learning.

Finally, it seems there is relatively little that is unique to the corrective actions described in these applications. Many of the actions districts proposed (e.g., professional development, program initiatives) were very similar to those already enacted by districts attempting to improve low-performing schools. The one feature that seems to distinguish corrective action from others is the control, authority, and responsibility placed upon the district. The districts making these applications, however, seemed to make few plans that reflected this new, more intense leadership role.

References

Berends, M., Kirby, S. N., Naftel, S., & McKelvey, C. (2001). *Implementation and performance in New American Schools*. Washington, DC: RAND Corporation.

Brumberg, S. F. (2000). The teacher crisis and educational standards. In D. Ravitch & J. P. Viteritti (Eds.), *Lessons from New York City schools* (pp. 141-165). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Elmore, R. F. (2000). *Building a new structure for school leadership*. Washington, DC: Albert Schanker Institute.

Goldhaber, D. D. (1999). School choice: An examination of the empirical evidence on achievement, parental decision making, and equity. *Educational Researcher, 28*, 16-25.

Hart, P. D., & Teeter, R. M. (2001). *A measured response: Americans speak on education reform*. Princeton, NJ: Educational Testing Service [Available on-line: http://www.ets.org/aboutets/measure.html].

Hatch, T. (2001). It takes capacity to build capacity. *Education Week, 20*, 44, 47. Available on-line: http://www.edweek.org.

Institute for Educational Leadership (2001, February). *Leadership for student learning: Restructuring school district leadership*. (ISBN 0-937846-18 –X). Washington, DC: Author.

Improving America's Schools Act 1994

Myers, D., Peterson, P., Mayer, D., Chou, J., & Howell, W. G. (2000). *School choice in New York City after two years: An evaluation of the School Choice Scholarship Program – An interim report*. Washington, DC: Mathematica Policy Research (ED 446193).

Petersen, G. J. (1999). Demonstrated acts of instructional leaders: An examination of five California superintendents. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 7* (18). Available on-line: http://epas.asu.edu/epaa/v7n18.html.

Spillane, J. P., Halverson, R., & Diamond, J. B. (2001). Investigating school leadership practice: A distributed perspective. *Educational Researcher, 30*, 23-28.

Teske, P., Schneider, M., Roch, C., & Marschall, M. (2000). Public school choice: A status report. In D. Ravitch & J. P. Viteritti (Eds.), *Lessons from New York City schools* (pp. 313-338). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

U. S. Department of Education (2001, January). *School improvement report: Executive order on actions for turning around low-performing schools*. Washington, DC: Office of Elementary and Secondary Education.

U. S. Department of Education (2000). *Guidance on the $134 million fiscal year 2000 appropriation for school improvement*. Washington, DC: Office of Elementary and Secondary Education.

Youngs, P. (2001). District and state policy influences on professional development and school capacity. *Educational Policy, 15*, 278-301.

About the Authors

Doug Hamman
College of Education
Texas Tech University
Division of Curriculum and Instruction
PO Box 41071
Lubbock, Texas 79410

E-mail: doug.hamman@ttu.edu

Doug Hamman is currently an Assistant Professor in the College of Education at Texas Tech University in Lubbock, Texas. His research interests include teacher education, cognitive strategies instruction, and school improvement strategies. At the time this article was written, he was working as a Research Associate at RMC Research Corporation in Portsmouth, New Hampshire.

Allen Schenck
Senior Research Associate
RMC Research Corporation
1000 Market Street
Portsmouth, NH 03801

Email: aschenck@rmcres.com

Allen Schenck is a Senior Research Associate at RMC Research Corporation in Portsmouth, New Hampshire. He has contributed to educational and social program research and evaluation in a variety of ways-through research design, survey methodology, achievement testing and other forms of assessment, statistical analysis, and data management-and from several perspectives-conducting research and evaluation studies, providing training and assistance in evaluation methods, and advising policy makers in the use of evaluation and accountability systems. Most of his experience has been with programs designed to assist students in public schools who find it difficult to succeed academically.

Appendix A

Section 1116 of Title 1 in the Improving America's Schools Act (1994)

Sec. 1116. ASSESSMENT AND LOCAL EDUCATIONAL AGENCY AND SCHOOL IMPROVEMENT

- CORRECTIVE ACTION. – (A) … local education agency may take corrective action at any time against a school that has been identified under paragraph (1) but, during the third year following identification under paragraph (1), shall take such action against any school that still fails to make adequate progress.
- (i) Corrective actions are those, consistent with State & local law, determined and made public and disseminated by the local education agency, which may include –
- withholding funds;
- interagency collaborative agreements between the school and other public agencies to provide health, counseling, and other social services needed to remove barriers to learning;
- revoking authority for a school to operate a schoolwide program;
- decreasing decision-making authority at the school level;
- making alternative governance arrangements such as the creation of a public charter school;
- reconstituting the school staff
- authorizing students to transfer, including transportation costs, to other public schools served by the local educational agency; and
- implementing opportunity-to-learn standards or strategies developed by such State under the Goals 2000: Educate America Act.

Appendix B

Items Analyzed from New York City Application for 2000-2001 Title 1 Improvement and Choice Funds

Needs Identification

- Research has shown that there are often organizational or systemic factors that negatively impact progress in low performing schools. Describe the factors affecting student achievement in Title 1 Corrective Action Schools. Such factors might include district policies and procedures, budgets and resource allocation, technical assistance, etc.
- What were the results of the needs assessment? Describe the priority areas that emerged from the needs assessment that need to be addressed through the application amendment.

District Action

- Explain how the district-level organization, structure, and comprehensive plans will support a focused district intervention to assist identified schools in improving achievement in English language arts and/or mathematics. Where such support is not already in place, describe how district capacity will be built and district level changes made under this grant to better provide support to Title 1 Corrective Action Schools.
- Describe the corrective action steps the district will take for identified Title 1 Corrective Action Schools as required in IASA, Section 1116 (c).

Public School Choice

- List the schools not identified for SURR, Title 1 Corrective Action, and Title 1 School Improvement.
- Does the district have an existing policy allowing for public school choice?
-
    - If yes, please attach and explain how the policy will be used to meet the school choice provision of this amendment. Include a timeline for implementation under this amendment.
    - If the district does not have an existing transfer/choice policy, describe how it will develop and implement a program of public school choice. Include how the district will provide all students in schools identified for SURR, Title 1 Corrective Action, and Title 1 School Improvement, with an option to transfer to a public school within the local education agency, including public charter schools, that have not been identified. Include a timeline under this amendment.
    - If the district lacks capacity to provide all students with an option to transfer to non-identified schools, describe the district's equitable student selection criteria that will provide a transfer option to as many students as possible.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

This article has been retrieved 583 times since October 20, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 46 **October 20, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Senior School Board Officials' Perceptions of a National Achievement Assessment Program

Marielle Simon
Renée Forgette-Giroux
University of Ottawa

Citation: Simon, M. & Forgette-Giroux, R. (2002, October 20). Senior school board officials' perceptions of a national achievement assessment program, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(46). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n46.html.

Abstract

The *School Achievement Indicators Program (SAIP)* has been collecting data across Canada on 13- and 16-year-old student achievement in mathematics, in science, and in reading and writing since 1993. In 1999, it completed its second assessment cycle and was reviewed in Spring 2000. The review design included a survey of officials from all the school boards/districts that participated in the science assessment program held in 1999. The results of this study show that this stakeholder views as the most pressing issue for SAIP to succeed in its mandate, the need for development in four areas: a) Increased teacher and student motivation to participate wholeheartedly in the program; b) Effective dissemination options; c) Leadership through innovation in teaching and in assessment practices despite high accountability orientation; and d) Cost-effective, yet rigorous means of providing both snapshot information and longitudinal means of comparisons. Although universally appealing, such approaches have yet to be supported by sound educational theory and methodology.

Since 1993, the *School Achievement Indicators Program (SAIP)*, under the responsibility of the Council of Ministers of Education, Canada (CMEC), has been collecting data across Canada regarding 13- and 16-year-old student achievement in Mathematics, in Science, and in Reading and Writing. In 1999, it completed its second assessment cycle and was reviewed in Spring 2000. The review had three objectives: a) To determine the degree to which the CMEC had succeeded in implementing the recommendations adopted from the review of the first round of assessments (Crocker, 1997); b) To measure the extent to which SAIP's objectives, set at the beginning of the second cycle, had been attained; and c) To formulate specific recommendations about the SAIP's aims, operations, and uses. To achieve these objectives, the review design included various data collection approaches, one of which was an investigation of the perceptions of all the school boards across Canada that participated in the 1999 science assessment, toward the national assessment program. The purpose of this paper is to report the results of this survey in order to provide researchers and policymakers with a better insight into the general interests, particular views, and specific needs of one of the most important stakeholders in large-scale educational assessment programs.

As a large-scale assessment program, SAIP is similar to the National Educational Assessment Program (NAEP), conducted in the United States. Both are national, cyclical programs, administered across regions (states or provinces/territories). In both countries, these regions have sole jurisdictional rights over education. Like NAEP, SAIP is designed to complement existing assessments in each province and territory. It is essentially a standards-

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

based program focussing on assessment of content and ability via a mixture of multiple-choice, constructed response, or short hand-on performance tasks. The program also consists of student, teacher, and school administrator questionnaires intended to provide contextual data. Testing usually occurs in May and the final report is made available a year later.

As mentioned above, SAIP is governed by the Council of ministers of education, Canada. The CMEC 's role in the SAIP essentially combines that of the United States National Centre for Education Statistics (NCES), responsible for NAEP's operation and technical aspects, and the National Assessment Governing Board (NAGB), mandated to select the subject areas to be assessed and their content framework. In Canada, the CMEC also coordinates national participation to other large-scale international testing programs such as the Program for International Student Achievement, run by the Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD) and the Third International Mathematics and Science Study (TIMSS) governed by the International Association for the Evaluation of Educational Achievement (IEA). Not all the Canadian jurisdictions participate in the various international programs. For a more detailed look at the general CMEC operations, SAIP's sampling techniques, and the nature of the results, see for example the most recent SAIP Report (CMEC, 2000) or the CMEC WEB site. (Note 1)

SAIP was initially established to meet the following three objectives: a) To set educational priorities and plan improvements to curricula; b) To provide the best education to all young Canadians; and c) To report on certain indicators to the Canadian public. Despite these noble goals, SAIP's practices and orientations are geared principally towards accountability and overall instructional enhancement rather than improving local teaching, learning, and assessment practices. In 1999, all thirteen Canadian jurisdictions, namely the ten provinces and the three territories, participated in the Science assessment program. A random sample of students was drawn from each of the participating jurisdictions and, within some of these, students were also sampled by linguistic groups (English and French). The next four sections respectively present the framework, the methodology, the results, and a discussion of the investigation component of the program review.

Framework

The theoretical framework for the investigation evolved first from the examination of three documents: The call for proposals initiated by the Council of Ministers of Education, Canada, the report on the review of SAIP's first cycle (Crocker, 1997), and the official SAIP memorandum of understanding between the Human Resources and Development, Canada and CMEC, 1999). Second, various documents on general program reviews were consulted, such as the *Standards for Evaluations of Educational Programs, Projects, and Materials*, (Joint Committee on Standards for Educational Evaluations, 2nd Ed., 1999). This also included works on: a) The purpose of a program evaluation (Wilde & Sockey, 1995), b) The role of program reviews (Chelimsky & Shadish, 1997), c) The use of indicators (Posavac & Carey, 1997; Shavelson, McDonnell & Oakes, 1991a, 1991b), and d) The methodological approaches to program evaluations (Boulmetis & Dutwin, 1999; Popham, 1999). Third, the literature review for this study considered other actual systematic evaluations of large-scale assessment programs, related models, or proposals (Crooks, 1996; Madaus & Pullin, 2000; Ryan, 2002; Shepard, 1977). Finally, the previous experiences of this study's authors in the field of program evaluation also contributed to shaping the framework of the review of SAIP's second cycle (Cousins & Simon, 1993; Macdonell, A., Forgette-Giroux, R., Schmidt, S., Mougeot, Y, & Levesque, J., 1999). This led to the development of a framework that essentially consisted of five general areas of questioning on SAIP: a) Nature and position among other assessment initiatives, b) Goals and objectives, c) Operations, d) Design, and e) Impact. The nature and position focussed on the role, function, relationship, differences, similarities, and linkages between SAIP and other large-scale assessment programs. The appropriateness of SAIP's objectives and the identification of possible barriers to attaining these objectives concerned the second theme. SAIP's operations dealt with sampling, standard-setting, grading, and reporting procedures currently in place to meet the stated objectives, whereas validity, reliability, and questions that focussed specifically on content and format, nature of data collected, and motivational issues, all served to study SAIP's design qualities. Finally, its impact was examined through questions on significance, perceptions, values, and overall influence of SAIP's results on various educational and public settings.

Methods

The investigation described here represents only one component of the methodological design for the review and targets only one group of stakeholders: School boards (districts or councils) officials. Interviews with jurisdictional coordinators or directors were also conducted for the review along with in-depth content analyses of various relevant documents. These various components enabled the triangulation of the data that were ultimately reported in an aggregated format. The following sections present the subjects, instruments and research design of the survey component of the SAIP review.

Subjects

All school boards or districts across Canada with one or more schools that participated in the 1999 Science assessment program were contacted and invited to participate in the investigation. This meant reaching a total of 412 school boards from 19 jurisdictions: Ten provinces and three territories, with six of these also broken down into two linguistic sub-populations at the time of the assessment. Only one member of each board, a senior official, was asked to participate. This official could be a Director of Education, a Superintendent of Education, a designated SAIP school Official, a local Coordinator or Liaison person, a Board Consultant, or the Principal of a school that was involved in the 1999 SAIP assessment. In some areas, the Director of Education is the highest ranking official while in others it is the Superintendent of Education. When both are found within a school board, the Director of Education usually has priority.

Instrument

A written questionnaire was developed based on the framework's five themes. A first draft was submitted for validation to two experts familiar with SAIP, one French-speaking and one English-speaking. Their task was to determine the relevancy, comprehensiveness, and linguistic equivalence of the questionnaire. The final version included seven general information questions and six attitudinal questions with 73 sub-questions. Twelve questions offered multiple options while two were open-ended although all questions provided space for additional comments. The open-ended question # 13, for example, asked "What suggestions would you offer regarding SAIP and its various components in order that your school board or district gives it high priority among all assessment initiatives? Of particular interest however were questions 9 and 10. Question 9 asked :"To what extent do you agree with the following *actual* SAIP parameters?", while Question 10 read as: "To what extent do you agree with the following *proposed*SAIP parameters?" The proposed parameters emerged from comments made by the SAIP's designated jurisdictional coordinators who had previously participated in the semi-structured interviews, from the recommendations that resulted from the review of SAIP's first cycle, and from their relevance with respect to general school boards' interest and needs.

Procedure

The questionnaires were sent to the top administrator of each of the 412 school boards. The senior officials were instructed to fill out the questionnaire themselves or to forward it to someone from the school board that had been actively involved in the 1999 science assessment. The questionnaires were distributed during the last week of May 2000 with specific written instructions to return the completed questionnaires in a self-addressed envelope by June 30, 2000. Two sets of follow-up telephone calls were made by a superintendent to selected school boards from each of the jurisdictions and their sub-population in order to achieve a maximum rate of return by all sampled populations. The first was conducted in the second week of June 2000 to approximately half of the boards within each jurisdiction to see whether they had received the questionnaires. The next series of calls were made in August to approximately twenty randomly selected boards from each jurisdiction that had a return rate below 30 % by the end of July.

Results

In all, 147 questionnaires were completed and returned, yielding an overall response rate of 36%. Of the 19 populations, four had all their participating schools in a single school board. Two of these four boards returned the completed questionnaire. Closer examination of the distribution of responses by jurisdictions reveals that the nine "smaller" jurisdictions and minority groups, that is those that had from two to 12 school boards, yielded response rates varying from 33% to 100 %, with a mean of 59% and median of 54%. The six "larger" jurisdictions, namely those with over 12 school boards (actually between 22 to 62), gave response rates varying from 27% to 36 %, with a mean of 32 % and a median of 33%. The rate of response for the 15 jurisdictions with two or more school boards therefore ranged from 27% to 100%, with an average of 48% and a median of 46%. It can also be reasonably stated that respondents were drawn from both small and large school boards and districts, from both remote and rural settings, from both central and urban areas, and from both the majority and minority linguistic groups.

Most questionnaires (80%) were completed by Directors of education, Superintendents or Board consultants. Eighty-six percent of respondents said they were more or less familiar with SAIP or knew it well. Respondents participated mainly in the coordination of the study, the test administration, and the communication of results. Although most questions included a four-point rating scale, dichotomized results (e.g. totally agree and agree versus more or less agree with disagree) are reported here with respect to each of the five themes.

Nature

The specific information on this topic was provided mainly in the two open-ended questions. Respondents generally recognize that SAIP provides a valuable index from a national perspective but state that it should distinguish itself from international and provincial initiatives by: a) Highlighting cross-curricular competencies if sampling remains age-based; b) Introducing innovative teaching, learning, and assessment approaches that are applicable to the classroom; and c) Adopting a diagnostic and interpretative approach to contextual and achievement data. Approximately 70 % of respondents also suggest that secondary analyses be performed on the data collected.

Goals

Although indicating being familiar with SAIP, three quarters of respondents (75 %) also admit that they are somewhat or not very aware of its stated goals and objectives. With respect to the appropriateness of the objectives, they generally suggest the need for an objective that would implicate some form of comparison of results. The rank order of the percentage of respondents in agreement with the various types of comparisons of results is presented in Table 1.

Table 1
Rank Order of Percentages of Respondents in Agreement with Types of Comparisons of Results

Longitudinal comparisons from one assessment cycle to next	87%
With national results (averages)	81%
With national expectations (standards)	65%
Between the two age groups (13 and 16)	64%
With local expectations	50%
Among jurisdiction results	44%

Table 1 shows support from school board officials for comparison of data from one assessment cycle to the next and with the national averages.

Operations

Results under operations are reported in terms of SAIP's general administrative, sampling, expectation/standard-setting, scoring, and reporting procedures. Eighty-nine percent (89 %) of respondents agree with the statement that SAIP meets the given time-lines and 67% believe that SAIP is relatively easy to administer. It is interesting to note that only 51 % of the respondents favour the month of May as the best time for test administration, 68 % disagree with conducting these in February or March, and 77 % disagree with a Fall administration, thus failing to achieve a consensus on the best time of year for administrating the various assessment programs. Three quarters of respondents favor sampling of 13- and 16-year-old students rather than sampling grades. Two thirds agree with comparisons of results with expectations or standards and generally approve of the five-point rating approach to scoring. Finally, nearly 70 % of respondents support the idea of disseminating some form of school board, school, or individual-based results for motivational purposes.

Design

Questions on SAIP's design asked for level of agreement with the assessment's focus on collecting disciplinary and contextual data as well as from theoretical and practical aspects of achievement data gathering techniques within Mathematics and Science. They also looked at motivational issues and perceptions around assessment cycles. Results show that 77 % of respondents agree with the collection of contextual data. Most concur with SAIP's mandate to conduct assessments in Mathematics, in Science, and in Reading and Writing and over 85 % favor both the theoretical and practical components of the science and mathematics assessments. However, 66 % of the respondents state that SAIP does not sufficiently encourage or motivate students to give their optimal performance, thus addressing validity and reliability concerns. Finally, nearly 80 % of respondents support the three-year assessment cycle within a discipline.

Impact

Eighty three percent (83 %) of the respondents believe that the program has little or no positive impact on assessment practices in the classroom and approximately three quarter of respondents say that SAIP has little positive influence on setting priorities in the various disciplines assessed, on curricula, on public perception of the quality of education, on research initiatives, and on teaching practices. Approximately 85 % of respondents, however, would recommend those school boards that have not yet participated to the various SAIP programs to do so.

Discussion and Conclusion

Despite the overall low response rate obtained in this study, the results are telling. With one exception, the higher response rates are provided by those jurisdictions or minority populations with less than 12 school boards. Although many jurisdictions take part in other large-scale assessment program such as TIMSS and PISA, most respondents indicate general support for the SAIP because it is the only national long-term assessment program in which all thirteen educational jurisdictions and respective linguistic sub-populations participate. They also appreciate the complementarity of SAIP's results to those obtained through regional and other international assessment programs. Respondents stress, however, that SAIP should be forward looking and be more than a simple indicator system serving accountability purposes. Their responses lead toward interesting suggestions for each of the five themes.

These are discussed in the following sections.

Nature, role, and position

With respect to the nature, role, and position of SAIP, the respondents value the nationally representative and continuing aspects of SAIP. Given that participation is voluntary, however, it becomes important that SAIP continues to be attractive and relevant to this stakeholder, particularly to those school boards that have sufficient resources to implement their own assessment program or to participate in most international ones. In that sense, SAIP should consider three suggestions offered by the school boards. First, they propose that if SAIP remains an age-based program as opposed to grade-based, then it should go beyond the assessment of disciplinary contents and basic skills in order to focus on socially relevant general competencies such as critical thinking, information management, speaking skills, and on attitudes such as civic values, self-awareness, self-esteem, and student engagement (Jones, 2001). Major organizations, such as the IEA and the OECD, already provide leadership in the assessment of such competencies via their own large-scale programs. At the onset, this option may appear to be duplicating efforts and resources given that many jurisdictions also participate in these major international assessment programs but, so far, SAIP has had the advantage of involving all jurisdictions and of being better able to respond to national educational concerns.

Second, as mentioned above, the respondents wish to see SAIP as more than an indicator program, one that would offer specific perspectives for adjustment and intervention with respect to setting educational priorities, targeting curricular improvements, highlighting best teaching strategies, and fostering innovative assessment practices. This push for a shift from an indicator system, i.e., one that provides information that can be used to improve education, to a monitoring one, in other words, one that further analyses and interprets key contextual and achievement data in order to propose prescriptive feedback, stems largely from those smaller jurisdictions with scarce resources. The resulting feedback could subsequently translate into the introduction of innovative teaching, learning, and assessment approaches that are applicable to the classroom. This last statement relates to the respondents' third request.

These three requests contributed to the formulation of two specific recommendations in the review: a) That the concept of achievement indicator be broaden to include assessment of general competencies as defined by the pan-Canadian public and b) That SAIP be assigned a diagnostic function with interpretation of the most obvious links between contextual data and achievement (Forgette-Giroux & Simon, 2000). These recommendations are rather demanding. As with other large-scale studies, SAIP must re-examine it priorities with respect to accountability versus instructional orientations toward educational improvement (Popham, 1999) and eventually aim at establishing a balance between the two goals. So far SAIP has been mainly oriented toward the need for greater accountability. Moreover, it must rely on sufficiently sound theory or design to efficiently explore any relationships among background variables and achievement, to claim causal inferences or to explain why the comparison of certain groups yields different results (Bechger, van den Wittenboer, Hox, & De Glopper, 1999).

Goals and objectives

Although SAIP's present objectives are ambitious, universal, and aim at continually moving targets, thus ensuring their enduring validity, respondents wish to add another objective concerning the specific comparison of results from one assessment cycle to the next and with national data. This implies that SAIP should be given the dual goal of providing a snapshot of current achievement levels across jurisdictions and of measuring progress over time. However, in addition to the lack of proper theory to explain comparative differences in achievement as mentioned above, such an objective can also create tensions such as those experience throughout NAEP's history, because a single assessment system cannot adequately serve such diverse purposes, each with its own set of assumptions, processes, and consequences (Linn, 2000). For example, longitudinal programs must find ways to rely on stable and reusable instruments while remaining fully aligned with national standards, actual curriculum contents, and evolving theories. In order to meet these challenges, NAEP presently operates two systems, the Main NAEP for longitudinal measures, and the State NAEP for cross-state comparisons. A recent NAEP review, however, has called for streamlining and for merging some aspects of the two programs (Pellegrino, Jones & Mitchell, 1999). If the CMEC decided to stress pan-Canadian longitudinal comparisons from one cycle to the next and comparisons with national averages, then such a decision would have major consequences on the entire program's structure and development (Bechger, et al., 1999). SAIP is currently not designed to meet such goals and does not have the resources to conduct parallel systems. As with all large-scale studies of achievement, if SAIP decided to opt for the comparative route, then it would have to meet at least three conditions to ensure the comparative validity of its results: Construct equivalence, scale equivalence, and measurement equivalence (Bechger, et al., 1999). So far, these equivalencies are unattainable mainly because the theoretical frameworks underlying the most universally accepted competencies such as reading, problem solving, and scientific reasoning are constantly evolving, performance scores across time and groups are interpreted using arbitrary scales, and scale equivalence is greatly hampered by issues such as test translation. Perhaps the only way out at the present time is to document and make all related information as comprehensive and transparent as possible in order to arrive at the most valid interpretations when comparing results.

Operations

Respondents generally agree with the existing parameters around SAIP's administrative, sampling, expectation/standard setting, scoring, and reporting procedures. Some of their comments, however, stress greater participation of various school board personnel in all stages of SAIP's assessment programs. Similar statements are expressed in scholarly papers such as that of Hunter and Gambell (2000), and with respect to other large-scale studies such as New Zealand's National Assessment Monitoring Project (NEMP) (Flockton & Crooks, 1997). They claim greater empowerment and satisfaction by teachers and by other school board members who participate in substantial and independent training sessions and in the actual implementation of various aspects of the assessment program. Moreover, respondents point toward operational changes that consider greater teacher involvement and teacher input. As a result, the SAIP review offered a recommendation stating that CMEC implement, for example, a two-step standard-setting process in which the first series of expectations be formulated principally by teacher representatives.

Another operational issue that has not been overtly stated by the respondents but that was raised indirectly through their responses is the debate over grade- or age-based sampling. Although age-based sampling is seen as a more probabilistic in theory than a grade-based approach, in practice, it is not always respected. Local SAIP coordinators experience difficulty in implementing the recommended student sampling process at the school level (Forgette-Giroux & Simon, 2000). This is probably due to the fact that practitioners tend to view a classroom as a unit and thus see age-based sampling as causing significant disruptions to the class. As a result, student sampling is not done uniformly because of a conscious or unconscious need to minimize those perceived disadvantages. Although it is current knowledge that, as a result, most schools therefore select students based on their own criteria, unfortunately these practices are not always documented. School sampling is also a problem in jurisdictions with smaller populations because of over-sampling, which means that the same schools participate repeatedly in large-scale programs, again seen by many practitioners as causing significant disturbance.

Design

This section dealt with the format, content, and measurement qualities of the assessments. Sound decisions about policies and the allocation of resources depend on quality data. Although a significant number of respondents support most existing design parameters, they acknowledge the need for greater willingness by teachers and students to fully engage in the program in order to increase the validity of the data. Despite the respondents' understanding that the program is not suitable to offer school-based or individual achievement results, their comments point toward the need to publish some type of school-based information, such as thematic reports, that would highlight current exemplary assessment practices. Increased teacher participation and support without added stress, time, and effort are also seen as a means for attracting teachers to further embrace the process and to encourage their students to provide optimal performances.

To that effect, the SAIP's review thus recommended the exploration of incorporating local assessment practices within the current SAIP design. This give-and-take approach is expected to further empower and meet the needs and satisfaction of participating teachers. However, this is easier said than done and the issue of motivation has been raised in other large-scale studies (Hattie, Jaeger, & Bond, 1999; Lane & Stone, 2002; Wilson, 1999). Within the SAIP's context, external motivation, i.e. students are motivated if teachers are motivated, plays an important role. Offering pizza to participating students, as several jurisdictions do, is not enough to entice students to invest wholeheartedly in the assessment. The debate around greater teacher and student involvement leads to several meaningful research questions such as: Can such a low-stakes program provide sufficient relevant information to schools to attract teachers and their students to such assessment programs? To what extent would the incorporation of innovative classroom-friendly assessment practices of socially relevant competencies entice teachers and their students to fully collaborate? What are some of the most successful practices to motivate students and their teachers to provide optimal performances within age-based sampling programs? What type of feedback would promote greater participation by the teachers and their students?

Significance

In terms of impact, the data indicate that a large proportion of respondents believe that SAIP has little or no influence on various educational contexts at a local level. In that respect, CMEC has not succeeded in implementing some of the recommendations from the first SAIP review, particularly those addressing a) better dissemination of results at local level, b) increased SAIP visibility, and c) greater ownership of SAIP's objectives by school-board administrators. This implies a definite need to develop an awareness-building plan that aims specifically at school-based stakeholders. Such an issue can be addressed through various approaches, namely: a) Elaboration of reports for different audiences, b) Publication of clear and pertinent frameworks that reflect the most recent theories, research, and practice (e.g., Campbell, Kelley, Mullis, Martin & Sainsbury, 2001; College Board, 1999; CCSSO, 1999a, 1999b; Flockton & Crooks, 1997), c) Release of actual and practice items and tasks, along with their respective scoring guides to serve a innovative practices (e.g., Robitaille, Beaton & Plomp, 2000), d) Development of a web site that is continually upgraded and maintained, e) Support for secondary data analysis studies, and f) Linkages of SAIP results with those from provincial and international assessment programs. NAEP, TIMSS, and PIRLS have been known for their sustained effort to inform their various stakeholders and audiences in a timely fashion and through a variety of reports. NAEP, for example, publishes the following: *Report cards, Highlights reports, Instructional reports, State reports, Technical reports, Cross-state reports, Trend reports, Focussed reports*, and *Service reports*, and its dissemination process is continually examined to improve the usefulness of these various reporting formats (Horkay, 1999). The review of SAIP's second cycle has led to the formulation of several recommendations to that effect, particularly with respect to the release of sound and clearly articulated frameworks, exemplary items and scoring guides, and secondary analyses of relationships among contextual and achievement data.

Many of the jurisdictions that participate in SAIP also join other international large-scale assessment programs and most large populations, defined in terms of number of school boards or districts, implement their own. Eleven Canadian jurisdictions took part in the last TIMSS-R assessment and were involved in the PISA, 2000 program. The survey did not question the practitioners on SAIP's merits in relation to alternative programs because of the jurisdictions' varying degree of involvement in these. However, such a question was formally asked to each jurisdictional coordinator or representative. Their answers generally indicated that these programs provide valuable complementary data but they do not have a confirmed continuous cyclical plan and tend to provide a perspective that is more or less detached from the national educational concerns. With its planned long-term assessment cycles, SAIP can carve out an enviable and enduring place among large-scale evaluations by considering the following three mandates: a) Focussing on cross-curricular competencies that are valued by the Canadian public, b) Adopting a diagnostic function aimed at offering innovative perspectives for adjustment and intervention in educational priorities, in curricula, and in teaching, assessment and learning strategies, and c) Increasing its usefulness toward the smaller size jurisdictions or minority populations.

In conclusion, this study's objective was to report the voice of one major stakeholder: The school boards. For a variety of reasons, such as the timing of the investigation, a major overhaul of the educational system, a considerable employment turnover, and responsibility overload, fewer respondents than anticipated completed the survey questionnaire. Nevertheless, this voice is a fundamental one to which any large-scale program should pay particular attention given its frontline position. In other words, it is the one that provides the raw data. In future reviews of large-scale assessment programs, this stakeholder should therefore be consulted through methodologies offering further in-depth and relevant prompting of some of the major concerns expressed in this study. This is especially true if the instructional enhancement is as much a priority as is educational accountability (Popham, 1999). Such methodological approaches could perhaps include focus group sessions in which directors, superintendents, principals, local coordinators, board consultants, and teachers would share and confront their views regarding those aspects of the assessment programs that have the most impact on them (Haertel, 2002). As this study results show, the most pressing issues to be debated would likely include the following: a) Increase teacher and student motivation to participate wholeheartedly in the process, b) Develop effective dissemination options, c) Identify ways to ensure that the assessment program can continue to provide leadership through innovation in teaching and in assessment practices, and d) Finding cost-effective, yet rigorous means of simultaneously providing snapshot information and longitudinal means of comparisons. Although universally appealing, such approaches have yet to be supported by sound educational theory and methodology.

Finally, despite the fact that a large proportion of respondents in this study viewed SAIP as having little impact on various educational contexts and were more or less aware of its objectives, most indicated that they would recommend other school boards to participate in SAIP. It appears that for many, SAIP has effectively carved out an important place for itself among large-scale assessment programs because of its pan-Canadian nature, its capacity to involve all jurisdictions, and its ability to respect many of the technical requirements of such initiatives (Forgette-Giroux & Simon, 2000). Given the voluntary aspect of this participation and the importance of gathering valid data, however, SAIP should invest in maintaining its leadership role by raising its instructional priority, by increasing its visibility, and by inspiring local policymakers, administrators, teachers, and students through attractive and meaningful ways.

Acknowledgement

The findings reported in this paper are part of a review funded by the Council of Ministers of Education, Canada (CMEC) and are published with the written permission of the CMEC. The opinions expressed in this paper however do not necessarily reflect the position or policies of the CMEC.

Notes

1. http://www.CMEC.ca

References

Bechger, T.M., van den Wittenboer, G., Hox, J. J., & De Glopper, C. (1999). The validity of comparative educational studies. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 12*(3), 18-26.

Boulmetis, J., & Dutwin, P. (1999). *The ABCs of evaluation: Timeless techniques for program and project managers.* Windsor Ontario: Jossey-Bass Publishers.

Campbell, J. R., Kelly, D. L., Mullis, J. V. S., Martin, M. O., & Sainsbury, M. (2001). *Framework and specifications for PIRLS assessment 2001.* PIRLS International Study Center, Boston College: Chestnut Hill, MA, USA.

Chelimsky, E., & Shadish, W. R (Eds.) (1997). *Evaluation for the 21st Century. A handbook.* Thousand Oaks, CA: SAGE Publications.

CMEC (2000). *SAIP Science Report 1999*. Toronto.

College Board (1999). *Mathematics framework for the 1996 and 2000 national assessment of educational progress.* Washington, DC: National Center for Educational Statistics.

Council of Chief State School Officers (1999a). *Reading framework for the national assessment of educational progress: 1992-2000.* Washington, DC: National Center for Educational Statistics. (ERIC Document Reproduction Services ED430209)

Council of Chief State School Officers (1999b). *Science framework for the 1996 and 2000 national assessment of educational progress.* Washington, DC: National Center for Educational Statistics. (ERIC Document Reproduction Services ED431618)

Cousins, B., & Simon, M. (1993). *A review and analysis of the thematic program, "Education and work in a changing society" of the SSHRC strategic grants program.* Final and Technical reports submitted to Social Sciences and Humanities Research Council.

Crocker, R. K. (1997). *Study of the school achievement indicator program.* Toronto: Council of Ministers of Education, Canada.

Crooks, T. (1996). *Validity issues in state or national monitoring educational outcomes.* (ERIC Document Reproduction Services ED398285)

Crooks, T., & Flockton, L. (1999). *The design of New Zealand's national education monitoring project.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Educational Research Association, Montreal, Canada.

Flockton, L., & Crooks, T. (1997). *Reading & speaking assessment results 1996.* Ministry of Education, New Zealand. Dunedin: Educational Assessment Research Unit, University of Otago.

Forgette-Giroux, R., & Simon, M. (2000). *School Achievement Indicators Program - Second cycle evaluation.* Report submitted to the Council of Ministers of Education, Canada. Toronto.

Hattie, J., Jaeger, R.M., & Bond, L. (1999). Persistent Methodological Questions in Education Testing. In Asghar Iran-Nejad, & P.D. Pearson (Eds.), *Review of Research in Education, 24*, 393-446.

Haertel, E. H. (2002). Standard setting as a participatory process: Implications for validation of standards-based accountability programs. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 21*(1), 16-22.

Horkay, N. (Ed.) (1999). *The NAEP guide*, NCES 2000-456. Washington, DC: US Department of Education. National Center for Educational Statistics.

Human Resources and Development, Canada & Council of Ministers of Education, Canada. (1999). *Memorandum of understanding.* Unpublished document.

Hunter, D., & Gambell, T. (2000). *Professionalism, professional development, and teacher participation in scoring of large-scale assessment.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the Canadian Society for the Study of Education. Edmonton.

Joint Committee on Standards for Educational Evaluation (1999) *Standards for evaluations of educational programs, projects, and materials, 2nd Ed.* Toronto: McGraw-Hill-Ryerson.

Jones (2001). Assessing achievement versus high-stakes testing: A crucial contrast. *Educational Assessment, 7*(1), 21-28.

Lane, S., & Stone, C. A. (2002). Strategies for examining the consequences of assessment and accountability programs. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 21*(1), 23-30.

Linn, R. L., (2001). *The influence of external evaluations on the National Assessment of Educational Progress.* CSE Technical Report 548. Los Angeles: Center of the Study of Evaluation, National Center for the Research on Evaluation, Standards, and Student Testing.

Macdonell, A., Forgette-Giroux, R., Schmidt, S., Mougeot, Y., & Levesque, J. (1999). *Rapport sur l'évaluation d'étape du réseau stratégique en éducation, formation et emploi.* Conseil de Recherches en Sciences Humaines du

Canada, Ottawa.

Madaus, G. F., & Pullin, D. (2000). *Questions to ask when evaluating a high-stakes testing program*. Consortium of Equity in Standards and Testing. Available online: http://wwwsteep.bc.edu/CTESTWEB/documents/CTEST/NCASPress.pdf .

Pellegrino, J. W., Jones, L., & Mitchell, K. J. (Eds.) (1999). *Grading the Nation's Report Card: Evaluating NAEP and transforming the assessment of educational progress*. Washington, DC: National Academy Press.

Popham, W. J. (1999). Where Large Scale Educational Assessment Is Heading and Why It Shouldn't. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 18*(3), 18-26.

Posavac , E. J., & Carey, R. G. (1997). *Program evaluation: Methods and case studies*. (5th Ed.). Upper Saddle River, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall.

Ryan, K. (2002). Assessment validation in the context of high-stakes assessment. *Educational Measurement: Issues and Practice, 21*(1), 7-15.

Robitaille, D. F., Beaton, A. E., & Plomp, T. (Eds.) (2000). *The impact of TIMSS on the teaching & learning of mathematics & science*. Vancouver: Pacific Educational Press.

Shavelson, R. J., McDonnell, L. M., & Oakes, J. (1991a). What Are Educational Indicators and Indicator Systems? *Practical Assessment, Research and Evaluation, 2*(11). Available online: http://ericae.net/pare/getvn.asp?v=2&n=11 .

Shavelson, R. J., McDonnell, L. M., & Oakes, J. (1991b). Steps in Designing an Indicator System. *Practical Assessment, Research and Evaluation, 2*(12). Available online: http://ericae.net/pare/getvn.asp?v=2&n=12

Shepard, L. (1977). *A checklist for evaluating large-scale assessment programs*. Available online: http://www.wmich.edu/evalctr/pubs/ops/ops09.html .

Wilde, J., & Sockey, S. (1995). *Evaluation handbook*. New Mexico: EAC West New Mexico Highlands University.

Wilson, R. J. (1999). Aspects of validity in large-scale programs of student assessment. *The Alberta Journal of Educational Research, XLV*(4), 333-343.

About the Authors

Marielle Simon is currently Associate Professor at the Faculty of Education, University of Ottawa where she teaches courses in research methods, assessment, measurement and evaluation. She specializes in classroom and large-scale assessment, with particular focus on portfolio assessment and reporting.

Email: msimon@uottawa.ca

Renée Forgette-Giroux is Professor with the Faculty of Education, University of Ottawa. Her studies also focus on classroom and large-scale assessment. She has published on portfolio assessment and grading. She teaches courses in educational research, statistics and assessment.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple University of Wisconsin	Greg Camilli Rutgers University
John Covaleskie	Alan Davis

Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 608 times since October 26, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 47 **October 26, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

An Overview of Private Education Development in Modern China

Zeyu Xu
Teachers College
Columbia University

Citation: Xu, Z. (2002, October 26). An overview of private education development in modern China, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(47). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n47/.

Abstract
It is not surprising that private education is gaining importance in China given the overall context of huge national efforts toward building up a "socialist market economy." However, the fast growth rate in both the quantities and the qualities of profitable private schools in a socialist society is beyond what people usually expect. This paper looked into the modern history of private education in China and found that such a huge resurgence of private education is rooted in the heritage of private education in the Chinese society. Private schools were the precursor of modern Chinese education. They played an important role in the country for most of the time. When the government policy became more flexible and household income increased substantially, such a heritage revived and becomes a stimulating factor in the education sector.

1. Introduction

The huge population base of China creates the largest education industry in the world. 1999 figure shows a student body of 320 million, accounting for about 30% of world's student population (Qu, 2001). Limited financial resources severely restricted educational development in China. With lower-than-average national effort and fiscal effort measures (Tsang, 2000b), the number of junior high school classes that accommodate more than 66 students has increased from 61,000 in 1993 to the recent 132,000 (Jiang, 2001), the higher education gross enrollment ratio (for age 18—22) was only 10.5% in 1999, and only 1% of labor force has received 4-year and above tertiary training (Qu, 2001). In order to realize the developmental goal of 2010 (Note 1), the Chinese government launched a reform of the structure, administration and financing of education in 1985, decentralizing and diversifying the providing and financing of education (Tsang, 1993). Non-governmental schools revived after the 1985 policy in respond to both the excess and differentiated demand.

This is not the first time in history that China has a private education system. With rapid growth in the previous two decades, a lot of problems emerge on such topics as legal status of private schools, their legislation, ownership and quality. Review of available literature shows policy makers are more concerned with the commercial potentials of private schools than educational quality and effectiveness. The retrospection of contemporary private education tells people there are goals other than business profit in educational development, and that education is about devotion, truth and innovation. This paper records the contemporary private school history in two parts: pre-1949 era and post-1949 era.

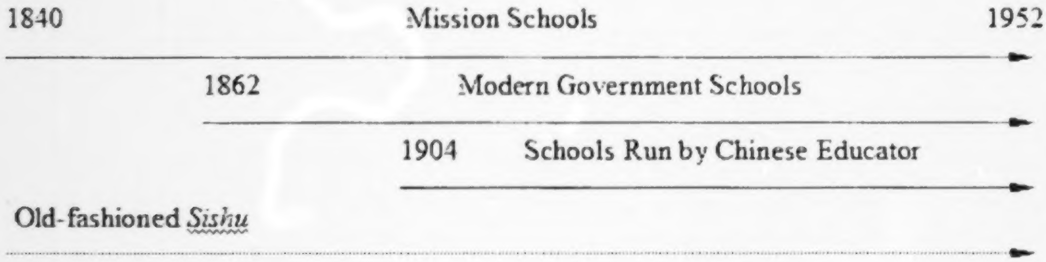
2. Pre-1949 era

Though the tradition of private education dates back to thousands of years ago with Confucius, and for a long period it was the dominant form of education, the modern private school system (or "new school system") did not appear till around the 1840.

1840 is the year that is usually used in Chinese history books as the beginning of the contemporary period, when China was defeated in the Opium War and began its journey of being colonized by western powers. Before this, China had been such a self-contained nation that it was reluctant to open to the world. Opium War was the first attempt to force open the door to China. Yet even such a shameful and additive commodity yielded to the strong resistance of Chinese people. War became the final choice.

The door was open. Through a series of humiliating defeats after 1840, the blind arrogance of the Chinese was shattered, and they began to accept, with great agony, the backwardness in their national development level. Various endeavors were made to save the nation. Education modernization is among the most important attempts.

In this education reform movement, private education played a crucial, if not the dominant role. Not only did private, modern schools appear earlier than governmental schools, but also that they were generally of better quality at the higher education level. Schools in this period can be divided into four types: Government-owned schools, mission schools, schools run by Chinese and *sishu*. The latter three types are private schools. However, the last one, *sishu* (which, translated literally, means private school), does not belong to the modern school type. Yet it persisted in modern China till the early 1950s (Deng, 1997). The development of modern school system can be summarized in the simplified diagram below.



2.1 Mission schools

The earliest modern private schools were founded by missionaries. Its development in China can be divided into three periods: 1840—1904, 1904—1925, and 1925—1949.

The starting period (1840—1904). As the starting of a series of "unequal treaties" between the Qing government and the Western powers, "Nanjin Treaty" (1840) knocked open the door of China by setting up "trading ports" in Eastern China and helping the Church obtain legitimate status to spread Christian Gospel in those cities. Previous experience had shown that with the deeply entrenched Confucius tradition, Chinese were resistant to Christian beliefs. The spread of the Western religion had proven to be unsuccessful. For example, it took the American Methodist mission in Guangzhou ten years to make the first Chinese convert (Deng, 1997). To attract more conversions, missionaries tried to set up hospitals, schools and printing agencies so as to win the support of the Chinese people. Among these agencies, schools did more than just helping people and winning their hearts: They also passed on Christian beliefs directly. With the subsequent "unequal treaties" (Wangxia Treaty in 1844, Huangpu Treaty in 1844, Tianjin Treaty in 1858, etc.), Western powers further obtained the rights to spread Christian Gospel in the interior areas of China. Religion in company with mission schools penetrated into central China.

Mission schools in this period had several common characteristics. First, their scale was quite small. For example, the first missionary school set up in Macao (1839) admitted only 6 children for the first year. Second, the establishment and administration of these schools were not systematically supported by the missionary organizations in their home countries, as was the case in the later periods. Schools in this period usually did not have any administrative staff. Decisions on curricula and teacher recruiting were left to one or several missionaries. Third, not unexpectedly, with limited capability of the personnel and funding, schools in this period were mainly primary and secondary schools. Fourth, mission schools were still not completely accepted and identified with by society, both on the intelligentsia level and the grassroots' level. Due to the long isolation of China from the rest of the world, foreigners were looked as barbarians by many people. This severely restricted the development of mission schools. Fifth, this negative perception toward foreigners/mission schools reduced their appeal to students. As early schools provided free accommodation and food for the student, poor and homeless children attended the schools run by "barbarians" only to remain alive. This is a sharp contrast with the situation in latter periods of development. Finally, the curricula mainly included the Christian Gospel and a small amount of rudimentary knowledge of reading and calculating.

The number of missionary schools in this period was quite small. For example, Deng (1997) reported that the First General Conference of Protestant Missionaries in 1877 reported only twenty Protestant mission schools with 231 students. Among these schools include Chongxin yishu (1844), Menyang School (1864), Wenhua School (1872), Fanwandu English Language School (1879) and Huiwen School (1889).

1904—1925. Modern governmental schools did not appear till 1862, when Jinshi Tongwen Academy was established. After a series of defeats in the battlefield, some Qing officials realized the importance of technology and foreign language. The government split into two groups in the late 19th century. One group strongly supported the learning of Western technologies and military strategies. The other advocated political and educational reform within the old government system. Both groups belonged to the feudalistic government, hoping to save the nation without overthrowing the feudalistic system (Chen, 1982). As a result, in the field of education, three types of new schools appeared: military schools, language schools and technology schools. They were modeled mainly after the early mission schools.

On the other hand, outside the government, one of the largest farmers revolts, "Peaceful Paradise" (*taiping tianguo*), lasted for decades and controlled in half of the provinces across the country. This movement started under the name of God and claimed to be a religious movement. Later, this movement was quenched by the Qing government with some help from foreign military forces.

Western influence had penetrated China both within the government and without by the latter half of the 19th century. This created a nourishing environment for mission schools to expand rapidly (Deng, 1997). The expediting expansion coincided with other issues that caused great social change. The first was the Boxer Rebellion. This was organized by farmers in 1900. It fought directly against the Western powers, including the evangelistic activities performed by missionaries. This movement stunned the Western nations with such gravity that they began to realize the importance of controlling a people by influencing its mind first. Education became viewed as one of the most efficient ways of affecting people's minds and gained strong support from the Western nations. Through education, missionaries attempted to win support from the intelligentsia in the hope of making them the future leaders of China, and vehicles for control of the country. Compared with the schools in the previous period, missionary schools were supported by various religious organizations and foundations, including the Rockefeller Foundation.

Another issue that changed the developmental context for missionary schools (and other forms of private education as well) was the implementation of the "*Guimao* Education System" in 1904. Many reformists became active in politics around 1900. Some of them saw the annihilation of the old education and examination system and the establishment of a modern school system as the only way out of the dire condition of the nation. These reformists made several attempts to improve the nation within the framework of existing government. The most famous attempt was the ***Wuxu*** Legislature Reform ("***Wuxu***" refers to the year of 1898 as expressed in the traditional Chinese calendar). Among the reform package, attempts were made to change the educational system. For example, it set up "Jinshi Daxuetang", which is the embryo of today's Peking University. The reform also suggested abandoning the traditional examination system, adding political and economic studies into the curriculum, and setting up professional schools in the field of law, finance and diplomacy. The reform is famous for its transience: It remained effective for only around 100 days. Almost all the contents of that reform were abandoned. Nevertheless, the Qing government preserved "Jinshi Daxuetang".

Although the "Wuxu Legislature Reform" was aborted, the reformist ideas began to spread in society. In 1903, the Qing government proclaimed the new Royal Regulations for Schooling (*Zouding Xuetang Zhangcheng*). In this regulation, a new school system was designed and the local government on all levels was required to establish new schools according to the regulation. Institutions were set up to make sure students got the compulsory education, and governors were requested to assist the proliferation of such education (Deng, 1997). Shortly after the proclamation of this new regulation, a ministry of education was established, and the old examination system (*keju*, which required the writing of an essay, often on politics or morality in the form of an "eight-legged" essay (Note 2)) was finally abolished. With this great ambition to completely rebuild the national education system, together with the dearth of governmental funding for public education, private education, including both mission schools and private schools run by Chinese, faced excellent possibilities for growth.

Missionary education in this period featured a rapid expansion in terms of the number of schools. According to Deng's (1997) description:

> In 1899 there were 1,296 Protestant missions in the Celestial Empire. By 1914, the number had more than quadrupled. By 1906, there were over 2,000 elementary schools and 400 middle schools run by Western missions. On the eve of the Republican Revolution of 1911, Western missionaries operated 3,145 schools in the country. Protestant mission schools enrolled 138,937 students in 1912. Catholic and Orthodox mission schools had a student body of 50,000 to 100,000. In Southern Manchuria, the Japanese ran 28 schools with a total enrollment of 5,551 students (Deng, 1997:32)

In addition to the development in numbers, mission schools scored rapid growth in higher education. Many new colleges and universities were established. Even some secondary mission schools were upgraded or merged into colleges. Examples include Jinlin University of Nanjing (1911), Jinlin College of Women (1915), Wuchang University (1910), Shangdong Christian College (1902), and Qilu University (1915). Most of the top-tier universities in China today were established in this period by missionary organizations. The most outstanding examples are Xiehe (Concord)

Medical School and Tsinghua University (Hu, 1994), the former being the best medical school and the latter one of the best comprehensive universities in China today.

There were several trends that characterize education development in this period. First, out of the necessity of identifying themselves with the Chinese elitist class and becoming integrated into the largely secular society of China, missionary organizations gradually shifted their emphasis from religious dissemination to knowledge education. Mission schools gradually became general educational institutions. As a result, missionary organizations made great efforts to improve their academic quality at the same time as they expanded the quantity of schools. These organizations attracted well-trained teachers with high salaries, extended the length of academic programs and improved the curriculum design. Second, with more emphasis on general education, vocational and professional trainings were also gaining ground. For example, Saint John University established its own medical department in 1896, while the Concord Medical School of North China was founded in 1905 under the auspices of the Rockefeller Foundation. Nursing and dental training were also offered in these medical schools. Third, the student body of mission schools changed. Focusing more on education itself than on religion, schools implemented entrance examinations to ensure student quality (Hu, 1994). As mentioned before, the student body in the first phase of development was mainly composed of children from poor and religious families. In this period, however, the weakening emphasis on religion, the stricter admission control and better facilities attracted students from the rich and intellectual families. Starting about 1910, it became increasingly fashionable for affluent Chinese families to send their children to mission schools (Deng, 1997).

With the above changes in mission education, the source of funding for mission schools also changed, the fourth characteristic of this period. There were two principal sources of funding. The most important one was the support from the mission organizations and foundations from the Western countries. What makes this source different from the previous period is "mission societies began to break sectarian boundaries to pool their resources together in setting up and running Christian colleges" (Deng, 1997, p.33). For example, the above-mentioned Qilu University was jointly supported by the American Presbyterian and the English Baptist missions (Deng, 1997). The second source of funding was tuition. This was new to mission education in China. In the first phase, mission schools had to offer free accommodation, free education and free traveling to attract students. With more affluent students joining the mission schools and the increasing popularity, mission schools in this phase began to charge tuition and gradually became a luxury for rich families. As a result, tuition accounted for a significant proportion of mission school financial resources. During the 20s and 30s, one third to one half of the funding came from tuition in some large-scale universities in Eastern China (Hu, 1994).

From 1904 to 1925, China transformed from a feudalistic society to a Nationalist state. After the revolution in 1911 that overthrew the Qing Dynasty, China went through rapid economic growth. Deng (1994, p.39) reported an annual industrial growth rate of 13.4 percent between 1912 and 1920.The emerging new society generated a great national demand for education. With the government encouraging private contributions and investment in education, private schools, including mission schools, achieved a rapid, and sometimes rampant growth. During this period, western mission schools were not required to register with the Chinese government. Exemption of registration means the Chinese government had no control over those schools. Mission schools were registered within their native countries. A trustee board was usually set up in the native country to control all the administrative, financial and personnel issues (Hu, 1994). This last characteristic of the second phase, together with other social and international environment change, led to a new stage of mission school development in China.

1925—1949. The end of the First World War in the previous phase inspired the national awareness of independence. It aroused the nationalism in two ways. First, the War attracted the attention and energy of Western powers to the European theatres. This left a precious chance for the national industries of China to develop and compete with foreign enterprises. As a result, China achieved rapid economic growth during the period. Second, although China did not gain benefits from the treaty following the war, it was listed as one of the "winning" nations. This helped its people regain some confidence and pride in their own country. With the establishment of a nationalist country in 1925, this nationalism was further strengthened. Chinese intellectuals began their quest for a new national identity. Under the influences from other countries, many practices were borrowed and adapted to the special context of Chinese society. Some people held a strong faith in democracy and science, while others sought national salvation through Marxism and Leninism, which had scored successes in the experiment in Russia. Students returning from overseas brought back new ideas with them. Tao Xingzhi and Jiang Menglin, two educators who had graduated from Teachers College, Columbia University, were among the most prominent examples who sought national identity through education experiments.

In such a context, mission education was facing serious and widespread criticism. It was considered by young intellectuals as a denationalizing force and an imperialistic and colonizing agency of western powers. Mission education was also regarded as a religious propaganda agent. In October 1924, all these "evil effects" of mission education were formally included in Resolution VII of the National Federation of Provincial Educational Associations Annual Meeting. The resolution also recommended that mission schools: should register with the government; be supervised by local committees; require their teachers to possess teaching qualifications; set tuition no higher than other private schools in the same district or province; and should cease propagating religion (see Chinese Christian Education, 1925). The 1925 Chinese Christian Education Conference in New York also reported that

> In spite of the fact that both government and private schools have been crippled for finances, and that the whole country has been unsettled, …[there is] growing sense of confidence on the part of the Chinese educators with reference to their ability to develop a sound educational system for their country. (1925, p. 14)

The May 30 Massacre in 1925, starting with the killing of one Chinese worker in a British textile plant in Shanghai, ignited an anti-imperialism protest that swept across the nation. Mission schools, mainly colleges, experienced their most difficult time in China. In the following year, registration began to be officially required for mission schools. It was also ruled that the presidents and administrative staff should be Chinese. Religious classes and practice were changed into elective activities and mission schools could not force any student to participate.

In such a stringent environment, mission schools became localized, secularized and more academically oriented. Chinese teachers were employed, and many western administrative staffs were replaced by Chinese intellectuals. Classes began to be taught in Chinese. And with more emphasis placed on academic quality, some mission colleges later boasted the strongest and best research in some majors like Chinese language and culture.

According to Deng (1997), Tatsuro & Sumiko Yamamoto (1953) reported that three thousand missionaries had left China by the end of 1927. While mission higher education was undergoing personnel shifts and re-design, Christian elementary and secondary schools also decreased in numbers. In fact, the situation of mission education continued to deteriorate after Guo Ming Dang (Nationalist Party) ended the ruthless battles between warlords and unified the nation in 1928. As a ruling party, Guo Ming Dang tried to justify its governance through its control over education. Similar to today's practice of the Communist Party, party representatives were dispatched to all schools, including mission schools. In 1933, Western missions were forbidden to run elementary schools for Chinese children (Deng, 1997).

After the invasion of Japanese troops first in 1931 and later intensified in 1937, the entire education system in China experienced huge losses. Most of the schools retreated to the inland areas. Mission schools also suffered from the chaotic situation. Starting from the late 30s, the government began to offer small amounts of financial support to private schools, including mission schools (Hu, 1994). This support did not come free. Governmental support changed some private schools into public ones. Shortly after the end of WW II in 1945, the civil war broke out, leaving private schools no time for recovery. Since then, the fate of mission schools, as well as other private schools, has been decided when the Communist Party took over the government in 1949. By the mid 1950s, all private schools have been transformed into public ones.

Comments on Mission Schools in the Contemporary History of China. Mission schools have been regarded as one of the great manifestations of Western colonization of China. Bringing with them brand new and often contradictory ideologies, mission schools clashed with the traditional culture dominated by Confucian ethics. Chinese society was forced to accept Western influence with agony and humiliation. At the same time, Western institutions helped Chinese people to see more choices and alternatives in every aspect of social life.

Mission schools invaded Chinese culture in a more insidious fashion than physical invasion. Missionaries and Chinese people interacted with each other. Mission education was gradually but never completely accepted by the intellectual society. The development of mission education in China can either be described as a cultural communication, or a cultural invasion since there was no equality between the two sides. However, mission schools did make contributions to modernizing the dilapidating education system in China at that time. "New schools" as advocated by many reformists were actually modeled on early mission schools. Mission schools were also the first to offer women's education in modern China. The first girl's school in China was established in 1844 by Aldersey, a British missionary (Hu, 1994). Mission schools started the first nurses' training program in China. They also boasted some of the best universities and research areas in contemporary China. As we noted earlier, several of the best universities today like Tsinghua University and Tongji University started as mission colleges.

2.2 Schools Run by Chinese Educators

Private schools run by Chinese educators started later than mission schools. In the beginning, Chinese private schools were modeled after mission schools in order to pass on "Western studies" to new intellectuals and invigorate the nation with new knowledge. There are different understandings on the meaning of "Western studies". At first, Chinese government felt the agony of its underdeveloped technology and machinery production. "Western studies" at this stage meant the learning of western machine production. Fujian Warship School and Shanghai Production Bureau were the two most important experiments in the hope of applying western technologies to industrial production. Later, Chinese intelligentsia came to realize that machinery alone could not save the nation. China had become weak mainly because of its malfunctioning political system. Western studies in this period meant the learning of western political systems. Finally, advocates of "Western studies" went further and asserted the deficiency of Chinese culture. They believed that within the context of old feudalistic culture, it was impossible to implement any real reforms. The failure of Wu Xu Legislature Reform proved that the new nationalistic political system could not possibly survive in the soil of old cultures. (Qiu, 1997). Through the development of understanding about Western studies, one constant theme was that education was consistently regarded as the most important way to rejuvenate the dilapidating nation. Both the government and individual citizens sponsored experiments to set up new schools. In 1862, Peking Tongwen Academy was founded by Yi Xin, the brother of the king. This was the first new style school in the history of China. This government school started as the language institute and later expanded with astrology and mathematics studies in 1867.

The prevalent thinking of education as omnipotent (Cai, 1984) combined with dissatisfaction with traditional learning institutions (Qiu, 1997), motivated great energy among open-minded gentries, merchants and returning overseas students to set up new private schools. Although some Chinese intellectuals began the experiment as early as 1878, this trend did not become obvious till 1904, when Guimao Education System brought fundamental and systematic changes to traditional education structure. Therefore, 1904 can be viewed as the launch of modern private schools run by Chinese educators. Their development can be divided into four periods: from 1904 to 1911, from 1912 to 1927, from 1928 to 1936, and from 1937 to 1949. The division of stages roughly corresponds to that of mission schools.

1904—1911. Zhang Huanglun founded Zhengmeng Academy in 1878, which is the earliest modern private schools run by Chinese educators. However, as mentioned earlier, this type of school did not achieve much development before 1904. The dissemination of evolutionary (*gailiang*, as opposed to more radical idea of social revolution) thinking since 1898 and the Wuxu Legislature Reform illuminated Chinese people's long shackled mind. More people were demanding education at the same time when more intellectuals were willing to provide education. Private schools began to gain in number. The growth in private education as well as the reformist atmosphere encouraged the Qing government to announce the first modern education system regulations in 1904. The implementation of this system, in turn, created a supportive environment for the new private schools to develop. The new regulations required local governments to found new schools in accordance with the 1904 law. An education ministry (Xue Bu) was established and the "eight-legged" essay examination was abolished shortly afterwards in 1905. Being aware of the shortage of financial resources and qualified teachers, the government encouraged individuals, most of them were old-fashioned intellectuals, to open schools to fill in the gap between what had been planned and the reality. The old gentry class responded to this appeal from the government passionately, considering themselves the backbone and leading class that should take the responsibility to educate its people.

In this period, most of the private schools were primary schools. Most of them were concentrated in the coastal area, and they were labeled as "Chinese-Western studies academies" or "English schools" (Zhang, 1994). Although these schools attempted to imitate mission schools, most of them did not have any real breakthroughs and were still within the traditional school framework. In order to complete the new education system efficiently, learning promotion organizations were opened in every county to supervise the operation of new schools, both governmental and private.

Although mission education began to focus more on higher education in this period, only a small number of secondary and tertiary schools were founded by Chinese educators. The Public University of China (1904) and Fudan University (1905) were the most important private universities founded by Chinese educators at this point. Nankai School, founded in 1907 by Chang Bolin, was the most famous secondary school at the time.

According to Lin (1999), in 1906, there were 59 private secondary and primary schools, with a teaching staff of 606 and a student body of 3,855. However, private schools founded by Chinese educators suffered from an extreme shortage of funding. For example, the Public University of China, founded by returning students from Japan, had to rent dilapidated buildings as their classrooms. Many of the staffs were working voluntarily without salary. In an extreme case, in order to raise funds, Yao Honglie, one of the university administrators, committed suicide in the hope that "government administrators could use their political power, rich people could use their economic power, and intellectuals could use their knowledge to support the Public University of China together" (Hu, 1994).

1912—1927. With the overthrow of the Qing Dynasty, the Feudalism that had lasted for several thousand years came to an end. Various powers and influences began to compete in all fields of social life. In politics, starting from 1917, a 10-year war broke out between warlords across the nation before Guo Min Dang unified the country in 1928. In the field of ideas, republic thinking, democracy, communism and even Feudalist remnants were in conflict with each other, attempting to fill the vacuum left by the annihilation of Feudalism. The beginning of the Republican era created a relatively active and liberal environment for education. With the promotion of reforms by the new government, education developed quickly. The number of schools nationwide increased from 87,282 in 1912 to 129,739 in 1915, and the number of students increased by around 50% accordingly (Qiu, 1997).

The active involvement of government in education development provided a strong support to the public education system. But at the same time, it also attempted to control private school ideology to corroborate its ruling position. The grip over education, fortunately, was not so strict as it might have been because of divisions created by the war between warlords that followed the founding of the Republican nation. Fighting for power reduced resources for education. Education fund was often appropriated for military use. Public schools were severely impacted by the war. By contrast, private schools, which did not rely on governmental funding, kept developing in a more stable fashion. In addition, because of the accumulating tension in Europe and later the First World War, the Western control over China was loosening. National industries in China thus got a precious chance to expand. The developing economy provided a strong source for educational investment.

The first period of the National era (before 1922) saw a rapid growth in private higher education and professional schools of political science. "Regulations on Public and Private Vocational Colleges" and "Regulations on Private Higher Education" permitted individuals to open all kinds of new schools except for teacher training schools. The private universities outnumbered public universities in this period. Out of these private universities, 75% were vocational colleges, with most of them concentrating on political science (Hu, 1994). This reveals the passion for law and politics in the 1910s and 1920s. In contrast, primary and secondary education achieved greater success in the public sector. In 1912, there were only 54 private middle schools, accounting for 14.5 percent of the total number of middle schools in that year, and 12.8 percent of the total middle school population (Hu, 1994).

A new education system was implemented in 1922. In the new system, requirements for setting up universities became less strict. The 4-year middle schools were changed into 6-year schools and were divided into junior high schools and senior high schools, and they could be founded separately. As a result of these changes, the number of public universities exceeded that of private ones for the first time in 1922, with 10 public and 9 private. In 1927, 34 universities were public and 18 private. Many political science colleges were shut down as a result of their poor quality. In the secondary and primary education sector, however, a large number of junior high schools were established by individuals and the number of private middle schools reached 283 in 1925, or 41.2 percent of the total number of middle schools of that year, enrolling about 40 percent of the whole middle school student population (Hu, 1994).

1928—1936. With the end of the chaotic struggling for power between warlords, the Guo Min Dang government unified the nation and created an uninterrupted period of stable social development from 1928 to 1936. The new government established a healthy and regulated education system. As early as 1927, the government announced its education policy based on the "Three People Principle", expecting education to facilitate the creation and maintenance of national independence, the human rights equality, and the improvement of living conditions. Following the announcement of this policy, a series of regulations were announced. In December 1927, the government promulgated the "Regulations on the Registration of Private Universities and Professional Schools" to improve the quality of private higher education. To regularize the administration of private higher education, "Regulations on Private Universities" and "Regulations on the Private University Board Operation" were implemented in February of the next year. In 1929, "University Organizational Laws" and "Professional School Organizational Regulations" were announced to clarify such details as the minimum investment for starting a college, minimum operation investment and curricula (Hu, 1994).

Besides the resolution of the government, other social factors also contributed to the relatively supportive environment for education. With less social turmoil, national industry achieved an annual growth rate of 8.7 percent between 1923 and 1936 (Deng, 1997). The development of national economy resulted in greater resource availability for educational investment. At the same time, it also created a greater demand for skilled and educated labor. In addition, the prospering economy boosted the confidence and pride of the Chinese people. Educators started to seek new national identity by setting up new schools modeled after their own ideals of future China. For example, Cai Yuanpei, the most influential president of Peking University, advocated aesthetic education vehemently. He believed that aesthetics not only could substitute for religion, but was even better than religion in that "aesthetics is liberal, while religion is compelled; aesthetics is progressive while religion is conservative; aesthetic is popular while religion has boundaries" (Cai, 1984, pp. 501-2). With such an ideal, 3-year-old children were sent to the kindergarten to learn music, painting and literature, museums of arts were set up, theatres were built, professional arts schools were founded, and even pregnant women were sent to national infant education institutions that were set up in peaceful setting with fresh air (Qiu, 1997).

Hu Shi and Cai Yuanpei also insisted on the independence of education. In his essay "On Independent Education", Cai pointed out that:

> Education should develop individualism and commonality equally. What political parties attempt to do is to create a special kind of commonality and wipe out individualism. For example, they would encourage their people to love some nations, while hating the others; or try to use the culture of one ethnic group to absorb and dominate the culture of another group. This is the common practice of today's party. It is extremely harmful if this practice was intertwined with education. What education aims at is the effect in the future, while political policy seeks instant change. … the effect of education will not appear instantly. However, parties cannot hold their ruling position for long. Government changes within several years. If education is under the charge of parties, then when the government changes, education policy will change accordingly. No education effect can be achieved in this way. Therefore, education must be independent from political parties (Cai, 1984, p. 117).

As mentioned above, the government in this period (as well as in all the other periods), attempted to control the education system. For example, In October 1925, the Beijing government ordered private colleges all over the country to shut down. This is an event that has not been explained to this day (Deng, 1997). The belief in educational independence was a counter force that protected and promoted the stable development of private education in the period. During the years of continuous wars and constantly shifting of powers, the appeal for education independence helped education survive.

Another educator who significantly contributed to private education in China is Tao Xingzhi, also a Teachers College graduate and a disciple of Dewey. Combining pragmatism with the social conditions of China, he initiated village education, popular education, vocational education, wartime education and comprehensive education movements. He applied his ideals to practice and founded more than half a dozen schools. Xiaozhuang School, founded in 1927, was a village teacher training school, the first of its kind in contemporary educational history of China. With the belief that village teachers are the soul of countryside reform, Tao made his first experiment in the suburban area of Nanjing. Xiaozhuang School consisted of two parts: primary school teacher training and kindergarten teacher training. Guided by such principles as "life is education, and society is the school" and "integration of teaching, learning and practicing", the school achieved great success quickly. Tao was invited by other regions to found similar teacher training schools in 1928 and 1929 (Wang, 1982). His education ideas are still highly respected by the Chinese government today.

At the beginning of the 1930s, with the purpose that science should be popularized among common citizens, Tao founded a children's correspondence school in Shanghai (1932). In the October of the same year, he founded Private Shanhai Experimental School in Shanghai, which was a vocational school that combined general knowledge with skill training. In the next period of education development (1937—1949) when the Sino-Japanese war broke out, Tao was concerned with the education in the battle field and founded Life Education Association and children's school for the refugees. In 1939, Yucai School was established in Chongqing, the wartime capital. This school was an experiment to apply Tao's ideal of comprehensive education. The school included six groups: music, drama, painting, literature, social studies and natural science studies. The school was so successful that its name is still used by many high schools in different cities across the country.

With effort from the government as well as individual educators, private education scored impressive developments in this period. The percentage of private colleges increased from 27.6 percent in 1925 to 49.1 in 1936. Correspondingly, private colleges enrolled 49.3% of all the college students in 1936, as compared with 35% in 1925 (Hu, 1994). Primary and secondary private education also developed on similar scales. In 1936, private primary schools and secondary schools accounted for 24.8% and 36.7% of the nationwide number of primary and secondary schools respectively. Most of the private schools concentrated along the costal areas and major cities.

1937—1949. War began in this period. Like mission schools, private schools run by Chinese educators also suffered severe damage and regular education could not be maintained. Many schools were demolished by bombing. The famous Nankai University was raided by Japanese invaders in 1937, the first year of war. Half of the private middle schools closed between 1937 and 1939 (Hu, 1994). Apart from the damage of school facilities, teachers and students were turned into refugees, creating an immeasurable loss to education. Public education suffered from the war as well. However, the government transferred some schools out of the occupied areas and was able to save some regular educational institutions. By contrast, privately invested schools did not have the ability to migrate to the inner lands.

Around the end of Sino-Japanese war in 1945, the government began to offer some support to private schools. Yet in return, many schools were changed from private to public. Examples included Nankai University and Fudan University, two of the earliest private higher education institutions. Not only the number of private schools decrease, but also their quality deteriorated with some of the higher quality schools becoming public. Although private education gained some respite after WWII, the civil war that followed between Guo Ming Dang and the Communist Party undermined the ability of private schools to survive.

3. Post 1949 era

The shifting focus of national development in China after 1949 reveals the struggling for control between two fractions inside the Chinese Communist Party: the radicals (as represented by Mao Zedong) and the moderates (as represented by Liu Shaoqi and Deng Xiaoping) (Tsang, 2000a). The radicals put emphasis on ideological struggle, while the moderates focus on economic and material improvement. The overall policy changing decides the shifts in education policy (Tsang, 2000a). Although education development in the post 1949 era can be divided into more periods (Tsang, 2000a), for the purpose of analyzing private education, two major stages are suffice to see the change: from 1949-76, when private education was first severely suppressed and then totally eradicated; and from 1976 to the present, when private education revived and is still gaining importance in the overall education system.

3.1 1949—1976. The Termination of Private Education

After the founding of the People's Republic of China, all of the private sectors of social life were transformed into public sectors. This is consistent with the nature of the Chinese Communist Party as a communist party. Equality was regarded as the most important principle, and individual goals were suppressed by collective goals. Private industries and schools were regarded as the manifestation of Western capitalism, which was in the direct opposition to communism. Within such a radical ideological framework, schools began to be folded into the public sector in 1951. Mission schools were also among those on the conversion list. Furen University was the first mission university that was transformed. It became part of Beijing Normal University, bringing with it a great collection of precious books. By the end of 1952, private education had evaporated in China.

Private education did not reemerge until 1978. Between 1952 and 1978, there was only one type of school that existed in large numbers in the vast rural area: people-run schools. People-run schools are schools "sponsored and managed by a community of people or a collective organization, and funded by resources from the community or collective organization, and from a variety of sources" (Tsang, 2000b, p. 4).
This type of school came into being in response to the huge gap between the supply and demand for public education in the poverty-stricken rural areas, where around 80 percent of the total population lived. Parents usually could not pay any tuition, and teachers received no regular salaries. Instead, villagers provided food and room for the teachers and helped in such activities as school building, and teachers had to move from home to home for accommodation. The government offered almost no financial support for these schools, but at the same time the party maintained a tight control. People-run schools had neither administrative autonomy nor academic freedom (Deng, 1997). For this reason, though privately funded, people-run schools are not categorized as private schools (Deng, 1997; Tsang, 2000b).

3.2 1976—Today. The resurgence of private education in PRC in post-Mao era

After the chaotic "10-year Cultural Revolution" ended in 1976, the less radical faction in the Chinese Communist Party rose to power under the leadership of Deng Xiaoping. The Third Central Meeting of the Eleventh Party Conference decided on a new package of national development policies, which is known as "reform and open" strategy. In the process of reform, the Party further liberated its thinking and started the creation of a "socialist market economy". Education's role in national development is no longer ideological; instead education has the important function of meeting the skill requirements of a developing socialist market economy and is portrayed as the strategic foundation for national development (Tsang, 1996, p. 54). With excess demand from the society, and with the permission of private business in a socialist country, private education reappeared in China.

Definition of private schools. Different definitions of private education will result in different categorization of public and private sectors. Usually there are two standards: Is it privately funded and is it privately managed. According to the Regulation on Education Run by Social Forces, instituted since July 31, 1997, private schools (or schools run by social forces) refer to those run by "businesses and governmental organizations, social groups and other social organizations and individuals, using non-government educational financial resources, to provide schooling and other forms of education to the society." (Lin, 1999).

Context of private school resurgence. The potential education market is created by excessive social demand as compared with limited governmental supply of education, together with the consumer's willingness and capability to pay. Usually private education comes into play when there is either an absolute shortage of education such that not everybody has access to schooling, or a demand for education alternatives that the existing system cannot satisfy (James, 1995). According to Lin (1999), in developing countries, the rationale for the existence of private education tends to be very different from that in more developed countries. Carnoy and Samoff (1990) see private education in developing countries as an inescapable solution to the rising demand for education, particularly at the secondary level. Parents who send their children to private schools are not necessarily exercising a constitutional right of choice, but rather solving personal problems or using a system that increases their children's chance for social mobility. The absolute shortage of education supply seems to be the main reason for the existence of private education.

This is also true in the case of China. Shortage of funding proved to be devastating to China's public school system (Deng, 1997). China's educational budget between 1950 and 1985 rarely exceeded 3 percent of its GNP and was overall 0.7 percent less than the international average (Ho and Mao, 1992). The under-invested education system, coinciding with a huge and increasing population, makes the situation even worse. Examinations were widely adopted as a mechanism of competition for the limited education resources. Primary school students competed for "key" junior high schools, and junior high students compete for "key" senior high schools, with these sought-after schools providing nearly sure access to higher education. At the end of high school years comes the notoriously competitive college entrance examination. At each of these stages, a large number of students are denied the chance for further education. When private schools came back in the early 80s, their targetted market was these "failed" students, offering them the kind of training needed to compete for college enrollment for a second time.

The demand for such second-chance schools outside the public education system was made even larger as a result of the Cultural Revolution (1966—1976). During those years, youths were denied access to regular higher education and were sent to the countryside to receive "re-education" by laboring on the farms. Once the normal higher education system was restored in 1978, the huge number of college candidates that had accumulated in the previous 10 years began to take the entrance examination at the same time. Such severe congestion inevitably left a large number of failed students who created a demand for further training.

The market of "second-chance" students still exists today. Public compulsory education is not absolutely free. Though it charges no tuition, fees are nonetheless collected under various names. In underdeveloped areas, children have to travel across hills, rivers and vast farming fields to get to their schools. When all the fees, traveling costs and forgone earnings are considered, public education is so expensive that impoverished families in some rural areas cannot afford it. Private schools come up catering to the education demand of these families. In big cities and the coastal region, private schools offered a second chance to those academically unqualified students from rich families that could afford the private tuition. For those who failed to get admission to public universities, private universities, many of them correspondence colleges, rose to meet the demand of adults.

Starting in 1992, when the first elite high school was founded, demand generated by supply shortage was no longer the only market for private investment. With the booming economy, people began to seek more school alternatives beyond what the public system offers. Economic growth brought a sharp rise in family incomes, giving people the financial foundation of choice. At the same time, the economy has been shifting from a central-planning system to a socialist market economy. This has increased the demand for skilled labor force, for which private schools have responded quickly.

With economic development being regarded as the primary task of national effort, social values have changed. The ideal of egalitarianism has been abandoned for the sake of faster growth. Between being poor but equal, and being rich but unequal, the government has chosen the latter. Wealth has become the common goal of the society. Although political connections prove to be the most effective method of wealth accumulation, education is the path to higher economic gains for the majority of common citizens who can afford it. To ensure a "brighter" future, parents want to choose the "best" education for their children. The great demand for certain skills in the labor market is reflected in the great demand of training in those skills. For example, for most families, key middle schools would be their ideal choice. But since these schools are not accessible to most of them, and yet they are not satisfied with common high schools, private schools with better facilities and more flexible curricula become their second best choice. For some families where both parents are involved in business with little time to care for their children, an alternative schooling that can take care of both the study and life of students is attractive to them. In recent years, it has become more and more popular for families living in the central and western regions to send their children to big cities in the coastal area so that they will be more adaptable to the metropolitan and modern environment in the future and get more job opportunities. It is impossible for these students to get enrolled in the local key schools of big cities. But money can buy them places in private schools.

Other factors helped enlarge the market demand for school alternatives. For instance, the one-child policy, a method of population control, created a large number of nuclear families with only a single child to educate. This policy came into effect around 1976. These children began to compete for secondary education in the 90s. No parent would like to see failure in the training of the only child of the family. In addition, the parents of these children suffered from the Cultural Revolution, and most of them were denied the chance to receive even secondary education. They would never want this to occur to their children. As a result, they have made efforts to seek the best education available to their children. Some parents from cities were sent to remote areas in the revolutionary years. Many were unable to return to their hometown, even after the end of the revolution. Their hope lies with their children: If their children can get admitted by universities in cities (especially Shanghai and Beijing), current policy allows the parents' *hukou* (Note 3) to return to the city with their children. Private schools in eastern cities also give these parents a good choice to realize their dreams.

Another factor, though not quite clear in its nature and scale, has contributed to the market for elite private schools. Economic growth has brought more illegitimate children, born to the mistress of rich businessmen. Unofficial information suggests that there is a population of nearly 100,000 mistresses in the Zhujiang area alone. Unfortunately, these children are not permitted in regular schools. At the same time, many of the rich fathers are more than willing to pay for the education of their children. This generates a market demand for private education, especially in the special economic zones in South China.

Such a great and heterogeneous demand described above is not sufficient by itself to bring private education back into existence. Privatization in education follows the privatization of economic production in the country (Tsang, 2000b), which is part of the "socialist market economy" policy. Besides, with the increasing GDP per capita, families now have the capability to consume private education. The overall policy and household income make people's education demand realizable.

Regulatory environment. Alongside the burst of demand for private education, the government created a favorable policy environment for the growth of private schools. As early as 1985, some documents on "structural reform of China's educational system" allowed university departments to find part of their resources through engaging in business activities or through enrolling a certain number of students outside the admission quota set by the government (Lin, 1999). This was the beginning of education decentralization. A series of regulations and laws concerning non-state schools were issued afterwards. The key ones that are regulating today's market are: the 1993 Provisional Regulations on the Non-State Higher Educational Sectors, the 1995 Provisional Regulations on Education Institutions Jointly Sponsored with International Institutions, the 1995 Education Law, the 1996 Vocational Education Law, the 1997 Regulations for the Non-State Education Sector, and the 1998 Higher Education Law (LaRocque & Jacobsen, 2000).

These regulations provide a supportive stance for private education in the PRC. The Law stipulates that private education institutions should be non-profit organizations, and the surplus shall not be distributed among investors. Under the current laws, private schools are not entitled to public education funds. In fact, from 1985, the government began to supplement state funding of education from other sources. Its policies are consistently seeking more money from student families rather than increasing the governmental investment in education. More and more of the financial burdens of education are being transferred from the state to individuals. Even public education is no longer free. Students enrolled in regular public universities began to pay tuition from 1994.

The risk to private investment in education is the informality and lack of transparency of the regulatory environment in China (LaRocque & Jacobsen, 2000). Enterprising individuals were ready to assume financial risks as well as the political risk of being criticized or condemned by the government should it reverse its policy (Kwong, 1997). But such a loose regulatory environment also generates some flexibility in the implementation of regulations. Some private schools successfully acquired support from the local government, and non-profit private schools are actually collecting surplus through various ways. Some investors started businesses affiliated with their schools. Profits gained from education can thus be transferred to company surplus and become legal profits. Policy makers are attempting to come up with different interpretations of school's "non-profit" status. In fact, the legislation on private education is one of the hottest topics among Chinese educators. Debates mainly concentrate on for-profit or non-profit status, ownership, and even the legal name for private education: Should it be "people-run schools", or "schools run by social forces", or just private schools (Wang, 2001).

Development of private schools. The development of private schools in the post-Mao era is divided into three stages (Lin, 1999): 1978—1987 is the first period, when most private schools were training institutions and night schools targeting second chance students. The second period saw the appearance of private regular schools. And the third period started from 1992, when the first elite school appeared in China, signaling the advent of rapid growth of various types of private schools to the present day.

In 1994, private schools constituted less than 4 percent of the country's schools (Kwong, 1997). The distribution of private schools is not balanced. In Wenzhou city of Anhui province, private secondary schools made up 51% of all secondary schools in 1996 (Zhang, 1996). Private schools are developing quickly in some economically underdeveloped region like Yunnan Province as well as in the affluent cities. According to the survey done by LaRocque and Jacobsen (2000), in 1998, there were nearly 42,000 private education institutions in China. Of these, 85% were at the pre-school level, 11% were at the elementary and secondary levels and 3.5% were at the tertiary level. Excluding the tertiary sector, these private institutions enrolled 6.5 million students in 1998. In 1997, there were over 1200 private universities existing in the country (Lin, 1999), with 37 of them having the right to confer degrees.

Different types of private schools. Private schools are often classified into three major types: urban elite primary and secondary, ordinary private schools, and private universities (Lin, 1994). Urban elite schools attract the most attention from the society because of their extremely high tuitions and construction fees charged to students. They are usually boarding schools that have substantial resources. Teachers receive salaries than public school teachers and schools often have additional requirements beyond the regular curriculum requested by the government. Students are admitted on family's capacity and willingness to pay instead of academic achievements. But to ensure a certain level of quality, they sometimes provide scholarships to attract top students from key schools and persuade poorly performing students to transfer to vocational schools before the college entrance examination (Lin, 1999). In a sense, elite schools provide a chance for some rich students to "buy" the right of leaning.

Ordinary private school includes rural private schools, single-sex schools and art schools (Lin, 1999). They are affordable by the average families and are usually secondary schools. Charging much lower tuition, these schools are less profit-oriented than elite schools. In fact, many rural private schools were founded in response to the high and unaffordable charges of public schools. To some extent, they are similar to the people-run schools between 1952 and 1978. These schools typically have meager finances and resources. Most of the teachers are part-time or retired teachers seeking extra income besides their regular salaries (Lin 1999). Some schools in this category also offer training in foreign languages, computer skills, or examination preparation classes.

Although it is claimed that private universities enrolled one quarter of the total college student population in 1995, a great proportion are correspondence students. Their targeted market is adults instead of high school graduates. Usually private universities offer limited professional training in a narrow range of subjects that are popular in the job market. There are three types of private colleges: The first type has the right to confer degrees independently. The second type can issue joint degrees with other regular institutions, and the third type only provides training for students to take the Adult Self-study College Examinations, which lead to a college diploma equivalent. The last type of private tertiary training had 1,080 schools in 1998 (LaRocque & Jacobsen, 2000). Private colleges are usually affordable to common families. To survive on limited financial resources, they mostly employ part-time teachers or senior students from famous public universities.

Investors in private schools. Investors in education range from business entrepreneurs to retired teachers, government officials, overseas Chinese, and public schools. They invest in education for different reasons. Many of them are driven by economic profit. Some are dissatisfied with the existing education system and thus carry out their own experimental approaches, just as Tao Xingzhi did in the 1920s through the 1940s. Some business people set up schools just to obtain profitable land and tax benefits for schools. The most interesting and sometimes ironic phenomenon is that of public schools investing in private education. Starting from 1985, universities have been allowed to raise financial resources outside of state funding by operating a business or admitting extra students. With the existing facilities and teachers at hand, it is so easy to set up a short training session so that adults outside the campus can have partial access to higher education, while teachers can get some extra money to improve their lives. Setting up a night school appears to be a more legitimate and fair way of generating revenue for the public schools than admitting extra students who actually use money to compensate for their academic inadequacy. In addition, starting a private school on the basis of an existing public school is much easier and safer than starting a new one from scratch.

Operation. Lin (1999) identified four sources of funds for private schools: state funds, fees charged to parents, income from operating school businesses, and income from offering extra classes. Other sources also include equity and short-term bank loans (LaRocque & Jacobsen, 2000). Among these, a significant amount comes from fees charged to parents. For elite high schools, this category consists of tuition, construction fees, education savings and other fees like transportation and uniform. Education saving fund is way higher than normal tuition (around 10,000 to 30,000 USD). Schools promise to return the fund in the original amount at the time when the students have finished study. This form of deposit plays two important roles: The huge amount of money can be used as an interest-free loan from parents, so that schools can afford expensive initial construction. Second, during the years of study, schools can benefit from the interest on deposits or returns to other investments that schools make. In a rotating fashion, the deposit withdrawn by graduated students is replaced by the deposit from in-coming students. Though the capital flows all the time, its stock is constant. The deposit becomes fixed school property.

Private schools have more independence in administration. Under the general guidance of the government, they can employ their own teachers and administrative staff quickly and make changes to the curriculum without the approval from the local government. Teacher's salary is used as an incentive to better performance. It seems that in this way, the problem of stagnant curriculum that tends to stifle creativity of students in the public schools can be solved by the flexibility of private schools. Such ceremonies as flag-raising every morning in the public schools could be overlooked or quietly sacrificed for academic excellence (Deng, 1997). However, few studies have been done to compare the efficiency between public schools and private ones. It would be premature to claim that the curriculum of private schools is better than that used by public schools just because they have added several more computer classes or piano classes. And since love of one's nation and people is one of the essential tasks of education, the flag-raising ceremony might be a good method of cultivating pride in one's own country. But it is doubtful whether the couple of minutes saved from the ceremony really can improve academic excellence much. Other practices of elite private schools, such as the boarding requirement and typical weekday timetable (Lin, 1999, p. 64) do not seem to differ a lot from those of key high schools. Many of the "innovations" seem to be designed for marketing purposes rather than educational advantage. In addition, in some cases principals do not have the right to decide on financial issues. Allocation of resources is under the control of investors who may have no experience in the education field.

Concerns about private schools. The personal accounts nationwide accumulated a total sum of deposit exceeding 2 trillion RMB (or more than 250 billion USD) as of 1994 (Deng, 1997). The government is trying to direct the citizens to consume more education out of their own purse. People stay longer in schools. Public universities and graduate schools are expanding their student population quickly, in some cases by 20% per year. It seems that the government is pressing to expand the current educational capacity using private resources. One concern about private education in such an environment is its over-heated growth, which, in turn, may possibly result in improper competition such as the using of dishonest advertising. Another concern is that the government appears to care more about earning money by using its education institutions than educational quality. A lot of residence halls and classrooms are being built around universities, while the number of regular teaching faculty remains unchanged. Graduate students are compelled to teach "voluntarily" some big classes completely by themselves.

A more serious concern is the inequality problem. Deng (1997, p. 136) pointed out that "private schools that prospered on the growing gulf between the rich and poor only magnified the problems that were besetting Chinese society in the 1990s". Compared with the past, rich students have one more way to get education: Buy it. However, even if there were no private schools, the "enrolling extra-quota students for financial resources" policy has already give privilege to the economically advantaged group. Besides, as mentioned above, rural ordinary private schools actually create chances of education for the poor who cannot afford the public education. The relation between education equality and the development of private education requires more detailed study. Actually the current private education development policy is confusing in that on the one hand, policy makers are making great efforts to re-interpret the "non-profit education" regulation so that entrepreneurs can distribute profit legally (because researchers believe profit is the incentive), while on the other hand, educators also realize the importance of promoting private education in poor areas to meet the excess demand there, forgetting little profit can be further wrenched from those families (Yang, 2001).

There are other worries about private education. For example, private schools usually offer classes on "hot" skills. Now it is not rare for some kindergartens to teach children English before they can speak Chinese fluently. Computer classes are the emphasis of many private high schools, while such subjects like math is ignored (Lin, 1999). This is detrimental to the establishment of a solid knowledge foundation for students. Besides, there is no systematic evaluation mechanism for the outcomes of education. Little information on student performance in private schools is available. The most recent conference on private education policy held in Hangzhou this summer was abundant with articles of casual "thoughts" instead of serious assessments.

4. Conclusion

The available literature shows a lack of systematic experiment and evaluation in the study of private education policy. The description of private school development is limited to the amount of investment, the number of schools, the students enrolled, sources of fund, the fees charged, and so on. With nearly 10 years of rapid development since 1992, the outcomes of private education can be and should be measured to determine its contributions and social consequences. With the continuing expansion of public education, private education may face serious challenges in the future.

As demonstrated by the private education history, China has started its non-governmental schooling since Confucius began to provide education to people outside the government and the ruling class. The current private education differs from the Chinese tradition in that today's education is unprecedentedly commercialized and market-oriented. Education history tells people that education is a career that requires devotion from the teachers, that education is a science whose value lies with truth, and that education is an art, whose vigor comes with innovation. Resource diversification and expansion needs to be balanced with quality.

Notes

1. The 2010 education goals include: Reduce the young people illiteracy rate to less than 1% and raise the total adult literacy rate to 90%; The junior high school gross enrollment rate reaches 95% so that 95% of students can complete the 9-year compulsory education; The gross enrollment rates of senior high schools and colleges will increase to 50% and 11% respectively (State Education Commission of PRC, 1996).

2. The eight-legged essay has played a famous (and sometimes infamous) role in Chinese literature. It began as an attempt to give an ordered form to the essay and eventually became a standard part of the Civil Service examination. As time went on, it began to be no more than a rigid and lifeless exercise that all examinees were expected to perform. However, some of the earlier essays successfully conveyed real messages briefly and tellingly within the highly regulated eight-legged format. (See http://www.wlu.edu/~hhill/baguwen.html/ for more information)

3. *Hukou* is like citizenship. But citizenship is used to differentiate country identity and control population movement across countries. *Hukou* is used to differentiate city, county and town identity and control free migration across different areas within a country.

References

Chinese Christian Education: A Report of a Conference Held in New York City(1925, April 6th). Paper presented at the Chinese Christian Education Conference, New York.

The Ninth Five-year Plan for Educational Developmental and The Long Range Development Program Toward the Year 2001 (1996). Beijin: State Education Commission of the People's Republic of China.

Cai, Y. (1984). *Complete Collection of Works by Cai Yuanpei* (Vol. 3). Shanghai: China Publishing Bureau (Zhonghua Shuju).

Cai, Y. (1984). *Complete Collection of Works by Cai Yuanpei* (Vol. 5). Shanghai: China Publishing Bureau (Zhonghua Shuju).

Carnoy, M., & Samoff, J. (1990). *Education and Social Transition in the Third World*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.

Chen, J. (1982). *Contemporary History of Chinese Education*. Beijing: People's Education Press.

Deng, P. (1997). *Private Education in Modern China*. Westport, Connecticut: Praeger.

Ho, Z., & Mao, J. (1992). Is Our Education Funding above Average among Countries of a Comparable Level of Development? *Chinese Education*, **25**(Fall), 76, 89, 93.

Hu, Y. (1994). Private Schools in Contemporary China. In Z. Zhang (Ed.), *Theory and Practice of Private (Minban) Schools*. Beijing: Worker's Publishing Agency of China.

James, E. (1995). Public-Private Division of Responsibility for Education. In M. Carnoy (Ed.), *International Encyclopedia of Economics of Education* (pp. 450-455). Oxford: Pergamon.

Jiang, M. (2001). Supress Demand or Expand Supply? In W. Hu (Ed.), *Focus on People-run Education Legislation (Jujiao Minban Jiaoyu Lifa)* (pp. 227-231). Beijing: Education and Science Publishing House.

Kwong, J. (1997). The Reemergence of Private Schools in Socialist China. *Comparative Education Review*, **41**(3), 244-259.

LaRocque, N., & Jacobsen, V. (2000). *Minban: A Market and Regulatory Survey of Private Education in China: Executive Summary.*: International Finance Corporation, Arthur Anderson.

Lin, J. (1994). *The Development and Prospect of Private Schools in China: A Preliminary Study*. New Orleans, LA: the Annual Meeting of the American Educational Reserch Association.

Lin, J. (1999). *Social Transformation and Private Education in China*. Westport, Connecticut: Praeger.

Qiu, J. (1997). *The Education Theories and Schools in Modern China*. Beijing: People's Education Press.

Qu, Y. (2001). Thoughts on Problems in People-run Education Development. In W. Hu (Ed.), *Focus on People-run Education Legislation (Jujiao Minban Jiaoyu Lifa)* (pp. 195-202). Beijing: Education and Science Publishing House.

Tsang, M. C. (1996). Financial Reform of Basic Education: The Chinese Experience. *Economics of Education Review*. **15**(4) 423-444

Tsang, M. C. (2000a). Education and National Development in China since 1949: Oscillating Policies and Enduring Dilemmas, *China Review 2000*. Hong Kong: Chinese University Press.

Tsang, M. C. (2000b). *School Choice in People's Republic of China*. NCSPE occasional paper. Available: http://www.ncspe.org [2001, July].

Tstsuro & Yamamoto. (1953). The Anti-Christian Movement in China, 1922-1927. *Far Eastern Quarterly,* 12 (December), 136.

Wang, J. (2001). Disputes in People-run Education Legislation and My Suggestions. In W. Hu (Ed.), *Focus on People-run Education Legislation (Jujiao Minban Jiaoyu Lifa)* (pp. 1-7). Beijing: Education and Science Publishing House.

Wang, L. (1982). *Memory of Xiaozhuang School.* Changsha: Hunan Education Press.

Yang, H. (2001). Some Thoughts on People-run Education. In W. Hu (Ed.), *Focus on People-run Education Legislation (Jujiao Minban Jiaoyu Lifa)* (pp. 9-14). Beijing: Education and Science Publishing House.

Zhang, Z. (1996). Developmental Characteristics of Educational Undertaking Run by Social Forces in Our Country. *World of Education Run by Social Forces,* 1, 8-9.

About the Author

Zeyu Xu
Department of International and Trans-cultural Studies
Economics and Education Program
Teachers College, Columbia University
New York, NY10027

Phone: (212) 678-3259
Fax: (212) 678-3474
Email: zx20@columbia.edu

Zeyu Xu is currently a Ph.D. candidate in the field of Economics and Education in Teachers College, Columbia University. He is also a research assistant in the National Center for the Study of Privatization in Education (NCSPE) directed by Professor Henry M. Levin. His research interests include education privatization, education and poverty reduction in developing countries and applied econometric methods in education policy studies.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak

Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-
DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx   kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 899 times since December 4, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 48 **December 4, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

K-12 Voucher Programs and Education Policy: An Exploratory Study of Policy Maker Attitudes and Opinions

Dan Laitsch
Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development

Citation: Laitsch, D. (2002, December 4). K-12 voucher programs and education policy: An exploratory study of policy maker attitudes and opinions, *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 10*(48). Available http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n48/.

Abstract
Since the 1983 report, *A Nation at Risk*, the performance of public schools has been increasingly scrutinized, and a variety of reforms designed to increase student achievement enacted. Among the reforms discussed, much attention has focused on increasing choice and competition in education. While the effectiveness of market oriented reforms have been widely debated, little research has been completed that examines policy maker attitudes toward market reform of education. This study used a researcher designed survey to examine policy maker attitudes toward education and education reform in general, as well as the issue of vouchers more specifically. Findings suggest that policy makers generally accept the market arguments used by voucher supporters, but are also sympathetic to equity concerns and funding issues raised by voucher opponents. Additionally, while more policy makers responding to this survey supported some type of voucher program than opposed vouchers, when viewed in the broader context of reform options, vouchers did not rate highly.

Introduction

On June 27, 2002, the U. S. Supreme Court ruled that the use of vouchers to pay tuition at private K-12 schools in Cleveland, Ohio, did not violate the establishment clause of the U.S. Constitution (*Zelman v. Simmons-Harris*, 2002). This ruling energized the pro-voucher movement, and resulted in plans by state legislators across the country to introduce new voucher legislation (Toppo, 2002). While there is debate as to how far reaching this decision may ultimately be (some individuals have compared the decision to the 1954 Brown v. Topeka Board of Education decision), observers generally agree that the policy focus, both legislative and judicial, regarding the use of vouchers for K-12 tuition, will now turn to the states (Gehring, 2002; Toppo, 2002). In fact, less than two months after the *Zelman* decision, Justice Kevin P. Davey of the Leon County Circuit Court, struck down Florida's state-wide voucher program as violating that state's constitutional prohibition on state aid to religious institutions (*Holmes v. Bush*, 2002). The Institute for Justice has also filed law suits in two states (Maine and Washington), seeking to have state-level prohibitions against the use of public funds at religious schools overturned (Institute for Justice, 2002).

As voucher policy is drafted, introduced and debated, the views and beliefs of state legislators will play a critical role. To help determine just how policy makers react to vouchers and school choice issues, a survey of state legislators was conducted in November, 2000. The results of this research are detailed in the accompanying article.

Despite interest from policy makers and advocacy groups, little research has been completed that would lend to a clearer understanding of the effectiveness of arguments used to promote or inhibit voucher plans and how policy makers respond to such arguments. The study conducted here attempts to examine policy maker reaction to these arguments, using the following questions:

- What role do policy makers feel vouchers play in the larger context of reform?
- How do policy makers react to specific policy arguments about vouchers?
- How does the educational philosophy of individual policy makers relate to their attitude regarding vouchers?
- How do the demographic traits of policy makers relate to an their philosophy of education?
- How do the demographic traits of policy makers relate to their views on vouchers?

This study specifically examined efforts to privatize education services through the use of vouchers by looking at three states where vouchers were enacted (Ohio, Wisconsin, and Florida), as well as three states where vouchers have not been enacted, but where serious attempts have been made to establish such programs (Michigan, New Mexico, and Pennsylvania). By examining policy maker reaction to arguments designed to promote or prevent voucher programs in states where vouchers were established or under serious consideration, this research sought to help both proponents and opponents focus on the concerns of policy makers in education reform.

Background

The education market movement is a compilation of at least three different efforts to expand the role of private providers in public education. These efforts include contracting out support and curricular services (such as food service, student transportation, and curriculum programs); contracting with a private company for management of an entire school or district (such as through Edison schools); and privatization of school governance (charter schools, tax-credits, and vouchers). While the term privatization may encompass all of these movements, as it is used here, privatization, vouchers, or market reform will generally refer to the privatization of governance through the transfer of public funding from public schools to the private sector.

Method

It is not until recently that the use of vouchers as a mechanism for creating a free-market system has been seriously considered; and not until the 1990s that a useful model of a voucher system established. The social and political contexts under which voucher programs were established then are relatively recent. This recent history presented some unique methodological opportunities (the chance to survey actual participants in the policy making process) and difficulties (no conclusive outcome or evaluative measures, continued doubt as to the constitutionality [at the state level] of such programs). For a detailed description of the methodology used in this research, see Appendix I.

In general, a quantitative methodology that allowed for wide spread application and comparative analysis, was sought, and consequently, a survey of legislators was chosen as the best option for answering research questions across a wide geographic range and large body of potential data sources. The focal points of this study (Florida, Michigan, New Mexico, Ohio, Pennsylvania, and Wisconsin) were chosen using both critical case sampling and politically important case sampling (Martella, Nelson, & Marchand-Martella, 1999).

The survey was constructed using pro- and anti- voucher arguments uncovered during a review of voucher literature. During the validation process, the survey was amended to include questions related to broader issues, including policy maker views on the purpose(s) of education, as well as the potential effectiveness of a variety of current reform proposals. Demographic data, including race/ethnicity, gender, age, and religious affiliation, was gathered to test for any specific response patterns. On October 18, 2000, the survey was mailed to 936 state legislators in Florida, Michigan, New Mexico, Ohio, Pennsylvania, and Wisconsin. Of the 936 surveys mailed, 89 were returned, for an overall return rate of 9.5% (see Table A1, Appendix 1 for a detailed discussion of the return rate and Appendix 2 for a discussion of methodological issues).

General Overview of Findings

Just under half of the policy makers surveyed (48%) supported some sort of voucher reform, however, when asked to evaluate vouchers in isolation, and when examined in relationship to other reform options, their support weakened, with vouchers ranking last among eleven other reform options. Policy makers also viewed the broader concept of school choice more negatively, with three of the four lowest ranked reform options on this survey related to school choice (teacher preparation and professional development, early childhood initiatives, phonics based reading programs, and greater use of technology all rated higher as reform strategies).

While choice was not favored in comparison to other reforms, policy makers still generally seemed to accept pro-market arguments for voucher programs, as well as statements related to allowing consumers to regain control of educational systems. While respondents seemed to accept at face value statements that competition will improve services, they did not support statements related to the potentially negative impact of market forces.

Even though there was broad agreement on the benefits of a pro-market approach, there were concerns expressed relative to resource allocation. Respondents did not support the idea that vouchers would help equalize funding, or provide new schools, increased investment, or improved cost controls. In fact, they felt that voucher programs might result in reduced services to special education students and increased competition for the "best" students. Respondents were also concerned that private schools would raise tuition and fees, ultimately limiting accesses to the schools by poorer families.

One of the most common warnings of voucher opponents is that voucher programs may result in a separation of students by race. Three items were related to this concern were included in the survey. Voucher advocates supported two of the more positively worded items (that vouchers would force schools to focus on customers seeking specific academic, social, or religious programs, and that such programs would result in schools with specific religious affiliations or racial/ethnic compositions), while voucher opponents were more likely to support the more negatively worded suggestion that voucher programs would increase segregation by race, religion, or income.

While some policy makers expressed concerns that vouchers would result in private schools loosing independence, others worried that there would be a jump in the number of low quality schools, as entrepreneurs sought access to newly available public funding (this dichotomy between independence and oversight has played out in all of the programs enacted so far, which currently include either no, or very weak, evaluation and oversight components).

When examining education more generally, respondents agreed that the overriding purpose of education is to ensure academic excellence in students. Respondents also supported the statement that education should ensure that students are prepared to meet the needs of businesses and employers, however voucher advocates were much more likely to want schools to instill strong moral character in students, while voucher opponents wanted schools to create good citizens. There was also a general reluctance to rank social purposes-including the suggestion that education should be used to promote social mobility or diversity-strongly. Women as a group tended to rank the creation of good citizens more strongly than men, but that emphasis came at the expense of business. Respondents who were minority group members were slightly more likely to rank social mobility higher than Caucasian respondents. For both women and minorities, however, the degree of difference between their opinions and that of the majority was not statistically significant.

Item Analysis[1]

Demographic Data

The typical respondent to this survey was a white protestant male, however, the diversity represented by the respondents is similar to that of legislators nationwide and across the study states (see Figures 1 & 2). Approximately 79% of respondents were male, and 19% female, with 2% not answering (this figure remains constant and so will not be repeated). Approximately 80% of respondents were white, with 6% identifying themselves as black, 11% Hispanic, and 1% Native American. The age range of respondents is shown in Figure 3. The large majority of respondents were actively religious (87%) and Protestant (65%). 26 percent were Catholic, and 2% were Jewish. Most respondents had completed a Bachelors degree and many had gone on to post-secondary education (BA, 46%; Professional degree, 15%; MA, 14%; Ph.D., 7%). A slight majority of respondents were Republican (53%) while Democrats made up 45% of the responders. A large majority had also served on the education committee (66%). Most respondents attended public K-12 schools (72%), and none attended private non-parochial schools at the K-12 level. Most of the policy makers also attended a public college (59%), while those who went to a private colleges and universities were spilt between religious institutions and nonreligious. While 72% of respondents who had children sent them to public schools, the 28% of respondents who sent their children to private schools chose parochial schools over non-parochial ones (83% to17%). While education service was generally low (ranging from 0 - 6% in most categories), of those individuals who had worked in education, 27% said they had worked as a public school teacher, 22% had volunteered in a public school, and 9% had volunteered at a private school.

This article has been retrieved 620 times since December 6, 2002

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 49 **December 6, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Failing Georgia: The Case Against the Ban on Social Promotion

Donald R. Livingston
LaGrange College

Sharon M. Livingston
Georgia State University

Citation: Livingston, D., Livingston, S. (2002, December 6). Failing Georgia: The Case Against the Ban on Social Promotion, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(49). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n49/.

Abstract
Our analysis begins with an examination of the state of Georgia's rationale for the decision regarding social promotion that was based on the perceived views that teachers have on the issue. Research suggests, however, that teachers hold contradictory opinions concerning the use of standardized tests for high stakes decisions, such as promotion, and are not aware of the consequences most children suffer when they fail a grade. Following a discussion that challenges the claims of success in Chicago, Baltimore, and Texas, we explore the viability of choosing litigation as a strategy to stop the use of high stakes tests given the adverse impact they have on protected minorities. From a study of the thirty-nine poorest counties in rural Georgia, the relationships between poverty, race and the Georgia Criterion Referenced Competency Test Results suggest that these tests do have an enormously disparate impact on impoverished African American children. Because chances for educational attainment will be severely limited by this test, most African American children will be discouraged from achieving a high school diploma. As a way to put a face on the data, a case study of a young girl who would probably fail her grade in school if the law was enforced is presented followed by recommendations that argue for changes in education policy and teaching. Rather than mandate a ban on social promotion, the state of Georgia should pursue improvement of socio-economic conditions, education policy and pedagogy.

For many, it is simple common sense to fail a child who does not pass the academic requirements for promotion to the next grade. For others, making children accountable for their academic performance is part of an overall strategy to raise the quality of education. Responding to the public and political call for educational reform and accountability, Georgia and Texas, Baltimore and Chicago along with many other school districts have decided to end the practice of social promotion in hopes of improving the quality of education (Eisner, 2000)

Defining social promotion is somewhat difficult because the meaning behind the practice has become so infused with professional, political and academic agendas that it seems impossible to reach common ground. On one side are those who deride the practice as promoting a student from one grade to the next regardless of academic achievement; they claim that this is a policy that short-changes the child, teacher, school and society (DiMaria, 1999). On the other side of the debate are those who point to the abundance of research that overwhelmingly suggests that keeping a child with his or her peer group is the best insurance for high school graduation (Darling-Hammond, 1998). Countering this plethora of research is the assumption that a high school diploma has little value if the student is simply passed along and given a degree without meeting specific criteria for graduation (Eisner, 2000). As evidence of the rift in the stakeholders' views, the two major teacher organizations cannot agree on the subject. The more conservative American Federation of Teachers (AFT) shudders at the thought that school districts ignore policies and laws that ban the practice of social promotion by stating that this rampant disregard creates a huge class of ill-prepared and unmotivated students (AFT, 2001). While conceding that social promotion without intervention is deleterious to a learner, the National Education Association (NEA) is on record as stating that retaining students is even more pernicious (NEA, 2001).

Examining Georgia's Decision to End Social Promotion

As a top priority for his education reform agenda, Governor Roy Barnes urged the legislature to end social promotion during the State of the State address in February 2001. Governor Barnes proclaimed, "the time has come to end social promotion in our schools" (Barnes, 2001). Reasoning that social promotion is unfair to teachers, Governor Barnes charged the legislature with passing a bill that would require every student to pass an exit examination before being promoted to the next grade (Barnes, 2001). Using the rationale that schools and teachers are held accountable for competency, the Governor insisted that no student be promoted to the next grade level until proficiency in the subject matter has been assessed with a criterion based standardized test (Barnes, 2001). In Governor Barnes' words,

> Now, nobody wants to have to hold a child back in school. It is difficult for them to be separated from their peers. But if some children are still behind even after we have taken every step available to give them extra help--after school programs, alternative programs, special reading programs and so on--we owe it to them to make this difficult choice... . But mostly, we should do it in fairness to those students who are passing through our system today without learning what they need to know. By promoting a child who is not really ready, we say, 'It's OK if you don't learn.' Well, I say, it is not okay (Barnes, 2001).

On March 21, 2001, the legislature of Georgia complied with the wishes of the Governor by passing into law a bill which mandated that students in grades third, fifth, and eighth must pass a standardized examination to move up to the next grade, beginning with third graders in 2004. Children who enter third grade in 2003 would be required to pass a state reading test, while those matriculating the fifth grade in 2004 and eighth grade in 2005 would be required to pass both a state reading and mathematics exit examination (State Board of Education [SBOE], 2001).

A second chance to pass the test is allowed if the child fails to pass the test on the first attempt. If the child should fail a second time, a grade placement committee is convened "composed of the principal or the principal's designee, the student's parent or guardian, and the teacher of the subject of a test on which the student failed to perform satisfactorily" (SBOE, 2001). It is the initial charge of the grade placement committee to provide some sort of accelerated instruction to prepare the child for the third test. After three attempts, the official code directs the school to retain the student. At this point in the process, the parent(s) or legal guardian may appeal to the grade placement committee to permit the child to move up to the next grade level. Citing from Official Code 20-2-283, "The grade placement committee may decide in favor of a student's promotion only if the committee concludes, using standards adopted by the local board of education, that if promoted and given accelerated instruction, the student is likely to perform at grade level. A student may not be promoted on the basis of the grade placement committee's decision unless that decision is unanimous" (SBOE, 2001).

Teachers Views on Social Promotion

Governor Barnes' contention that teachers are critical of social promotion may have some credibility when the research is examined. Tomchin and Impara (1992) published a study showing eighty-two percent of elementary school teachers believed that retention helps children prevent future failure and seventy percent thought that the threat of failure motivates children to succeed. A whopping ninety-eight percent stated that they would never rule out the decision to fail a child (Tomchin & Impara, 1992). DiMaria (1999), in a study of New York City teachers, found similar results. In this 1999 study, sixty percent of teachers felt that students should never be socially promoted with thirty percent reporting that the primary grades were the best times to retain in grade.

Clearly, an overwhelming majority of teachers feel that social promotion frustrates children by burdening them with schoolwork that is too advanced for them to comprehend. Teachers believe that this burden is an imposition, one that makes teaching much more difficult because it forces them to deal with the under-prepared while trying to teach those who are prepared (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000). The prevailing view of teachers is that instruction is easier and more effective when variability of academic competence within the class is reduced (Foster, 1993).

Both of the teacher assumptions about student and teacher frustration, however, are not borne out by the educational research. It may be that teachers are not aware of the preponderance of retention research as evidenced by their reliance on anecdotal accounts from colleagues. Anecdotal reports by teachers often suggest that children benefit from retention, yet because of the decision to retain, there is no opportunity to see how well the children might have progressed had they been promoted (NAECS, 2000).

Mary Lee Smith wrote in Flunking Grades that teachers tend to access practical knowledge rather than formal knowledge. Practical knowledge is the sort of knowing that begins with personal experiences followed by future action based on these personal experiences. For example, one teacher remarked in Smith's study, "when my own son was retained, it was because he was too young for his age, and the next year he was a real leader in his class, and we never regretted that decision; and ever since then I have recommended that parents of young children in my class take the same step" (Smith, 1989, p. 133)

Based on clinical interviews, Smith suggested that the educational philosophies of teachers fall into distinct categories and that these beliefs are directly related to their opinions on retention. One category Smith identified was designated Nativists, teachers who believe that the physiological maturation of ability develops over time in stages. Predictably, Nativist teachers feel that children should not be exposed to developmentally inappropriate instruction. If a teacher was not a Nativist, Smith found that teachers could be grouped in three additional ways. 1) Remediationists are teachers who are active instructional and resource managers, 2) Diagnostic Prescriptors believe that deficiencies, such as auditory memory and visual-motor problems, can be corrected when identified with specific instruction and 3) Interactionists, teachers who feel that successful teaching begins with the prior knowledge and interests that the child possesses (Smith, 1989).

Smith found that the most likely to retain are Nativists because they are prone to see physical size and chronological age as reasons to hold children back. This is somewhat of a confounding finding given that Nativists' beliefs are congruent with some widely held theories of child development (Smith, 1989). While Nativists are more likely to retain students than the others, all teachers agreed in Smith's study that retention is beneficial both in the short as well as the long term. Through her interviews Smith recorded anecdotes such as the yearning to put the child at the top of the class and many claims to the effect that there are no stigmas attached to retention if the teacher and parents handle it well. Often Smith heard about the disasters that occurred when children are socially promoted and very few teachers named any negative effects of retention. All stated that it is best to err on the side of retention and if any harm was done, its effects are temporary. Perhaps the most disturbing finding Smith reported is that teachers often discounted the child's feelings of disappointment, failure and confusion or reluctantly acknowledged that if any emotional harm was done, the positives far outweigh the negatives. No one in Smith's research responded that social promotion was beneficial. Smith suggested that instructional efficiency pre-empts the child's best interest when she concluded, "The teacher is a self-interested theoretician. Though couched in the rhetoric of pupil benefits, her beliefs about retention are, perhaps unconsciously, conditioned by a wish for a more homogeneous and trouble free class" (Smith, 1989, p. 149).

Contradictions Between Research and Practice

A preponderance of control-group studies, structured to measure the comparison between retained students and students recommended for retention but promoted anyway, come down clearly on the side of promotion. What these studies show is that students who are recommended for retention, but are nonetheless promoted to the next grade, end up doing just as well as or, in many cases, perform better academically than non-promoted peers (Foster, 1993; NAECS, 2000).

While school performance is usually the focus of the debate, the most pernicious effect of retention is that the decision to fail a child usually results in dire social consequences. Children who have been retained demonstrate more social regression, display more behavior problems, suffer retention-related stress, and more frequently drop out of high school. (Grissom & Shepard, 1989; Frymier, 1997; NAECS, 2000).

While it may seem unfair to some, keeping a child with his or her peer group is the best decision almost all of the time. When grade retention is used as a solution for poor performance, it is assumed that the problem resides in the child's learning ability. But, this is rarely the case (Darling-Hammond, 1998; Frymier, 1997).

Shedding light on why children do not do well in school, studies show that the reasons for poor performance usually stem from non-academic factors such as a seriously ill parent or the death of a sibling or maybe a parent lost his or her job last year (Frymier, 1997). In addition, many students who failed a grade had been in an accident or were seriously ill during the year (Frymier, 1997). Now that the 2000 census has been published, data show that many non-English speaking children have become part of our schools (U.S. Census, 2001). Research tells us that if English is not spoken at home, a child is twice as likely to be retained during his or her schooling (Foster, 1993). Another suggestive statistic is that over half of the students who were retained in grade came from a broken home where moving from town to town was a frequent experience (Frymier, 1997). Concomitant with these factors is what research has coined as "retention bias," a tendency to retain a higher proportion of males, those with small physical stature, poor children and minority students (Foster, 1993; Frymier, 1997; Miller, 2001).

Because repeating a grade is a highly visible act, one that separates a student from his age peers, what is most disturbing about failing a child is what happens to them afterwards. Rather than accepting failure, children perceive the decision to repeat a grade as a punishment for something out of their control, a perception that discourages them from completing school (Foster, 1993). It is well documented that students who are held back do worse in the long run compared to students who are promoted, in part because they give up on themselves as learners (Denton, 2001). Even small children perceive that failing a grade is a serious social stigma. Stigmatizing children lowers their self-esteem, a psychological albatross that often results in a teen pregnancy or drug and alcohol use later on (Darling-Hammond, 1998; Foster, 1993). A review of sixty-six studies conducted between 1990 and 1997 found that sixty-five of them showed retention to be ineffective or harmful (Denton, 2001). In another 1997 study of twenty-three risk factors for school failure, students who fail a grade have many more problems, in every risk area, than those students who were promoted to stay with their peers (Denton, 2001; Frymier, 1997; Owens & Magliaro, 1998).

Standardized Tests and Consequences of Failure

In preparation for the implementation of the legislation that bans the practice of social promotion, the state of Georgia has administered for the second year a Criterion Referenced Competency Test (CRCT), commonly referred to as the State Curriculum Test, as a way to determine how many children might be retained in grade. While some reading scores have improved on average, about twenty-five percent of fourth, sixth and eighth grade children flunked the test (Georgia Department of Education, 2001). Looking at the best results, eighteen percent of fourth grade students failed the reading component. In the worst performing category, forty-one percent of eighth grade children failed to achieve a passing grade in mathematics (Georgia Department of Education, 2001). What is alarming is that, beginning in 2003, promotion to the next grade will be based on the results of this test, meaning that one in five, maybe more, students will be retained in grade. While there is some clamoring to revise the CRCT so that more students will pass, using a standardized test to make the critical decision to pass or fail a student has questionable validity (Salzer, 2001). The technical complexity of performance-based standardized tests, coupled with the fact that performance based tests are relatively new assessment and evaluation techniques, means that tests like the CRCT require constant revision in their early stages (Elmore, Abelman & Furhman, 1996). These changes are evidence that there are fundamental flaws in performance based tests, changes that result in improvement in some 2001 CRCT scores over 2000 CRCT scores.

Even though the practice of standardized testing is hard pressed to show that it can produce real gains in student learning, state policymakers count on test revisions to improve scores. With standardized testing, researchers have found that scores will initially be low and then rise for several years before leveling off. This upward trend caused by the "saw tooth effect" is due to teacher-led test preparation rather than to student achievement (Miller, 2001). Predictably, policymakers tout the spike in test scores, usually within the second year of test introduction, as proof that accountability measures are working.

While it is likely that the scores will get better because of this tinkering with the testing techniques and test preparation of students, there is no reliable evidence which suggests that performance-based tests will ever be perfected. Because the primary purpose of a standardized test is to gather data from a very large group of test takers as a way to evaluate if the overall curriculum needs to be improved, the CRCT should never be used to make a decision that affects an individual student (Miller, 2001). It is very important to note hat a standardized test score does not reliably measure what an individual child actually knows because children are not consistent test takers. Even if the test was administered several times, the problem remains: snapshots cannot show a child's full range of capabilities (Kohn, 2000; Miller, 2001).

Challenging the Claims of Success in Chicago, Baltimore, and Texas.

With over fifty years of research showing that grade level retention provides no academic advantages to students, the practice of retention persists and is on the rise nationwide (Owings & Magliaro, 1998). The Consortium for Policy Research in Education (1990) reported that by the ninth grade, approximately fifty percent of all U.S. school students have been retained. If the goal of retention is to allow students more time to develop adequate academic skills so that they will be successful in subsequent years, why do the follow-up data on implemented programs throughout the United States show evidence to the contrary?

Beginning in 1996, the Chicago public schools promoted only third, sixth, and eight graders who obtained the minimum score on the Iowa Test of Basic Skills. Initial studies purporting to show the success of Chicago's program revealed that students, especially those with the lowest prior test scores, showed impressive gains after a full year of intervention and intensive summer instruction. However, follow-up studies revealed that learning gains dissipated after three years resulting in an increased likelihood of school drop out (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000; Denton, 2001; Holmes, 1989). In Baltimore, a similar story unfolded; a study conducted at Johns Hopkins University found that the performance of students retained during elementary school did improve modestly during the year they repeated and for several years thereafter (Denton, 2001). Again, follow-up studies revealed that initial gains faded, with sixty-five percent of the retained students dropping out of school as compared to eighteen percent of all other students. For students who were held back more than once, the drop out rate soared to ninety-four percent (Denton, 2001). What unfolds as one examines the research is that retained children are, on average, worse off than those who are socially promoted (Holmes, 1989; Shepard et al., 1996).

As for the Texas model, the study claiming success had serious methodological shortcomings that limit its validity (Denton, 2001). Texas researchers reported in a 1999 study that the performance of retained third graders improved over those students who failed the Texas Assessment of Academic Skills test but were promoted to the next grade. The validity of the test comes into question due to the large disparity between the number of students who were retained (400 students) and the number who were promoted (35,000 students). The 400 students, one percent of the total, represented the extreme low end of the range of test scores, so any subsequent test scores had no place to go but up, a statistical phenomenon known as "regression to the mean." In addition to the test reporting flaws, Texas policymakers have also manipulated students to give the illusion of increased test scores. As reported by Haney (2000), school officials exclude poor test takers from the tenth grade TAAS by either retaining them in the ninth grade, classifying them as learning disabled, or encouraging them to leave school and pursue the GED. By employing these tactics, Texas schools can report apparent test score increases for the tenth grade students.

A Snowball's Chance in Georgia: the viability of choosing litigation as a strategy to stop the use of high stakes tests to determine promotion or retention.

Except for the mountains in the northern part of the state, it doesn't snow very often in Georgia and, when it does, chances are that the frozen precipitation will not last very long. A snowball's chance in Georgia has the life expectancy of a fruit fly, about a day. The same analogy holds true for using the courts to overturn the legislature's decision to use the CRCT to determine promotion and retention. While some cases across the nation have been won on the local level, almost all have been overturned at the appellate level, meaning that victory in the courts is short-lived. Appellate courts have overturned challenges based on two cases, United States v. Fordice in 1992 and Personnel Administrator v. Feeney in1979. Basically, these two cases frame the issue by deciding that "Placement testing, exit examinations, and achievement tests may be used to assist in the determination of classroom assignments and eligibility for graduation, provided that the test results are not a reflection of past racial segregation policies, the testing is accurate, and the results are open to public scrutiny" (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002, p. 489). Because the Equal Protection Clause of the Fourteenth Amendment forbids schools from engaging in intentional discrimination on the basis of race, color, national origin or sex , the first legal litmus test is whether or not a test perpetuates or preserves illegal discrimination. What the courts deemed important in Larry P. v. Riles in1984 is that the State Department of Education had to foresee that the test would have a significant disproportionate impact by race. Second, the department of education has to have failed to show the validity of the test for minority children. Also, the test must cause a stigma and irreparable injury to the student. Moreover, Larry P. v. Riles demands proof that failing the test will result in effective educational opportunities for the child. (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

While the courts have recognized that high stakes tests have an adverse effect on minority children, they consistently reject the argument that these injuries are caused intentionally by the state. Instead, courts find that the state has a substantial governmental interest in education and that high stakes tests are a legitimate way to hold students accountable (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). Even when presented with clear accounts of racial bias, courts have refused to find that high stakes tests violate Title VI saying that they do not intentionally effect a particular race in an adverse manner (Heubert & Hauser, 1999; Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002). The Supreme Court forbids any practice that, while appearing to be a fair, perpetuates or promotes the effects of prior illegal segregation. This may mean that it is unlawful for any child who has attended an illegally segregated school at anytime in her/his schooling may not be subjected to a high stakes test designed for promotion or retention. It is rare today that a child has attended such a school, yet it opens the possibility that the courts could scrutinize a test more closely if a state or school district has had a recent history of segregation or intentional discrimination (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

The courts have almost uniformly dismissed claims of intentional discrimination and have steadfastly upheld that high stakes tests are rationally related to legitimate state interests (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

While there is an abundance of research that shows that retention has deleterious effects, such as low self-esteem, negative attitudes toward school and a reduced chance at succeeding at school, the courts dismiss such reasoning as speculative. This view, that educational research is mere speculation, was evidenced through the case Erik v. by and through Catherine V.v. Causby North Carolina in 1997, a decision that upheld a school board's decision to fail children based on a standardized test by rejecting the argument that students suffer irreparable harm when retained in grade because any potential harm is based solely on speculation. In stark contrast to the educational research, the court rationalized the situation completely oppositely saying that because retention gives a child more time in school to catch up, the state is doing its job by providing more resources to those who need them (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

Texas courts also viewed retention as a part of a remediation benefit in the case, GI Forum v. Texas Education Agency in 2000. In this case, retention was affirmed as a part of a larger remediation process that provided those students who failed any portion of the exam with extra instruction intended to help them overcome their deficiencies. The court accepted the State's position that school accountability and mandated remediation helped to address the effects of prior discrimination in Texas because the exam provided the state with an objective way to assess student mastery of the skills and knowledge. When the issue of racial and cultural bias was raised, the court ruled that the exam was not fundamentally unfair to minority students because it measured what it claimed to measure and what was tested was taught. Because the test was aligned with the curriculum, the court decided that it was a valid test that met accepted standards (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

What the states are relying upon in court is a conservative legal viewpoint that legitimizes high stakes testing for promotion so long as the tests comply with generally accepted standards for its use. These generally accepted standards have two central principles: 1.) a test score, like any other source of information about a student, is subject to error. Therefore, high stakes decisions like promotion should not be made automatically on the basis of a single test score (Shepard &Smith 1987; Darling Hammond & Falk, 1995) and 2.) a student's test score on a test should be used only in conjunction with other information sources in making such an important decisions as promotion to the next grade (Heubert & Hauser, 1999, p. 126). The state is clearly skating on thin ice here given that the generally accepted practice standards among psychometricians do not support the use of standardized tests as stand alone instruments to determine grade level promotion. Take for instance, it is generally accepted practice to supplement test scores with other assessment measures such as those performed by the teacher in the classroom (Heubert & Hauser, 1999; AERA, 1985, 1998; Joint Committee on Testing Practices, 1988). Moreover, there is legal precedence that could disrupt the states' position demonstrated by the decision made in the United States v. Fordice in1992, a ruling that rejected the use of one test score for placement decisions (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

A legal strategy that offers a glimmer of hope rests on the concept of disproportionality. What must be proven is that grade retention is disproportionate among protected minority groups when compared to whites and that this disproportionality will decrease if equally reliable alternative assessments are used (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). It is well documented that grade retention is disproportionate among blacks/hispanics when compared to whites by a margin of 2:1 (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). The data shows that by ages 10-11, ten percent more blacks and Hispanics are retained; by ages 15-17, forty to fifty percent more are retained and when students reach 15-17 years old fifty percent of blacks have fallen behind (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). There is a possibility that if the citizens of Georgia used disproportionality as a strategy, the state's decision to use the CRCT could be ruptured when it is shown that those adversely affected are disproportionately protected minorities. Yet, any exuberance must be tempered with a good dose of healthy cynicism.

In Texas, where the TAAS examination is used to determine promotion and retention, groups representing Texas minority students sued the state with the claim that the criterion referenced test discriminated against minority students in violation of the Due Process Clause of the 14th Amendment. What plaintiffs must show is that there is a preponderance of evidence that the policy of high stakes testing disproportionately has an adverse impact on a protected group, but this is not easy to determine. To prove adverse impact, proof must be presented via a study of the entire pool of test-takers that the success rate for members of a protected class is significantly lower than if a random sample was examined (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002). Fortuitously for the children of rural declining Georgia, there is data available that has been compiled by the University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics (2002) along with the State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability (2002) that meets the requirement for a study of the entire pool of test-takers showing that the success rate for members of a protected class is significantly lower than if a random sample was examined.

Who Gets Hurt the Most: Relationships Between Poverty, Race and the Criterion Referenced Competency Test Results from Rural Declining Georgia.

As a way to illuminate just how pernicious a law such as this will be to the poorest among us, we have conducted a study of school systems in the thirty-nine counties categorized as "declining rural counties" in Georgia, commonly referred to as the "black belt", so named because of the large number of African Americans who reside in them.

Our methodology compared county by county demographic data compiled by the University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics (University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics, 2002) with the State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability's (State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability, 2002) statistics for each district. Because there is compelling evidence that family background is the primary determinate for school achievement (Shepard & Smith, 1989; Elmore, Abelman & Furhman, 1996; Clotfelter & Ladd, 1996), our study includes an analysis of eight socio-economic categories; 1) percentage of population that is African American, 2) per capita income, 3) children in poverty, 4) African Americans in poverty, 5) female headed families in poverty, 6) un-wed births, 7) percentage of population without a high school diploma, and 8) percentage of African Americans without a high school diploma. Given that family background is such an important predictor of success, it is critical to supplement the school lunch index, the common statistic used to determine poverty in schools, with multiple economic and cultural measures.

When we first embarked on this study, two objectives were foremost: 1) compare the data gathered from these thirty-nine rural declining counties with statewide data; 2) present descriptive statistics that illuminate the relationship between CRCT scores and multiple socio-economic data. But, after we looked closer at the numbers, we discovered that in many of these counties, the school district data did not match up with countywide data. After comparing the county population demographics with the school systems data, it became apparent that many of these school systems have a discernable racial imbalance. Because this discovery suggests that race will matter in the decision to fail a child in Georgia, this research was expanded to include a discussion about the future of the rural African American community once the CRTC is implemented.

These thirty-nine counties form a constellation of poverty that slashes through the southern region of the state of Georgia. Forming contiguous pockets of counties in rural decline, the constellation extends in a chain from the far southwest corner to the eastern part of the state. As a way to boost the clarity of the research, we have chosen to present this data through a geographic journey whose starting point begins in the most concentrated area of poverty in southwest Georgia. Traveling across the state, this study will explore those counties that make up the belt buckle, a band that traverses along the mid-section of the state from west to east, followed by a discussion of those counties that are located in the east.

Southwest Rural Declining Counties

These twelve counties are found huddled along the Alabama and Florida border in the farthest southwest corner of the State of Georgia framed by the Chattahooche River to the west, Albany, Georgia as the closest city to the east and Columbus, Georgia to the north. There are no major roads cutting through nor are there towns of any substantial population. While there may never be an occasion for many travelers to ever pay the folks here a visit, these twelve counties are home to 92,400 Georgians, of which, 14,080 are children in the public school system.

Table 1
Southwest Rural Declining Counties
SES Data Compared to Georgia State SES Data

SES Attributes	Range in Southwest Rural Declining County Data	State Data
Population African American	47.0% to 61.5%	28.0%
1999 Per Capita Income	$16,153 to $22,270	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	27.2% to 47.4%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	33.7% to 53.0%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	34.0% to 70.2%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	42.9% to 65.9%	36.6%
No High School Diploma	46.4% to 60.9%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	56.6% to 70.6%	41.4%

As Table 1 shows, these twelve counties have two to three times more African American citizens than the rest of the state, most of whom live in poverty. Because school children here are likely to be poor and living in a household headed by an unwed mother who dropped out of school, the prospect for academic success is bleak. With up to seventy percent of the African American population lacking a high school degree, academic role models are hard to come by. When Table 2 is examined, it becomes apparent that all of these counties have reported similar socio-economic data.

Table 2
Southwest Georgia Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	Pop. African American	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African American in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High School Diploma	African American No High School Diploma
Baker	50.4%	$20,940	35.7%	35.0%	41.1%	41.7%	46.4%	56.6%
Calhoun	60.6%	$21,646	39.9%	46.0%	48.4%	55.2%	58.1%	58.1%
Clay	60.5%	$17,082	46.9%	50.6%	52.3%	57.8%	48.6%	63.4%
Early	48.1%	$21,115	42.2%	51.5%	61.7%	57.0%	45.9%	62.4%
Miller	28.9%	$22,270	34.8%	37.2%	41.2%	52.8%	42.6%	63.6%
Mitchell	47.9%	$21,392	35.8%	45.3%	53.8%	57.0%	45.1%	63.5%
Quitman	46.9%	$18,223	47.4%	52.3%	70.2%	63.6%	50.5%	68.8%
Randolph	59.5%	$18,298	43.3%	53.0%	55.8%	57.3%	50.7%	64.6%
Seminole	34.7%	$19,247	39.3%	47.5%	48.5%	49.7%	48.6%	60.9%
Stewart	61.5%	$18,744	38.0%	45.2%	56.4%	48.6%	60.9%	70.6%
Terrell	60.7%	$16,153	38.7%	42.4%	51.1%	65.9%	47.6%	65.3%
Webster	47.0%	$20,728	27.2%	33.7%	34.0%	42.9%	49.6%	65.2%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

A child attending school in these counties would have a one in three, at best a one in five, chance of passing the the third grade to the fourth grade once the CRCT decides his or her fate, a probability much worse than the rest of the state (Table 3).

Passing on to the sixth grade will be even more difficult, given that your odds are about 50/50 that you will pass the CRCT. While the scores statewide are improving in the sixth grade CRCT, school's scores are getting worse, ever widening the gap between rich and poor. If a child is so fortunate as to make it to the eighth grade in 2006, chances are better than even that he or she will not go to high school the next year because they failed the mathematics portion of the CRCT. As for comparing their school to the rest of the state (Tables 3 & 4), their school is in a free falling spiral, dropping significantly behind an abysmal statewide percentage of failing students.

Table 3

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Southwest Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	32%	31%	50%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+23%	+19%	+32%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	37%	47%	46%
Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+54%	+31%	+48%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	30%	44%	56%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+67%	+38%	+37%

Table 4
African American Southwest Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	37%	35%	57%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	0	+3%	+10

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	38%	47%	50%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%
Percent Change	+9%	-4%	+11%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	36%	51%	64%
African American Statewide	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+33%	+13%	+10%

With the exception of one of the twelve counties, Webster County, the racial balance of the schools when compared to the general population is egregiously disproportional. Calhoun County's population is sixty percent African American, yet Calhoun County Schools have too few whites to report, meaning that forty percent of the white children in Calhoun County attend private schools or are home-schooled. Sixty percent of the fourth graders, forty-four percent of the sixth graders and sixty percent of the eighth graders in Calhoun County failed at least one CRCT content area test.

Terrell County is the same story, only worse. Terrell is also sixty percent African American with no significant white representation in the schools. Having the lowest per capita income of around $16,000, Terrell County will face the fact that sixty-two percent of the fourth graders, sixty percent of the sixth graders and sixty-eight percent of the eighth graders will fail their respective grades.

Quitman County, where forty-six percent of the population is African American, has no whites attending the one elementary public school there. In Quitman County, teachers and principals will face the daunting responsibility for carrying out the failure sentence for eighty-one percent of the fourth grade class and sixty-five percent of the sixth grade.

The same situation obtains in Randolph County, with ninety-three percent of their children on the free lunch program; teachers and principals there will be forced to fail sixty percent of the fourth, sixth and eighth grade students. While Clay County CRCT scores are not as low as the others, this all African American school system, with a per capita income of $17,000 and sixty-five percent of African Americans in the county without a high school degree, will fail twenty-nine percent in the fourth grade, fifty-five percent in the sixth grade and because forty-eight percent of the eighth grade did not meet the mathematics standards of the CRCT, they too, will fail. The remaining schools in the counties, Baker, Early, Miller, Mitchell, Seminole and Stewart, are also disproportionately African American when compared to the general population. Most of the schools in these counties are two-thirds African American with county data showing a range of one-third to one-half of the population as African American.

Mid-State Rural Declining Counties

Fourteen counties form a contiguous swath of land beginning in Talbot County, situated between Columbus and Macon Georgia, southward along Interstate 75 to the Florida border, where Clinch and Ware Counties envelope the great Okeefenokee Swamp. These mid-state counties are home for 168,276 Georgians, 28,854 of whom are children in the public schools.

Table 5 paints a picture of economic and social crisis with data that shows per capita income well below the state average, resulting in significantly more children in poverty. As with the southwestern counties, school children in the mid-state counties are likely to have a parent who is a poor, unwed African American mother without a high school diploma.

Table 5
Mid-State Rural Declining Counties
SES Data Compared to State

SES Attributes	Range in Midstate Rural Declining County Data	State Data
Pop. African American	24.6% to 61.6%	28%
1999 Per Capita Income	$15,585 to $23,202	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	26.7% to 38.9%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	34.7% to 57.8%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	37% to 64.7%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	37.7% to 62.7%	36.6%
No High school Diploma	39.4% to 53.8%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	54% to 69.8%	41.4%

When each county is examined separately in Table 6, the relationship between race, poverty and educational attainment becomes clearer. Dooley, Macon, and Talbot, counties with the largest African American populations are the poorest; while Bleckley, Irwin, and Pulaski counties, with many fewer African Americans, are better off. These data suggest that this economic divide persists because of the lack of educational attainment among African Americans. When the column "African American No High School" is examined in Table 6, the data describe a population that has, for the most part, found it difficult to graduate from high school. Ten of these fourteen counties have anywhere from sixty to seventy percent of the African American population without a high school degree; the remaining four counties have fifty to sixty percent without a diploma.

Table 6
Mid-State Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	Pop. African Am.	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African Am. in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High school Diploma	African Am. No High School Diploma
Bleckley	24.6%	$21,771	26.7%	42.0%	37.0%	41.8%	39.7%	66.7%
Clinch	29.5%	$18,379	32.9%	40.9%	53.6%	49.5%	53.8%	62.6%
Cook	29.1%	$18,276	30.4%	39.2%	42.7%	37.7%	44.8%	54.0%
Dooley	49.5%	$18,690	37.0%	50.9%	55.6%	54.1%	45.3%	60.1%
Irwin	25.9%	$20,832	29.8%	47.9%	50.3%	40.0%	46.9%	62.4%
Lanier	25.6%	$17,675	34.1%	34.4%	54.2%	39.0%	48.8%	62.1%
Macon	59.5%	$19,927	37.1%	39.8%	49.3%	62.7%	46.3%	57.3%

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Pulaski	34.3%	$23,202	29.5%	48.5%	50.1%	53.9%	39.4%	64.2%
Taylor	42.6%	$18,774	38.2%	49.0%	57.6%	47.7%	48.8%	69.8%
Telfair	38.4%	$18,477	35.2%	41.2%	49.9%	45.3%	47.9%	65.7%
Turner	41.0%	$17,831	38.6%	57.8%	64.7%	53.5%	44.7%	64.3%
Talbot	61.6%	$15,385	34.1%	34.7%	46.4%	48.8%	43.8%	58.2%
Ware	28.0%	$19,738	33.7%	42.5%	41.7%	45.2%	38.9%	51.4%
Wilcox	36.2%	$19,834	38.9%	56.2%	61.4%	51.2%	47.2%	69.6%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

The socio-economic divide between Whites and African Americans in the declining rural counties of Georgia will surely be exacerbated through the implementation of the CRCT mandates. Because of retention in the third, fifth and eighth grades, African American children will be systematically encouraged eventually to drop out of school, resulting in the inability to command wages that might lift them out of poverty. Supporting the assumption that income is proportional to test scores, Tables 6 & 7 suggest that there is a relationship between CRCT test scores and the income earned by African Americans. When Mid-State African American CRCT scores are compared to statewide figures, the data show that poorer African Americans living in rural declining counties do worse than those African Americans who live in counties with higher income levels. Further, there is evidence that African American students who live in places where more of the African American population has earned a high school diploma do better on the CRCT than counties with less educational attainment.

Table 7
African American Mid-State Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Mid-State Counties	48%	44%	61%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	+30%	+29%	+17%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Mid-State Counties	49%	59%	48%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%
Percent Change	+40%	+20%	+7%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Mid-State Counties	34%	49%	64%
African American Statewide Counties	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+26%	+9%	+10%

The poverty to failure equation is repeated in Table 8 when the aggregate Mid-State CRCT scores show much lower results than the statewide data.

Table 8
Mid-State Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Mid-State Counties	36%	33%	45%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+36%	+27%	+18%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Mid-State Counties	33%	46%	34%

Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+37%	+28%	+10%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Mid-State Counties	25%	39%	48%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+39%	+22%	+17%

Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Consider the Eastern Rural Declining Counties. These fourteen counties stretch vertically southward from counties that lie northwest of Augusta to rural areas southwest of Savannah. While these counties have very similar socio-economic data commensurate with very low CRCT test scores (Tables 9 and 10), some data are particularly noteworthy. Screven County's eighty percent mathematics failure in the eighth grade for African American students means that eight out of ten African Americans will not go to high school once the CRCT becomes the arbiter for promotion. Hancock County's statistics show that eighty percent of the children born in 1999 in the county live in single parent households, meaning that the kindergarten class in 2004 would have eight out of ten children living with a single parent.

Table 9
Eastern Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Mid-State Counties	38%	38%	49%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+46%	+46%	+29%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Eastern Counties	34%	47%	37%
Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+42%	+31%	+19%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Eastern Counties	27%	46%	51%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+50%	+44%	+24%

Table 10
African American Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Eastern Counties	47%	45%	61%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	+27%	+32%	+17%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Eastern Counties	44%	57%	47%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%

Percent Change	+25%	+16%	+4%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Eastern Counties	35%	54%	63%
African American Statewide Counties	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+30%	+20%	+9%

When Tables 11 and 12 are compared to the southeastern and mid-state counties, there is a distinct outlier, Glascock County, a county with a small African American population of 8.3%, which is not consistent with the data from the other thirty-eight counties. Located in the center of a chain of five rural declining counties, Glascock County stands out as the only rural declining county that has SES and CRCT data better than, or comparable to, the State averages (Table 13). Because Glascock County's per capita income is in line with the other rural declining counties, the variable that confounds the repeated pattern of poverty and low CRCT scores is whiteness (Tables 14 &15). Not only will the vast majority of Glascock County students be promoted, about one third of the CRCT test takers actually exceeded the standards, a statistic not seen in any of the other thirty-eight county data. When the data from the other four counties in the chain are compared, Glascock County's relatively low unwed birth rate appears to reduce the number of children in poverty, suggesting that the "children in poverty" and "un-wed mothers" statistics may also be predictors for CRCT achievement.

Glascock County's segregation from its neighbors leads to another assumption germane to this research, that the CRCT Test creates a new kind of discrimination - one that hides behind the appearance of fair testing to mask persistent inequalities in the quality of education that rural African American children receive in Georgia (McNeil, 2000). Walter Haney, of Boston College's Center for the Study of Testing, warns that, "The consequences of standardized tests for Black and Hispanic students are clearly criminal from an educational point of view. It remains to be seen whether they are criminal under the United States Constitution" (McNeil, 2000, p. 231).

Table 11
Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties SES Data Compared to State

SES Attributes	**Range in Eastern Rural Declining County Data**	**State Data**
Pop. African American	8.3% - 77.8%	28%
1999 Per Capita Income	$16,787--$21,565	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	22.3% - 45.4%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	25.8% - 54.4%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	29.4% - 64.2%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	29.4% - 80.6%	36.6%
No High school Diploma	38% - 57.2%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	54% - 80.6%	41.4%

Table 12
Eastern Georgia Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	**Pop. African Am.**	**1999 Per Capita Income**	**1997 Children in Poverty**	**1989 African Am. in Poverty**	**1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty**	**1999 Unwed Births**	**No High school Diploma**	**African Am. No High School Diploma**
Emanuel	33.3%	$18,336	36.6%	46.1%	43.5%	54.6%	47.4%	65.7%
Glascock	8.3%	$19,496	22.3%	29.6%	29.4%	27.3%	49.7%	80.6%
Hancock	77.8%	$16,787	37.4%	33.8%	49.6%	80.6%	50.5%	54.8%
Jefferson	56.3%	$17,673	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Jenkins	40.5%	$18,174	37.4%	46.8%	53%	57.6%	50.1%	71.2%
Johnson	37%	$18,845	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Screven	45.3%	$19,181	31.9%	37.6%	52.5%	55.3%	41.1%	56.2%
Taliaferro	60.3%	$17,383	45.4%	44.1%	52.5%	67.9%	51.4%	65.6%
Tatnall	31.4%	$19,943	34.6%	42.7%	50.3%	44.3%	42.6%	56.9
Treutlen	33.1%	$16,499	37.5%	47.3%	48.2%	47.1%	47.3%	56.4%
Warren	59.5%	$17,664	39.9%	44%	56%	69.7%	57.2%	68%
Wheeler	33.2%	$18,864	37.9%	54.4%	64.2%	32.5%	43.3%	54%

Wilkenson	40.7%	$19,614	27.1%	25.8%	39.7%	45.7%	38%	48.4%
Wilkes	43.1%	$21,565	29.4%	37.1%	40.5%	50.8%	43.4%	62%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

Table 13
Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties SES Data

County	Pop. African Am.	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African Am. in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High school Diploma	African Am. No High School Diploma
Glascock	8.3%	$19,496	22.3%	29.6%	29.4%	27.3%	49.7%	80.6%
Hancock	77.8%	$16,787	37.4%	33.8%	49.6%	80.6%	50.5%	54.8%
Jefferson	56.3%	$17,673	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Taliaferro	60.3%	$17,383	45.4%	44.1%	52.5%	67.9%	51.4%	65.6%
Warren	59.5%	$17,664	39.9%	44%	56%	69.7%	57.2%	68%

Table 14
Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties CRCT Data

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	21%	27%	30%
Hancock	33%	35%	62%
Jefferson	46%	43%	56%
Taliaferro	60%	57%	65%
Warren	49%	35%	75%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	23%	34%	20%
Hancock	40%	51%	41%
Jefferson	37%	51%	43%
Taliaferro	42%	75%	46%
Warren	60%	67%	66%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	11%	22%	19%
Hancock	25%	42%	66%
Jefferson	35%	53%	63%
Taliaferro	47%	59%	76%
Warren	19%	39%	63%

Table 15
African American Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties CRCT Data

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too Few to Report	Too Few to Report	Too Few to Report
Hancock	32%	34%	62%
Jefferson	54%	50%	65%
Taliaferro	61%	56%	67%
Warren	46%	34%	74%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too few to report	Too few to report	Too few to report
Hancock	40%	51%	41%
Jefferson	45%	58%	49%
Taliaferro	48%	81%	48%
Warren	60%	66%	65%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too few to report	Too few to report	Too few to report
Hancock	26%	43%	67%
Jefferson	36%	56%	67%
Taliaferro	50%	63%	81%
Warren	19%	39%	63%

Giving Up on Going to High School

Overwhelmingly, African Americans in Rural Declining Counties are at much greater risk of failing the fourth, sixth and eighth grade CRCT than African Americans who live in cities, suburbs or rural growth counties. Yet, those most at risk are eighth graders who attend all-Black schools in the rural declining counties. Because they failed one or more of the content area tests, chances are that most of the eighth graders in these ten counties will not go on to high school. Clearly, the worst performing category was mathematics with only forty-four percent eligible to move up to the ninth grade. If the law were effective today, Taliaferro County would send four students to high school leaving thirteen behind, Talbot County would send only eleven, holding back forty-four. Calhoun fails thirty-three of their fifty-seven eighth graders, Clay County retains half of their thirty-two children. In the larger counties, Hancock retains eighty of one hundred twenty-one as Terrell County keeps ninety-one of their one hundred thirty-three eighth graders in middle school. Ten of the thirty-nine Rural Declining Counties fall into the 'all-Black' school system category with six of these, Calhoun, Quitman, Clay, Randolph, Stewart and Terrell, being located in the Southwest section of the State. The others, Taliaferro, Hancock and Warren surround all white Glascock County in the east with Talbot County being the lone all-Black school district in the Mid-State region.

Because each of these counties has its own school district, these schools are not considered illegally segregated. Drawing school district lines by county does not, superficially at least, appear to be gerrymandering given that each school district corresponds to an established county. Yet, segregation is, nonetheless, the result and the children in these schools suffer all the doisadvantages of a segregated education.

Future Consequences

Being the most impoverished counties in the state, these Rural Declining school systems faced formidable challenges before the legislation to end social promotion was passed. With an average of twenty-five percent of their populations under the age of seventeen, these counties have large numbers of children who need enormous resources to overcome obstacles to academic success. What makes the "Declining Rural Counties" of Georgia's plight unique is that the children who attend schools in these counties will be denied de facto their property rights to a public education when they drop out of school as a result of the practice of grade retention. From the data presented here, most of these counties already have very high drop out rates. What percentage will the drop out rate reach when thirty-five to fifty percent of all fourth, sixth and eighth graders will be retained in grade? The question that ought to be asked is "Is this legislation really intended to improve education or is it a strategy to reduce the State's financial obligation to the rural poor?" It is clear that failing masses of poor children will not improve pedagogy because punishing children with retention does not change teaching. What we do know is that the association between retention and dropping out is noted consistently throughout educational research. Without a doubt, flunking children increases the risk of dropping out of school (Frymier, 1997). Because these thirty-nine counties are very poor, and the tax base available for public schools is small, the State of Georgia compensates for this revenue deficiency by making exceptionally large contributions to these counties. Thus, while not stated as policy, it cannot be ignored that the CRCT will most likely save the State a considerable amount of money by reducing the number of students in schools in these counties.

While we dispute claims that the CRCT is a valid instrument to determine if a child should be retained in grade, we do not dispute that the CRCT is ironically a very reliable measure of economic resources (Kohn, 2001). As legislators extol the virtues of achieving academic excellence by using a "fair" test, like the CRCT, to determine if a child passes or fails, some wonder if the real agenda is a subtle form of class warfare intended to institutionalize intergenerational immobility and social stratification (Ohanian, 1999), a kind of violence that leaves behind the children with the least resources (Spring, 2000). Given the correspondence between the economic system and the role that the institution of education plays in perpetuating the class stratification of society (Bowles & Gintis, 1976), this legislation guarantees that the social reproduction of the society in rural Georgia will be preserved. The claim that flunking these children is for their own good is unconscionable, considering the dire social and economic punishments that will be imposed upon them. Ohanian derided such accountability measures "as cynical as handing out menus to homeless people in the name of eradicating hunger" (Ohanian, 1999, p. 31).

Chelsea's Story: Putting a Face on the Data

We first met Chelsea at the garage where we have our car fixed; it was about 3:30 p.m. on a sweltering spring day in rural South Georgia. Her great-grandmother had just picked her up from school to bring her to the garage to finish out the workday. Great-grandmother sat down at her desk where she worked as the receptionist and bookkeeper for the family owned garage. As I waited for my car to be repaired, we both asked the light brown skinned six-year-old with big brown eyes and braided black hair if she enjoyed her day at school. Chelsea smiled broadly, "Yes!" she exuberantly replied as she showed us the cover of a book she brought home. From all appearances, Chelsea was a healthy, well-loved first grader. But, this has not always been the case for Chelsea. Just recently, her great-grandmother took legal measures to have Chelsea taken from her mother after a man who was living in the home broke Chelsea's arm while trying to spank her. After he broke Chelsea's arm, the boyfriend badly burned her baby brother because he was crying too loudly. This abuse by one of Chelsea's mother's boyfriends was one of many horrors that this beautiful little girl had to endure over the course of her short life. As great-grandmother tells it, her grandson had a short affair with Chelsea's mother, an affair that brought Chelsea into the world. After her grandson left Chelsea's mother, great-grandmother felt obligated to support Chelsea in any way that she could. The offer to give financial support and emotional support was a selfless act of love given that great-grandmothers' extended family is barely making ends meet. In addition to the financial hardship, it was a painful situation for great-grandmother to witness the cruelty inflicted on Chelsea. Chelsea's mother was involved with too many men and had too many substance addictions to care for her children. While great-grandmother reported to the social service system many times that Chelsea was being neglected and abused, Chelsea remained with her mother. It took an act of violence against the children for the system to intervene on Chelsea's behalf. Even after the occurrence of such crimes committed against helpless children, Chelsea must still comply with a visitation plan that includes overnight stays with her mother.

Behind in School. After a conversation with great-grandmother later in the Spring, we became aware that Chelsea did not do very well academically during the year. As a result of her poor academic performance, due to excessive absences in the beginning of the year, Chelsea's teacher recommended that she repeat the grade. Already retained once in kindergarten, Chelsea's great-grandmother was reluctant to hold her back again. great-grandmother felt that by Chelsea now being in a loving and secure home, the prospect that she will catch up to her peers is promising.

Chelsea's teacher is basing her recommendation to retain on the failing grades that Chelsea received during the school year. Yet, if the Iowa Test of Basic Skills and a psychological assessment conducted at the behest of the Department of Family Services are considered in the decision, it is clear that Chelsea's poor grades were the result of poor attendance rather than cognitive ability. While Chelsea was absent for most class time when she lived with her mother, her scores were not as low on the ITBS as one might expect, and in some linguistic areas, her scores were high. As a result of high scores in certain verbal skills, Chelsea scored a composite word analysis in the sixty-fifth percentile. Chelsea's overall math abilities were average, but her composite math score was low because of a very low score on the computation section of the test.

In support of the decision to promote, Chelsea scored at a grade level of 2.2 in reading and 2.0 in math on the Kaufman Test of Educational Achievement in a low stress testing environment. The Kaufman Test showed that Chelsea is beginning to read independently and can add and subtract simple numbers. As an indicator of her mental ability, the Weschler Intelligence test showed that Chelsea is a child of average intelligence. The psychologist who observed Chelsea noted that she was a cheerful child with no signs of depression. The drawings she drew for the psychologist showed a loving family situated around a sturdy tree and a solid house. The psychologist concluded that Chelsea was now in a loving family that could be trusted for support.

The assessment went on the note that Chelsea is not a behavioral problem in school, she has many friends and is openly curious about new things. She is articulate, attentive, with good concentration and perseverance. Chelsea does not have any violent tendencies and, it is worth noting, that in light of her own physical abuse, she is quoted as saying that it is wrong to hurt anyone else. Having a birthday in October of 1993 makes Chelsea one of the oldest in her first grade class. If her great-grandmother had not insisted that Chelsea be promoted, holding her back again may have compounded her risk for dropping out of school later in life. Chelsea is progressing very well in the second grade and her chances for success are bright. Yet, another story could have unfolded if a standardized test was the arbiter for her future.

Preventing Failure with Changes in Education Policy

The fact that many school systems are overwhelmed by the increased number of under prepared students and use social promotion as a necessity, the public backlash should not be directed to testing and retention as the answers. Retention policies should be highly suspect given the lack of demonstrated effectiveness and prevalent bias against certain groups of children. Focusing public attention on standardized testing directs attention away from input issues

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

that can substantially effect quality education and places the blame instead on students and teachers. Because the negative effects of failure on children's achievement, motivation, self-concept, and graduation rates are so well known, one of the most important decisions in a young person's life should not be based on the outcome of a standardized test score alone. Rather than use high-stakes testing, schools can employ less costly strategies that are proven to support children's achievement, thus avoiding the social promotion/retention issue altogether.

Smaller class sizes, especially in the primary grades, are frequently cited in the literature as promoting effective learning. "When class size goes down, learning goes up. It improves student achievement, particularly in the early grades and among students who are disadvantaged due to their socioeconomic background" (DiMaria, 1999, p. 6). In small classes, students who may be a risk can easily be identified and therefore receive additional support throughout the year (DiMaria, 1999).

If children are grouped in un-graded or mixed-age classrooms groupings, classrooms where the age span is greater than one year, children have the opportunity to "progress according to their individual rate of learning and development without being compelled to meet age-related achievement expectations" (DiMaria, 1999, p. 6). When learning takes place in un-graded or mixed-aged classrooms, children will be able to advance to the next developmental level at their own pace without the restriction of grade-level labeling (DiMaria, 1999, p.7).

We also advocate that schools should provide full-time kindergarten (NAECS, 2000) as well as offer alternative educational settings such as preschool, after school and summer school programs to assist those students that are lagging behind in certain academic areas (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000). These programs are critical for students who are economically disadvantaged and for whom English is a second language.

When children are assessed, promotion decisions should be based on multiple assessments, not on a single test or a single administration of a test (Miller, 2000). And, when standardized testing is employed, the results are best used to identify problems so that swift remediation and curricular changes can be quickly implemented. (Miller, 2001). More preventative measures and less punishment in the form of grade retention should guide education policy decisions to give extra assistance to children found to be lagging behind (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000).

Considering the Cost of Monetary and Human Capital

Most politicians would argue that the cost of programs to improve teaching would be too expensive to implement. However, to get a clearer picture of the short and long term cost that will be incurred after the tougher retention policy takes effect, we must look at two factors, one a short term and the other a long term societal cost. In the short term, district operating budgets will be challenged by an increase in expenses when one considers that the cost of retaining a child for one year increases the educational cost for that child by eight percent (Foster, 1993). Longer-term costs are associated with the expense associated with the inter-generational poverty that will be perpetuated as retention encourages more students to drop out of school. According to a study completed by Grissom and Shepard (1989), an annual retention increase of five to seven percent will result in a cumulative increase of twenty percent to the present drop out rate.

Proponents of retention might counter these two points by speculating that holding children back will improve their academic achievement with the reasoning that this improvement in academic skill will keep them in school. Yet, research paints a completely opposite picture with evidence that being overage in school plays a larger role in the decision to leave school than does academic achievement. Even when retained children do better academically, they drop out anyway. On average, the drop out rate is thirteen percent higher for over-aged children than the drop out rate for normal aged children (Grissom, & Shepard, 1989). Initially, retention advocates will boast that the drop out rate has been lowered as a result of the get tough accountability policy. But keep in mind that the first few graduating classes will have all the at-risk students removed. It is also important to look beyond high school drop out rates because many of the students who were retained will leave school before they enter high school.

After an analysis of the CRCT results, it is apparent that the rate of retention will rise dramatically, precipitating a proportional increase in per student costs. To be fair, schools should only be held accountable for factors they can control, and, therefore, the decision to retain or promote a student should be made at the local level where socio-economic factors can be taken into account (Clotfelter & Ladd, 1996). In addition, the state of Georgia will also have to bear the burden of future societal costs if and when the student drops out of school. Is it not more cost effective to seek long-term lasting cures for poor student performance while students are in school rather than deal with the consequences later?

The costs do not stop here. As we discussed earlier, school systems need to be aware of the legal ramifications of retention and the potential for litigation. Not only could parents bring litigation that schools did not provide adequate educational resources for their children to succeed (D. W. Albritten, Executive Director, Georgia Association of Educators, personal communication, November 24, 2001), they could also challenge unfair school policies.

Recommendations

Not only is there a preponderance of evidence that there is no academic benefit from retention, such practices also appear to be harmful to the social and emotional development of children. Since retention policies do not address the needs of under-prepared children, it is recommended that the limited resources of school systems be redirected toward the above listed alternative programs so that education is more responsive to what is best for children, not for institutions, politicians, or professionals. In the state of Georgia, several of these alternatives, such as full-time preschool and kindergarten, and smaller class sizes, have already been proposed or implemented. Instead of using high-stakes testing, Georgia's educational system needs to provide a prevention and remediation program during the school year rather than wait until after the student fails the criterion test.

Moreover, education reform decisions need to be grounded in research rather than influenced by public demand for more stringent educational standards. If higher academic standards are the goal, then reform programs must speak to the reasons why student do poorly and offer meaningful assistance to improve learning outcomes. The educational community can no longer afford to ignore the consequences of policies and practices which disproportionately assign the burden of responsibility to the child rather than to the program, a reproach that places the child at risk of failure by generating apathy toward school and personal demoralization.

Only when the stakeholders abandon the slogan that greater retention means more rigorous standards can schools begin to meet the pressing needs of children. By taking alternative paths away from retention, schools become more accountable to the holistic needs of the child.

References

American Educational Research Association. (1985). *Standards for educational and psychological testing.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychological Association.

American Educational Research Association. (1998). *Draft standards for educational and psychological testing.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychological Association.

American Federation of Teachers (AFT). *Eliminating social promotion.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.aft.org/edissues/socialpromotion/eliminat.htm

Barnes, R. *Governor Barnes' 2001 Education reform initiative.* Retrieved September 21, 2001, from http://www.ganet.org/governor/2001_ed_remarks.html

Berliner, D.C. & Biddle, B.J. (1995). *The manufactured crisis: Myths, fraud and attack on the America's public schools.* New York: Longman.

Bloom, B.S. (1956). *Taxonomy of educational objectives: The classification of educational goals.* New York, NY: Longmans.

Bowles, S., & Gintis, H. (1976). Schooling in Capitalist America. *Education reform and the contradictions of economic life.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Chall, J. (2000). *The academic achievement challenge: What really works in the classroom?* New York: Guilford Press.

Clotfelter, C. T, & Ladd, H. F. (1996). In H. F. Ladd (Ed.), *Holding schools accountable: Performanced based reform in education* (pp. 23-64). Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.

Coleman, J., Campbell, J., Wood, A., Weinfeld, F., & York, R. (1966). *Equality of educational opportunity.* Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Office of Education.

Consortium for Policy Research in Education. (1990). *Repeating grades in school: Current practice and research evidence.* (Report No. RB-04-1/90). CPRE Policy Briefs (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED323585).

Cruickshank, D. R., Jenkins, D. B., & Metcalf, K. K. (2002). *The act of teaching.* New York: McGraw-Hill Higher Education.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1998, November). Avoiding both grade retention and social promotion. *The Education Digest, 64*, 48-53.

Darling-Hammond, L., & Faulk, B. (1995). Using standards and assessments to support student learning: Alternatives to grade retention. *In Report to the Chancellor's Committee on Grade Transition Standards.* National Center for

Restructuring Education, Schools and Teaching. New York: Teachers College Press, Columbia University.

Denton, D. (2001, January). *Finding alternatives to failure: Can states end social promotion and reduce retention rates?* (Report No. UD 034 039). Atlanta, GA: Southern Regional Education Board. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED451268).

Deskbook encyclopedia of American school law. (2002). Birmingham: Oakwood Legal & Business Publishing.

DiMaria, M. J. (1999). *Issues of social promotion*. (Report No. PS 028 203). New York, NY: New York City Board of Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service, No. ED437208).

Doll, W., Jr. (1993). *A post-modern perspective on curriculum*. New York, NY: Teachers College Press.

Eisner, C. (2000). *Ending social promotion: Early lessons learned. A report on early lessons learned in the efforts to end social promotion in the Nation's public schools.* (Report No. UD 033 891). Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED448234).

Ellmore, R.F., Abelmann, C.H., & Furhman, S. (1996). The new accountability in State education reform: Policy, practice and performance. In H. F. Ladd (Ed.), *Holding schools accountable: Performance-based reform in education* (pp. 65-98). Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institute.

Ellwein, M. C., & Glass, G. V (1989). Ending social promotion in Waterford: Appearances and reality. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 151-173). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Foster, J.E. (1993, Fall). Retaining children in grade. *Childhood Education, 70*, 38-43.

Frymier, J. (1997, February/March). Characteristics of students retained in grade. *The High School Journal, 80*, 184-190.

Georgia Department of Education. *Education Reform Initiative*. Retrieved August 8, 2001, from http://www.doe.k12.ga.us/sla/ret/General-CRCT.html

Georgia State Board of Education (SBOE). *Official Code 20-2-283.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.ganet.state.ga.us/services/ocode.htm

Grissom, J.B., & Shepard, L.A. (1989). Repeating and dropping out of school. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 34-63). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Haney, W. (2000). The myth of the Texas miracle in education. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(41). Available at http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n41/.

Heubert, J. & Hauser, R. (Eds.) (1999). *High stakes: Testing for tracking, promotion, and graduation*. Committee on Appropriate Test Use. Washington, DC: National Academy Press.

Holmes, C.T. (1989). Grade level retention effects: A meta-analysis of research studies. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking Grades: Research and Policies on Retention* (pp. 16-33). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Kohn, A. (2000). *The case against standardized testing: Raising scores, ruining the schools.* Portsmouth, NH: Heinemann.

Ladd, H. F. (1996). *Holding schools accountable: Performanced based reform in education.* Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.

Malone, G., & Bowser, P. (1998, March). Debate: Can retention be good for a student? *NEA Today, 16*, 43-45.

Miller, D. W. (2001, March). Scholars say high-stakes tests deserve a failing grade. *The Chronicle of Higher Education, 47*, A14-A16.

Miller, J. (1983). *The educational spectrum: Orientations to curriculum*. New York, NY: Longman.

National Association of Early Childhood Specialists in State Departments of Education (NAECS) (2000). *Still!*

Unacceptable trends in kindergarten entry and placement. A position statement. (Report No. PS 028 611). Chicago, IL: ERIC Clearinghouse. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED445775).

National Education Association (NEA). *NEA Today Online.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.nea.org/neatoday/0003/presview.html

McNeil, L. M. (2000). *Contradictions of reform: The educational costs of standardized testing.* New York: Routledge.

Nieto, S. (1992). Racism, discrimination, and expectations of students' acheivement. *Affirming Diversity.* New York, NY: Longman.

Ohanian,S. (1999). *One size fits few: The folly of educational standards.* Portsmouth, NH: Heinemann.

Owings, W.A., & Magliaro, S. (1998, September). Grade retention: A history of failure. *Educational Leadership, 56,* 86-88.

Paratore, J. R., & McCormack, R.L. (2000). Responding to research in grouping: Flexible grouping in the middle grades. In K. Wood, & T. Dickinson (Eds.), *Promoting literacy in grades 4-9* (pp. 402-420). Boston, MA: Allyn and Bacon.

Peterson, P. L. (1989). Alternatives to student retention: New images of the learner, the teacher and classroom learning. In L. Shepard, & M. L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 174-201). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Reardon, S. (1996, April*). Eighth grade minimum competency testing and early high school dropout patterns.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Research Association. New York, NY.

Salzer, J. (2001, August 16). Tests show student gains, but many still behind. *The Atlanta Constitution,* pp. A1, C1, C4.

Shepard, L.A., & Smith, M.L. (1989). *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention.* Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Shepard, L.A., Smith, M.L. & Marion, S.F. (1996). Failed evidence on grade retention. *Psychology in the Schools, 33* (3), 251-261.

Smith, M.L. (1989). Teachers' beliefs about retention. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 132-150). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Spring, J. (2000). *American education (9th ed.).* Boston, MA: McGraw-Hill Higher Education.

State of Georgia Office of Educational Assessment. *Georgia's report card.* Retrieved December 27, 2001, from http://www.ga-oea.org

Thompson, C.L., & Cunningham, E.K. (2000). *Retention and social promotion: Research and implications for policy.* (Report No. UD 033 924). New York, NY: ERIC Clearinghouse on Urban Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED449241).

Tomchin, E.M., & Impara, J.C. (1992, Spring). Unraveling teachers' beliefs about grade retention. *American Educational Research Journal, 29,* 199-223.

United States Bureau of the Census. *School enrollment 2000.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.census.gov/population/www/socdemo/school.html

University of Georgia, Department of Housing and Consumer Economics. *Georgia facts.* Retrieved January 5, 2002, from http://www.ga-facts.net

Walberg, H., & Fowler, W. (1987). Expenditure and size efficiency for public school districts. *Educational Researcher, 16,* 5-13.

About the Authors

Donald R. Livingston, Ed.D.
Email: dlivingston@lagrange.edu

Don Livingston is an Assistant Professor in the Education Department at LaGrange College in LaGrange, Georgia. Don completed his doctorate at Georgia Southern University in Curriculum Studies in 2000.

Sharon M. Livingston
Email: livingston_Sharon@hotmail.com

Sharon is a doctoral fellow at Georgia State University in Atlanta, Georgia where she is pursuing the Ph. D. in Educational Policy Studies.

Their research interests include student performance, retention policy and teacher quality. They are presently engaged in research that examines the relationships between teacher educational levels and student achievement in high poverty rural counties in Georgia.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 621 times since December 6, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives

Volume 10 Number 49 **December 6, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

Failing Georgia: The Case Against the Ban on Social Promotion

Donald R. Livingston
LaGrange College

Sharon M. Livingston
Georgia State University

Citation: Livingston, D., Livingston, S. (2002, December 6). Failing Georgia: The Case Against the Ban on Social Promotion, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(49). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n49/.

Abstract
Our analysis begins with an examination of the state of Georgia's rationale for the decision regarding social promotion that was based on the perceived views that teachers have on the issue. Research suggests, however, that teachers hold contradictory opinions concerning the use of standardized tests for high stakes decisions, such as promotion, and are not aware of the consequences most children suffer when they fail a grade. Following a discussion that challenges the claims of success in Chicago, Baltimore, and Texas, we explore the viability of choosing litigation as a strategy to stop the use of high stakes tests given the adverse impact they have on protected minorities. From a study of the thirty-nine poorest counties in rural Georgia, the relationships between poverty, race and the Georgia Criterion Referenced Competency Test Results suggest that these tests do have an enormously disparate impact on impoverished African American children. Because chances for educational attainment will be severely limited by this test, most African American children will be discouraged from achieving a high school diploma. As a way to put a face on the data, a case study of a young girl who would probably fail her grade in school if the law was enforced is presented followed by recommendations that argue for changes in education policy and teaching. Rather than mandate a ban on social promotion, the state of Georgia should pursue improvement of socio-economic conditions, education policy and pedagogy.

For many, it is simple common sense to fail a child who does not pass the academic requirements for promotion to the next grade. For others, making children accountable for their academic performance is part of an overall strategy to raise the quality of education. Responding to the public and political call for educational reform and accountability, Georgia and Texas, Baltimore and Chicago along with many other school districts have decided to end the practice of social promotion in hopes of improving the quality of education (Eisner, 2000)

Defining social promotion is somewhat difficult because the meaning behind the practice has become so infused with professional, political and academic agendas that it seems impossible to reach common ground. On one side are those who deride the practice as promoting a student from one grade to the next regardless of academic achievement; they claim that this is a policy that short-changes the child, teacher, school and society (DiMaria, 1999). On the other side of the debate are those who point to the abundance of research that overwhelmingly suggests that keeping a child with his or her peer group is the best insurance for high school graduation (Darling-Hammond, 1998). Countering this plethora of research is the assumption that a high school diploma has little value if the student is simply passed along and given a degree without meeting specific criteria for graduation (Eisner, 2000). As evidence of the rift in the stakeholders' views, the two major teacher organizations cannot agree on the subject. The more conservative American Federation of Teachers (AFT) shudders at the thought that school districts ignore policies and laws that ban the practice of social promotion by stating that this rampant disregard creates a huge class of ill-prepared and unmotivated students (AFT, 2001). While conceding that social promotion without intervention is deleterious to a learner, the National Education Association (NEA) is on record as stating that retaining students is even more pernicious (NEA, 2001).

Examining Georgia's Decision to End Social Promotion

As a top priority for his education reform agenda, Governor Roy Barnes urged the legislature to end social promotion during the State of the State address in February 2001. Governor Barnes proclaimed, "the time has come to end social promotion in our schools" (Barnes, 2001). Reasoning that social promotion is unfair to teachers, Governor Barnes charged the legislature with passing a bill that would require every student to pass an exit examination before being promoted to the next grade (Barnes, 2001). Using the rationale that schools and teachers are held accountable for competency, the Governor insisted that no student be promoted to the next grade level until proficiency in the subject matter has been assessed with a criterion based standardized test (Barnes, 2001). In Governor Barnes' words,

> Now, nobody wants to have to hold a child back in school. It is difficult for them to be separated from their peers. But if some children are still behind even after we have taken every step available to give them extra help--after school programs, alternative programs, special reading programs and so on--we owe it to them to make this difficult choice... . But mostly, we should do it in fairness to those students who are passing through our system today without learning what they need to know. By promoting a child who is not really ready, we say, 'It's OK if you don't learn.' Well, I say, it is not okay (Barnes, 2001).

On March 21, 2001, the legislature of Georgia complied with the wishes of the Governor by passing into law a bill which mandated that students in grades third, fifth, and eighth must pass a standardized examination to move up to the next grade, beginning with third graders in 2004. Children who enter third grade in 2003 would be required to pass a state reading test, while those matriculating the fifth grade in 2004 and eighth grade in 2005 would be required to pass both a state reading and mathematics exit examination (State Board of Education [SBOE], 2001).

A second chance to pass the test is allowed if the child fails to pass the test on the first attempt. If the child should fail a second time, a grade placement committee is convened "composed of the principal or the principal's designee, the student's parent or guardian, and the teacher of the subject of a test on which the student failed to perform satisfactorily" (SBOE, 2001). It is the initial charge of the grade placement committee to provide some sort of accelerated instruction to prepare the child for the third test. After three attempts, the official code directs the school to retain the student. At this point in the process, the parent(s) or legal guardian may appeal to the grade placement committee to permit the child to move up to the next grade level. Citing from Official Code 20-2-283, "The grade placement committee may decide in favor of a student's promotion only if the committee concludes, using standards adopted by the local board of education, that if promoted and given accelerated instruction, the student is likely to perform at grade level. A student may not be promoted on the basis of the grade placement committee's decision unless that decision is unanimous" (SBOE, 2001).

Teachers Views on Social Promotion

Governor Barnes' contention that teachers are critical of social promotion may have some credibility when the research is examined. Tomchin and Impara (1992) published a study showing eighty-two percent of elementary school teachers believed that retention helps children prevent future failure and seventy percent thought that the threat of failure motivates children to succeed. A whopping ninety-eight percent stated that they would never rule out the decision to fail a child (Tomchin & Impara, 1992). DiMaria (1999), in a study of New York City teachers, found similar results. In this 1999 study, sixty percent of teachers felt that students should never be socially promoted with thirty percent reporting that the primary grades were the best times to retain in grade.

Clearly, an overwhelming majority of teachers feel that social promotion frustrates children by burdening them with schoolwork that is too advanced for them to comprehend. Teachers believe that this burden is an imposition, one that makes teaching much more difficult because it forces them to deal with the under-prepared while trying to teach those who are prepared (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000). The prevailing view of teachers is that instruction is easier and more effective when variability of academic competence within the class is reduced (Foster, 1993).

Both of the teacher assumptions about student and teacher frustration, however, are not borne out by the educational research. It may be that teachers are not aware of the preponderance of retention research as evidenced by their reliance on anecdotal accounts from colleagues. Anecdotal reports by teachers often suggest that children benefit from retention, yet because of the decision to retain, there is no opportunity to see how well the children might have progressed had they been promoted (NAECS, 2000).

Mary Lee Smith wrote in Flunking Grades that teachers tend to access practical knowledge rather than formal knowledge. Practical knowledge is the sort of knowing that begins with personal experiences followed by future action based on these personal experiences. For example, one teacher remarked in Smith's study, "when my own son was retained, it was because he was too young for his age, and the next year he was a real leader in his class, and we never regretted that decision; and ever since then I have recommended that parents of young children in my class take the same step" (Smith, 1989, p. 133)

Based on clinical interviews, Smith suggested that the educational philosophies of teachers fall into distinct categories and that these beliefs are directly related to their opinions on retention. One category Smith identified was designated Nativists, teachers who believe that the physiological maturation of ability develops over time in stages. Predictably, Nativist teachers feel that children should not be exposed to developmentally inappropriate instruction. If a teacher was not a Nativist, Smith found that teachers could be grouped in three additional ways. 1) Remediationists are teachers who are active instructional and resource managers, 2) Diagnostic Prescriptors believe that deficiencies, such as auditory memory and visual-motor problems, can be corrected when identified with specific instruction and 3) Interactionists, teachers who feel that successful teaching begins with the prior knowledge and interests that the child possesses (Smith, 1989).

Smith found that the most likely to retain are Nativists because they are prone to see physical size and chronological age as reasons to hold children back. This is somewhat of a confounding finding given that Nativists' beliefs are congruent with some widely held theories of child development (Smith, 1989). While Nativists are more likely to retain students than the others, all teachers agreed in Smith's study that retention is beneficial both in the short as well as the long term. Through her interviews Smith recorded anecdotes such as the yearning to put the child at the top of the class and many claims to the effect that there are no stigmas attached to retention if the teacher and parents handle it well. Often Smith heard about the disasters that occurred when children are socially promoted and very few teachers named any negative effects of retention. All stated that it is best to err on the side of retention and if any harm was done, its effects are temporary. Perhaps the most disturbing finding Smith reported is that teachers often discounted the child's feelings of disappointment, failure and confusion or reluctantly acknowledged that if any emotional harm was done, the positives far outweigh the negatives. No one in Smith's research responded that social promotion was beneficial. Smith suggested that instructional efficiency pre-empts the child's best interest when she concluded, "The teacher is a self-interested theoretician. Though couched in the rhetoric of pupil benefits, her beliefs about retention are, perhaps unconsciously, conditioned by a wish for a more homogeneous and trouble free class" (Smith, 1989, p. 149).

Contradictions Between Research and Practice

A preponderance of control-group studies, structured to measure the comparison between retained students and students recommended for retention but promoted anyway, come down clearly on the side of promotion. What these studies show is that students who are recommended for retention, but are nonetheless promoted to the next grade, end up doing just as well as or, in many cases, perform better academically than non-promoted peers (Foster, 1993; NAECS, 2000).

While school performance is usually the focus of the debate, the most pernicious effect of retention is that the decision to fail a child usually results in dire social consequences. Children who have been retained demonstrate more social regression, display more behavior problems, suffer retention-related stress, and more frequently drop out of high school. (Grissom & Shepard, 1989; Frymier, 1997; NAECS, 2000).

While it may seem unfair to some, keeping a child with his or her peer group is the best decision almost all of the time. When grade retention is used as a solution for poor performance, it is assumed that the problem resides in the child's learning ability. But, this is rarely the case (Darling-Hammond, 1998; Frymier, 1997).

Shedding light on why children do not do well in school, studies show that the reasons for poor performance usually stem from non-academic factors such as a seriously ill parent or the death of a sibling or maybe a parent lost his or her job last year (Frymier, 1997). In addition, many students who failed a grade had been in an accident or were seriously ill during the year (Frymier, 1997). Now that the 2000 census has been published, data show that many non-English speaking children have become part of our schools (U.S. Census, 2001). Research tells us that if English is not spoken at home, a child is twice as likely to be retained during his or her schooling (Foster, 1993). Another suggestive statistic is that over half of the students who were retained in grade came from a broken home where moving from town to town was a frequent experience (Frymier, 1997). Concomitant with these factors is what research has coined as "retention bias," a tendency to retain a higher proportion of males, those with small physical stature, poor children and minority students (Foster, 1993; Frymier, 1997; Miller, 2001).

Because repeating a grade is a highly visible act, one that separates a student from his age peers, what is most disturbing about failing a child is what happens to them afterwards. Rather than accepting failure, children perceive the decision to repeat a grade as a punishment for something out of their control, a perception that discourages them from completing school (Foster, 1993). It is well documented that students who are held back do worse in the long run compared to students who are promoted, in part because they give up on themselves as learners (Denton, 2001). Even small children perceive that failing a grade is a serious social stigma. Stigmatizing children lowers their self-esteem, a psychological albatross that often results in a teen pregnancy or drug and alcohol use later on (Darling-Hammond, 1998; Foster, 1993). A review of sixty-six studies conducted between 1990 and 1997 found that sixty-five of them showed retention to be ineffective or harmful (Denton, 2001). In another 1997 study of twenty-three risk factors for school failure, students who fail a grade have many more problems, in every risk area, than those students who were promoted to stay with their peers (Denton, 2001; Frymier, 1997; Owens & Magliaro, 1998).

Standardized Tests and Consequences of Failure

In preparation for the implementation of the legislation that bans the practice of social promotion, the state of Georgia has administered for the second year a Criterion Referenced Competency Test (CRCT), commonly referred to as the State Curriculum Test, as a way to determine how many children might be retained in grade. While some reading scores have improved on average, about twenty-five percent of fourth, sixth and eighth grade children flunked the test (Georgia Department of Education, 2001). Looking at the best results, eighteen percent of fourth grade students failed the reading component. In the worst performing category, forty-one percent of eighth grade children failed to achieve a passing grade in mathematics (Georgia Department of Education, 2001). What is alarming is that, beginning in 2003, promotion to the next grade will be based on the results of this test, meaning that one in five, maybe more, students will be retained in grade. While there is some clamoring to revise the CRCT so that more students will pass, using a standardized test to make the critical decision to pass or fail a student has questionable validity (Salzer, 2001). The technical complexity of performance-based standardized tests, coupled with the fact that performance based tests are relatively new assessment and evaluation techniques, means that tests like the CRCT require constant revision in their early stages (Elmore, Abelman & Furhman, 1996). These changes are evidence that there are fundamental flaws in performance based tests, changes that result in improvement in some 2001 CRCT scores over 2000 CRCT scores.

Even though the practice of standardized testing is hard pressed to show that it can produce real gains in student learning, state policymakers count on test revisions to improve scores. With standardized testing, researchers have found that scores will initially be low and then rise for several years before leveling off. This upward trend caused by the "saw tooth effect" is due to teacher-led test preparation rather than to student achievement (Miller, 2001). Predictably, policymakers tout the spike in test scores, usually within the second year of test introduction, as proof that accountability measures are working.

While it is likely that the scores will get better because of this tinkering with the testing techniques and test preparation of students, there is no reliable evidence which suggests that performance-based tests will ever be perfected. Because the primary purpose of a standardized test is to gather data from a very large group of test takers as a way to evaluate if the overall curriculum needs to be improved, the CRCT should never be used to make a decision that affects an individual student (Miller, 2001). It is very important to note that a standardized test score does not reliably measure what an individual child actually knows because children are not consistent test takers. Even if the test was administered several times, the problem remains: snapshots cannot show a child's full range of capabilities (Kohn, 2000; Miller, 2001).

Challenging the Claims of Success in Chicago, Baltimore, and Texas.

With over fifty years of research showing that grade level retention provides no academic advantages to students, the practice of retention persists and is on the rise nationwide (Owings & Magliaro, 1998). The Consortium for Policy Research in Education (1990) reported that by the ninth grade, approximately fifty percent of all U.S. school students have been retained. If the goal of retention is to allow students more time to develop adequate academic skills so that they will be successful in subsequent years, why do the follow-up data on implemented programs throughout the United States show evidence to the contrary?

Beginning in 1996, the Chicago public schools promoted only third, sixth, and eight graders who obtained the minimum score on the Iowa Test of Basic Skills. Initial studies purporting to show the success of Chicago's program revealed that students, especially those with the lowest prior test scores, showed impressive gains after a full year of intervention and intensive summer instruction. However, follow-up studies revealed that learning gains dissipated after three years resulting in an increased likelihood of school drop out (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000; Denton, 2001; Holmes, 1989). In Baltimore, a similar story unfolded; a study conducted at Johns Hopkins University found that the performance of students retained during elementary school did improve modestly during the year they repeated and for several years thereafter (Denton, 2001). Again, follow-up studies revealed that initial gains faded, with sixty-five percent of the retained students dropping out of school as compared to eighteen percent of all other students. For students who were held back more than once, the drop out rate soared to ninety-four percent (Denton, 2001). What unfolds as one examines the research is that retained children are, on average, worse off than those who are socially promoted (Holmes, 1989; Shepard et al., 1996).

As for the Texas model, the study claiming success had serious methodological shortcomings that limit its validity (Denton, 2001). Texas researchers reported in a 1999 study that the performance of retained third graders improved over those students who failed the Texas Assessment of Academic Skills test but were promoted to the next grade. The validity of the test comes into question due to the large disparity between the number of students who were retained (400 students) and the number who were promoted (35,000 students). The 400 students, one percent of the total, represented the extreme low end of the range of test scores, so any subsequent test scores had no place to go but up, a statistical phenomenon known as "regression to the mean." In addition to the test reporting flaws, Texas policymakers have also manipulated students to give the illusion of increased test scores. As reported by Haney (2000), school officials exclude poor test takers from the tenth grade TAAS by either retaining them in the ninth grade, classifying them as learning disabled, or encouraging them to leave school and pursue the GED. By employing these tactics, Texas schools can report apparent test score increases for the tenth grade students.

A Snowball's Chance in Georgia: the viability of choosing litigation as a strategy to stop the use of high stakes tests to determine promotion or retention.

Except for the mountains in the northern part of the state, it doesn't snow very often in Georgia and, when it does, chances are that the frozen precipitation will not last very long. A snowball's chance in Georgia has the life expectancy of a fruit fly, about a day. The same analogy holds true for using the courts to overturn the legislature's decision to use the CRCT to determine promotion and retention. While some cases across the nation have been won on the local level, almost all have been overturned at the appellate level, meaning that victory in the courts is short-lived. Appellate courts have overturned challenges based on two cases, United States v. Fordice in 1992 and Personnel Administrator v. Feeney in1979. Basically, these two cases frame the issue by deciding that "Placement testing, exit examinations, and achievement tests may be used to assist in the determination of classroom assignments and eligibility for graduation, provided that the test results are not a reflection of past racial segregation policies, the testing is accurate, and the results are open to public scrutiny" (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002, p. 489). Because the Equal Protection Clause of the Fourteenth Amendment forbids schools from engaging in intentional discrimination on the basis of race, color, national origin or sex , the first legal litmus test is whether or not a test perpetuates or preserves illegal discrimination. What the courts deemed important in Larry P. v. Riles in1984 is that the State Department of Education had to foresee that the test would have a significant disproportionate impact by race. Second, the department of education has to have failed to show the validity of the test for minority children. Also, the test must cause a stigma and irreparable injury to the student. Moreover, Larry P. v. Riles demands proof that failing the test will result in effective educational opportunities for the child. (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

While the courts have recognized that high stakes tests have an adverse effect on minority children, they consistently reject the argument that these injuries are caused intentionally by the state. Instead, courts find that the state has a substantial governmental interest in education and that high stakes tests are a legitimate way to hold students accountable (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). Even when presented with clear accounts of racial bias, courts have refused to find that high stakes tests violate Title VI saying that they do not intentionally effect a particular race in an adverse manner (Heubert & Hauser, 1999; Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002). The Supreme Court forbids any practice that, while appearing to be a fair, perpetuates or promotes the effects of prior illegal segregation. This may mean that it is unlawful for any child who has attended an illegally segregated school at anytime in her/his schooling may not be subjected to a high stakes test designed for promotion or retention. It is rare today that a child has attended such a school, yet it opens the possibility that the courts could scrutinize a test more closely if a state or school district has had a recent history of segregation or intentional discrimination (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

The courts have almost uniformly dismissed claims of intentional discrimination and have steadfastly upheld that high stakes tests are rationally related to legitimate state interests (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

While there is an abundance of research that shows that retention has deleterious effects, such as low self-esteem, negative attitudes toward school and a reduced chance at succeeding at school, the courts dismiss such reasoning as speculative. This view, that educational research is mere speculation, was evidenced through the case Erik v. by and through Catherine V.v. Causby North Carolina in 1997, a decision that upheld a school board's decision to fail children based on a standardized test by rejecting the argument that students suffer irreparable harm when retained in grade because any potential harm is based solely on speculation. In stark contrast to the educational research, the court rationalized the situation completely oppositely saying that because retention gives a child more time in school to catch up, the state is doing its job by providing more resources to those who need them (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

Texas courts also viewed retention as a part of a remediation benefit in the case, GI Forum v. Texas Education Agency in 2000. In this case, retention was affirmed as a part of a larger remediation process that provided those students who failed any portion of the exam with extra instruction intended to help them overcome their deficiencies. The court accepted the State's position that school accountability and mandated remediation helped to address the effects of prior discrimination in Texas because the exam provided the state with an objective way to assess student mastery of the skills and knowledge. When the issue of racial and cultural bias was raised, the court ruled that the exam was not fundamentally unfair to minority students because it measured what it claimed to measure and what was tested was taught. Because the test was aligned with the curriculum, the court decided that it was a valid test that met accepted standards (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002).

What the states are relying upon in court is a conservative legal viewpoint that legitimizes high stakes testing for promotion so long as the tests comply with generally accepted standards for its use. These generally accepted standards have two central principles: 1.) a test score, like any other source of information about a student, is subject to error. Therefore, high stakes decisions like promotion should not be made automatically on the basis of a single test score (Shepard &Smith 1987; Darling Hammond & Falk, 1995) and 2.) a student's test score on a test should be used only in conjunction with other information sources in making such an important decisions as promotion to the next grade (Heubert & Hauser, 1999, p. 126). The state is clearly skating on thin ice here given that the generally accepted practice standards among psychometricians do not support the use of standardized tests as stand alone instruments to determine grade level promotion. Take for instance, it is generally accepted practice to supplement test scores with other assessment measures such as those performed by the teacher in the classroom (Heubert & Hauser, 1999; AERA, 1985, 1998; Joint Committee on Testing Practices, 1988). Moreover, there is legal precedence that could disrupt the states' position demonstrated by the decision made in the United States v. Fordice in1992, a ruling that rejected the use of one test score for placement decisions (Heubert & Hauser, 1999).

A legal strategy that offers a glimmer of hope rests on the concept of disproportionality. What must be proven is that grade retention is disproportionate among protected minority groups when compared to whites and that this disproportionality will decrease if equally reliable alternative assessments are used (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). It is well documented that grade retention is disproportionate among blacks/hispanics when compared to whites by a margin of 2:1 (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). The data shows that by ages 10-11, ten percent more blacks and Hispanics are retained; by ages 15-17, forty to fifty percent more are retained and when students reach 15-17 years old fifty percent of blacks have fallen behind (Heubert & Hauser, 1999). There is a possibility that if the citizens of Georgia used disproportionality as a strategy, the state's decision to use the CRCT could be ruptured when it is shown that those adversely affected are disproportionately protected minorities. Yet, any exuberance must be tempered with a good dose of healthy cynicism.

In Texas, where the TAAS examination is used to determine promotion and retention, groups representing Texas minority students sued the state with the claim that the criterion referenced test discriminated against minority students in violation of the Due Process Clause of the 14th Amendment. What plaintiffs must show is that there is a preponderance of evidence that the policy of high stakes testing disproportionately has an adverse impact on a protected group, but this is not easy to determine. To prove adverse impact, proof must be presented via a study of the entire pool of test-takers that the success rate for members of a protected class is significantly lower than if a random sample was examined (Deskbook Encyclopedia of American School Law, 2002). Fortuitously for the children of rural declining Georgia, there is data available that has been compiled by the University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics (2002) along with the State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability (2002) that meets the requirement for a study of the entire pool of test-takers showing that the success rate for members of a protected class is significantly lower than if a random sample was examined.

Who Gets Hurt the Most: Relationships Between Poverty, Race and the Criterion Referenced Competency Test Results from Rural Declining Georgia.

As a way to illuminate just how pernicious a law such as this will be to the poorest among us, we have conducted a study of school systems in the thirty-nine counties categorized as "declining rural counties" in Georgia, commonly referred to as the "black belt", so named because of the large number of African Americans who reside in them.

Our methodology compared county by county demographic data compiled by the University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics (University of Georgia Department of Housing and Consumer Economics, 2002) with the State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability's (State of Georgia's Office of Education Accountability, 2002) statistics for each district. Because there is compelling evidence that family background is the primary determinate for school achievement (Shepard & Smith, 1989; Elmore, Abelman & Furhman, 1996; Clotfelter & Ladd, 1996), our study includes an analysis of eight socio-economic categories; 1) percentage of population that is African American, 2) per capita income, 3) children in poverty, 4) African Americans in poverty, 5) female headed families in poverty, 6) un-wed births, 7) percentage of population without a high school diploma, and 8) percentage of African Americans without a high school diploma. Given that family background is such an important predictor of success, it is critical to supplement the school lunch index, the common statistic used to determine poverty in schools, with multiple economic and cultural measures.

When we first embarked on this study, two objectives were foremost: 1) compare the data gathered from these thirty-nine rural declining counties with statewide data; 2) present descriptive statistics that illuminate the relationship between CRCT scores and multiple socio-economic data. But, after we looked closer at the numbers, we discovered that in many of these counties, the school district data did not match up with countywide data. After comparing the county population demographics with the school systems data, it became apparent that many of these school systems have a discernable racial imbalance. Because this discovery suggests that race will matter in the decision to fail a child in Georgia, this research was expanded to include a discussion about the future of the rural African American community once the CRTC is implemented.

These thirty-nine counties form a constellation of poverty that slashes through the southern region of the state of Georgia. Forming contiguous pockets of counties in rural decline, the constellation extends in a chain from the far southwest corner to the eastern part of the state. As a way to boost the clarity of the research, we have chosen to present this data through a geographic journey whose starting point begins in the most concentrated area of poverty in southwest Georgia. Traveling across the state, this study will explore those counties that make up the belt buckle, a band that traverses along the mid-section of the state from west to east, followed by a discussion of those counties that are located in the east.

Southwest Rural Declining Counties

These twelve counties are found huddled along the Alabama and Florida border in the farthest southwest corner of the State of Georgia framed by the Chattahooche River to the west, Albany, Georgia as the closest city to the east and Columbus, Georgia to the north. There are no major roads cutting through nor are there towns of any substantial population. While there may never be an occasion for many travelers to ever pay the folks here a visit, these twelve counties are home to 92,400 Georgians, of which, 14,080 are children in the public school system.

Table 1
Southwest Rural Declining Counties
SES Data Compared to Georgia State SES Data

SES Attributes	Range in Southwest Rural Declining County Data	State Data
Population African American	47.0% to 61.5%	28.0%
1999 Per Capita Income	$16,153 to $22,270	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	27.2% to 47.4%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	33.7% to 53.0%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	34.0% to 70.2%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	42.9% to 65.9%	36.6%
No High School Diploma	46.4% to 60.9%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	56.6% to 70.6%	41.4%

As Table 1 shows, these twelve counties have two to three times more African American citizens than the rest of the state, most of whom live in poverty. Because school children here are likely to be poor and living in a household headed by an unwed mother who dropped out of school, the prospect for academic success is bleak. With up to seventy percent of the African American population lacking a high school degree, academic role models are hard to come by. When Table 2 is examined, it becomes apparent that all of these counties have reported similar socio-economic data.

Table 2
Southwest Georgia Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	Pop. African American	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African American in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High School Diploma	African American No High School Diploma
Baker	50.4%	$20,940	35.7%	35.0%	41.1%	41.7%	46.4%	56.6%
Calhoun	60.6%	$21,646	39.9%	46.0%	48.4%	55.2%	58.1%	58.1%
Clay	60.5%	$17,082	46.9%	50.6%	52.3%	57.8%	48.6%	63.4%
Early	48.1%	$21,115	42.2%	51.5%	61.7%	57.0%	45.9%	62.4%
Miller	28.9%	$22,270	34.8%	37.2%	41.2%	52.8%	42.6%	63.6%
Mitchell	47.9%	$21,392	35.8%	45.3%	53.8%	57.0%	45.1%	63.5%
Quitman	46.9%	$18,223	47.4%	52.3%	70.2%	63.6%	50.5%	68.8%
Randolph	59.5%	$18,298	43.3%	53.0%	55.8%	57.3%	50.7%	64.6%
Seminole	34.7%	$19,247	39.3%	47.5%	48.5%	49.7%	48.6%	60.9%
Stewart	61.5%	$18,744	38.0%	45.2%	56.4%	48.6%	60.9%	70.6%
Terrell	60.7%	$16,153	38.7%	42.4%	51.1%	65.9%	47.6%	65.3%
Webster	47.0%	$20,728	27.2%	33.7%	34.0%	42.9%	49.6%	65.2%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

A child attending school in these counties would have a one in three, at best a one in five, chance of passing the the third grade to the fourth grade once the CRCT decides his or her fate, a probability much worse than the rest of the state (Table 3).

Passing on to the sixth grade will be even more difficult, given that your odds are about 50/50 that you will pass the CRCT. While the scores statewide are improving in the sixth grade CRCT, school's scores are getting worse, ever widening the gap between rich and poor. If a child is so fortunate as to make it to the eighth grade in 2006, chances are better than even that he or she will not go to high school the next year because they failed the mathematics portion of the CRCT. As for comparing their school to the rest of the state (Tables 3 & 4), their school is in a free falling spiral, dropping significantly behind an abysmal statewide percentage of failing students.

Table 3

Southwest Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	32%	31%	50%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+23%	+19%	+32%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	37%	47%	46%
Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+54%	+31%	+48%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Southwest Counties	30%	44%	56%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+67%	+38%	+37%

Table 4
African American Southwest Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	37%	35%	57%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	0	+3%	+10

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	38%	47%	50%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%
Percent Change	+9%	-4%	+11%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Southwest Counties	36%	51%	64%
African American Statewide	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+33%	+13%	+10%

With the exception of one of the twelve counties, Webster County, the racial balance of the schools when compared to the general population is egregiously disproportional. Calhoun County's population is sixty percent African American, yet Calhoun County Schools have too few whites to report, meaning that forty percent of the white children in Calhoun County attend private schools or are home-schooled. Sixty percent of the fourth graders, forty-four percent of the sixth graders and sixty percent of the eighth graders in Calhoun County failed at least one CRCT content area test.

Terrell County is the same story, only worse. Terrell is also sixty percent African American with no significant white representation in the schools. Having the lowest per capita income of around $16,000, Terrell County will face the fact that sixty-two percent of the fourth graders, sixty percent of the sixth graders and sixty-eight percent of the eighth graders will fail their respective grades.

Quitman County, where forty-six percent of the population is African American, has no whites attending the one elementary public school there. In Quitman County, teachers and principals will face the daunting responsibility for carrying out the failure sentence for eighty-one percent of the fourth grade class and sixty-five percent of the sixth grade.

The same situation obtains in Randolph County, with ninety-three percent of their children on the free lunch program; teachers and principals there will be forced to fail sixty percent of the fourth, sixth and eighth grade students. While Clay County CRCT scores are not as low as the others, this all African American school system, with a per capita income of $17,000 and sixty-five percent of African Americans in the county without a high school degree, will fail twenty-nine percent in the fourth grade, fifty-five percent in the sixth grade and because forty-eight percent of the eighth grade did not meet the mathematics standards of the CRCT, they too, will fail. The remaining schools in the counties, Baker, Early, Miller, Mitchell, Seminole and Stewart, are also disproportionately African American when compared to the general population. Most of the schools in these counties are two-thirds African American with county data showing a range of one-third to one-half of the population as African American.

Mid-State Rural Declining Counties

Fourteen counties form a contiguous swath of land beginning in Talbot County, situated between Columbus and Macon Georgia, southward along Interstate 75 to the Florida border, where Clinch and Ware Counties envelope the great Okeefenokee Swamp. These mid-state counties are home for 168,276 Georgians, 28,854 of whom are children in the public schools.

Table 5 paints a picture of economic and social crisis with data that shows per capita income well below the state average, resulting in significantly more children in poverty. As with the southwestern counties, school children in the mid-state counties are likely to have a parent who is a poor, unwed African American mother without a high school diploma.

Table 5
Mid-State Rural Declining Counties
SES Data Compared to State

SES Attributes	Range in Midstate Rural Declining County Data	State Data
Pop. African American	24.6% to 61.6%	28%
1999 Per Capita Income	$15,585 to $23,202	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	26.7% to 38.9%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	34.7% to 57.8%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	37% to 64.7%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	37.7% to 62.7%	36.6%
No High school Diploma	39.4% to 53.8%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	54% to 69.8%	41.4%

When each county is examined separately in Table 6, the relationship between race, poverty and educational attainment becomes clearer. Dooley, Macon, and Talbot, counties with the largest African American populations are the poorest; while Bleckley, Irwin, and Pulaski counties, with many fewer African Americans, are better off. These data suggest that this economic divide persists because of the lack of educational attainment among African Americans. When the column "African American No High School" is examined in Table 6, the data describe a population that has, for the most part, found it difficult to graduate from high school. Ten of these fourteen counties have anywhere from sixty to seventy percent of the African American population without a high school degree; the remaining four counties have fifty to sixty percent without a diploma.

Table 6
Mid-State Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	Pop. African Am.	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African Am. in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High school Diploma	African Am. No High School Diploma
Bleckley	24.6%	$21,771	26.7%	42.0%	37.0%	41.8%	39.7%	66.7%
Clinch	29.5%	$18,379	32.9%	40.9%	53.6%	49.5%	53.8%	62.6%
Cook	29.1%	$18,276	30.4%	39.2%	42.7%	37.7%	44.8%	54.0%
Dooley	49.5%	$18,690	37.0%	50.9%	55.6%	54.1%	45.3%	60.1%
Irwin	25.9%	$20,832	29.8%	47.9%	50.3%	40.0%	46.9%	62.4%
Lanier	25.6%	$17,675	34.1%	34.4%	54.2%	39.0%	48.8%	62.1%
Macon	59.5%	$19,927	37.1%	39.8%	49.3%	62.7%	46.3%	57.3%

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Pulaski	34.3%	$23,202	29.5%	48.5%	50.1%	53.9%	39.4%	64.2%
Taylor	42.6%	$18,774	38.2%	49.0%	57.6%	47.7%	48.8%	69.8%
Telfair	38.4%	$18,477	35.2%	41.2%	49.9%	45.3%	47.9%	65.7%
Turner	41.0%	$17,831	38.6%	57.8%	64.7%	53.5%	44.7%	64.3%
Talbot	61.6%	$15,385	34.1%	34.7%	46.4%	48.8%	43.8%	58.2%
Ware	28.0%	$19,738	33.7%	42.5%	41.7%	45.2%	38.9%	51.4%
Wilcox	36.2%	$19,834	38.9%	56.2%	61.4%	51.2%	47.2%	69.6%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

The socio-economic divide between Whites and African Americans in the declining rural counties of Georgia will surely be exacerbated through the implementation of the CRCT mandates. Because of retention in the third, fifth and eighth grades, African American children will be systematically encouraged eventually to drop out of school, resulting in the inability to command wages that might lift them out of poverty. Supporting the assumption that income is proportional to test scores, Tables 6 & 7 suggest that there is a relationship between CRCT test scores and the income earned by African Americans. When Mid-State African American CRCT scores are compared to statewide figures, the data show that poorer African Americans living in rural declining counties do worse than those African Americans who live in counties with higher income levels. Further, there is evidence that African American students who live in places where more of the African American population has earned a high school diploma do better on the CRCT than counties with less educational attainment.

Table 7
African American Mid-State Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Mid-State Counties	48%	44%	61%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	+30%	+29%	+17%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Mid-State Counties	49%	59%	48%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%
Percent Change	+40%	+20%	+7%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Mid-State Counties	34%	49%	64%
African American Statewide Counties	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+26%	+9%	+10%

The poverty to failure equation is repeated in Table 8 when the aggregate Mid-State CRCT scores show much lower results than the statewide data.

Table 8
Mid-State Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Mid-State Counties	36%	33%	45%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+36%	+27%	+18%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Mid-State Counties	33%	46%	34%

Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+37%	+28%	+10%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Mid-State Counties	25%	39%	48%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+39%	+22%	+17%

Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Consider the Eastern Rural Declining Counties. These fourteen counties stretch vertically southward from counties that lie northwest of Augusta to rural areas southwest of Savannah. While these counties have very similar socio-economic data commensurate with very low CRCT test scores (Tables 9 and 10), some data are particularly noteworthy. Screven County's eighty percent mathematics failure in the eighth grade for African American students means that eight out of ten African Americans will not go to high school once the CRCT becomes the arbiter for promotion. Hancock County's statistics show that eighty percent of the children born in 1999 in the county live in single parent households, meaning that the kindergarten class in 2004 would have eight out of ten children living with a single parent.

Table 9
Eastern Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Mid-State Counties	38%	38%	49%
Statewide	26%	26%	38%
Percent Change	+46%	+46%	+29%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Eastern Counties	34%	47%	37%
Statewide	24%	36%	31%
Percent Change	+42%	+31%	+19%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
Eastern Counties	27%	46%	51%
Statewide	18%	32%	41%
Percent Change	+50%	+44%	+24%

Table 10
African American Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
African American Eastern Counties	47%	45%	61%
African American Statewide	37%	34%	52%
Percent Change	+27%	+32%	+17%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Eastern Counties	44%	57%	47%
African American Statewide	35%	49%	45%

Percent Change	+25%	+16%	+4%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	**Reading**	**English/ Language Arts**	**Mathematics**
African American Eastern Counties	35%	54%	63%
African American Statewide Counties	27%	45%	58%
Percent Change	+30%	+20%	+9%

When Tables 11 and 12 are compared to the southeastern and mid-state counties, there is a distinct outlier, Glascock County, a county with a small African American population of 8.3%, which is not consistent with the data from the other thirty-eight counties. Located in the center of a chain of five rural declining counties, Glascock County stands out as the only rural declining county that has SES and CRCT data better than, or comparable to, the State averages (Table 13). Because Glascock County's per capita income is in line with the other rural declining counties, the variable that confounds the repeated pattern of poverty and low CRCT scores is whiteness (Tables 14 &15). Not only will the vast majority of Glascock County students be promoted, about one third of the CRCT test takers actually exceeded the standards, a statistic not seen in any of the other thirty-eight county data. When the data from the other four counties in the chain are compared, Glascock County's relatively low unwed birth rate appears to reduce the number of children in poverty, suggesting that the "children in poverty" and "un-wed mothers" statistics may also be predictors for CRCT achievement.

Glascock County's segregation from its neighbors leads to another assumption germane to this research, that the CRCT Test creates a new kind of discrimination - one that hides behind the appearance of fair testing to mask persistent inequalities in the quality of education that rural African American children receive in Georgia (McNeil, 2000). Walter Haney, of Boston College's Center for the Study of Testing, warns that, "The consequences of standardized tests for Black and Hispanic students are clearly criminal from an educational point of view. It remains to be seen whether they are criminal under the United States Constitution" (McNeil, 2000, p. 231).

Table 11
Eastern Georgia Rural Declining Counties SES Data Compared to State

SES Attributes	**Range in Eastern Rural Declining County Data**	**State Data**
Pop. African American	8.3% - 77.8%	28%
1999 Per Capita Income	$16,787--$21,565	$27,324
1997 Children in Poverty	22.3% - 45.4%	21.8%
1989 African American in Poverty	25.8% - 54.4%	30.3%
1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	29.4% - 64.2%	34.3%
1999 Unwed Births	29.4% - 80.6%	36.6%
No High school Diploma	38% - 57.2%	29.1%
African American No High School Diploma	54% - 80.6%	41.4%

Table 12
Eastern Georgia Counties in Rural Decline Socio-Economic Status

County	**Pop. African Am.**	**1999 Per Capita Income**	**1997 Children in Poverty**	**1989 African Am. in Poverty**	**1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty**	**1999 Unwed Births**	**No High school Diploma**	**African Am. No High School Diploma**
Emanuel	33.3%	$18,336	36.6%	46.1%	43.5%	54.6%	47.4%	65.7%
Glascock	8.3%	$19,496	22.3%	29.6%	29.4%	27.3%	49.7%	80.6%
Hancock	77.8%	$16,787	37.4%	33.8%	49.6%	80.6%	50.5%	54.8%
Jefferson	56.3%	$17,673	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Jenkins	40.5%	$18,174	37.4%	46.8%	53%	57.6%	50.1%	71.2%
Johnson	37%	$18,845	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Screven	45.3%	$19,181	31.9%	37.6%	52.5%	55.3%	41.1%	56.2%
Taliaferro	60.3%	$17,383	45.4%	44.1%	52.5%	67.9%	51.4%	65.6%
Tatnall	31.4%	$19,943	34.6%	42.7%	50.3%	44.3%	42.6%	56.9
Treutlen	33.1%	$16,499	37.5%	47.3%	48.2%	47.1%	47.3%	56.4%
Warren	59.5%	$17,664	39.9%	44%	56%	69.7%	57.2%	68%
Wheeler	33.2%	$18,864	37.9%	54.4%	64.2%	32.5%	43.3%	54%

Wilkenson	40.7%	$19,614	27.1%	25.8%	39.7%	45.7%	38%	48.4%
Wilkes	43.1%	$21,565	29.4%	37.1%	40.5%	50.8%	43.4%	62%
State	28.0%	$27,324	21.8%	30.3%	34.3%	36.6%	29.1%	41.4%

Table 13
Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties SES Data

County	Pop. African Am.	1999 Per Capita Income	1997 Children in Poverty	1989 African Am. in Poverty	1989 Female Headed Families in Poverty	1999 Unwed Births	No High school Diploma	African Am. No High School Diploma
Glascock	8.3%	$19,496	22.3%	29.6%	29.4%	27.3%	49.7%	80.6%
Hancock	77.8%	$16,787	37.4%	33.8%	49.6%	80.6%	50.5%	54.8%
Jefferson	56.3%	$17,673	36.3%	38.3%	41.6%	58.7%	48%	59.4%
Taliaferro	60.3%	$17,383	45.4%	44.1%	52.5%	67.9%	51.4%	65.6%
Warren	59.5%	$17,664	39.9%	44%	56%	69.7%	57.2%	68%

Table 14
Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties CRCT Data

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	21%	27%	30%
Hancock	33%	35%	62%
Jefferson	46%	43%	56%
Taliaferro	60%	57%	65%
Warren	49%	35%	75%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	23%	34%	20%
Hancock	40%	51%	41%
Jefferson	37%	51%	43%
Taliaferro	42%	75%	46%
Warren	60%	67%	66%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	11%	22%	19%
Hancock	25%	42%	66%
Jefferson	35%	53%	63%
Taliaferro	47%	59%	76%
Warren	19%	39%	63%

Table 15
African American Glascock, Hancock, Jefferson, Taliaferro, and Warren Counties CRCT Data

Percent Failing CRCT 4th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too Few to Report	Too Few to Report	Too Few to Report
Hancock	32%	34%	62%
Jefferson	54%	50%	65%
Taliaferro	61%	56%	67%
Warren	46%	34%	74%

Percent Failing CRCT 6th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too few to report	Too few to report	Too few to report
Hancock	40%	51%	41%
Jefferson	45%	58%	49%
Taliaferro	48%	81%	48%
Warren	60%	66%	65%

Percent Failing CRCT 8th Grade

Content Area	Reading	English/ Language Arts	Mathematics
Glascock	Too few to report	Too few to report	Too few to report
Hancock	26%	43%	67%
Jefferson	36%	56%	67%
Taliaferro	50%	63%	81%
Warren	19%	39%	63%

Giving Up on Going to High School

Overwhelmingly, African Americans in Rural Declining Counties are at much greater risk of failing the fourth, sixth and eighth grade CRCT than African Americans who live in cities, suburbs or rural growth counties. Yet, those most at risk are eighth graders who attend all-Black schools in the rural declining counties. Because they failed one or more of the content area tests, chances are that most of the eighth graders in these ten counties will not go on to high school. Clearly, the worst performing category was mathematics with only forty-four percent eligible to move up to the ninth grade. If the law were effective today, Taliaferro County would send four students to high school leaving thirteen behind, Talbot County would send only eleven, holding back forty-four. Calhoun fails thirty-three of their fifty-seven eighth graders, Clay County retains half of their thirty-two children. In the larger counties, Hancock retains eighty of one hundred twenty-one as Terrell County keeps ninety-one of their one hundred thirty-three eighth graders in middle school. Ten of the thirty-nine Rural Declining Counties fall into the 'all-Black' school system category with six of these, Calhoun, Quitman, Clay, Randolph, Stewart and Terrell, being located in the Southwest section of the State. The others, Taliaferro, Hancock and Warren surround all white Glascock County in the east with Talbot County being the lone all-Black school district in the Mid-State region.

Because each of these counties has its own school district, these schools are not considered illegally segregated. Drawing school district lines by county does not, superficially at least, appear to be gerrymandering given that each school district corresponds to an established county. Yet, segregation is, nonetheless, the result and the children in these schools suffer all the doisadvantages of a segregated education.

Future Consequences

Being the most impoverished counties in the state, these Rural Declining school systems faced formidable challenges before the legislation to end social promotion was passed. With an average of twenty-five percent of their populations under the age of seventeen, these counties have large numbers of children who need enormous resources to overcome obstacles to academic success. What makes the "Declining Rural Counties" of Georgia's plight unique is that the children who attend schools in these counties will be denied de facto their property rights to a public education when they drop out of school as a result of the practice of grade retention. From the data presented here, most of these counties already have very high drop out rates. What percentage will the drop out rate reach when thirty-five to fifty percent of all fourth, sixth and eighth graders will be retained in grade? The question that ought to be asked is "Is this legislation really intended to improve education or is it a strategy to reduce the State's financial obligation to the rural poor?" It is clear that failing masses of poor children will not improve pedagogy because punishing children with retention does not change teaching. What we do know is that the association between retention and dropping out is noted consistently throughout educational research. Without a doubt, flunking children increases the risk of dropping out of school (Frymier, 1997). Because these thirty-nine counties are very poor, and the tax base available for public schools is small, the State of Georgia compensates for this revenue deficiency by making exceptionally large contributions to these counties. Thus, while not stated as policy, it cannot be ignored that the CRCT will most likely save the State a considerable amount of money by reducing the number of students in schools in these counties.

While we dispute claims that the CRCT is a valid instrument to determine if a child should be retained in grade, we do not dispute that the CRCT is ironically a very reliable measure of economic resources (Kohn, 2001). As legislators extol the virtues of achieving academic excellence by using a "fair" test, like the CRCT, to determine if a child passes or fails, some wonder if the real agenda is a subtle form of class warfare intended to institutionalize intergenerational immobility and social stratification (Ohanian, 1999), a kind of violence that leaves behind the children with the least resources (Spring, 2000). Given the correspondence between the economic system and the role that the institution of education plays in perpetuating the class stratification of society (Bowles & Gintis, 1976), this legislation guarantees that the social reproduction of the society in rural Georgia will be preserved. The claim that flunking these children is for their own good is unconscionable, considering the dire social and economic punishments that will be imposed upon them. Ohanian derided such accountability measures "as cynical as handing out menus to homeless people in the name of eradicating hunger" (Ohanian, 1999, p. 31).

Chelsea's Story: Putting a Face on the Data

We first met Chelsea at the garage where we have our car fixed; it was about 3:30 p.m. on a sweltering spring day in rural South Georgia. Her great-grandmother had just picked her up from school to bring her to the garage to finish out the workday. Great-grandmother sat down at her desk where she worked as the receptionist and bookkeeper for the family owned garage. As I waited for my car to be repaired, we both asked the light brown skinned six-year-old with big brown eyes and braided black hair if she enjoyed her day at school. Chelsea smiled broadly, "Yes!" she exuberantly replied as she showed us the cover of a book she brought home. From all appearances, Chelsea was a healthy, well-loved first grader. But, this has not always been the case for Chelsea. Just recently, her great-grandmother took legal measures to have Chelsea taken from her mother after a man who was living in the home broke Chelsea's arm while trying to spank her. After he broke Chelsea's arm, the boyfriend badly burned her baby brother because he was crying too loudly. This abuse by one of Chelsea's mother's boyfriends was one of many horrors that this beautiful little girl had to endure over the course of her short life. As great-grandmother tells it, her grandson had a short affair with Chelsea's mother, an affair that brought Chelsea into the world. After her grandson left Chelsea's mother, great-grandmother felt obligated to support Chelsea in any way that she could. The offer to give financial support and emotional support was a selfless act of love given that great-grandmothers' extended family is barely making ends meet. In addition to the financial hardship, it was a painful situation for great-grandmother to witness the cruelty inflicted on Chelsea. Chelsea's mother was involved with too many men and had too many substance addictions to care for her children. While great-grandmother reported to the social service system many times that Chelsea was being neglected and abused, Chelsea remained with her mother. It took an act of violence against the children for the system to intervene on Chelsea's behalf. Even after the occurrence of such crimes committed against helpless children, Chelsea must still comply with a visitation plan that includes overnight stays with her mother.

Behind in School. After a conversation with great-grandmother later in the Spring, we became aware that Chelsea did not do very well academically during the year. As a result of her poor academic performance, due to excessive absences in the beginning of the year, Chelsea's teacher recommended that she repeat the grade. Already retained once in kindergarten, Chelsea's great-grandmother was reluctant to hold her back again. great-grandmother felt that by Chelsea now being in a loving and secure home, the prospect that she will catch up to her peers is promising.

Chelsea's teacher is basing her recommendation to retain on the failing grades that Chelsea received during the school year. Yet, if the Iowa Test of Basic Skills and a psychological assessment conducted at the behest of the Department of Family Services are considered in the decision, it is clear that Chelsea's poor grades were the result of poor attendance rather than cognitive ability. While Chelsea was absent for most class time when she lived with her mother, her scores were not as low on the ITBS as one might expect, and in some linguistic areas, her scores were high. As a result of high scores in certain verbal skills, Chelsea scored a composite word analysis in the sixty-fifth percentile. Chelsea's overall math abilities were average, but her composite math score was low because of a very low score on the computation section of the test.

In support of the decision to promote, Chelsea scored at a grade level of 2.2 in reading and 2.0 in math on the Kaufman Test of Educational Achievement in a low stress testing environment. The Kaufman Test showed that Chelsea is beginning to read independently and can add and subtract simple numbers. As an indicator of her mental ability, the Weschler Intelligence test showed that Chelsea is a child of average intelligence. The psychologist who observed Chelsea noted that she was a cheerful child with no signs of depression. The drawings she drew for the psychologist showed a loving family situated around a sturdy tree and a solid house. The psychologist concluded that Chelsea was now in a loving family that could be trusted for support.

The assessment went on the note that Chelsea is not a behavioral problem in school, she has many friends and is openly curious about new things. She is articulate, attentive, with good concentration and perseverance. Chelsea does not have any violent tendencies and, it is worth noting, that in light of her own physical abuse, she is quoted as saying that it is wrong to hurt anyone else. Having a birthday in October of 1993 makes Chelsea one of the oldest in her first grade class. If her great-grandmother had not insisted that Chelsea be promoted, holding her back again may have compounded her risk for dropping out of school later in life. Chelsea is progressing very well in the second grade and her chances for success are bright. Yet, another story could have unfolded if a standardized test was the arbiter for her future.

Preventing Failure with Changes in Education Policy

The fact that many school systems are overwhelmed by the increased number of under prepared students and use social promotion as a necessity, the public backlash should not be directed to testing and retention as the answers. Retention policies should be highly suspect given the lack of demonstrated effectiveness and prevalent bias against certain groups of children. Focusing public attention on standardized testing directs attention away from input issues that can substantially effect quality education and places the blame instead on students and teachers. Because the negative effects of failure on children's achievement, motivation, self-concept, and graduation rates are so well known, one of the most important decisions in a young person's life should not be based on the outcome of a standardized test score alone. Rather than use high-stakes testing, schools can employ less costly strategies that are proven to support children's achievement, thus avoiding the social promotion/retention issue altogether.

Smaller class sizes, especially in the primary grades, are frequently cited in the literature as promoting effective learning. "When class size goes down, learning goes up. It improves student achievement, particularly in the early grades and among students who are disadvantaged due to their socioeconomic background" (DiMaria, 1999, p. 6). In small classes, students who may be a risk can easily be identified and therefore receive additional support throughout the year (DiMaria, 1999).

If children are grouped in un-graded or mixed-age classrooms groupings, classrooms where the age span is greater than one year, children have the opportunity to "progress according to their individual rate of learning and development without being compelled to meet age-related achievement expectations" (DiMaria, 1999, p. 6). When learning takes place in un-graded or mixed-aged classrooms, children will be able to advance to the next developmental level at their own pace without the restriction of grade-level labeling (DiMaria, 1999, p.7).

We also advocate that schools should provide full-time kindergarten (NAECS, 2000) as well as offer alternative educational settings such as preschool, after school and summer school programs to assist those students that are lagging behind in certain academic areas (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000). These programs are critical for students who are economically disadvantaged and for whom English is a second language.

When children are assessed, promotion decisions should be based on multiple assessments, not on a single test or a single administration of a test (Miller, 2000). And, when standardized testing is employed, the results are best used to identify problems so that swift remediation and curricular changes can be quickly implemented. (Miller, 2001). More preventative measures and less punishment in the form of grade retention should guide education policy decisions to give extra assistance to children found to be lagging behind (Thompson & Cunningham, 2000).

Considering the Cost of Monetary and Human Capital

Most politicians would argue that the cost of programs to improve teaching would be too expensive to implement. However, to get a clearer picture of the short and long term cost that will be incurred after the tougher retention policy takes effect, we must look at two factors, one a short term and the other a long term societal cost. In the short term, district operating budgets will be challenged by an increase in expenses when one considers that the cost of retaining a child for one year increases the educational cost for that child by eight percent (Foster, 1993). Longer-term costs are associated with the expense associated with the inter-generational poverty that will be perpetuated as retention encourages more students to drop out of school. According to a study completed by Grissom and Shepard (1989), an annual retention increase of five to seven percent will result in a cumulative increase of twenty percent to the present drop out rate.

Proponents of retention might counter these two points by speculating that holding children back will improve their academic achievement with the reasoning that this improvement in academic skill will keep them in school. Yet, research paints a completely opposite picture with evidence that being overage in school plays a larger role in the decision to leave school than does academic achievement. Even when retained children do better academically, they drop out anyway. On average, the drop out rate is thirteen percent higher for over-aged children than the drop out rate for normal aged children (Grissom, & Shepard, 1989). Initially, retention advocates will boast that the drop out rate has been lowered as a result of the get tough accountability policy. But keep in mind that the first few graduating classes will have all the at-risk students removed. It is also important to look beyond high school drop out rates because many of the students who were retained will leave school before they enter high school.

After an analysis of the CRCT results, it is apparent that the rate of retention will rise dramatically, precipitating a proportional increase in per student costs. To be fair, schools should only be held accountable for factors they can control, and, therefore, the decision to retain or promote a student should be made at the local level where socio-economic factors can be taken into account (Clotfelter & Ladd, 1996). In addition, the state of Georgia will also have to bear the burden of future societal costs if and when the student drops out of school. Is it not more cost effective to seek long-term lasting cures for poor student performance while students are in school rather than deal with the consequences later?

The costs do not stop here. As we discussed earlier, school systems need to be aware of the legal ramifications of retention and the potential for litigation. Not only could parents bring litigation that schools did not provide adequate educational resources for their children to succeed (D. W. Albritten, Executive Director, Georgia Association of Educators, personal communication, November 24, 2001), they could also challenge unfair school policies.

Recommendations

Not only is there a preponderance of evidence that there is no academic benefit from retention, such practices also appear to be harmful to the social and emotional development of children. Since retention policies do not address the needs of under-prepared children, it is recommended that the limited resources of school systems be redirected toward the above listed alternative programs so that education is more responsive to what is best for children, not for institutions, politicians, or professionals. In the state of Georgia, several of these alternatives, such as full-time preschool and kindergarten, and smaller class sizes, have already been proposed or implemented. Instead of using high-stakes testing, Georgia's educational system needs to provide a prevention and remediation program during the school year rather than wait until after the student fails the criterion test.

Moreover, education reform decisions need to be grounded in research rather than influenced by public demand for more stringent educational standards. If higher academic standards are the goal, then reform programs must speak to the reasons why student do poorly and offer meaningful assistance to improve learning outcomes. The educational community can no longer afford to ignore the consequences of policies and practices which disproportionately assign the burden of responsibility to the child rather than to the program, a reproach that places the child at risk of failure by generating apathy toward school and personal demoralization.

Only when the stakeholders abandon the slogan that greater retention means more rigorous standards can schools begin to meet the pressing needs of children. By taking alternative paths away from retention, schools become more accountable to the holistic needs of the child.

References

American Educational Research Association. (1985). *Standards for educational and psychological testing.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychological Association.

American Educational Research Association. (1998). *Draft standards for educational and psychological testing.* Washington, D.C.: American Psychological Association.

American Federation of Teachers (AFT). *Eliminating social promotion.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.aft.org/edissues/socialpromotion/eliminat.htm

Barnes, R. *Governor Barnes' 2001 Education reform initiative.* Retrieved September 21, 2001, from http://www.ganet.org/governor/2001_ed_remarks.html

Berliner, D.C. & Biddle, B.J. (1995). *The manufactured crisis: Myths, fraud and attack on the America's public schools.* New York: Longman.

Bloom, B.S. (1956). *Taxonomy of educational objectives: The classification of educational goals.* New York, NY: Longmans.

Bowles, S., & Gintis, H. (1976). Schooling in Capitalist America. *Education reform and the contradictions of economic life.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Chall, J. (2000). *The academic achievement challenge: What really works in the classroom?* New York: Guilford Press.

Clotfelter, C. T, & Ladd, H. F. (1996). In H. F. Ladd (Ed.), *Holding schools accountable: Performanced based reform in education* (pp. 23-64). Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.

Coleman, J., Campbell, J., Wood, A., Weinfeld, F., & York, R. (1966). *Equality of educational opportunity.* Washington, D.C.: U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Office of Education.

Consortium for Policy Research in Education. (1990). *Repeating grades in school: Current practice and research evidence.* (Report No. RB-04-1/90). CPRE Policy Briefs (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED323585).

Cruickshank, D. R., Jenkins, D. B., & Metcalf, K. K. (2002). *The act of teaching.* New York: McGraw-Hill Higher Education.

Darling-Hammond, L. (1998, November). Avoiding both grade retention and social promotion. *The Education Digest, 64*, 48-53.

Darling-Hammond, L., & Faulk, B. (1995). Using standards and assessments to support student learning: Alternatives to grade retention. *In Report to the Chancellor's Committee on Grade Transition Standards.* National Center for

Restructuring Education, Schools and Teaching. New York: Teachers College Press, Columbia University.

Denton, D. (2001, January). *Finding alternatives to failure: Can states end social promotion and reduce retention rates?* (Report No. UD 034 039). Atlanta, GA: Southern Regional Education Board. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED451268).

Deskbook encyclopedia of American school law. (2002). Birmingham: Oakwood Legal & Business Publishing.

DiMaria, M. J. (1999). *Issues of social promotion*. (Report No. PS 028 203). New York, NY: New York City Board of Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service, No. ED437208).

Doll, W., Jr. (1993). *A post-modern perspective on curriculum*. New York, NY: Teachers College Press.

Eisner, C. (2000). *Ending social promotion: Early lessons learned. A report on early lessons learned in the efforts to end social promotion in the Nation's public schools*. (Report No. UD 033 891). Washington, DC: U.S. Department of Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED448234).

Ellmore, R.F., Abelmann, C.H., & Furhman, S. (1996). The new accountability in State education reform: Policy, practice and performance. In H. F. Ladd (Ed.), *Holding schools accountable: Performance-based reform in education* (pp. 65-98). Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institute.

Ellwein, M. C., & Glass, G. V (1989). Ending social promotion in Waterford: Appearances and reality. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 151-173). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Foster, J.E. (1993, Fall). Retaining children in grade. *Childhood Education, 70*, 38-43.

Frymier, J. (1997, February/March). Characteristics of students retained in grade. *The High School Journal, 80*, 184-190.

Georgia Department of Education. *Education Reform Initiative*. Retrieved August 8, 2001, from http://www.doe.k12.ga.us/sla/ret/General-CRCT.html

Georgia State Board of Education (SBOE). *Official Code 20-2-283.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.ganet.state.ga.us/services/ocode.htm

Grissom, J.B., & Shepard, L.A. (1989). Repeating and dropping out of school. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 34-63). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Haney, W. (2000). The myth of the Texas miracle in education. *Education Policy Analysis Archives, 8*(41). Available at http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v8n41/.

Heubert, J. & Hauser, R. (Eds.) (1999). *High stakes: Testing for tracking, promotion, and graduation*. Committee on Appropriate Test Use. Washington, DC: National Academy Press.

Holmes, C.T. (1989). Grade level retention effects: A meta-analysis of research studies. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking Grades: Research and Policies on Retention* (pp. 16-33). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Kohn, A. (2000). *The case against standardized testing: Raising scores, ruining the schools*. Portsmouth, NH: Heinemann.

Ladd, H. F. (1996). *Holding schools accountable: Performanced based reform in education*. Washington, D.C.: The Brookings Institution.

Malone, G., & Bowser, P. (1998, March). Debate: Can retention be good for a student? *NEA Today, 16*, 43-45.

Miller, D. W. (2001, March). Scholars say high-stakes tests deserve a failing grade. *The Chronicle of Higher Education, 47*, A14-A16.

Miller, J. (1983). *The educational spectrum: Orientations to curriculum*. New York, NY: Longman.

National Association of Early Childhood Specialists in State Departments of Education (NAECS) (2000). *Still!*

Unacceptable trends in kindergarten entry and placement. A position statement. (Report No. PS 028 611). Chicago, IL: ERIC Clearinghouse. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED445775).

National Education Association (NEA). *NEA Today Online.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.nea.org/neatoday/0003/presview.html

McNeil, L. M. (2000). *Contradictions of reform: The educational costs of standardized testing.* New York: Routledge.

Nieto, S. (1992). Racism, discrimination, and expectations of students' acheivement. *Affirming Diversity.* New York, NY: Longman.

Ohanian,S. (1999). *One size fits few: The folly of educational standards.* Portsmouth, NH: Heinemann.

Owings, W.A., & Magliaro, S. (1998, September). Grade retention: A history of failure. *Educational Leadership, 56,* 86-88.

Paratore, J. R., & McCormack, R.L. (2000). Responding to research in grouping: Flexible grouping in the middle grades. In K. Wood, & T. Dickinson (Eds.), *Promoting literacy in grades 4-9* (pp. 402-420). Boston, MA: Allyn and Bacon.

Peterson, P. L. (1989). Alternatives to student retention: New images of the learner, the teacher and classroom learning. In L. Shepard, & M. L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 174-201). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Reardon, S. (1996, April). *Eighth grade minimum competency testing and early high school dropout patterns.* Paper presented at the annual meeting of the American Education Research Association. New York, NY.

Salzer, J. (2001, August 16). Tests show student gains, but many still behind. *The Atlanta Constitution,* pp. A1, C1, C4.

Shepard, L.A., & Smith, M.L. (1989). *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention.* Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Shepard, L.A., Smith, M.L. & Marion, S.F. (1996). Failed evidence on grade retention. *Psychology in the Schools, 33* (3), 251-261.

Smith, M.L. (1989). Teachers' beliefs about retention. In L. Shepard, & M.L. Smith (Eds.), *Flunking grades: Research and policies on retention* (pp. 132-150). Philadelphia, PA: Falmer Press.

Spring, J. (2000). *American education (9th ed.).* Boston, MA: McGraw-Hill Higher Education.

State of Georgia Office of Educational Assessment. *Georgia's report card.* Retrieved December 27, 2001, from http://www.ga-oea.org

Thompson, C.L., & Cunningham, E.K. (2000). *Retention and social promotion: Research and implications for policy.* (Report No. UD 033 924). New York, NY: ERIC Clearinghouse on Urban Education. (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED449241).

Tomchin, E.M., & Impara, J.C. (1992, Spring). Unraveling teachers' beliefs about grade retention. *American Educational Research Journal, 29,* 199-223.

United States Bureau of the Census. *School enrollment 2000.* Retrieved November 12, 2001, from http://www.census.gov/population/www/socdemo/school.html

University of Georgia, Department of Housing and Consumer Economics. *Georgia facts.* Retrieved January 5, 2002, from http://www.ga-facts.net

Walberg, H., & Fowler, W. (1987). Expenditure and size efficiency for public school districts. *Educational Researcher, 16,* 5-13.

About the Authors

Donald R. Livingston, Ed.D.
Email: dlivingston@lagrange.edu

Don Livingston is an Assistant Professor in the Education Department at LaGrange College in LaGrange, Georgia. Don completed his doctorate at Georgia Southern University in Curriculum Studies in 2000.

Sharon M. Livingston
Email: livingston_Sharon@hotmail.com

Sharon is a doctoral fellow at Georgia State University in Atlanta, Georgia where she is pursuing the Ph. D. in Educational Policy Studies.

Their research interests include student performance, retention policy and teacher quality. They are presently engaged in research that examines the relationships between teacher educational levels and student achievement in high poverty rural counties in Georgia.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós
Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin
University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz García (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

María Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

This article has been retrieved 564 times since December 12, 2002

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

Education Policy Analysis Archives
Volume 10 Number 50 **December 12, 2002** **ISSN 1068-2341**

A peer-reviewed scholarly journal
Editor: Gene V Glass
College of Education
Arizona State University

Copyright 2002, the **EDUCATION POLICY ANALYSIS ARCHIVES**. Permission is hereby granted to copy any article if **EPAA** is credited and copies are not sold. **EPAA** is a project of the Education Policy Studies Laboratory.

Articles appearing in **EPAA** are abstracted in the *Current Index to Journals in Education* by the ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation and are permanently archived in *Resources in Education*.

The Case That Won't Go Away:
Besieged Institutions and the Massachusetts Teacher Tests

Larry H. Ludlow
Dennis Shirley
Camelia Rosca

Boston College
Lynch School of Education

Citation: Ludlow, L., Shirley, D., Rosca, C. (2002, December 12). The case that won't go away: Besieged institutions and the Massachusetts teacher tests, *Education Policy Analysis Archives*, *10*(50). Retrieved [date] from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v10n50/.

Abstract

Teacher testing was inaugurated in Massachusetts in 1998 and a 59% failure rate among test-takers led to public shaming of the teacher candidates and their colleges and universities in the media. Within a two-year time period, low-performing teacher education programs in Massachusetts initiated a wide range of test preparatory activities which led to a dramatic increase in their students' pass rates. The authors separate colleges and universities into three categories and examine their differentiated responses to teacher testing. Their finding that institutions of higher education have responded effectively to teacher testing does not preclude critique of teacher testing as currently practiced in Massachusetts.

Teacher testing has emerged as one of the most widely disseminated educational practices related to the improvement of teacher quality in the United States in the last twenty years. What was once a state concern, however, has now become federal. With the reauthorization of Title II of the Higher Education Act (Public Law 105-244) in 1998, states are now required to report to the United States Department of Education on how well their teacher education program completers fared on teacher tests. This legislation, in effect, federalized teacher testing.

Under this legislation, colleges and universities with failing teacher education programs stand to lose federal funding for professional development programs, research and student financial aid. Institutions of higher education (IHEs) with low passing rates risk the humiliation of being publicly designated as "low-performing" by their states (United States Department of Education, 2000). Teacher education programs whose students fail to meet minimum pass rates face sanctions and, ultimately, closure by state departments of education (Massachusetts Department of Education, 1998).

A variety of concerns have been raised about teacher testing as a new federal policy in the United States (National Research Council, 2001). Some critics have worried that the tests filter competent teachers, especially minorities, out of the profession (Melnick and Pullin, 2000); others question whether the tests measure the most critical attributes of teachers (Flippo and Riccards, 2001); and others have raised technical questions about the tests (Haney, Fowler and Wheelock, 1999; Ludlow, 2001). Many of these concerns are legitimate and require further clarification and debate among teachers, policymakers, and the public at large.

Regardless of the concerns that have been raised, however, colleges and universities with teacher education programs are currently held "accountable" for the results of their candidates on the tests. Institutions across the country have considered a variety of options for responding to this new testing regimen, of which three are most salient. They can (i) change their teacher education curricula to align them with the test; (ii) restrict their applicant pool to exclude applicants who they believe might not be able to pass the test; or (iii) develop test preparation workshops to address areas of students' academic weakness.

Thus far, we have little data on transformations in teacher education curricula or restrictions on applicants. In their research at five colleges and universities in Massachusetts conducted during the first year after the test was implemented, our colleagues Marilyn Cochran-Smith and Curt Dudley-Marling found little evidence of changes in teacher education coursework relevant to the test (2001). Furthermore, even though there has been some speculation that there have been restrictions in the applicant pool, we do not have any quantitative evidence to test this hypothesis at this point in time.

We take it for granted that teacher testing is now an established part of the American educational landscape, and we are skeptical that any social movements or political coalitions will arise which will have sufficient power to terminate teacher testing. The testing movement has been firmly embraced by the current administration in Washington, DC, and while there are some opponents, they do not seem to enjoy broad public support. Given that these tests are here to stay, we seek to pose and answer an educational question: *what is it that teacher education programs are doing to ensure that their students' pass rates meet state standards?*

Three Core Questions

To answer this question, we gathered data from our home state, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. We asked faculty and staff at all 59 different teacher preparatory institutions to answer three essential questions. These institutions ranged from small private colleges graduating no more than a dozen teacher candidates each year to large state colleges and universities with hundreds of future teachers completing their course work annually.

First, we asked *what efforts are currently underway at your institution to prepare students to take the Massachusetts Test for Educator Licensure (MTEL)*? For example, has your institution (a) recommended that students not take all three tests on the same day, (b) advised students to take tests earlier in their undergraduate programs to allow repeat opportunities to take the test, (c) offered "test taking skills" sessions and, if so, what is the purpose, format, and content of those sessions, (d) coordinated with arts and sciences departments to ensure coverage of subject matter tests, or (e) changed curricula to add or drop subject coverage?

Second, we asked *what mechanisms does your institution have for keeping track of and analyzing student results?* Does your institution create data files containing student test results? If so, who maintains the files and conducts analyses upon them? What kinds of analyses are performed with the data? For example, are the test results statistically analyzed by degree level or program? Or, are test scores related to SATs and GPAs? What kinds of analyses of students who are potentially at-risk have been conducted—and have those analyses informed intervention strategies? What curricular decisions have resulted from analyses of the test scores?

Third, we asked *what improvements in MTEL pass rates can be directly linked to curricular changes and test preparation changes?* Specifically, is there any evidence to suggest that these changes or test preparation sessions improve the chances of passing the tests on the first time (or on subsequent test-taking)? What test areas have shown improvements in pass rates? How have pass rates, in general, changed over time?

Key Data Sources

These questions were sent to each Title II Coordinator at the 59 teacher preparation institutions in the Commonwealth. A follow-up request for participation was sent two weeks after the initial mailing and another was sent two weeks after that. Some of their email responses prompted follow-up questions from us. In addition, some Title II Coordinators participated in phone or face-to-face interviews. Thirty-nine institutions ultimately provided descriptions of how they prepare students for the tests (Note 1). For the 1999-2000 Title II reporting period, these 39 institutions served 94% of the program completers tested in the state.

Before answering our first query about efforts currently underway to prepare teacher candidates for the MTEL, a reminder is warranted about the historical origins of teacher testing in Massachusetts. The first administration of the teacher test in 1998 resulted in a 59% failure rate and generated national news when the speaker of the House of Representatives condemned the failed candidates as "idiots" (Pressley, 1998). Colleges and universities with high failure rates suffered public condemnation. Chastened deans, provosts, and presidents found themselves in the unfamiliar role of apologists for their teacher preparatory programs. Critics within schools of education condemned the teacher tests as a set-up insofar as the candidates knew little about the content on the tests and were told consistently (until shortly before the tests) that the results would not count. Professors, staff, and students in schools of education took careful note of how their own institutions sized up in relationship to their competitors.

In this climate of intensive external scrutiny and criticism and self-reflection and analysis, IHEs were compelled to implement any strategy that appeared to not just improve their curriculums but also to show the public they were responding to this perceived failure in their programs to prepare teacher candidates. No guidance, however, was provided by the Massachusetts Department of Education about what curricular components should be changed, added, or eliminated. Nor were any test results available from the test contractor (National Evaluations Systems: NES) that provided useful diagnostic information to students and programs about specific test content deficiencies (Note 2). As a result, programs were left to their own devices to create survival strategies.

These strategies were largely uncoordinated and were implemented at the discretion of education deans, department chairs, and program coordinators. A number of institutions hired psychometricians to help them build data files to make sense of the test results. Another strategy consisted of the immediate implementation of test preparation sessions taught by testing faculty and academic development centers. Over time, word of these efforts spread and colleges and universities began sharing their strategies with one another. With the pressure of Title II reporting of teacher candidate test results, the need for a more systematic survey and appraisal of outcomes became apparent to all parties.

As a result of the expressed interest from colleges and universities to the Massachusetts Department of Education, the Department conducted a survey in the fall of 2001. The survey solicited data from IHEs relevant to new test preparation programs and addressed issues of intended audiences and expense. The survey did not inquire into the substance of the test preparation programs nor did it seek to gauge their successes.

First Question: Levels of Institutional Investment

Based on the extensive and enthusiastic responses we received we have organized our survey results around the theme of *institutional investment*. This theme draws on the work of Cochran-Smith and Dudley-Marling, who noted that "the speed and degree with which institutions shifted resources to test preparation was linked to the degree of urgency and crisis that participants perceived at their institutions" (2001). Our objective was to document the extent and types of resource shifts and their real and apparent efficacy. We identified three levels of institutional investment; those heavily, moderately, or minimally invested in shifting institutional resources to immediately address the need the raise teacher test pass rates.

We describe institutions of higher education with high numbers of candidates who failed on the first administration of the test as "*besieged*." In general, fewer than forty percent of teacher candidates at these colleges and universities passed the first three administrations of the teacher tests in 1998. These besieged institutions have as an aggregate responded with an extensive, *heavy investment* to reduce their high initial failure rates. Of our responding institutions, 20 or 51% fall into this category.

Besieged institutions have developed a host of strategies to help their teacher candidates pass the MTEL. Administrators—usually deans—at these colleges and universities have hired consultants to teach staff how to conduct their preparatory workshops or they have hired consultants to conduct the workshops directly for future test-takers. Staff have created in-house test preparation workshops which extend across weeks and even months. Faculty and staff have designed and taught new one-credit courses to help students prepare for the test over the course of an entire semester. Administrators hired statisticians to create sophisticated longitudinal data bases for the purpose of tracking individual student performances. In addition, these statisticians built models to identify program strengths and weaknesses.

At many besieged institutions, we observed a university-wide response to the crisis of low test scores. Especially noteworthy in this regard is the manner in which collaboration between teacher education and academic content faculty was catalyzed by a mutual desire to raise the scores. At one IHE, the committee leading the drive to prepare students for the test included the Vice President for Academic Affairs (who chaired the committee), the Dean of the School of Arts and Sciences, the Dean of the School of Education, the Associate Vice President for Student Services, the Director of Academic Advisement, and the Title II Coordinator (who was a professor of education).

At another heavily invested institution an all-out effort was mounted to raise teacher test scores. Teacher candidates were offered a variety of test preparatory workshops, ranging from two to twenty-four hours in duration. These workshops included not only the communication and literacy segments of the test, but also content area sections, such as history, mathematics, or chemistry. Faculty received professional development assistance in redesigning their course curricula to include test-taking skills; individual tutors were hired to help struggling teacher candidates; and the results of students' writing outcomes on the MTEL were correlated with changes in expository writing classes as part of extensive program assessment. Some of the test preparation classes were offered for academic credit. Academic advising emphasized the importance of the tests and informed students of multiple opportunities to prepare for them.

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

Faculty familiar with the design of the MTEL have served as guest lecturers in classes taken by prospective teachers; IHEs have hired additional faculty to teach writing skills and to serve as part-time academic advisors; and the linkage between state curriculum frameworks and the teacher test has been taught explicitly in methods classes. Some institutions have developed entire new courses to help their students pass the test, and some have increased distributional requirements with the goal of helping the students to improve their English language capabilities.

Many institutions have concentrated on the early identification of at-risk students, often during the freshman year. For example, one institution requires its freshmen in their first undergraduate course to take the PRAXIS test so that faculty in the teacher education program can immediately identify a students' strengths and weaknesses in regards to communication and literacy. In this instance, PRAXIS serves as a kind of pre-test for the teacher candidates.

One of the more surprising innovations developed by these institutions concerns the use of middle and high school textbooks as test preparatory materials. As discussed by Ludlow (2002) at a recent regional workshop for teacher educators, a teacher candidate might be better served by studying a high school history or biology textbook in depth than to take specialized courses in social history or evolution that contain large bodies of information not measured on the test. (Whether the focus on high school texts diminishes teacher candidates' awareness of recent debates in history or discoveries in genetics is an open question.)

Many of these transformations have involved significant allocations of university resources in the form of time, money, and financial aid (for example, for doctoral students hired to serve as tutors for students who will be taking the MTEL). Deans and department chairs at besieged institutions appear to have been resourceful and inventive program advocates who effectively reallocated money to hire consultants, develop test workshops, and measure student outcomes. Some institutions with meager financial resources used grant funding to develop test preparatory activities; for example, one IHE allocated a portion of federal Eisenhower grant funds to help its students prepare for the communication and literacy sections of the test. The costs involved in faculty attending professional development sessions relevant to the MTEL and redesigning courses accordingly are important "hidden" costs entailed in the teacher testing enterprise. Test preparation has also entailed additional expenses for teacher candidates (at one private university, test preparation workshops cost $150).

At the opposite extreme of testing performance are those colleges and universities with high pass rates that have been maintained across all administrations of the teacher test. These IHEs have generally evidenced a *minimum* level of investment in test preparatory activities. Although they may have made modest efforts to adjust curriculum or share test-relevant information with other IHEs, they have, essentially, no formal test preparation for their students. Orientation sessions, if held at all, tend to be voluntary and focus on only the general test format. Review or study materials may be distributed to students but there are no formal assignments. Likewise, there tend to be no requirements for passing any components of the test prior to entering the program or prior to student teaching. Six or 15% of the institutions that responded to our survey fit into this category.

Institutions with minimal investment give evidence of virtually no discussion between teacher education faculty and their arts and sciences colleagues regarding subject matter competence. There appears to be no serious effort to identify at-risk students or students who flunked sections of the test. Nor do they feel compelled to maintain data files for statistical analysis of performance patterns. This tone of satisfaction with the status quo is captured well by one Title II coordinator at a small liberal arts college, who reported, "we have done nothing in the way of gate-keeping or special preparation of our students for the MTEL." In a similar vein another coordinator stated that "we feel that our curriculum is the preparation for the MTEL."

IHEs with minimal investments do tend to advise students to split the tests into separate testing sessions and they may provide handouts with test-taking advice and materials to serve as general references for self-study. Responsibility for test information, record keeping, and interaction with the state and the test contractor tends to fall on the shoulders of a single person, typically the department chair. At more than one such institution, however, the secretary for the department of education in the college is designated the MTEL coordinator who is responsible for maintaining databases and testing materials.

What is particularly interesting about these institutions is the fact that some of them will be adversely affected when the next round of Title II results are released (for the 2000-2001 period). Specifically, some of them will lose their ranking in the top Title II reporting quartile. This shift in ranking will happen because many institutions have recently implemented policies that require prospective teachers to either pass the tests prior to admission to the teacher preparation program or as part of their student teaching component. Thus, there will be an increase in the number of programs that claim a one hundred percent pass rate on the test in the next round of Title II reports. Some institutions are concerned about this particular public relations aspect of the test. One Title II coordinator said that "We plan no special preparation programs, but perhaps we should be thinking of requiring the basic skills test as a teacher education prerequisite in order to join those institutions that now are reporting a one hundred percent pass rate."

Institutions with a *moderate* level of investment (typically, those below the state cut-score of 80% passing but not so low as to have been shocking) generally provide required orientation sessions or workshops where the format of the test and test-taking strategies are described by teacher educators or affiliated staff. Student performance data are gathered for systematic statistical analysis and test performance over time is tracked. At-risk students and those who failed a test are identified and tutoring sessions are provided. The administrative support network tends to be elaborate, involving program faculty, the practicum office, and usually a dean. Thirteen or 33% of the institutions or our responding institutions are in this category.

At some colleges and universities with moderate levels of investment, Saturday sessions are held for the two weeks immediately prior to the tests. Take-home exercises relevant to these sessions may be required and student advisors are encouraged to meet with each student individually before the test is administered. Teacher education faculty and affiliated staff explain test registration booklets to students; further, teacher educators design and share information in workshops to familiarize students with different types of test questions and to encourage time management strategies. Some Massachusetts teacher educators encourage teacher candidates to visit web site locations, such as that of the Texas Education Agency (http://www.excet.nesinc.com/excetstudyguid/); this site provides sample test items on the ExCET test for Texas teacher candidates, which is in many ways analogous to the MTEL and is also designed by the NES.

Some sections of the tests are required for admission to the teacher preparation program and some programs require the students to pass all sections of the test before student teaching. One example of an institution with a moderate level of investment is a private university which distributes test preparatory information from the Massachusetts Department of Education and refers students to test preparatory workshops at a nearby state college. The university advises its students not to take all three sections of the MTEL on the same day and plans to require the teacher candidates to pass the communications and literacy sections of the test before they enter student teaching. An administrative assistant tracks student test scores and analyzes the results to ascertain any possible consequences for the teacher education program.

Cross-Institutional Collaborations

Across all three levels of institutional investment, faculty and staff shared some degree of confidence about their ability to prepare test-takers for the communication and literacy sections of the test. There was much less certainty about the academic content area portions. As one program coordinator confessed, "When it comes to subject matter tests, our students are on their own." Expressing similar sentiments, another respondent said, "It is interesting to me that with such emphasis being placed on the test results, no person from the Department of Education has offered to give us workshops with useful information on exactly how we can prepare the students. Most of the information and strategies have been developed through networking with other education program faculty."

Driven by this need to share information, colleges and universities with teacher preparatory programs in Massachusetts have sought forums to discuss the MTEL and to develop appropriate institutional responses. For example, Framingham State College convened a Conference on MTEL Test Preparation on 7 January 2002 to assist teacher educators in sharing and analyzing information relevant to the test. Likewise, a regional workshop funded by the Alliance for Education supported the Colleges of Worcester Consortium in their efforts to better understand test preparation practices (Ludlow, 2002). The Association of Independent Colleges and Universities in Massachusetts, led by Clare Cotton, has been instrumental in recognizing the need for IHEs to confer about the MTEL and to improve communication with National Evaluation Systems and the Massachusetts Department of Education. Finally, the Massachusetts Coalition for Teacher Quality and Student Achievement has made the preparation of teachers for urban schools a priority and focused on teacher tests at several of its conferences and institutes.

These are all voluntary efforts that institutions freely engage in at their own discretion. Perhaps not surprisingly, besieged institutions have been most visible in these broad-based networks. They report that sharing information across institutional lines has helped them to develop programs and to garner resources from their deans and presidents. Institutions with minimal investment generally do not participate in these forums, and those with moderate investment participate only intermittently.

Complicating these facets of preparing for the tests, is the fact that many teacher educators previously had little, and in some cases no, contact with their arts and sciences colleagues who teach academic content knowledge. Hence, one consequence of the teacher test has been to promote collaboration between teacher education and arts and sciences faculty. One problem is that in some areas, such as history, Massachusetts has been unable to establish state curriculum frameworks, so even those cannot be referred to as a point of reference.

One wide-spread approach to the subject matter tests has been for individual academic departments to assume the responsibility for providing informal sessions on subject preparation for the tests. For example, at one institution faculty in both the English and History Departments offer optional workshops for students. These provide a review of sample subject matter questions that are provided by state and test contractor documents. Ironically, faculty who wanted to do a good job preparing their students for the tests were frustrated by the wide range of questions that could be posed to students. "You would basically have to know the history of the world to ace this exam," one professor at a well-regarded private college stated.

Second Question: Insights from Institutional Data Analyses

Our second research question addressed analyses of data relevant to the teacher tests. We were particularly interested in the extent to which IHEs tried to systematically organize and analyze their test results for the purpose of better understanding the strengths and weaknesses of their students and their own teacher preparation programs. Given the initial relatively high failure rates, what student and program variables might be useful for understanding students' poor performances? If such variables could be identified, then how might IHEs assist future test-takers to prepare for the tests?

The following examples illustrate the kinds of statistical analyses that have been performed as more colleges and universities realize the potential benefits to be derived from the test score data.

- Correlational analyses have revealed positive relationships between the Communication and Literacy Skills Tests (CLST) and the subject matter tests and between the CLST and subject tests with SATs and GPAs.
- Analyses of test-retest effects on the CSLT and subject matter tests have indicated that students who fail the first time are likely to pass on the second administration.
- Longitudinal charts have revealed strengths and weaknesses in sub-areas over time.
- Ordinary least squares multiple regression models have been successfully constructed for the purpose of using GPAs and SATs as predictors of at-risk test-takers.
- Logistic regression models have been successfully employed with demographic and programmatic variables to predict success or failure on the tests.
- Independent means t-test analyses have not found significant differences in test scores based on gender but have found differences based on academic level (undergraduate versus graduate student).

These analyses were not usually performed for the purpose of hypothesis testing. They were usually conducted as exploratory analyses attempting to reveal any patterns or relationships among test results, student characteristics, and program structures that would shed light on why students either passed or failed and, more importantly, how student preparation for the tests could be strengthened.

There have been results, however, that were significant that have been shared between teacher preparatory programs in different colleges and universities. Some of the most significant findings are of potentially tremendous value to teacher candidates and teacher educators. For example, many students who took all three tests on the same day performed worse than those who took the third component of the tests (the subject matter test) on a separate day. Accordingly, most institutions now advise students not to take all three sections at once. Another example is that graduate students have outperformed undergraduate students, so some institutions have focused their test preparatory activities on undergraduates. Students with low SAT scores have performed worse than those with high scores, and students with low GPAs have performed worse than those with high GPAs. Some colleges and universities have used this data to identify at-risk students and to develop appropriate interventions for them (Note 3).

One besieged institution has defined students at-risk of failing if they have an SAT verbal score below 420, did poorly in basic college writing or introduction to education courses, have English as a second language, or have a learning disability. These students are required by the university to take test preparatory workshops that range from fifteen to twenty-four hours in duration. The workshops last for several weeks, with multiple opportunities for workshop leaders to assess student progress over time.

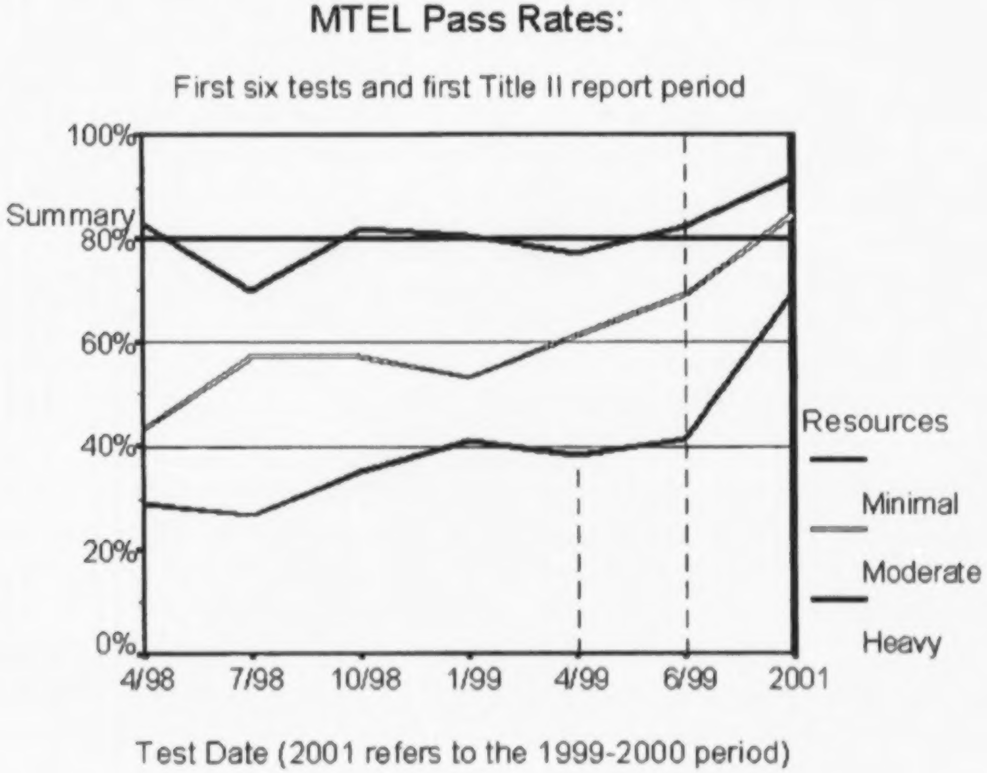
One major problem that every IHE in Massachusetts has faced in performing these analyses is that the test scores are not available in electronic format. (Note 4) Thus, any statistical analysis first requires hand processing of the paper records from the testing contractor. This, in turn, forces each IHE which seeks to assist its teacher candidates to develop its own approach to building databases and performing analyses. It has been impossible thus far to perform any cross-institutional aggregation and analysis of data (Note 5). In some cases these data management problems have prevented institutions from analyzing their own data. As one Title II coordinator noted: "It takes too much time now for me to enter all the data and as soon as we train a graduate student to do data entry the student graduates. Unfortunately, we have not had a statistician or faculty member that has taken an interest."

Third Question: Results of Test Preparatory Activities

Our third research question concerned the efficacy of test preparation efforts in relation to improved test scores. We know little to date about the impact of the new teacher test preparation approaches, in spite of the national wave of innovations in this area in recent years. The impact of a teacher test preparation program in Arizona was examined by Fierros (2002) but his effort was specific to a single institution and explored candidates' sentiments about the program rather than their actual test score results. Consistent with Fierros' positive findings, we also received many favorable comments about the test preparatory programs in Massachusetts. For example, one Title II program coordinator said that "students feel more confident and tend to do better on the first try if they attend the one-credit test prep course … students benefited greatly from the one-on-one tutoring … the students really feel it helps." Another coordinator commented, "Everyone benefits from some MTEL test preparation. It is very helpful for even the most skilled test takers to attend a two to three hour orientation/test readiness course."

Although anecdotal evidence is useful, it is also possible to establish a statistical relationship between increased test preparation and test performance on the teacher tests. Starting in April 1998, the Massachusetts Department of Education began releasing institutional test results after each administration of the teacher test. This practice continued through June 1999, at which point the Department ceased making public reports on the data (with the exception of the Title II test results in April 2001).

Recall that we disaggregated our teacher preparatory institutions into three categories: those with a *minimal* investment in improving scores, those with a *moderate* investment; and those which are *heavily* invested. The latter group we labeled *besieged* institutions because failure to increase pass rates above 80% by 2004 could result in the Department of Education closing their teacher education programs.



The chart represents the summary pass rate for each of our resource investment categories across each of the MTEL testing dates. "Summary pass rate" is defined as "the proportion of program completers who passed all tests they took for their areas of specialization among those who took one or more tests in their specialization areas" (United States Department of Education, 2000). The bold horizontal line at 80% pass represents the Massachusetts Department of Education criterion for institutional approval for the continuation of a teacher preparatory program (Massachusetts Department of Education, 1998). The last test date (2001) refers to the September 1, 1999-August 31, 2000 Title II reporting period. Those results were submitted to the Department in April 2001.

The minimally invested institutions started off with high pass rates and have maintained a relatively constant high level of success on the tests. In essence, they were not threatened by the test and did not need to exert any additional efforts to meet the state standards, although several of them have recently made some efforts in this direction.

In contrast to their situation, institutions which are moderately or heavily invested in improving their pass rates have shown a steady improvement over time. The moderate category institutions show a sharp rise ending the 1999 academic year and, as a group, exceeded the 80% threshold for the Title II reporting period. Besieged institutions started off about fifteen percentage points below the moderate group and have stayed roughly at a fifteen to twenty point difference across time. For the first Title II reporting period the besieged institutions were below the 80% threshold. Not only have they have dramatically narrowed the performance gap (Note 6) but, based on their trajectory, we anticipate that they will meet the state standard as a group when the next round of test score results are released. (Note 7)

There is no question that the improvement of test scores is correlated with the rise of test preparatory activities in the besieged colleges and universities. The extent to which the rise in test scores was caused by those activities is, however, unclear because there are confounding variables for which we have no controls. For example, the extent to which teacher education curricula have changed to conform with MTEL content is unknown. Another variable is the extent to which admission selectivity (e.g. high school GPA and SAT scores) has become more rigorous.

We do not believe that these confounding variables should be given much weight. Teacher educators had little information about the teacher test during the first administrations and could only rely on test-takers to learn about the nature of the test. Anita Page, the director of the early childhood and elementary programs at Mount Holyoke College, asked "Well, what is it that I have to improve?," reflecting a widespread sentiment of concern about the lack of clarity in Department of Education guidelines (Tantraphol, 2002). Regarding student selectivity, it seems implausible that any increase in teacher preparatory program admission criteria could affect test results, in the aggregate, in such a narrow span of time.

Conclusion

As we have seen, besieged institutions responded rapidly with innovative strategies to enhance the content knowledge of prospective teachers as well as their writing and reading skills. In addition, some institutions changed their admission criteria, student teaching requirements, and program completer definitions to include passing the MTEL. Subsequently, test takers' scores in the besieged institutions improved dramatically in the years following the initial administration of the teacher test. At present, it is impossible to disentangle to what extent specific factors led to the rise in test scores.

Based on the results described here, the faculty, administrators, staff, and students at many institutions may feel pleased that their strategies improved teacher test results—and, by implication, the skills and competencies required of all teachers. Furthermore, advocates of teacher testing might claim that state and federal teacher testing policies are working effectively to upgrade the teaching profession.

We, however, wish to advance several caveats because we share with critics of teacher testing concerns about how the tests are being used and the manner in which they are transforming teacher education. First, many of the besieged institutions recently changed the time of their testing so that students take sections of the teacher test before even being admitted to a teacher education program. In these cases, the institutions are guaranteeing a high pass rate from their program completers. Second, we do not know if valuable facets of teacher education have been sacrificed in the effort to improve test scores. Cochran-Smith and Dudley-Marling (2001) found that significant institutional resources were devoted to test preparatory activities and some of these resource allocations detracted from socially critical parts of a university's mission, such as recruiting students of color into teaching. Finally, the test may screen promising teachers out of the profession who could be quite effective in classes yet do not perform well on standardized tests.

Teacher testing—virtually unknown two decades ago—has now become ubiquitous in the United States. As a result of this far-reaching transformation, teacher educators are now able to use test data to review, analyze and strengthen their programs. When combined with other innovations in the field of teacher education—such as portfolio assessment, exhibitions, and teaching demonstrations—teacher testing can play an important role as one strand of holistic assessment. Professional approval programs, such as the National Council for the Accreditation of Teacher Education (NCATE), require schools, colleges, and departments of education to document their self-study efforts, and teacher test results provide additional information on teacher candidates' academic competencies.

Critics, however, have raised serious concerns about unintended consequences of teacher testing. These critics will not, and should not, be silenced simply because there are positive trends in teacher test results. Even as we applaud the progress made by besieged institutions in improving test score results, we must continue to inquire into deleterious results of testing that detract from essential components of teacher preparation.

Notes

1. Anna Maria College, Becker College, Berklee College of Music, Boston College, Boston University, Brandeis University, Bridgewater State College, Cambridge College, Clark University, College of the Holy Cross, Curry College, Eastern Nazarene College, Elms College, Emerson College, Emmanuel College, Endicott College, Fitchburg State College, Framingham State College, Gordon College, Harvard Graduate School of Education, Lesley College, Massachusetts College of Art, Massachusetts College of Liberal Arts, Merrimack College, Montserrat College of Art, Northeastern University, Salem State College, Simmons College, Smith College, Springfield College, Stonehill College, Suffolk University, Tufts University, University of Massachusetts/Amherst, University of Massachusetts/Boston, University of Massachusetts/Lowell, Wheaton College, Wheelock College, and Worcester State College.
2. Some institutions report that obtaining useful practical and technical information about the MTEL is still problematic. In fact, no technical reports have been released "following the use of each form of the tests" and no technical advisory committee has been formed to "meet up to four times annually to review the test items, test administration, scoring procedures, and score setting for validity and reliability", even though both actions have been called for in the MTEL contracts.
3. The opportunity for IHEs to conduct these valuable statistical analyses upon their own candidate test score results has just recently become more restrictive. In an April 18, 2002 letter to Judith Gill, Chancellor, Board of Higher Education and Clare Cotton, Executive Director, Association of Independent Colleges and Universities in Massachusetts, Commissioner of Education David Driscoll stated that candidates will now be required to give explicit "consent before his or her institution is sent any information on individual subarea performance." This requirement is imposed even though Driscoll acknowledged that language in the current registration booklet is "essentially identical in nine of the states served by the National Evaluation Systems."

This additional release will inevitably result in fewer complete data records for teacher candidates and their institutions.

4. Each contract for the MTEL has stipulated that the test developer (National Evaluation Systems) provide the test scores in electronic format to IHEs (just as the NES presently does for Title II reporting purposes). The contract specifies that "The Contractor will… electronically transferring official scores to the institutions after each administration." After four years of testing, however, the NES still does not provide the data on an electronic medium suitable for processing by standard software like SPSS or EXCEL.
5. Commissioner Driscoll stated that "There are two reasons for my prohibition on cross-institutional pooling of data. First, we wish to protect the individual's identification. Second, we wish to lessen misuse of our licensure tests." (*ibid.*). The first point can be easily addressed on the data records using standard procedures such as codes and pseudonyms to protect individuals' confidentiality. Regarding the second point, we do not know what kinds of "misuse" the Commissioner has in mind. The practical consequence of this prohibition is to further reduce the capability of IHEs to serve their students and the interests of the general public by improving teacher candidates' test scores. The political impact of this prohibition is that independent analysts are prevented from conducting the sorts of rigorous validity and differential impact analyses that could assist teacher candidates.
6. It is important to note that the dramatic increase from June 1999 to the 2001 Title II results in the last column is partially attributable to different definitions of test-takers. Prior to Title II, test-takers included anyone who claimed affiliation with a college or university. There were no controls on the population of test-takers, i.e. anyone who took the test and claimed an institutional affiliation was counted in institutional results. For Title II purposes, however, only "program completers" are test-takers. According to Title II guidelines as provided by the Massachusetts Department of Education, program completers are only those individuals who took the teacher test and met all other institutional program requirements for graduation and certification. This distinction has led to the apparent paradox that presently exists when test administration results are released. That is, "On the February 23, 2002 administration, a total of 58% of 5,225 first time test takers passed all three parts of the test" (Massachusetts Department of Education, 2002) yet the statewide pass for Title II (1999-2000) was 81%.
7. Congress requires IHEs to send their Title II test results to their respective state agencies by April 7 of each year. The Massachusetts results for 1999-2000 were subsequently posted on most institutional web sites, in accordance with the requirement that the results be available to the public. This year, however, most IHEs have not posted their results on their respective web sites as of 22 June 2002—and we checked 58 separate IHE sites. Furthermore, the Department of Education declined to provide those results for this article. Thus, even though in theory the latest Title II results are accessible by the public we could not in point of fact obtain and use them.

References

Cochran-Smith, M., & Dudley-Marling, C. (2001) The flunk heard round the world. *Teaching Education*, 12, 49-63.

Fierros, E. G. (2002, April) Improving performance? A model for examining the impact of AEPA preparation center in Arizona. Paper presented at the American Educational Research Association conference in New Orleans, Louisiana.

Flippo, R. F., & Riccards, M. P. (2000) Initial teacher certification testing in Massachusetts: A case of the tail wagging the dog. *Phi Delta Kappan*, 82, 34-38.

Haney, W., Fowler, C. & Wheelock, A. (1999) Less truth than error? An independent study of the Massachusetts Teacher Test. *Educational Policy Analysis Archives*, 7,4. Retrieved 17 June 2002 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v7n4/.

Ludlow, L. (2001) Teacher test accountability: Alabama to Massachusetts. *Educational Policy Analysis Archives*,9,6. Retrieved June 2002 from http://epaa.asu.edu/epaa/v9n6.html

Ludlow, L. and Rosca, C. MTEL test preparation: Who is doing what and how successful is it? (2002) Unpublished ms.

Massachusetts Department of Education. *Teacher Certification: 603 CMR 7.03: Educator Licensure and Preparation Program Approval* (2001).

Melnick, S. L., & Pullin, D. (2000) Can you take dictation? Prescribing teacher quality through testing. *Journal of Teacher Education, 4*, 262-275.

National Research Council. (2001) *Testing teacher candidates: The role of licensure tests in improving teacher quality.* Washington, DC: National Academy Press.

Pressley, D.S. (1998) "Dumb struck: Finneran slams 'idiots' who failed teacher tests." *Boston Herald*, 26 June, pp. 1, Tantraphol, R. (April 11, 2002) Teachers' test results improving. *Union News, Retrieved April 2002* http://www.masslive.com/unionnews/index.ssf

United States Department of Education, National Center for Education Statistics. (2000) *Reference and Reporting Guide for Preparing State and Institutional Reports on the Quality of Teacher Preparation: Title II, Higher Education Act,* NCES 2000-89. Washington, DC.

About the Authors

Larry H. Ludlow
Dennis Shirley
Camelia Rosca

Boston College
Lynch School of Education
140 Commonwealth Avenue
Campion Hall
Chestnut Hill, MA 02467-3813

Larry Ludlow is Chair and Associate Professor in the Department of Educational Research, Measurement and Evaluation at the Lynch School of Education at Boston College. He teaches courses in research methods, statistics, and psychometrics. His research interests include teacher testing, faculty evaluations, applied psychometrics, and the history of statistics.

Dennis Shirley is Chair and Professor in the Department of Teacher Education, Special Education, and Curriculum and Instruction at the Lynch School of Education at Boston College. His research interests are in the areas of community organizing and school reform, and his most recent book is "Valley Interfaith and School Reform: Organizing for Power in South Texas" (University of Texas Press, 1992). He teaches classes in the Social Contexts of Education and the History and Politics of Curriculum. He is the Director of the Massachusetts Coalition for Teacher Quality and Student Achievement.

Camelia Rosca is a doctoral candidate in the Lynch School of Education at Boston College. Her interests include teaching, program evaluation, and large-scale assessment.

Copyright 2002 by the *Education Policy Analysis Archives*

The World Wide Web address for the *Education Policy Analysis Archives* is **epaa.asu.edu**

General questions about appropriateness of topics or particular articles may be addressed to the Editor, Gene V Glass, glass@asu.edu or reach him at College of Education, Arizona State University, Tempe, AZ 85287-2411. The Commentary Editor is Casey D. Cobb: casey.cobb@unh.edu .

EPAA Editorial Board

Michael W. Apple
University of Wisconsin

John Covaleskie
Northern Michigan University

Sherman Dorn
University of South Florida

Richard Garlikov
hmwkhelp@scott.net

Alison I. Griffith
York University

Ernest R. House
University of Colorado

Craig B. Howley
Appalachia Educational Laboratory

Daniel Kallós

Greg Camilli
Rutgers University

Alan Davis
University of Colorado, Denver

Mark E. Fetler
California Commission on Teacher Credentialing

Thomas F. Green
Syracuse University

Arlen Gullickson
Western Michigan University

Aimee Howley
Ohio University

William Hunter
University of Ontario Institute of Technology

Benjamin Levin

Umeå University

Thomas Mauhs-Pugh
Green Mountain College

William McInerney
Purdue University

Les McLean
University of Toronto

Anne L. Pemberton
apembert@pen.k12.va.us

Richard C. Richardson
New York University

Dennis Sayers
California State University—Stanislaus

Michael Scriven
scriven@aol.com

Robert Stonehill
U.S. Department of Education

University of Manitoba

Dewayne Matthews
Education Commission of the States

Mary McKeown-Moak
MGT of America (Austin, TX)

Susan Bobbitt Nolen
University of Washington

Hugh G. Petrie
SUNY Buffalo

Anthony G. Rud Jr.
Purdue University

Jay D. Scribner
University of Texas at Austin

Robert E. Stake
University of Illinois—UC

David D. Williams
Brigham Young University

EPAA Spanish Language Editorial Board

Associate Editor for Spanish Language
Roberto Rodríguez Gómez
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México

roberto@servidor.unam.mx

Adrián Acosta (México)
Universidad de Guadalajara
adrianacosta@compuserve.com

Teresa Bracho (México)
Centro de Investigación y Docencia Económica-CIDE
bracho dis1.cide.mx

Ursula Casanova (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
casanova@asu.edu

Erwin Epstein (U.S.A.)
Loyola University of Chicago
Eepstein@luc.edu

Rollin Kent (México)
Departamento de Investigación Educativa-DIE/CINVESTAV
rkent@gemtel.com.mx kentr@data.net.mx

Javier Mendoza Rojas (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
javiermr@servidor.unam.mx

Humberto Muñoz Garcia (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
humberto@servidor.unam.mx

Daniel Schugurensky (Argentina-Canadá)
OISE/UT, Canada
dschugurensky@oise.utoronto.ca

Jurjo Torres Santomé (Spain)
Universidad de A Coruña
jurjo@udc.es

J. Félix Angulo Rasco (Spain)
Universidad de Cádiz
felix.angulo@uca.es

Alejandro Canales (México)
Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México
canalesa@servidor.unam.mx

José Contreras Domingo
Universitat de Barcelona
Jose.Contreras@doe.d5.ub.es

Josué González (U.S.A.)
Arizona State University
josue@asu.edu

Maria Beatriz Luce (Brazil)
Universidad Federal de Rio Grande do Sul-UFRGS
lucemb@orion.ufrgs.br

Marcela Mollis (Argentina)
Universidad de Buenos Aires
mmollis@filo.uba.ar

Angel Ignacio Pérez Gómez (Spain)
Universidad de Málaga
aiperez@uma.es

Simon Schwartzman (Brazil)
American Institutes for Resesarch–Brazil (AIRBrasil)
simon@airbrasil.org.br

Carlos Alberto Torres (U.S.A.)
University of California, Los Angeles
torres@gseisucla.edu

---

other vols. | abstracts | editors | board | submit | book reviews | subscribe | search

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

U.S. Department of Education
Office of Educational Research and Improvement (OERI)
National Library of Education (NLE)
Educational Resources Information Center (ERIC)

NOTICE

Reproduction Basis

☒ This document is covered by a signed "Reproduction Release (Blanket)" form (on file within the ERIC system), encompassing all or classes of documents from its source organization and, therefore, does not require a "Specific Document" Release form.

☐ This document is Federally-funded, or carries its own permission to reproduce, or is otherwise in the public domain and, therefore, may be reproduced by ERIC without a signed Reproduction Release form (either "Specific Document" or "Blanket").

EFF-089 (1/2003)